

Pet Store 1421

Chapter 1421 Invite the Ancestral God (1)

Lin Tianzhan was the first to react. He suddenly narrowed his eyes and roared, "Hurry and Dodge!"

He was the first to retreat. Light and shadows spun around him, and instantly concealed himself in an imperceptible space.

The long spear made a sweeping motion, and the space around Su Ping was obliterated. Everything within the spear's range was reduced to nothingness. Nobody except the first two emperors had been able to resist Su Ping's attack.

With the exception of Lin Tianzhan, the spear attack made five emperors explode!

The latter was forced to exit the abnormal space by the spear; only half of his body remained. He looked at Su Ping in astonishment; such strength had far exceeded his imagination. How can this guy condense such a terrifying power when he's not even an emperor?

With Su Ping's body as the center, everything within a three thousand kilometer radius was pure darkness, as if part of the world were gone.

The area became an empty spot in the world of gods. One could even feel the vast worlds beyond through that hole.

The world of gods then started to slowly mend itself. Although Lin Tianzhan was hiding far in the distance, he was still within the three thousand kilometer range, which was factual distance in the world of gods. The distance he had extended with time and space was reduced to zero when the Great Dao was broken.

Harnessing the Great Dao, one meter could be extended into thousands of kilometers. However, in reality, it was just one meter. Su Ping's attack had attacked a real, physical distance. Nobody could avoid it, even if they were hiding billions of light years away and a thousand years in the past!

Farther away—the Rain Emperor, who was still blocking Elder Yan Qing and the others sensed the terrifying aura and suddenly looked around. Then, he saw the most unforgettable scene.

Five elders of his clan perished without leaving a body behind, all with one of Su Ping's attacks!

This... is not an illusion?

The Rain Emperor was dumbfounded.

The scene was absolutely unbelievable. He felt so cold it was as if he would have fallen into hell.

His distraction turned into a chance for Elder Yan and the others to break free from his universe. They also noticed the silent scene before their eyes.

"What happened... here?"

All the elders were stunned. They all looked at the heavily wounded Lin Tianzhan, with only half of his body remaining.

How could the previous leader of the Rain Clan-someone of renown among all clans look so miserable?

“You’re the only one left?”

Su Ping glanced around and saw Lin Tianzhan. The former raised his head, strong killing intent making Lin Tianzhan tremble. His heart was pounding. He had been through the most dangerous battles in countless years, but none of them was as shocking as the one he was in at the moment. He had thought at first that no emperor would ever be a threat to him after exiting his lengthy secluded cultivation. However, his pride had been crushed the very first time he fought after exiting seclusion.

“Hurry! Enter the circle and summon the Ancestral God!”

Lin Tianzhan barely looked back and instantly charged toward the circle of his clan, knowing he was definitely not a match for Su Ping at the moment. Running was awfully embarrassing, yet survival was more important. An emperor had to wise up and know when to bend.

The Rain Emperor’s head was humming after hearing the expert’s instructions. Run? Did Lin Tianzhan and the others... lose?

Although confused for a moment, his body was quick to react. He followed Lin Tianzhan’s orders, abandoning Yan Qing and the rest to dash and reach the circle.

The circle was nearby. They had been fighting in the sky, above the Rain Clan’s territory. Since they moved at full speed, reaching the circle was achieved in a blink.

“You ran away?”

Su Ping was slightly surprised by their actions. He didn’t move to stop them; he couldn’t even if he wanted to. He looked at the fleeing pair and said indifferently, “You don’t want to fight anymore? Is this the pride of the Rain Clan?”

“Shut up!”

The Rain Emperor gnashed his teeth, “You will pay a bloody price for killing our emperors and provoking our clan!”

“Stop wasting time on him. Go call the Ancestral God,” said Lin Tianzhan immediately. He had already repaired his body, except that he looked much weaker than before. He gave Su Ping a brutal stare. “No matter where you’re from and whatever secrets you may have, you will die today!”

“Is the Rain Clan really going to bring the Ancestral God?”

Yan Qing and the others dashed closer. They were shocked and frightened by the prospect of what they said. Nobody thought that Su Ping would be able to survive Lin Tianzhan and the others’ attacks, even kill them in the end.

The Rain Clan was now going to request the help of their Ancestral God to finish Su Ping off, someone who was two levels weaker.

An Ancestral God was asked to suppress a God King. It was like a joke.

An elder stepped up and roared at the two of them, holding back his shock, "Rain Emperor, it is time to admit defeat. The whole lot of you are emperors; you ganged up on him, and still you lost. You want to ask your Ancestral God to take action? Is the Ancestral God of the Rain Clan going to bully a God King?"

"That's right. The Heaven Path Institute has Ancestral Gods too. We will surely protect our Dao Child. We won't let you kill him!" said another elder.

"Asking your Ancestral God to come out will only trigger an Ancestral God battle. The Dao Child of the Heaven Path Institute won't get hurt by this!" said Elder Yan Qing with a stern voice.

The Rain Emperor changed his expression. Of course he knew that they weren't just empty threats. If he were in their shoes, he would certainly do all he could to prevent such a genius from being killed.

#### Chapter 1422 Invite the Ancestral God (2)

Involving the Ancestral Gods would trigger an Ancestral Gods' battle, and the Rain Clan's Ancestral God would probably lose...

The Rain Emperor hesitated, and Lin Tianzhan also showed a slight change of expression, realizing the terrible situation.

"That's all right; we must not let him go today. The Rain Clan is not entirely helpless, and the three Ancestral Gods from the Heaven Path Institute are not invincible!"

Lin Tianzhan's eyes glittered. He gritted his teeth in the end, then said to the Rain Emperor, "Go invite the Ancestral God and tell him what happened. He will have a solution!"

The Rain Emperor felt dazed for a moment. He didn't reply, seeing the latter's determination, and merely nodded, quickly disappearing

"You..."

Elder Yan Qing and the others changed their expressions, not expecting him to be so decisive. Would the long peace in the world of gods finally be broken?

However, with everything reaching that point, they had no choice except to fight!

An elder quickly disappeared and returned to the Heaven Path Institute.

Yan Qing said to Su Ping, "Dao Child, return to the institute with us immediately."

Su Ping turned around and looked at them. The turn of events was slightly surprising, but he wasn't entirely unprepared. Even if the enemy was so furious that their Ancestral God would take action, Su Ping wasn't scared. The worst possibility was death, and he could resurrect anyway. The Chaos Perception Dragon had failed to kill him a while back; he didn't think that other Ancestral Gods could

That is, unless they imprisoned him and tortured him until all his energy points for resurrecting was used up.

However, Su Ping was no longer a weakling. He would never let that happen.

“Elders, I’m responsible for what I did. There’s no need to ask the Ancestral Gods for help,” said Su Ping to Elder Yan and the others, “My true body is somewhere else. They can’t kill me, even if their Ancestral God does come.”

“Huh?”

Elder Yan Qing and the others narrowed their eyes and looked at Su Ping in shock.

“Your true body? Dao Child, what do you mean?”

“Dao Child, is this just an incarnation of yours?”

All the elders looked at Su Ping in shock and soon felt enlightened. No wonder Su Ping is so audacious. So, he already made plans.

Besides, that also explains why he’s so tough and monstrous. Does his true body have an Ancestral God’s cultivation?

However, they remembered that there wasn’t an Ancestral God among humans. So, it was possible that Su Ping was the Ancestral God from another clan who reincarnated in a human body.

They brainstormed and made a lot of guesses, enlightenment dawning on them even more.

“More or less. In any case, nothing will happen to me. I hope that you won’t ask the Ancestral Gods for help; I don’t want to get too many people involved in this matter,” said Su Ping.

His enemy was aware of the institute’s three Ancestral Gods but was still bold enough to summon their own, so they probably had other trump cards. Even if they didn’t, other clans would step in if Ancestral Gods decided to fight; win or lose, the Heaven Path Institute would suffer a heavy loss. After all, it was just a school where the students of thousands of clans gathered, while the world of gods was dominated by high-ranked clans, such as the Rain Clan.

“You...”

Yan Qing and the others exchanged bewildered looks, hesitating.

“I really hope you do as I said,” was Su Ping’s sincere plea.

Yan Qing gazed at the young human. “You’re not lying, are you? If you’re doing this only because you don’t want to become a burden to us, don’t worry!”

“No, I never lie,” said Su Ping solemnly.

Elder Chan instantly changed his expression, his lips twitching. He stood up and said solemnly, “Earlier today, you lied to me that you wouldn’t come to the Rain Clan territory, but you did. This matter concerns your life. This is no laughing matter!”

Yan Qing and the others looked at Su Ping with a strange expression.

Su Ping was instantly embarrassed. He coughed and said, “That was just a joke. I’m serious right now. Who would ever joke about their life? I have to become an Ancestral God in the future.”

All of them looked at Su Ping with dubious eyes. They found him suspicious, but his words made sense. Nobody would want to get killed unless something was wrong up there in their head, right?

“Since the Rain Clan is summoning their old ancestor, I’ll be the bigger man here and let him go. That way I won’t be accused of being mean to an old dog. I’ll be on my way then.” Su Ping waved at Elder Yan and the others.

Lin Tianzhan was so infuriated by Su Ping’s claim that he almost charged out of the circle. He clenched his fists; insulting an Ancestral God was a capital offense in the world of gods. Ancestral Gods were superior, never to be affronted.

Yan Qing and the others felt rather helpless. They guessed that Su Ping’s true body was very likely another Ancestral God, and it was fine for him to curse one of his peers. Yan Qing urged, “Go then. Even if this is just an incarnation, it would still be a shame to have it erased like this.”

Su Ping nodded and was about to leave

Exactly at that moment, a loud laugh burst out in the void. Then, many figures tore openings in the void and stood in Su Ping’s way.

“You’ve caused trouble and now you want to run? Is this how the Heaven Path Institute teaches their Dao Children?”

“Emperor Heaven Destroyer, have you slacked off over the years? You can’t even finish off a God King?”

Altogether seven figures stood in midair and glowed. It seemed that all of them were God Emperors.

Each of them appeared to be standing in independent times and spaces. They were centers of the universe, surrounded by infinite Great Daos.

Elder Yan changed her expression and demanded, “People of the Chentian Clan, why are you here?”

The handsome emperor in the lead said casually, “The Rain Clan is our ally. Naturally, we’re here to teach this ignorant junior a lesson on behalf of our friend. Oh, by saying friend, I don’t mean the Heaven Path Institute; don’t forget to pay me for lecturing your Dao Child.”

“Chentian Clan, you’re way out of line by trying to teach our Dao Child. There are no grudges between us; better stay clear of trouble,” said Yan Qing angrily.

“What are you talking about? As I said, we’re not here for you, we came to aid our old comrades. Besides, your Dao Child has insulted emperors in public and provoked a high-ranking clan. How can he get away so easily?” The handsome emperor chuckled.

“Years back, the prince of the Chentian Clan was too naughty and refused to enter the Heaven Path Institute; we never forbade him entry. Why hold a senseless grudge for so long?” Yan Qing didn’t want to beat around the bush and said straight out, “Today, the Dao Child challenged God Emperors with a God King cultivation. He’s shown the Rain Clan enough respect, and all the God Emperors of the Rain Clan failed to defeat him. Do you have the face to force him to stay?”

“A mere God King dares to challenge a high-ranked clan? That’s insubordination and should be punishable with death!”

The handsome God Emperor chuckled. "As for the past incident, I'm glad our prince wasn't admitted by your institute. Otherwise, it would have truly been sad to see him become as arrogant and insubordinate as this Dao Child!"

"Get out of the way!" roared Yan Qing, not wanting to waste any more time.

"Haha..."

The handsome God Emperor chuckled and wanted to say something else, only to be interrupted by Su Ping, who also stopped Elder Yan and the others. He said casually, "It doesn't matter. If more people want to get killed, I'll kill some more before the Ancestral God arrives. You're just a few emperors, and you're talking about insubordination? Let's see who's the senior and who's the junior here!"

He suddenly held his spear and attacked.

After a boom, the void exploded and Su Ping approached in an instant.

"Watch out!" said Lin Tianzhan with narrowed eyes, still within the protective circle.

The handsome God Emperor was stunned, obviously not expecting the human to attack the Chentian Clan. Infuriated, he laughed and said, "What an arrogant scumbag. Let's see what you've got!"

He waved the folded fan he was holding, sending out a universe that was split into countless universes, filling up the world.

"What a petty trick. You think it's worth displaying?" Su Ping smiled disdainfully. His long spear pierced and twisted the world. All the power within a 10,000 kilometer range was gathered in one point and pushed out.

Boom. The universe collapsed with an enormous explosion. Su Ping's long spear pierced the universe, shattering the handsome God Emperor's robe, and dug into his shoulder.

"You!"

The handsome God Emperor was shocked and frightened. Nobody would ever know how terrifying and destructive Su Ping's spear was unless they experienced it in person!

"Who's the senior and who's the junior?!" Su Ping roared, his dazzling spear aura swallowing his enemy.

Chapter 1423 Aid of the Beast (1)

There was a resounding boom; the universe exploded and the handsome God Emperor exploded in the void like withering snow. His soul quickly perished due to the spear's aura, only the scream of his soul remained.

The other God Emperors of the Chentian Clan were appalled. They looked at Su Ping in disbelief. He killed our royal prince with a single attack?

Their prince was supposed to be their clan's next leader. He had been tasked with leading the team and visiting the Rain Clan to gain more experience; nobody expected him to die so easily.

Su Ping snorted, not even looking back. He summoned the young Chaos Beast and merged with it. Then, he fled from that place.

He was too fast for any of the God Emperors to react and stop him.

The reason why cultivators at that level were rarely killed was their escaping abilities. They were hard to catch once they were intent on fleeing, unless there was a huge strength gap, which was rare. Su Ping was an exception.

Lin Tianzhan had a gloomy visage; he flashed to the ancestral land.

There would still be a chance to block the boy before he returned to the Heaven Path Institute, as long as the Ancestral God woke up in time.

Ancestral Gods could travel across the world with a single thought, as long as the destination wasn't behind special barriers.

Lin Tianzhan arrived at the Ancestral Land; he then saw that the Rain Emperor was at the moment kneeling and offering apologies.

"Have you reported the matter to the Ancestral God?" Lin Tianzhan asked telepathically in a hurry.

The Rain Emperor didn't even dare to look back. He only replied via telepathy, "I've told the Ancestral God everything."

Lin Tianzhan took a deep breath and fell on his knees. "Ancestral God, we beg you to wake up and execute the instigator. That guy will definitely grow to become troublesome!"

After a moment of silence, a vast aura surfaced along with a cold and indifferent voice. "He is but a mere God King, and you want me to suppress him. Have you forgotten to grow up while being under my protection?"

Lin Tianzhan sweated hard and quickly said, "Ancestral God, please forgive us. We never slacked off. It is very likely that this monster's true body is an Ancestral God. We've already tried our best; there's nothing else we can do."

"Humph. No Ancestral God would waste time building clones." The indifferent voice was filled with disdain. "We seek the path to transcend. Creating clones is pointless; we've already been through all the worldly tribulations that we should go through. No Ancestral God would use them. Besides, I don't feel any connection between him and an Ancestral God. He is an authentic God King!"

Lin Tianzhan was appalled. Su Ping's body has his true self?

He had overheard the conversation between Yan Qing and Su Ping, and thought that Su Ping was indeed an incarnation. However, he knew that the Ancestral God would never lie; if the latter said there was no connection, there couldn't be any!

Could it be that... Su Ping was only lying to reassure Yan Qing and the others?

He came in person to provoke the Rain Clan. How bold is he?

No wonder he escaped... Lin Tianzhan reached a sudden realization, understanding why the young man had left in a hurry after killing the royal prince of the Chentian Clan. So, he was truly worried that the Ancestral God would show up and kill him!

“You’ve completely disgraced me. If you’re so incompetent, maybe I should kill you all and start a new batch!” The Rain Emperor’s voice was cold and expressionless. His words made the Rain Emperor and Lin Tianzhan have goosebumps all over their bodies. They took their superior’s words as true; after all, Ancestral Gods could create and destroy anything with ease!

One person was an entire clan!

As long as the Ancestral God was alive, any clans they created would become high-ranked clans.

That was the reason why such figures were powerful, and why the middle-ranked vassal races were trying their best to raise Ancestral Gods of their own.

The Rain Emperor said in a hurry and kowtowed heavily, “Ancestral God, please forgive us!”

Lin Tianzhan also lowered his head in panic, shedding all of his emperor’s pride. Ancestral Gods were irreplaceable, while emperors were just ants in front of them.

“Humph!”

Instantly, a terrifying power was spread out. However, the aura vanished all of a sudden; the heavy and mysterious pressure of the Ancestral God also disappeared.

Both the Rain Emperor and Lin Tianzhan were somehow relieved, knowing that the Ancestral God had taken action.

In the void, somewhere in the deep space.

Su Ping was leaving the Rain Clan territory at full speed, rushing after merging with the young Chaos Beast. He then found himself in the sky above another continent.

Su Ping wouldn’t die, but he preferred to not reveal his ease to resurrect.

“Huh?”

All of a sudden, Su Ping changed his expression.

The void around him was instantly frozen. All the Great Dao under Su Ping’s control was solidified, the power wrested from him!

Su Ping struggled to turn his head, using all his strength to move his body a little bit. Then, he saw a glowing figure walking in the void behind his back. The figure was untainted, seemingly beyond this world. His gait was slow, but he brought forth a strong deadly threat with every step he took.

He moved closer. With every step, Su Ping felt that all his blood was being squeezed out of him. His body was expanding and about to explode!

Just the pressure of the guy walking was almost unbearable for the young man.



Was that the power that an Ancestral God could reveal?

Su Ping did not panic. Rather, with intense fighting will in his eyes, he gnashed his teeth and said, "You're the Ancestral God of the Rain Clan. Are you going to bully someone who's two levels weaker than you? Are all the God Emperors of the Rain Clan so useless that they had to ask their old ancestor for help?"

Chapter 1424 Aid of the Beast (2)

"Chaos Clan... No wonder there was nothing they could do about you. However, you couldn't have done that just by being a member of the Chaos Clan..." the Rain Ancestor mumbled to himself and turned a deaf ear to Su Ping's taunt. He seemed to be even more arrogant than ordinary gods, as if no words were qualified to enter his ears. He was there to end the matter. That was all.

"Supposedly, the grudge between me and your clan would have been settled after I killed the God Emperors of your clan. However, you, an Ancestral God chose to demean yourself by joining the mess. This grudge will only continue!" said Su Ping while staring at the other, clearly uttering one word after the other.

The Rain Ancestor walked slowly, while his eyes looked back with consideration. A moment later, he said softly, "You're not scared of me?"

"Why should I be scared of you?" Su Ping had already calmed down. There was no anger on his face, just coldness.

"You're too talented to die just like this. I will refine you and make you a corpse puppet. You will guard our gate and greet our guests. It'll be good for you," mumbled the Rain Ancestor.

He then extended a hand and snatched the young man.

The void was frozen; Su Ping felt he couldn't move. Anger surged in his eyes. Obviously, the guy didn't listen to what he said at all.

"Rain Clan, I'll remember you!" Su Ping looked at him thoughtfully and was ready to detonate himself.

Given his current power, there was no way his opponent could stop him if he suddenly detonated himself, as the frozen space didn't affect Su Ping's own universe. The Ancestral God was indeed able to kill him instantly, but it couldn't suppress him like a toy.

Bang!

The moment Su Ping was going to blow himself up—the void shook and a huge claw emerged all of a sudden, slapping the Rain Ancestor in the face.

The Rain Ancestor shivered and vanished; the void he was in exploded.

Using the shattered void, a magnificent behemoth was seen walking over from the distance.

Su Ping sensed that whatever was restraining him was removed. He turned around and saw a familiar figure; it was none other than the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Su Ping was shocked. Not once did he think it would show up or rescue him.

However, he soon realized he had merged with this young Chaos Beast. It probably went there to offer aid because it sensed that the young fellow beast was in danger.

“Chaos Perception Dragon!”

The Rain Ancestor reappeared in the void and looked at the approaching behemoth. The casual look on his face was replaced by solemnity and astonishment. Why did this ancient beast come here to rescue this brat?

He instantly connected the dots, as both Su Ping and the Chaos Perception Dragon belonged to the Chaos Clan. Is it possible that the beast was this brat’s master?

He took that conjecture as the answer. It was the only way to explain the situation.

Roar!

The Chaos Perception Dragon laid its limbs on the ground and roared, causing a soundless explosion that shocked the soul. The Rain Ancestor was enshrouded in a domineering killing intent.

The latter said gloomily, “This is not the place for a beast like you. Go back to your barbaric land!”

Bang!

He was answered by the great dragon’s claw, which sent a slap in the void with infinite strength.

The Rain Ancestor counterattacked. An ancient Dao Pattern appeared, only to be instantly destroyed. He was slapped away, ending with heavy wounds.

Behind the Chaos Perception Dragon was a vague bloody universe, which stared at the Rain Ancestor like a huge eye in the void. The ancestor god roared furiously, swiftly unfolding his universe and fighting the giant creature.

Time and space shook before Su Ping’s eyes. Both god and beast dashed into the deepest space in the blink of an eye, becoming untraceable.

Su Ping only sensed that the aftershock of their collisions was still rampant. He moved carefully, since even the secondary effects of their moves were powerful enough to destroy God Emperors.

A long while later

Su Ping was unable to sense the passage of time since both time and space were broken in that place. He could roughly tell that three days had passed.

All of a sudden-a golden figure was flung out of the void. He was none other than the Rain Ancestor; his robe was ragged and he looked miserable, with blood all over his body. There were injuries on arms and cheeks, as well as special Dao Patterns spreading on his body.

Conversely, a gigantic behemoth charged out of the deeper space, which was none other than the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Its body became even more terrifying and dreadful.

The Rain Ancestor said angrily, “Bastard, I will surely terminate you!”

His body turned into a beam of light and disappeared into the void.

The Chaos Perception Dragon waved its claws and moved to disappear into the void. Then, it suddenly stopped and turned around to look at Su Ping. It opened its mouth and sucked Su Ping into it, before it vanished from that place.

...

In the Ancestral Land of the Rain Clan

The Rain Emperor and Lin Tianzhan were still on their knees, not daring to move.

Both grew anxious as time went by. The Rain Ancestor already took action. Why isn't he back yet?

According to them, not even five minutes, their ancestor would only need a few minutes to return with Su Ping's head or the news of having simply obliterated him.

However, four hours had already passed.

Both of them felt uneasy and anxious. They had a bad feeling

It was too abnormal.

It's taking the Ancestral God this long to kill Su Ping?

While pondering, a magnificent aura descended in the ancestral land.

The two of them tensed up, but their hearts were relieved. It was their ancestor's aura; he was finally back.

"Congratulations on your triumphant return, Ancestral God. Our blunder forced your hand; we hope that you can forgive us," said the Rain Emperor in a hurry, lowering his head. He knew it was likely that the Ancestral God would punish them, now that Su Ping was gone.

"A chaos beast is backing the brat; it showed up to protect him. Inform the seven high-ranked clans and ask them to gather and hunt that ferocious beast together. This beast shall be executed for invading the godly continent!" said the Rain Ancestor angrily, no longer indifferent.

Both of them were rather stunned.

The chaos beast?

Only the Chaos Perception Dragon could be described as such.

Su Ping's backer was not a clan, but a ferocious beast?

Both emperors felt enlightened as they thought of the chaos aura they sensed in Su Ping. Then, a terrifying thought popped up. So, this genius is a descendant of the Chaos Perception Dragon!

No wonder he's such a genius and nobody knew about his background. He looks human, but nobody knows his parents among the people of the human clan, as if born out of nowhere! The Rain Emperor felt he had figured out Su Ping's background. No wonder he was so brutal, killing the prince and many God Emperors of his clan. As expected from the bold son of a ferocious beast.

How could the child of a ferocious beast not be ferocious?

"I will contact them immediately," the Rain Emperor quickly replied. He wanted to leave and avoid angering the Rain Ancestor.

Lin Tianzhan said quickly, "I'll go with you."

"Get lost right now!"

The Rain Ancestor realized that they were worried that he would vent his fury on them. He was indeed angry. However, many emperors in his clan had died and he didn't want more of them to be killed.

It was fairly easy to recreate a clan, but it would take some time to nurture God Emperors.

The two emperors quickly and respectfully bid the ancestor farewell and then left as fast as possible.

They could obviously tell that the Rain Ancestor had to be furious after fighting the ferocious beast for a long time and failing to kill Su Ping. Their life would be in danger if they stayed.

Su Ping opened his eyes again, and he saw a bloody moon.

He knew he had returned to the Chaos Perception Dragon's nest, which was at the border of a barbaric land home to many beasts. Only that mighty dragon could have built a nest there.

"Thank you very much, senior," said Su Ping to quickly offer thanks to his rescuer. The latter was lying there like a mountain.

The Chaos Perception Dragon glanced at him coldly and sent a thought into his head. "If you want to die, that's fine, but leave it alone. It's the last bloodline of the Chaos Clan. It's too dangerous to stick with you. I want it to stay."

Chapter 1425 Training (1)

Su Ping smiled bitterly. It was true, the dragon only helped because of the young Chaos Beast. He said helplessly, "Senior, I'm also a member of the chaos clan. Don't you think it would be a shame if I die?"

"If you die, it's your own fault. You pissed off an Ancestral God while not being strong enough. I wouldn't have helped you if it weren't for its sake," said the Chaos Perception Dragon with a snort.

"Besides, the Chaos Clan has many branches. You're not from our branch; however, I feel that the little one's bloodline is of the same origin as mine."

11

"

Su Ping was speechless. In any case, he had been saved. He said, "Senior, I'll be eternally in your debt, and I'll return the favor if there's ever a chance. As for the little beast, however... I don't think I can keep it here."

"Huh?"

The Chaos Perception Dragon instantly narrowed its eyes, releasing an intimidating aura. "Do you think I'll help you again if it's still by your side?"

Su Ping shook his head. "Senior, you misunderstood. I'm simply not used to parting with it."

"Funny reason." The Chaos Perception Dragon was rather angry. "What can you do to ensure your safety? Hide here forever?"

Su Ping shook his head and replied, "I know what I'm doing. I'll be safe."

"You would have been killed if I hadn't intervened!" said the Chaos Perception Dragon coldly.

Su Ping raised his head and looked at the latter. "Would you like to see if you can kill me?"

"You think I don't dare?"

The Chaos Perception Dragon was seething. At first it thought that Su Ping would accept that small request because of both the favor and its intimidation. Su Ping's stubbornness was unexpected.

"I know that you dare. It's just that I have my own trump card. I can't tell you the details, but all in all, I'll be fine," said Su Ping.

The dragon gazed at him, remembering the terrifying existence hiding behind Su Ping's back in their first encounter. Was that what the human is relying on?

After a moment of silence, it said, "Give it to me, and I will certainly teach it everything I know and give it the most suitable and rarest medicines; all to activate its bloodline sooner and reach my level. It will be a good thing for the both of you."

The massive senior stopped acting tough, choosing a gentler persuasion.

Su Ping didn't expect that such a ferocious beast would give in. He slightly shook his head and said, "I appreciate your kindness, but I'm the first person it saw after hatching. We've never separated since then. I don't think it would get used to it... I know I wouldn't."

"What kind of reason is that?" The Chaos Perception Dragon was angry. Su Ping heaved a sigh and said, "It's not an excuse. I hope you can forgive me."

The Chaos Perception Dragon stared at Su Ping and imposed an extraordinary amount of pressure on him, only to discover that the young human didn't change his expression at all, seemingly oblivious to death.

Such confidence made the beast be slightly convinced. How could this man be so calm without a trump card?

His calmness was already rare in the world.

"That's just your opinion. Why don't you ask the little one about what it thinks?" said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Su Ping's eyebrows rose a little, but he wasn't in a rush to disapprove. He simply canceled the merger. He also wanted to find out what the young Chaos Beast was thinking. After all, it had to do with its future.

"I don't need to think about it. I would rather stay with my master than go anywhere else. I don't want to become the strongest. Besides, even if I stay with my master, I can also become the strongest!" said the young creature right after the fusion was dispelled. It then clung to Su Ping's leg and glared at the Chaos Perception Dragon disdainfully.

Its words and attitude almost made the great dragon pass out due to anger.

It was the ultimate beast with the chaos bloodline born from nature itself. It was supposed to be above all living creatures, and yet it was forced to compromise.

"How useless!" the Chaos Perception Dragon roared.

The smaller Chaos Beast's face was contorted, devoid of any fear. "You're the useless one. I'll surpass you sooner or later!"

Still furious, the Chaos Perception Dragon sneered. "And you'll do that while following him? Keep dreaming! You're just wasting your bloodline!"

"Don't you have anyone you wish to follow?" asked the young Chaos Beast without flying into a fit of rage.

The former was stunned for a moment. The traces of countless years flashed in its eyes; mottled, almost forgotten memories crawled back.

Someone... to follow?

The beast remembered seeing a graceful woman standing in the world. Her fluttering clothes brushed it like a gentle hand.

At that time, it was but a drakeling the size of a bear.

The Chaos Perception Dragon fell silent. After a long time, it finally said, "That's so stupid. If you follow me, I can make you grow strong at the fastest speed possible. Since you're following him, don't you want to protect him? How can you fight without strength?"

The young Chaos Beast was stunned. It looked at Su Ping and hesitated.

Su Ping chuckled and petted it. "I don't need your protection. I can protect you."

The young Chaos Beast enjoying the touch of Su Ping's hand. It even narrowed its eyes in comfort. However, there was thoughtful light in the little one's eyes while enjoying the petting "If you want to teach me, you can do so right now. Why would you need me to stay?" asked the young Chaos Beast in a hurry.

The senior beast said angrily, "You think cultivation is that simple? You're already a God King. To go further you must find your Dao Heart and then cultivate the Undying Universe to become an Ancestral

God. Both levels are extremely difficult to cross; how can you do that without giving it your full concentration?”

Chapter 1426 Training (2)

“Didn’t you say you’d feed me great materials? Wouldn’t I improve really quickly if I ate them?” mumbled the young Chaos Beast.

The Chaos Perception Dragon said, “That’s meant to polish your body. Although they can improve you, you have to find a Dao Heart on your own. However, don’t worry. Since you’re a member of the chaos clan, you only have to believe in the path of chaos. Your Dao Heart is hidden in your bloodline and your body; all you need to do is activate it.

“As for becoming an Ancestral God, it’s very simple for us too. All you need to do is to activate all the bloodline patterns in your body in order to establish the undying universe.”

“If it’s so simple, just teach me; I’ll be able to pick it up fairly quickly,” said the young Chaos Beast.

Su Ping also said, “That’s right, senior. I can spend some more time here. Just focus on teaching.”

The Chaos Perception Dragon rolled its eyes so hard that Su Ping almost saw moons in them. “I will impart some chaos secret techniques. You shouldn’t be here.”

“I certainly wouldn’t peep,” said Su Ping in a hurry.

IIII

The large dragon instantly fell silent.

The young one further fanned the flames. “Do you want to teach me or not? If not, since you said that all the mysteries are already in my body, I’ll just learn on my own; it’ll only take a while longer. There’s no way you can separate me from my master!”

The dragon’s eyelids seemed to be twitching. It looked at the human and the beast, feeling the urge of stomping them flat.

“If you’re so stubborn, so be it. But let’s be clear: once the cultivation starts, you must not interfere. If you do, I will leave with the little one immediately,” said the Chaos Perception Dragon to Su Ping.

The latter instantly nodded and said, “Do you mind teaching a few more people?”

“I do!”

“Fine.”

Su Ping could only drop the idea of asking the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets to tag along

The young Chaos Beast was furious. “Why mind? I’ll be more focused if I’m training with a partner.”

The Chaos Perception Dragon felt rather helpless. “I’m teaching you the chaos secret techniques. Those who are not from our clan can’t learn them; they can’t even if they want to. It’ll only ruin their foundation.”

“You’re so unfair!” cried the young Chaos Beast.

wa

The Chaos Perception Dragon was utterly speechless. Unfair? It would’ve killed both of them if they weren’t part of the chaos clan.

Su Ping coughed and stopped the young Chaos Beast. Seeing that the senior beast was running out of patience, he said, “I’ll be here often. Feel free to teach it anything; I won’t intervene.”

“Humph.” The Chaos Perception Dragon was too lazy to argue anymore. It simply absorbed the young Chaos Beast into its universe and said, “I’m going to polish its bones. Don’t disturb us.”

Su Ping nodded. Once the Chaos Perception Dragon went to lay down on another plain, Su Ping summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets to have them train with the local beasts.

While he also trained, Su Ping’s badge vibrated and he detected thoughts embedded on it. After examining them carefully, he realized it was Yan Qing and other elders who were searching for him via the badge.

Su Ping instantly sent a message back, asking them not to worry for him; they only had to keep a lookout for the Rain Clan.

so

Yan Qing and the other elders felt relieved after learning that Su Ping was safe and sound. They instantly asked where he was at the moment, but he didn’t go into detail, simply saying he was in a safe area.

Elder Chan sent a message to Su Ping’s badge. “The Rain Clan seems to be contacting other clans to pressure all humans.”

Su Ping slightly changed his expression. Imposing pressure on humans? Weren’t they trying to force him to reveal himself?

“Despicable!”

Su Ping’s face was gloomy. He did say he was responsible for his actions, his opponents obviously didn’t consider it a personal action. They targeted all of his clan.

“Don’t worry. The human clan is now on full alert. Thanks to you, many high-ranked clans expressed their goodwill towards humans. If your fellow humans are diplomatic enough, they can resist the Rain Clan with the high-ranked clans’ help for a while. We will send someone to help them too,” said Elder Chan.

Su Ping felt slightly relieved. He asked, “Any updates about the Ancestral God of the Rain Clan?”

“The Ancestral God? Speaking of which, how did you escape from the Rain Clan’s Ancestral God?” asked Elder Chan curiously.

“It’s a long story.” Su Ping briefly talked about the Chaos Perception Dragon’s help, which baffled the minds of Elder Chan and the others. A ferocious beast helped him?



Everybody started guessing about Su Ping's identity.

Elder Chan was quick to give a warning, "The Chaos Perception Dragon is one of the greatest disasters from the world of chaos. It once slaughtered a high-ranked clan, causing a living hell. It is a common enemy of all gods. Don't get too involved with it."

"But the creature did me a favor, and I must return it," said Su Ping.

"But that's a ferocious beast," said Elder Chan right after, "Are you related to it by blood?"

"Not exactly," said Su Ping, "But a ferocious beast's favor is still a favor."

Elder Chan was relieved. He then fell silent.

"In that case, there might be trouble..." Elder Chan heaved a sigh.

Su Ping was suspicious. "Trouble?"

"The Rain Ancestor was defeated by the ferocious beast and failed to kill you, and it is almost certain that you'll grow to become an Ancestral God. You're such a great threat that the Rain Clan will surely try their best to kill you. If the ferocious beast is protecting you, they'll aim to kill it first. That Chaos Perception Dragon trespassed the Rain Clan's territory. It is very possible that they could rally other clans to help them kill the beast," said Elder Chan.

Su Ping felt dazed. So, the Chaos Perception Dragon could be in danger.

"If my guess is correct, you must be at the borderlands, the place the Chaos Perception Dragon calls home. I don't know your exact position, but the Rain Ancestor will probably join forces with other Ancestral Gods and search for you," said Elder Chan.

Su Ping's face changed a bit. It was easy for him to escape, but the Chaos Perception Dragon couldn't resurrect. If it was surrounded and executed...

Su Ping looked at the enormous, hill-like creature teaching the young Chaos Beast.

After a moment of silence, Su Ping flew over.

"Senior."

"Didn't I say that I was not to be disturbed?" The Chaos Perception Dragon suddenly opened his eyes, almost piercing Su Ping with its coldness.

Su Ping quickly repeated Elder Chan's message. "Senior, you wouldn't have been caught in this mess if you hadn't helped me. I have a proposal, which may hopefully make up for it."

"Speak." The Chaos Perception Dragon remained expressionless.

"Sign a contract with me and become my pet. That way I can offer you things that you can't imagine," said Su Ping.

The Chaos Perception Dragon gazed at Su Ping. Obviously, it was thinking that something was wrong with Su Ping's head!

“F\*ck off.”

The Chaos Perception Dragon’s reply was short and simple.

Su Ping smiled bitterly, knowing that it would be a hard sale. Besides, he wasn’t sure whether or not he would explode if he signed a contract with such a powerhouse with his current level.

After all, he wasn’t even a God Emperor yet.

Fortunately, he could make a breakthrough at any time. If the Chaos Perception Dragon accepted, he could induce the conditions for the breakthrough and sign a contract with the beast senior right then.

“Senior, I’m not kidding. Just think about it,” said Su Ping.

“F\*ck off. I’m not kidding, either!” The Chaos Perception Dragon’s voice was gloomy. “I forbid you to talk to my master like this!” cried the young Chaos Beast with its childish voice.

The Chaos Perception Dragon was rather angry. He roared at Su Ping, “Hurry up and leave. It’s absorbing the Original Fluid of Chaos. It can’t get distracted at this time!”

“You’re still being mean!” roared the young Chaos Beast.

Su Ping smiled bitterly and quickly appeased the young beast. He then turned around and left. After all, if the worst outcome came to pass and the Chaos Perception Dragon was almost beaten to death, he could force a contract by then.

#### Chapter 1427 Imparting (1)

Time flew.

Su Ping traveled in the desolate land with the Dark Dragon Hound and the rest of his pets, always looking for God Emperor beasts as sparring partners. Those creatures were much weaker than the Rain Clan’s God Emperors; after all, theirs was a huge clan with a large heritage of ancient secret techniques.

While training his pets, Su Ping was also constantly deepening his understanding of the Contract Dao Heart. His experiences through consecutive battles and his own observations made him feel that it had impressive potential, not inferior to the three unparalleled Dao Hearts shown by the Golden Crow ancestor. He was delighted.

It would have been disappointing if his own Dao Heart wasn’t as good.

Dao Hearts couldn’t be transmitted. The Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets were still God Kings. They could still fight God Emperor beasts on their own by teaming up and following his commands, the gap was huge.

Other than cultivating in the world of gods, he would return to the store on occasion. The sailing outside remained in order. Shen Huang, Chi Huo and the others took turns to direct the planet as they explored; they had not found a second universe in months.

Su Ping wasn't too surprised, given that the environment was boundless; there were also many universes that even the Heavens had yet to detect. It wasn't hard to imagine how vast the place was.

Su Ping consolidated his cultivation over the following months. It was even easier for him to deal with God Emperors at the moment. His power output and application was significantly improved.

He had already been able to kill God Emperors in the past, it would take a considerable toll on him. However, he could instantly kill the lesser God Emperors if he gathered the Great Dao.

"How should I cultivate the Undying State?" Su Ping asked the system.

He wanted to become an Ancestral God as soon as possible. He knew that there were existences like the Golden Crow ancestor, who were above the Ancestral Gods.

Su Ping feared that they could encounter the Heavens while they floated about. Once exposed, it would mean death in the enemy turf!

Disaster might strike at any time. Su Ping couldn't relax because of the pressure, and constantly sought to improve his combat ability.

"The Undying State is just as the name suggests. Once you cultivate it, no matter how many times your universe is pierced, it won't be destroyed, and since your universe can't be destroyed, you won't die. In simpler terms, it's the closest to eternity.

"In order for your universe to be undying, you first need to transform your universe into an undying substance. What is truly eternal and undying in this world?"

Slightly dazed, Su Ping replied unconsciously, "Dao?"

"That is correct."

The system continued, "If you want your universe to be immortal, you first need to fuse the entire universe with your Dao Heart and turn it into one of the Great Daos."

"Fusion of Dao Hearts? Universe turning into a Great Dao?" Su Ping mumbled. The system's words brought dawn to his hazy future, and he vaguely found a direction for his cultivation.

"Compared to the Dao Heart State, there's ways to reach the Undying State, although it's difficult to carry them out," said the system, "Once you improve the store to level 8, you will know how to cultivate."

III

Su Ping was speechless. "You really are like those booksellers."

"Booksellers?"

Su Ping was surprised by the answer. "Can't you peep into my mind?" The system said indifferently, "I promised you that I would respect your thoughts when the store reached level 7, and that I will tell you everything I know when it reaches level 9... Besides, you've condensed a Dao Heart, and I could damage it if I recklessly peep into your mind now."

“That’s the real reason why you’re not peeping any more, right?” Su Ping complained and then asked, “It can damage my Dao Heart? What about all the peeping in the past...”

“What are you thinking about? You didn’t even have a Dao Heart. What’s there to be damaged? How do you think I can listen to the thoughts of God Emperors?” said the system angrily.

Su Ping thought about it and realized it made sense.

He was just a lackey in the past; even a God King could peep into his mind.

However, he had already grasped a Dao Heart and had essentially become a God Emperor. Even when considering all the cultivation sites, he was very close to the top of the pyramid. It wasn’t that easy to peep into his mind.

However, it wasn’t that the system couldn’t peep into it. It simply didn’t want to hurt him.

“I have to improve it to level 8? System, can you make an exception? If we encounter the Heavens and end up getting eliminated, where can I find customers for you?” said Su Ping, “Being the system, you can’t be too stubborn. You must be flexible.”

“Are you telling me what to do?”

The system was angry. “Since you know that the situation is urgent, hurry up and do business.”

Su Ping felt utterly helpless, as it seemed impossible to persuade the other. However, the system had helped him enough and he had nothing to complain about. His store was already level 7. He now needed to train a God Emperor pet that could enter the Chaos Talents Rank to fulfill the upgrade criteria. Furthermore, it required an astronomical amount of energy.

However, compared to the first requirement, the astronomical amount of energy points was easy.

One had to consider his recent revenue and the nonstop arrival of customers; it was only a matter of time to save enough energy points. Four or five years would probably be enough.

However, it was rather difficult to train a God Emperor beast that could be listed on the Chaos Talents Rank.

“The requirements for level 8 are really high as it is. To reach level 9, you wouldn’t ask me to nurture an Ancestral God pet, right?” Su Ping asked in his heart.

Chapter 1428 Imparting (2)

The system said casually, “Normal Ancestral God pets wouldn’t do. It requires the Undying State with at least two opened Dao Gates. Don’t ask me what Dao Gates are; you’ll know when you reach the Undying State.”

Again, Su Ping felt helpless. The system’s request was indeed outrageous.

Ancestral God pets... Very few people had one throughout history, right?

He could only heave a sigh. Fortunately, he had the young Chaos Beast, the Dark Dragon Hound and the others; all of them were in the Celestial State. They would become God emperors once they grasped their own Dao Hearts.

“They can become God Emperors immediately if I help them to grasp the three unparalleled Dao Hearts. However, I haven’t gathered enough energy to improve the store; it would be useless, even if they do advance. They can only increase my overall strength by a small margin, and that increase wouldn’t be worth mentioning when facing the Heavens.

“I’ll give them a chance to condense their own Dao Hearts in three to five years, which are three to five hundred years in the cultivation sites...” Su Ping mumbled.

He had grasped his own Dao Heart and was walking on a path of his own. He hoped that his battle pets could do the same.

He felt confident, and believed in their potential.

Even though all his pets had the humblest bloodlines except for the young Chaos Beast, their bloodlines had evolved and improved on their own after cultivating for such a long time. The limits of their bloodlines were broken time and time again; Su Ping believed that they would surpass their limits again in the future.

I’ll find time to give them the Dao Hearts. I wonder if it’ll cause a tribulation in this place... Su Ping’s eyes glittered.

He had promised them that he would give them Dao Hearts, hoping that their cultivation could advance. That way it would be safer for them to fly the ship while he was cultivating. After all, the low-tiered members of the Heavens were already God Emperors. They could probably avoid the weaker ones if they accidentally ran into them.

While resting in the store and fetching his pets, Su Ping sent a telepathic message to his master, asking him to accept a gift.

All the Celestials, including Shen Huang, were excited by the news: Su Ping was finally going to give them the Dao Hearts.

They weren’t confident of cultivating to higher levels on their own. Although Su Ping reminded them that the way was to find their Dao Hearts, it was easier said than done.

Danger could befall them at any moment; everybody wanted to be stronger.

They quickly gathered in Shen Huang’s palace.

“Guys, as informed, Xiao Su is planning to give us Dao Hearts, one at a time. For the sake of fairness, I’ve decided to draw lots,” said Shen Huang

Everybody’s eyes glittered. A Celestial expert smiled modestly and said, “Shen Huang, you’re too courteous. You should be the first to try.”

Shen Huang had the same idea, but Su Ping never mentioned anything and he, being Su Ping's master, was too proud to ask. Besides, Su Ping had told him to find his own Dao Heart. He did want to tell his disciple that he was overestimating him, yet he struggled to hold back, all for dignity's sake.

"Although Xiao Su is my disciple, his achievements are already greater than mine; now I must seek his advice on a lot of matters," said Shen Huang as he looked at the others, "We're the only embers left from our universe. We've weathered disasters by fighting together. I don't think it's necessary to divide us. I hope we can truly be united."

Everybody was dazed. They fell silent, as they recalled the things that happened before they left the universe.

Indeed, they had gone through many dangerous situations. They did prepare fire seeds, but they had probably died out. Only refugees remained; if they were killed, humanity would disappear from the map.

"Shen Huang, I do admire you for what you said," said one of the Celestials, conveying respect in his eyes. He had run into conflict with Shen Huang and Su Ping in the conference, he had completely let all of that go and felt embarrassed for his actions back then.

Maybe all the Celestials would have perished

– destroyed by the Heavens one by one without putting up any resistance—if Su Ping hadn't united them.

"Prepare to draw lots."

Shen Huang didn't say anything else. He knew that Su Ping never stayed in the store for long, and wanted to avoid wasting the young man's time.

"Here are eight divine weapons, including seven swords and a spear. I'll project them to a disrupted timeline. Whoever finds the spear will go first," said Shen Huang.

Everybody exchanged looks; none of them objected.

Shen Huang could have cheated. He could leave markers on the weapons to make them easier to find; however, he didn't.

He could have simply told Su Ping that he wanted to be first. They believed that the latter would have accepted, considering their master-disciple relationship.

Su Ping was even willing to give the Dao Hearts away to the people who were at odds with him in the past, not to mention his master.

Lots were drawn soon after.

Everyone was fully prepared. They took action right after Shen Huang threw the weapons. It wasn't only luck; strength was also a determining factor.

Soon after, someone found a sword and, feeling frustrated.

Then, a joyful voice was heard. "Found it."

The fortunate Celestial fetched the spear thrown into a chaotic time.

Shen Huang was also searching, but quickly lost the chance; he was both disappointed and relieved. The others could have thought he had cheated if he did find it first. It wasn't a bad outcome. It was fair and square. His turn would eventually come anyway.

"Congratulations, Chi Ying. Xiao Su is waiting for you. Go now," Shen Huang said.

Chi Huo snorted but didn't show his dissatisfaction, seeing that his old rival had gotten the chance.

The times called for unity. If he jumped out and stir trouble again, it would be against Shen Huang's will.

Behind Shen Huang's wish was Su Ping's thought.

"Okay!"

Sensing the eyes of admiration around him, Chi Ying flashed a smile and glanced at Chi Huo, only to discover that his old opponent wasn't sneering like he did in the past. He was surprised.

"Congratulations, go now," said Chi Huo peacefully.

Chi Ying smiled and said, "I hope you'll be lucky next time."

"Whatever. It will be my turn sooner or later," the other replied in a casual manner.

Chi Ying offered back a smile. He returned the spear to Shen Huang and left the palace.

The next moment, Chi Ying appeared outside of Su Ping's store.

The place was already crowded, mostly by Ascendant cultivators. There were some Star Lords were waiting in line, but other Ascendants had paid them to switch places.

Their deals were voluntary and Su Ping had no time to care about that. He simply allowed it.

All the Ascendants became solemn upon the Celestial's arrival, and stopped whispering amongst themselves. It became quiet all of a sudden.

Chi Ying was in a great mood. He smiled at the people in line and said, "Behave and don't disrespect Boss Su. Don't cause trouble here, alright?"

Everybody nodded. They were speechless. Who would dare cause trouble?

Su Ping was already the well-known commander. The only Celestials left listened to his orders. It wouldn't be outrageous to call him an autocratic emperor. That tiny pet store had become a holy land for all of humankind.

"Is there anything I can help you with?" asked Tang Ruyan who was at the door.

The guy was a Celestial State cultivator, but she had long grown accustomed and wasn't nervous at all.

“I’m here to visit Boss Su.” Chi Ying didn’t underestimate that Star Lord girl. He was quite courteous. “Please report my visit.”

“Oh, I’ll go and ask.” Tang Ruyan turned around and entered the store. Before she could say a word, Su Ping—who was examining the customers’ pets—said to her, “Let him in.”

Su Ping was more or less relieved to see that his master wasn’t the first to show up.

Tang Ruyan went outside again and said, “Go inside.”

Chi Ying was greatly relieved. He thanked her and then sorted out his clothes, before he solemnly stepped into the store as if he were about to enter some sort of sacred palace.

#### Chapter 1429 Tribulation on Behalf of the Heavens (1)

Chi Ying’s senses recovered instantly, no longer blocked by the store when he entered. There was an immediate feeling, an immeasurable aura that stood like a mountain. All his pores were shrinking beyond his control.

The store was quiet. There was only the occasional voice asking the name and condition of a certain.

Chi Ying looked at the source of the sound and noticed a man squatting in front of a ferocious beast, asking it to open its mouth. He placed his head in front of the scary big mouth and looked inside, completely at ease.

The pet was extremely obedient. Like a statue, it sat still with its mouth wide open. There was some fear in its eyes, as if afraid of something terrifying taking place by doing something wrong.

This is a truly horrifying pet store... Chi Ying thought.

“Boss Su.”

He immediately walked over with a warm smile on his face. His greeting was humble, without the arrogance he formerly showed during the conference.

Su Ping nodded and leaned back after some examination. He said to the battle pet’s master, “It’s been eating assorted foods, which resulted in blood maggots growing in its mouth. You must ask it to take care of its own hygiene. This time, I’ll do the cleaning for free.”

The middle-aged man felt truly flattered. He quickly replied, “How can I accept your service for free? Boss Su, just name a price, or I will feel uneasy.”

“This isn’t important.” Su Ping waved his hand, leaving the matter to rest. He invoked the power of Dao and simply eliminated the blood maggots found between the pet’s teeth. Those bugs weren’t simple; they were the cause for massive headaches, even for that Ascendant State beast, as it couldn’t kill them. It had to look for a doctor for assistance.

However, considering Su Ping’s level, he could address the problem even without having any facility or experience.

“Thank you very much, Boss Su.”



The middle-aged man quickly offered thanks, not insisting on the money part. Money was like garbage for people as powerful as Su Ping; insisting would be taken as an insult. He said timidly, "The usual ecosystem's cycle disappeared ever since we left our old universe. Wind Spirit Birds used to be the ones able to get rid of all the pet's food residue, but they should be extinct now, unless someone contracted one of them."

Su Ping fell silent. They could only save their own kind first when they left their home. Humans weren't the only life forms in the boundless universe.

Aside from humans, many species were destroyed along with the universe.

"One day, we will return to our universe and our hometown!" said Chi Ying nearby; however, it sounded like encouragement.

Such an answer left the middle-aged man shocked for a moment. He was quick to realize who it was and quickly offered a respectful bow.

Chi Ying waved hand right after. He then looked at Su Ping and stood with a solemn and pious manner.

"Follow me," Su Ping said to Chi Ying.

"All right."

Chi Ying nodded obediently; he was both anxious and hopeful. He was currently like a model student in school who followed Su Ping dutifully.

The latter took him to the test room, which had a boundless space.

Su Ping had at first thought that it was some sort of developed technology. But at this moment, he realized that it was a sophisticated Dao application.

After entering the room, Su Ping asked casually, "Why did they send you first?"

Chi Ying was instantly shocked. He swiftly replied, "Shen Huang asked us to draw lots. I was really lucky to get to be the first."

"A fair election..." Su Ping was enlightened. No wonder his master didn't want him to misunderstand. However, he didn't really care; he would have been more relieved if Chi Huo or Xu Kong were picked first.

However, since they had set their own rules, Su Ping didn't really care; it was only a matter of time, anyway.

"Are you ready?" Su Ping looked at him.

Chi Ying was rather anxious. "D-Do I have to make preparations?"

"The pursuit of the Great Dao is always risky. Are you ready in case you die here?" asked Su Ping.

Chi Ying's heart was racing. He asked prudently, "Boss Su, is the risk that high? I'm not really that talented. I'm worried..."

“It isn’t too risky. As long as you’re determined enough, I don’t think anything bad will happen,” said Su Ping casually. Actually, the risk involved when imparting the Great Dao was very low, or he wouldn’t have offered assistance. He only said it to test the receiver’s faith; it would be a waste if the recipients of the three unparalleled Dao Hearts weren’t determined enough.

Moreso, the three unparalleled Dao Hearts couldn’t have been developed easily. Their creation involved a lot of hard work.

“Well...”

Chi Ying felt like crying; he had never been told about the risk. He suddenly realized why Shen Huang didn’t use his privilege and simply went with a fair selection.

It’s true that nothing good is free in this world... Chi Ying smiled bitterly.

Su Ping remained silent, simply staring at the hopeful Celestial. He could tell from the flashing bitterness in the man’s eyes that there was some hesitation.

“Have you decided?” he asked.

Chi Ying’s heart shook. Seeing the young man’s peaceful eyes, he somehow found the courage and thus took a deep breath. “I’m ready. On the off chance I die trying, it’ll only prove that I wasn’t talented enough. This is the only opportunity in my life to become a universe dominator. I hope that I can seize it!”

Chapter 1430 Tribulation on Behalf of the Heavens (2)

Su Ping gazed at him and slightly nodded. “That’s the spirit. This is how a Celestial should be.”

Chi Ying smiled bitterly. Countless memories flashed in his heart, seemingly bidding farewell to his past.

It wasn’t easy for him to reach the Celestial State. Although he already had a lofty status as things stood, he was willing to go further after experiencing the fall of the universe; he would do so even at the cost of abandoning everything he had. “I have three unparalleled Dao Hearts. The first is Harmony, the second is Desolation, and the third is Hundred Phenomena.”

He briefly described the three Dao Hearts.

Su Ping had a solemn and serious expression as he said, “Which one do you want to pick?”

Chi Ying was astounded after hearing him out, never thinking that those Dao Hearts would be as powerful. He found it hard to imagine what kind of great talents could have developed them!

“I want Desolation. The best defense is offense,” said Chi Ying after some consideration.

Su Ping nodded and extended his hand, pulling the guy closer. He then pointed at Chi Ying’s head and said in a low voice, “We’re about to enter a different time and space. Try your best to understand.”

The man felt that his sight became blurry. Then, he found himself in a golden space; it was completely empty, only Su Ping was there, with a black, lifelike dragon beside him. The dragon was intimidating; its scales seemed to be made of black iron, while its eyes were deep and cold.

Chi Ying's heart skipped a beat and felt like he was dying when the dragon gazed at him.

The next moment, he realized that the black dragon was the Desolation Dao Heart.

Su Ping then began to impart the Great Dao.

The black dragon surrounded him. Its scales gradually fell and floated before his eyes like black petals. After a while, the scales gradually gathered and reassembled to become the black dragon once again.

The Celestial received a transmission with the Great Dao while the phenomenon took place. He was being enlightened as the information was poured in.

A long while later

Chi Ying felt as if 100,000 years had passed. It took so long he felt he had been reborn. However, the only difference was that the black dragon he saw in the beginning was a dragon no more, but a leaping Great Dao.

Furthermore, that Great Dao was made of countless Lesser Daos, which condensed into a Dao Heart.

"So, this is the Dao Heart. Who was it that carried such a strong resolve to pursue the Great Dao? They slashed everything to achieve their Dao..." Chi Ying mumbled.

He didn't realize that there was another black dragon by his side, except that it was much smaller than the one next to Su Ping. It was none other than the Desolation Dao Heart he had just comprehended.

Su Ping stared at the man and said, "Live up to this Dao Heart."

Chi Ying was solemn. Right when he had finally grasped the Dao Heart, there was a deep shock because of the faith that brought such a Dao Heart to life; the overall sensation felt like rebirth. He would never waste that Dao Heart, even without Su Ping saying so. The condensation of his Dao Heart would have a huge impact on his personality.

"Thank you, Boss Su. I'll surely live up to it!" said Chi Ying solemnly.

Su Ping nodded.

As the power ebbed, they both left the golden space and returned to the test room.

"Right now, we're outside of the universe. This is the Heavens' territory; I fear that you'll attract their attention if you go through your tribulation. So, I'll hold the tribulation for you!" said Su Ping.

Chi Ying's consciousness returned to his body. He was still assessing the enormous changes in his body and the abundant power, as well as reflecting on what he just learned, until he finally processed what Su Ping said. He was stunned.

"What?"

Chi Ying thought that he was hearing things. Su Ping is going to hold the tribulation for me?

"You've received the Dao Heart and unified the power of your universe; however, you cannot activate the power in full if your body doesn't go through a tribulation. If the Heavens can give you a tribulation, so can I," said Su Ping.

Chi Ying's pupils widened in shock.

Su Ping's words were earth shattering.

A tribulation on his, on behalf of the Heavens?

What a terrifying thought. But still, what great confidence and ambition!

He dares to compare himself to the Heavens!

"Boss Su, are you serious?" Chi Ying couldn't help but ask.

"I was just kidding."

"Oh..." Chi Ying was greatly relieved.

"Do you really think so?" Su Ping added.

Chi Ying was dumbfounded. Is he serious?

"Feel the changes in your body. We'll start the tribulation when you're ready," said Su Ping.

Chi Ying looked at Su Ping, clearly stunned; he thought his head was about to explode. Sharing such news with other Celestials would be like a nuclear explosion.

What level is Su Ping at exactly?

Giving him a Dao Heart would essentially transform him into a universe dominator, which was the summit of cultivation he knew!

However, Su Ping could transform them into universe dominators. That method was beyond their imagination.

"I'll be back in ten minutes." Su Ping rose and gave him a chance to experience his power alone. He seized the chance to offer a hand with customers and catch up with Joanna and the others. He had spent too much time in cultivation sites and rarely talked to them; he wasn't familiar with the business anymore. So, Su Ping cherished the days when he personally ran the place.

Ten minutes passed.

Su Ping returned to the test room. He saw that Chi Ying was in an accelerated time and space, experiencing all sorts of powers there.

He waited quietly for two minutes. Chi Ying seemed to become alert and left the accelerated time and space. He was excited, and even more respectful. "Boss Su, I'm eternally in your debt. Whenever you need anything, just tell me!"

Su Ping was nonchalant about it, only saying, "If you're done, get ready for the tribulation."

Chi Ying was excited. His Dao Heart merged with his universe, and could ascertain how weak he was before.

Maybe Celestials like them were even weaker than ants in Su Ping's eyes.

“Thank you very much, Boss Su.” Chi Ying stopped there. Su Ping was already an absolutely unfathomable existence in his heart, and would believe everything the other said. After all, the power he had experienced was real. It was hard to imagine that he could receive such a terrifying amount of power through a single Great Dao transmission.

Su Ping became serious. It was his first time trying to emulate a tribulation for someone else. He feared that he wouldn't be able to control the intensity well. If it was too weak, it wouldn't be effective. If it was too powerful, it could kill the target...

“Get ready.”

Su Ping then opened his mouth, transforming the surroundings into a primitive planet. They entered one of the small worlds that were stored inside the test room.

The young man leaped to the sky, unleashing the Heavenly Tribulation power from his body.

The first layer of his universe was the world of tribulation, and its power was bursting at the moment.

Boom!

Dark clouds gathered, and the sky above the planet instantly turned dark.

Chi Ying stood in midair and looked up at the sky, unable to be any more shocked. He felt that his blood was freezing as he noticed the raging wind and the oppressing clouds above him.

That was indeed a true Heavenly Tribulation.

Su Ping... A human being had truly created a Heavenly Tribulation on behalf of the Heavens!

Boom!

Thunderclouds gathered, with terrifying lightning concentrated at the core, which was a horrifying vortex. Countless silver lightning snakes were wandering in the storm.

Chi Ying found it difficult to even swallow. He was both shocked that Su Ping had invoked a Heavenly Tribulation, and scared of the tribulation's magnitude. Is it something he could resist? Did Su Ping want to kill him with a lightning strike?

Pet Store 1431

Chapter 1431 Leader (1)

While Chi Ying was panicking, the first lightning bolt struck down.

The immense sense of crisis quickly dragged his consciousness back to his body. He trembled as he looked up. He was wreathed in flames, and the reflection of his universe surfaced behind his back.

As flames were swept out, he unconsciously performed the ultimate skill he was best at.

After a boom, the lightning bolt that came crashing down collapsed and the flames began to spread violently, like countless sharp blades, crazily destroying everything in the void.

Chi Ying was instantly stunned.

Is it... my own move?

It was like the first time experiencing his new self.

So powerful. The terrifying Dao cracks in midair even made him tremble.

Have I become so strong after receiving the Dao Heart?

Thunderclouds were roiling again in the void.

The lightning accumulating was stronger and greater than before.

However, Chi Ying was filled with newfound confidence. His eyes were glittering. He gazed at the lightning above with anticipation and excitement.

In a blur, he seemed to notice a figure behind the Lightning Tribulation.

That figure was like the great Heavenly Dao responsible for all tribulations.

He was entranced for an instant, and his heart was suddenly overwhelmed by indescribable awe.

Boom!

The second lightning bolt struck down.

Chi Ying took a deep breath and made a sudden attack. This time, he had a better control of his strength, not exhausting all of it like he did in the previous round, saving 30% of his strength and using the power of his universe to counter the lightning.

The lightning collapsed, but the dispersing tribulation aura ensnared his body like countless threads. The stinging pain made his body shiver uncontrollably; some sort of power seemed to be squeezed out of his body.

While resisting, Chi Ying built up his own power. He could vaguely sense that something in the Heavenly Tribulation was helping him polish his body and break the bottleneck.

Chi Ying was overly grateful. That arrogant kid had surprisingly helped him a lot, despite their past grudges. He felt somewhat ashamed. He quietly absorbed the tribulation power, his aura gradually

increasing, just like a whale awakening in the deep sea. A heavy and terrifying aura was gradually spread out.

Time flew.

One lightning bolt after another struck down. Chi Ying gained better control of his new strength while resisting. He blocked them all.

Dawn arrived after the thunderclouds dispersed. The figure in the high sky was like a dazzling sun, one that couldn't be looked at directly.

Chi Ying couldn't help but narrow his eyes as he looked at Su Ping, to then look away. He examined himself carefully and heaved a sigh in the end.

He was immensely stronger than before, when he was a Celestial.

He felt that he could kill his previous self with one finger at the moment.

Maybe Su Ping considered Celestials like them as weaklings.

The very idea brought about mixed feelings. He found that Su Ping was a rather benevolent person. He would have casually slapped all those Celestials to death if he were in Su Ping's shoes after being provoked.

There are always stronger people. Our past selves were like frogs at the bottom of a well. So stupid...

Chi Ying secretly heaved a sigh. They had been standing at the top of the universe for hundreds of thousands of years, considering themselves to be the top life forms that were closer to the apex of cultivation. In retrospect, it was just hilarious and stupid. Their privileges in the past were a complete waste.

He was just an apprentice on the cultivation path. What levels are above the universe dominator realm?

Chi Ying looked forward to it, but he knew it would be impossible for him to reach that point in his entire life. It would have been impossible for him to advance without Su Ping's help; if he wanted to go further, he would have to count on the latter. However, the levels above the universe dominator were much closer to the cultivator's final destination. Nobody could go there solely relying on someone else.

Su Ping descended from the sky and made a casual hand wave. The desolate planet was gone, and they returned to the empty, white-walled test room. It didn't seem big, but they would have to traverse the distance of a planet's diameter before they reached any of the walls.

"Right now, you're already a true universe dominator. I hope you won't forget your responsibility and continue cultivating hard. Don't let arrogance rule you," said Su Ping.

Chi Ying looked at Su Ping with genuine respect in his eyes. He nodded solemnly and said, "Boss Su, rest assured; I will. I have too many questions in regards to cultivation. Maybe the real final destination of all cultivation is to understand everything in the world, without having the slightest doubt."

"More or less. You could say that," said Su Ping, "Anyway, that level is still too far away for us."

Indeed... Chi Ying thought to himself. He asked curiously and prudently, "Boss Su, what levels are above the universe dominator? Are you there?"

He couldn't help but address Su Ping in a respectful way.

Su Ping slightly shook his head and said, "Right now, I'm only in the Celestial State. Above the universe dominator is the Undying State; once you cultivate it, you'll be among the strongest in every universe. You can then travel across all universes. The corpse we saw before was in the Undying State. That is why it was immortal."

"You're still in the Celestial State, Boss Su?"

Chi Ying was visibly surprised. However, Su Ping's casual expression made him aware that the young man was neither joking nor lying.

Chapter 1432 Leader (2)

The revelation gave the man a shock. Su Ping, who was barely a Celestial, actually helped him become a universe dominator... That was like an elementary school student teaching a college student!

All of Su Ping's information and history popped up in Chi Ying's head, suddenly realizing that the boy had always been fighting and killing enemies stronger than him. He was an unparalleled genius he couldn't understand with common sense.

What will happen when he becomes a universe dominator? Chi Ying thought. He looked at Su Ping and said, "That immortal body was in the Undying State, and still, such a great figure was reduced to that miserable condition. There must be higher levels above the Undying State, right?"

"Yes. That should be the end of our cultivation path," said Su Ping, "It's also the ultimate goal of all cultivators."

"The end of cultivation..." Chi Ying mumbled. He suddenly had an uncanny urge. Only a level separated him from that state. Who wouldn't want to see the view at the end of all cultivation?

Although he knew he probably didn't have the necessary potential, he felt a strong desire, craving to cultivate and get stronger.

"Off you go. I need to enter secluded training now; I'll ask for someone else next time I come out," said Su Ping.

Chi Ying snapped out of his reverie and quickly said, "Boss Su, I'll always remember your favor. It was stupid of me to have offended you in the past. Please forgive me!"

"That's all in the past," said Su Ping, waving a hand in dismissal.

Chi Ying was greatly relieved. He said with a smile, "Thank you, Boss Su. I won't bother you anymore then. Goodbye."

"All right."

Su Ping nodded.



He received a message from Shen Huang right after leaving the store; the latter asked him to go to the palace.

He vaguely guessed something and simply flashed over.

Chi Ying reached the palace soon after. Lots of barriers had been set up outside the palace; strong enough to fend off Celestial attacks. However Chi Ying found them as vulnerable as paper at the moment; he could tear them apart with the slightest effort.

He heaved a sigh, knowing he was no longer who he used to be. Still, he didn't let this go to his head; after all, the other Celestials in the palace would reach his level sooner or later.

Chi Ying entered the palace, then saw that all the other Celestials were there. They never left.

"Were you all waiting for me?" Chi Ying couldn't help but smile.

He could imagine how curious and apprehensive were the others about the matter.

"You..."

Shen Huang sized him up with astonishment on his face.

The other Celestials were just as shocked. The palace was caught in a brief silence. Moments later, one of them finally made a prudent question, "Have you... succeeded?"

Chi Ying was emitting such an oppressive aura that none of them dared to speak as freely as before.

"Yes. I've received Boss Su's Dao Heart and became a universe dominator," said Chi Ying with a smile. He used to be taciturn, but he himself felt he had become much more approachable. Even Chi Huo, his old nemesis, was no longer as disagreeable as in the past.

"Just as I expected..."

"Universe dominator... He really did it!"

"I feel like I'm facing that member of the Heavens again..."

All the Celestials were mumbling in shock. Chi Ying's transformation was too great. It left a deep impact on them.

"B-Boss Su was able to make one of us turn into a universe dominator so quickly. What kind of terrifying being is he exactly?" asked one of the Celestials all of a sudden.

The others narrowed their eyes. They discovered, to their surprise, that the answer was beyond the limits of their imagination.

Chi Ying chuckled upon noticing their reactions; he was just as shocked as them earlier on. He said, "I asked Boss Su. The universe dominator realm is not that impressive. There's still the Undying State above it, and after that is the true final destination of us cultivators. It means that I'm still an apprentice working my way up. I'm still far from the top!"

Everyone exchanged bewildered looks. Shen Huang had mentioned that state earlier, but they only believed it until that very moment.

“If you’re just an apprentice while being a universe dominator, then what are we? Worms?” said a Celestial with a bitter tone.

“I think it’s better to call ourselves trash,” said Chi Huo.

Everybody flashed helpless smiles, mulling over the matter with mixed feelings. They had previously taken themselves to be the top life forms, while the universe dominator realm was just a legend. They finally realized that they were no different from the mortals they looked down upon when in the presence of real experts.

“Chi Ying, how many of us do you think you can defeat at once?” asked Xu Kong, curious about Chi Ying’s improved combat ability. They all sensed that the latter’s transformation was great and terrifying, but they wanted to know the specifics.

“You?”

Dazed, Chi Ying noticed the curiosity in their eyes. He felt amused by it, and answered with a smile, “One hand.”

“You mean five?” Everybody was stunned.

“No.” Chi Ying shook his head. “I can beat you all with just one hand.”

They answered with dumbfoundment and silence.

None of them thought that Chi Ying was bragging, since the guy was indeed emitting an ominous, abyssal aura. Even though he was just standing there, they felt they had been put in a cage with a ferocious beast, and were unconsciously suppressing a bone-deep fear.

Besides, the universe dominator realm was the Heavens’ level. They had seen those creature’s combat ability, which was too high for them to withstand as they were.

“The cultivation path is long and hard. We haven’t even embarked on it yet,” said one of the Celestials, feeling disappointed.

“I hope I’m next. I can’t wait to experience this kind of power,” said Chi Huo, clenching his fist.

His whole body was itchy, seeing his old nemesis relishing in the spotlight.

Chi Ying smiled, still silent. He merely said to Shen Huang later, “You should all get ready. I can take care of moving the planet for now; you can replace me next time one of you advances. I can figure out a way to avoid the Heavens if we encounter them.”

Shen Huang nodded. “You can take the wheel then.”

“Right, didn’t you have to transcend the Heavenly Tribulation to break through?” asked one of the men present.

Chi Ying put on a mysterious smile and said, “I did, but it’s not a Heavenly Tribulation.”

“You did?”

Everybody was dumbfounded. None of them saw any signs of a tribulation.

“You’ll know when the time comes.” Chi Ying didn’t elaborate.

All of them huffed and snorted, seeing that the fellow was acting all mysterious, but they didn’t ask. They were Celestial cultivators; none of them were stupid. They could guess that it probably had something to do with Su

Ping.

Back in the pet store, Su Ping picked Ascendant State pets that required professional training and entered the Archean Divinity.

After randomly appearing in the void, Su Ping hid himself in the Original Dao World where he wouldn’t be detected, then spread out his senses and soon found a city, hundreds of thousands of kilometers away.

He entered the city and figured out its name. Based on a map he obtained from the Heaven Path Institute, he then looked for the most prosperous metropolis nearby.

He then snuck into the metropolis and investigated.

Very soon, in an intelligence agency found in that metropolis-Su Ping learned some news about the Rain Clan, but there weren’t any updates about the Ancestral Gods.

Obviously, the news about the Ancestral Gods wasn’t something to be publicly discussed.

However, the Rain Clan doesn’t seem to be on full alert because of me...

Based on the intelligence he bought, Su Ping learned that many deployed experts of the Rain Clan had been contacted to return home. It was said that something huge had happened.

It seemed to be a normal action, but he still sensed that something was unusual.

He had already escaped from the Rain Clan’s grasp; they would have sent out people to search for him. Why were they recalled? Were they afraid he would return? They couldn’t be defending against the Heaven Path Institute either.

The Ancestral God has already woken up; he probably won’t go back to sleep so soon. After all, such a huge thing happened and he even returned defeated. If I were him, I’d be furious for a while...

Su Ping’s eyes glittered. He thought of an explanation: The Rain Clan recalled its members probably because the clan’s Ancestral God was away at the moment!

Chapter 1433 Gathering of Ancestral Gods (1)

Their members were summoned back. Are they afraid that someone would attack their base while the Ancestral God is away?

Su Ping felt tempted. The idea of attacking their base did occur to him, but he soon dropped it. After all, the Rain Clan would probably not be so stupid as to fight him outside of the barrier after the previous incident.

The Rain Clan's barrier was personally set up by the Ancestral God. Not even Su Ping could break it.

I must return and meet the Chaos Perception Dragon to let him know about this. The Ancestral God must be conspiring with other Ancestral Gods to hunt him down and retaliate against me.

Su Ping was in no mood to stay anymore. He left the city and took to the sky. He tapped into the Original Dao World and located the borderlands where the Chaos Perception Dragon lived.

The borderlands were extremely vast, containing millions of mountains and billions of swamps. An endless amount of ferocious beasts lurked there, making it both a heaven and a hell for explorers.

Su Ping went to the area's east side and moved straight ahead. Once he found the edge of the region, there were more ferocious beasts than there were in other places. One of the Divine Eyes—the sources of divine power—was there. Divine power flowed out from it endlessly.

Su Ping had gained his godly constitution in one of the Divine Eyes; however, back then he was too weak to see through their mysteries.

That particular Divine Eye was home to the Chaos Perception Dragon and a great cultivation land.

Su Ping reached the Divine Eye soon after. Hardly had he arrived when he sensed the dangerous beasts lurking there. Enormous bones were piled up on the mountains, left exposed in the wilderness for countless years. Their owners used to be as strong as gods when they were alive.

Our hero preferred not to waste time dealing with those ferocious beasts—even though he was no weaker than the God Emperor beasts, and he could handle anything except for the Ancestral Gods. However, in order to see the Chaos Perception Dragon sooner, Su Ping took out one of its scales, and the imbued aura was spread out. All the creatures would avoid such presence.

Su Ping moved forward completely unhindered. He soon saw the Chaos Perception Dragon, which was still lying on the ground. In front of its mountainous body was the young Chaos Beast, currently enveloped in purple light. All the divine power was rushing into its body. There was also a stream of pure divine power from the Divine Eye in the distance, which looked like a golden river.

As the energy polished and filled the young pet, its aura became denser. It was like an ocean where a tide was raging; the violent power in its body could be detected.

Su Ping approached quietly, trying not to disturb the young Chaos Beast. He said to the Chaos Perception Dragon, "Senior, the Ancestral God that fought you might come again with other Ancestral Gods."

The grand creature gave Su Ping an indifferent gaze, his pupil looking like the sun hanging in the sky. "Where did you learn the news?"

"I investigated and found out," Su Ping replied.

The Chaos Perception Dragon withdrew its gaze and focused its attention on the young Chaos Beast again. "It doesn't matter. They came to trouble me once, but I knocked them away. I didn't kill them because they ran too fast, not because I couldn't..."

After hearing its confident declaration, Su Ping smiled bitterly. "In any case, senior, you should be careful. If they've already come once, they must be aware of how strong you are and they would definitely come prepared this time."

"So what if they're prepared? When you're strong enough, no matter how well-prepared someone is, they're just mobsters if they don't exceed the limit of your strength." There was pride and disdain in the dragon's voice.

Su Ping thought for a moment and realized that the answer made sense. However, an Ancestral God could really suppress other Ancestral Gods easily?

"There's nothing to worry about. Just go and cultivate. Don't waste your talent," said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Su Ping stayed silent. He looked at the young Chaos Beast and said goodbye.

He summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets, and went looking for more God Emperor beasts so they could spar with them.

"Senior, can I go to the Divine Eye one more time?" asked Su Ping. "I want to see what's in the deepest part."

"You'd better not go inside."

What the Chaos Perception Dragon said next astonished Su Ping. "I allowed you to enter because you were too weak and you could only enter the shallow area. You're now strong enough to enter deeper regions. I fear that it'll cause unnecessary trouble. This Divine Eye... is an artifact."

"An artifact?"

Su Ping felt dazed. "It's not some sort of natural phenomenon of this world?"

"Ha." The Chaos Perception Dragon laughed, as if amused by Su Ping's naive remark. It said coldly, "This would have been a desolate world without those artifacts. All right. Don't think about it until you become an Ancestral God; you're too weak to know the secret right now."

Su Ping became even more curious as he heard this. He said, "You said that I would cause unnecessary trouble. Is it possible that the artifact is... alive?"

"That depends on your definition of life." The Chaos Perception Dragon's words were rather sophisticated.

"Plants are lives, stones are lives, the universe is a life, and some natural phenomena you see are also lives, such as wind, cloud and lightning!" said the Chaos Perception Dragon indifferently, "If you define life in such a way, this artifact can be considered a living creature."

## Chapter 1434 Gathering of Ancestral Gods (2)

Su Ping understood the concept. He nodded and dropped the subject. He then asked the Dark Dragon Hound to look for nearby God Emperors. They quickly found a divine beast that they had beaten up earlier, and the latter was so scared that it fled the moment it saw them. However, Su Ping flashed over and blocked its escape route. He said with a smile, "Play with my buddies for a while."

"Which clan are you from? Don't push too far. If you're too outrageous, I'll eat anyone from your clan I come across," said the divine beast angrily.

It had been terribly beaten up by Su Ping the previous time, so it wasn't really confident of making such a claim.

"You'll die if you dare eat any of them." Su Ping smiled and then asked the Dark Dragon Hound and the others to "greet" their old friend.

His pets had fought the beast before; although they didn't win in their last encounter, they had gained experience. They felt excited as they surrounded the beast again, hoping to subdue it.

Time flew. Several days passed in the blink of an eye.

One day, a rumbling noise came from the distance. A God Emperor beast that was fiercely fighting against the pet beasts felt so frightened that it turned tail and fled without caring about their incoming attacks.

Su Ping—who had been observing the battle and considering his things—was surprised by the unexpected noise. He sensed the horrifying pressure of an Ancestral God in the air.

"The Rain Clan?"

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. He didn't expect that the Rain Clan would decide to act that quickly.

He looked at the source of the aura, which was a behemoth that looked like a walking titan. It stepped out of the void and stood in front of the Chaos Perception Dragon lying on the ground.

Su Ping changed his expression. His killing intent surged out and he quickly moved closer.

He was still too weak to fight an Ancestral God, but he had to help using his resurrection advantage.

Right after his aggressive arrival, he was dumbfounded by what he saw. The intimidating beast suddenly crouched in front of the Chaos Perception Dragon and concealed its aura obediently.

Su Ping was stunned, hovering in midair and not knowing what to do.

The Chaos Perception Dragon glanced at Su Ping who had just arrived, with a bit of gentleness in his eyes. Soon after the creature regained its usual coldness and said, "Relax. This is just my buddy."

Su Ping opened his mouth in shock.

The Chaos Perception Dragon has a buddy too? And it's an Ancestral God beast?

"Boss, who's this god?" The giant ape-like Ancestral God raised its head curiously and grimaced. "Did he come here by accident? I happen to be hungry."

Su Ping instantly sensed that a ferocious aura had locked onto him.

“Senior, are the Four Ferocious Beasts on close terms?” Su Ping asked the Chaos Perception Dragon.

The latter replied casually, “Make no mistake. He’s not one of the Four Ferocious Beasts. The four of us have taken a neutral stance; we can join forces if those gods gather and try to kill us. We won’t hesitate to take action and stomp those gods even if they’re only trying to get one of us. The Four Ferocious Beasts is not a grand name; there should only be one king.”

Su Ping was stunned by this, and could only smile bitterly. He was able to understand the relationship of the Four Ferocious Beasts. The most surprising fact was that the newly arrived Ancestral God beast was not even among them. It seemed that there were still huge gaps in power amongst them, and the Chaos Perception Dragon was undoubtedly on the top tier.

“Weird. Since when are you so close to gods?” The apelike Ancestral God heard their conversation and felt curious, finally dropping the idea of eating the young man.

“Don’t ask what you shouldn’t ask. Why are you here?” said the dragon indifferently.

The other behemoth slapped its head rather innocently. “I almost forgot. I just saw some Ancestral Gods passing through my territory; they seemed to be looking for something. I tailed them and eavesdropped, only to find that they were looking for you. So, I came to report the matter to you.”

The Chaos Perception Dragon couldn’t help but glance at Su Ping. “They must be the guys you talked about.”

Su Ping nodded and said, “Looks like it. How many Ancestral Gods are there in total?”

The ferocious beast glanced at Su Ping, only to discover that the young god was not scared of him at all, which puzzled him. However, he detected the abundant aura of chaos on Su Ping, vaguely guessing that the young man could be somehow related to his boss. He then changed his attitude and said politely, “There are six Ancestral Gods altogether.”

“Six. That should be right,” said the Chaos Perception Dragon all of a sudden.

Su Ping and the ferocious beast were dazed. The next moment—six figures appeared out of nowhere, coming from six directions. Their divine power surged out and surrounded the place, forming an independent world.

Su Ping saw the illusions made by the universes behind their backs and the connections of their divine power. Their power had completely isolated the place.

Is this the power Ancestral Gods can muster?

They could cut the grand universe apart by joining hands!

“You...”

The ferocious beast changed his expression; realization dawned upon him and anger followed. “You followed me here?”

“You’re right. This demonic ape is indeed rather dumb,” said a glowing Ancestral God who wore a tall jade hat.

“How else could we find the nest of this particular ferocious beast? It’s actually living near the Divine Eye. This is a good environment. Truly bold,” said an Ancestral Goddess who had an alluring body figure, wreathed in purple light. Her voice was sweet and intoxicating

“However, we must now take care of this demonic ape. It’s rather troublesome. Which of you wants to do the honors?” said an imposing person who held a spear. He looked like a tough young man. “Let me. Give me some time; I can kill it as long as it doesn’t run off,” said a chuckling fellow, who was another Ancestral God. “That’s the brat who killed multiple God Emperors of the Rain Clan, right? I heard that he’s a human being who rose to prominence a few years ago. I didn’t expect him to be a descendant of one of the Four Ferocious Beasts. Your God Emperors’ deaths are not surprising; I didn’t expect that a hybrid could be such a genius. We should try with a ferocious beast sometime,” said another Ancestral God, chuckling with a folded fan.

Su Ping saw that he looked similar to the guy from the Chentian Clan he had killed. His face turned cold.

“Since he’s here, we’ll just finish him off while we’re at it.” The Rain Clan’s Ancestral God was cold and determined to kill Su Ping. Never did he imagine he would be insulted by a God King.

“Let’s make things clear.” The charming Ancestral Goddess smiled. “He’s a Dao Child of the Heaven Path Institute; you should take care of the grudges between him and the Rain Clan on your own. We just came here to hunt this evil beast. You don’t need our help to deal with this brat, do you?”

The Rain Ancestor snorted. “Don’t waste my time. I certainly don’t need your help.”

“Wow. You’re so mean. You weren’t like this when you asked us to come,” said the Ancestral Goddess after a chuckle.

The Rain Ancestor was about to say something, when he suddenly changed his expression. Not just him, the other five Ancestral Gods took swift action. The nearby time and space exploded, and the mountainous Chaos Perception Dragon slowly stood up.

The young Chaos Beast was sent back to Su Ping, still covered in purple light; it seemed to be going through some sort of transformation in that status.

“Don’t disturb it. Take care of it for me,” said the Chaos Perception Dragon indifferently.

“Senior, can you defeat five of them on your own? If you can’t, let’s just make a run for it. Don’t bother with me,” said Su Ping immediately. He retrieved the young Chaos Beast so that the battle wouldn’t affect its transformation.

“Up until now, I’ve only eaten four Ancestral Gods. They all tasted good.” The Chaos Perception Dragon licked its lips and its amber eyes gradually turned dark red, like two blood moons floating in the sky.

Chapter 1435 Madness (1)

“You cunning gods, I won’t spare you!”



The demonic ape also stood up, feeling embarrassed and ashamed. It had gone there to report, but its actions guided the enemies over, getting its boss in danger.

“Don’t say that we’re cunning. It’s just you being too simpleminded.” The alluring Ancestral Goddess chuckled. “This is wisdom, which is part of us. Although you might not have it, you can’t prevent us from using it.”

Su Ping stepped up and said loudly, “Ancestral Gods, you’re the exalted ancestors of your respective clans. Is it fair to fight two with the six of you?”

“Who do you think you are to question us?” said an Ancestral God, who then urged the Rain Ancestor, “Finish him off already. I would have obliterated him if he wasn’t the Dao Child of the Heaven Path Institute. They didn’t even check his bloodline; it is truly getting worse and worse.”

“Don’t intervene. Just hide somewhere.” The Chaos Perception Dragon spoke to Su Ping via telepathy, then stood in front of him. Its power surged and covered the young man with a vortex-like barrier.

“Senior, you tried it before; I can’t be killed, not even by you. There’s no need to protect me. It would only distract you,” said Su Ping right after.

The Chaos Perception Dragon’s eyes glittered. “They’ll probably unfold some sort of ancient array to isolate you from the world. Are you sure the existence backing you can still shelter you?”

“Yes!” said Su Ping.

The protective vortex was slowly dispelled. The Chaos Perception Dragon didn’t insist; he only said with a cold tone, “You’d better not die, or that kid will be mine.”

Su Ping felt warmth conveyed in those words. His heart felt hot as he smiled. “I will never let it come to harm. Senior, be careful!”

Boom. The six Ancestral Gods attacked fiercely; the void exploded all of a sudden.

The aftershock of the violent explosion was spread out. Su Ping resisted the effect with all his might. He summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and merged with it; a dog head appeared on his shoulder. Su Ping then said, “Let’s experience the Ancestral Gods’ power.”

“Howl!”

The Dark Dragon Hound roared, full of fighting will.

“Rot in hell!”

That cold voice was suddenly heard inside Su Ping’s consciousness, with a figure appearing out of nowhere and standing in front of Su Ping, feeling at home, as if he would have been there since the establishment of the universe. He was none other than the Rain Ancestor.

His eyes were cold and aggressive. His face was hidden; only his eyes were visible, full of coldness and killing intent.

Next, Su Ping felt that his entire body was frozen and all the Great Dao in the world was blocked. There was a special force field surrounding him, which kept on shrinking.

Is this the power of the Undying Universe?

A grand burst of light emerged from Su Ping's eyes. He roared furiously, and his universe of chaos appeared behind his back. All the Great Dao found in its layers were manifested, transforming into a sharp sword.

The edge of that weapon had countless Great Daos and terrifying traits; it could slice and tear anything to pieces.

He waved his giant sword and brutally moved to slash the Ancestral God.

While entranced, Su Ping seemed to be back in the Heaven Path Institute's arena. The Ancestral God's shadow that Mo Feng, prince of the Rain Clan, had summoned almost made him collapse. Back then, the Ancestral God's magnificent shadow had already imposed an unbearable pressure. He felt the great force on his back.

A long time passed; that Rain Clan prince was already dust by then. Now the challenge was to face the true body of the shadow he fought against in the past; the Rain Clan ancestor in the flesh. Su Ping swung his sword fiercely!

"Useless!"

Coldness flashed in the Rain Ancestor's eyes. The power displayed surprised him and invoked his killing intent; he could not allow such a genius to thrive.

He suddenly understood why his clan's God Emperors were executed in quick succession; the young man had a power exceeding that of normal God Emperors.

And all of this while being just a God King.

A finger suddenly pointed at the young man, and the giant sword came to a sudden stop. It shook and hummed; then, its edge collapsed into countless pieces.

All the condensed Great Daos were instantly disintegrated and shattered.

The Rain Ancestor had a deeper understanding of the Great Dao, allowing him to break Su Ping's Great Dao with ease.

"You'd be just as useless in my eyes if we were on the same level!" Su Ping's eyes almost collapsed. He became even angrier, as he glared back without an ounce of fear.

The Rain Ancestor's eyes turned cold. He suddenly waved a hand

Su Ping instantly felt how a universe was crushing him. There seemed to be a world in his enemy's fingers, which contained an unstoppable power.

He mustered all of his strength to gather the broken sword again and attack.

Concurrently, he used the Contract Dao Heart and drew the world's power within a radius of 10,000 kilometers. A terrifying power fell into his control after the contract was established.

Su Ping expanded the range from 10,000 kilometers to 50,000 kilometers, almost reaching his limits.

“Go to hell!!” Su Ping roared, his body ablaze with golden flames.

Roar!!

Another roar was heard coming from Su Ping’s shoulder; it was the Dark Dragon Hound’s furious head. All its fur was standing at the moment, making it look like a ferocious wolf aiming to bite the enemy.

The sword was broken, along with the wolf’s sharp teeth. An arm suddenly approached and pierced Su Ping’s body.

Chapter 1436 Madness (2)

Following that move, an infinite Dao power burst out of the arm, like the explosion of a billion nuclear bombs.

Boom. Su Ping’s body exploded, his consciousness melted in an instant.

The gloomy Rain Emperor withdrew his arm. The power released by Su Ping earlier was enough to even astonish someone like him; it was no longer on the God Emperor’s level. Although not quite at that level yet, it wasn’t something that God Emperors could handle! He was just a God King... Is the ferocious beast’s bloodline really so extraordinary? The Rain Ancestor’s eyes glittered as he watched the battle in the distance. An idea suddenly occurred to him; the chaos bloodline was the most ancient and terrifying bloodline in the world, which contained an endless number of bloodlines.

Some of those Ancestral Gods carried chaos bloodlines. Their strength was terrifying.

While the Rain Ancestor’s eyes glittered-all of a sudden, a dazzling sword aura illuminated his face, instantly making him narrow his eyes. It was a first for him to be shocked and appalled.

After a boom, the Rain Ancestor tilted his head and the edge of the sword was shattered; however, it left a deep wound on his face when brushing past it.

The wound cut deep into the bone, but it healed quickly. All the Dao power was cleaned.

The Rain Ancestor turned around and looked back, his shock already gone. He stared fixedly at Su Ping, whom he had just killed.

Being an Ancestral God, he had clearly noticed that Su Ping was as dead as he could be after receiving his attack.

There was no way he could resurrect.

He had executed Su Ping, erasing him from all past events in time and space, but the young man was standing right there as fit as a fiddle.

Illusion?

Clone?

The Rain Ancestor thought of many possibilities, but discarded all of them. His senses couldn’t be wrong. He had certainly killed him...

“What are you looking at? Your opponent is me.” Su Ping gave him a small grin. He had just merged with the Dark Dragon Hound, with fighting will and provocation in his eyes. “I’ve never had an Ancestral God as my sparring partner before. Practice with me and help me find my limits!”

“What are you exactly?” said the Rain Ancestor, however. He didn’t attack right away, and simply observed the human.

“That’s rude, especially coming from a top existence like you,” said Su Ping with a smile, “If you truly don’t know, you may consider me your long lost father. I won’t mind.”

The Rain Ancestor stayed calm, knowing it was just Su Ping trying to provoke him, preventing him from joining the beast hunt.

However, he found the thought hilarious and ridiculous. He was also somewhat cautious. What made Su Ping so confident, giving him such a crazy drive?

His uncanny survival just then?

The Rain Ancestor stayed quiet. He rushed forward and condensed his universe on his arm, sweeping its power and destroying Su Ping’s sword again. The arm pierced the latter’s body before he could react. The attack affected time and space, crushing him again.

This time, he used almost 50% of his power, to make sure that Su Ping would be completely obliterated.

All the Great Dao in the world was erased by him at the same time.

The Rain Ancestor felt relieved as he looked at the empty space. Maybe it was an illusion? Anyway, that was not the time to investigate just yet.

He was about to join the others when another sword aura attacked him.

“Where are you looking?” Su Ping’s voice sounded.

The Rain Ancestor’s expression froze. He waved a hand and made the approaching sword aura collapse, just before he turned around and gazed at Su Ping.

The latter looked back with a smile then merged again with the Dark Dragon Hound. “Show me the full strength of an Ancestral God. Take out your Undying Universe; let’s see if you’re truly immortal.”

The Rain Ancestor’s eyes were trembling. Two times in a row; that was not a hallucination. His second attack was overbearing, and yet, Su Ping was still able to resurrect...

He felt terrified, suspecting that there was something wrong with him.

Or maybe I was trapped in some sort of illusion created by the Chaos Perception Dragon since the very beginning?

He closed his eyes and examined carefully, confirming that he was “sober” at the moment.

Bang!

Su Ping swung his sword in rapid succession, only to be caught and destroyed by the Rain Ancestor with ease.

However, he discovered that the Rain Ancestor needed to use some strength to deal with his attacks; it wasn't a simple dismissal.

A radius of 50,000 kilometers is my limit... Su Ping sensed that all the cells in his body were filled up and on the verge of exploding. He took a deep breath, trying to melt the power with Dao skills. Very soon, his sword technique changed. He was at times stronger and then weaker, now sharper and then more condensed.

"Not hallucinating..." The Rain Ancestor opened his eyes. He was positive that his current status was real and his senses couldn't be fake.

He even spread his senses to the universe around him, hoping to find if some sort of artifact had caused such misconception.

However, he had yet to detect an anomaly.

He couldn't help but look at Su Ping while expressing uncertainty. If this is the real world, why could Su Ping resurrect after I kill him?

If this isn't the real world, where am I then?

The more he thought about it, the colder he became. If it wasn't an illusion, then why did the Ancestral Gods that came with him not help him escape from such a status?

Could it be that all of us were caught in this illusion from the start?

The Rain Ancestor thought of many things. The more he thought, the more terrified he was.

He suddenly roared and punched at Su Ping. The void collapsed and his real universe was exposed. The punch contained his full strength to brutally smash the human.

There was no way that Su Ping could resist. His universe was instantly pierced and his body exploded right after.

But the next moment, Su Ping resurrected again.

"This is impossible!!" The Rain Ancestor roared, but there was fear in his voice.

He punched consecutively and slew Su Ping again and again.

Dozens of times in a row, Su Ping died the moment he was revived. He couldn't even sense his surroundings.

Desperation grew with every time he killed the boy. That phenomenon was beyond his understanding. His head was ready to burst at that point.

The stronger a person was, the more firmly they would believe in themselves. Once their understanding was disrupted, such a blast could be terrifying.

"If you're not real, then where are you exactly?" the Rain Ancestor roared with bloodshot eyes. Instead of attacking the young man again, he changed the target to bombard the void itself. Soon, the void nearby fell apart and the world of gods was also torn.

During those crazy attacks, the spot where Su Ping was remained intact.

Su Ping stared at the scene, wondering if the godly ancestor had gone mad.

Could an Ancestral God go crazy too?

Su Ping found it hard to believe.

In the distance, a furious roar burst out, "Rain Ancestor, what the hell are you doing?"

His random punches had almost hit one of his fellow Ancestral Gods.

The same expert roared with shock and fury, "We asked you to finish off that brat. What are you doing? That brat is still alive? Is this a trap you set up to deal with us?"

"Rain Ancestor, are you conspiring with this ferocious beast?"

The other three Ancestral Gods were also furious, and began to question the Rain Ancestor's motives.

It should have been easy to execute the brat, but he was taking too long and he almost hurt them.

the Rain Ancestor

This is all fake. All fake..." the Rain Ancestor roared furiously and charged at the Chaos Perception Dragon. "You're the source of everything!"

The god's mad charge left the other four Ancestral Gods in shock.

"Humph!"

The Chaos Perception Dragon snorted and fought back.

Su Ping approached from a distance and roared, "I'm your opponent. Where are you running?"

The Rain Ancestor released his universe in a hideous manner, to smash it against the Chaos Perception Dragon, only to be blocked by the creature's claw. The god's universe was even left with a crack.

"The pain is real..." The madness receded. The fracture of his universe allowed him to experience real pain, but his frenzied state returned when he saw Su Ping moving closer.

Chapter 1437 Dao Ancestor (1)

"Rain Ancestor, what are you doing?"

The other four gods were shocked and angry to see the Rain Ancestor's look. Although his attacks were aimed at the ferocious beast, it actually disrupted their pace in the battle.

They also realized that the man didn't seem to be in his right mind.

"Go finish off the brat already. You're not needed here. What's taking you so long?" roared an Ancestral God.

The others were also anxious, and wanted to lend a hand to deal with Su Ping on his behalf; all to not have that annoying little flying around. However, they didn't want to get involved with the Heaven Path Institute. The grudge with the Rain Clan had taken root. If they recklessly killed their Dao Child, the institute's three Ancestral Gods could later look for an explanation.

"I can't kill him..."

The Rain Clan looked at him gloomily. "Can any of you kill him for me? The Rain Clan will take the blame if the Heaven Path Institute wants to avenge him!"

"Are you kidding?"

The man's request left all the gods in shock. An Ancestral God had just said that he couldn't kill a God King.

No matter what a genius he is, can he really face an Ancestral God with his cultivation?

"Rain Ancestor, do you realize what you're saying?" roared an Ancestral God who had scales all over his body, making him look like a dragon king.

The Rain Ancestor was rather frustrated too. He wanted to find out if others could kill Su Ping. Did something really happen to me?

"Cut the crap. Which of you can do this for me? I will thank you properly when we're done, and I won't let the Heaven Path Institute come to you for trouble!" The Rain Ancestor gnashed his teeth.

Roar!

The Chaos Perception Dragon's roar was suddenly heard. It dragged them all into its universe of chaos. Demonic sounds surged from all directions; all the Ancestral Gods felt awful, as if in a drunken state.

"Hilarious!"

While resisting the beast's attack, the Ancestral Gods were angered because of their fellow god's request.

"This is a problem between you and the Heaven Path Institute. Are you scared of them? If so, we'll head back right now!" said the charming Ancestral Goddess, not as relaxed as before.

"Rain Ancestor, you're the only one who can take care of this problem. If you're truly scared, just tell us. Don't waste our time," said another Ancestral God.

The Rain Clan ancestor bellowed, "I said it before, the Rain Clan is utterly incompatible with the Heaven Path Institute. If they want to avenge the Dao Child, they have to first deal with the Rain Clan. I will take the blame if any of you kills him for me!"

"You can't kill a Dao Child? Who'd believe that?" said an Ancestral God, disdain in his eyes.

The Rain Ancestor felt frustrated. He couldn't describe Su Ping's weirdness. It was too unbelievable.

Exactly at this moment, a tall Ancestral God who was glowing like the sun said coldly, "Let me do it. Rain Ancestor, don't forget your promise. This brat killed a God Emperor of the Chentian Clan. My actions would be seen as outrageous. However, you must take the blame if I kill him!"

"No problem!" said the Rain Ancestor, feeling greatly relieved.

The situation was truly uncomfortable. Su Ping was the Rain Clan's enemy, and yet he had to ask someone else to do the killing. He just couldn't kill him on his own.

Furthermore, he even thought that surrounding and killing the Chaos Perception Dragon was easier than killing Su Ping.

How could this brat be so capable?

"Take over my spot," said the Chentian Clan's Ancestral God. He then activated his small universe and knocked a hole under someone else's cover, escaping from the Chaos Perception Dragon's universe.

The great dragon roared and wanted to give chase, only to be blocked by the other four gods.

"Rain Ancestor, don't mess with us. I'll immediately take my leave if I see that you're slacking!" said an Ancestral God with a cold tone.

The latter was angry, but he would not dare to talk back at the moment. After all, the others had the same mindset. The temporary truce would truly fall out if he counterattacked.

He had paid a great price to ask for their help. He had to kill the Chaos Perception Dragon, or the Rain Clan would never be at peace.

"I'll lead the charge!"

The Rain Ancestor didn't say anything else, simply speaking with actions.

While their battle was resumed—outside of the Chaos Perception Dragon's universe—the Chentian Clan's Ancestral God arrived, glowing like the sun. His magnificent aura was spread out and he soon caught sight of Su Ping, who was hovering in the void.

"Rot in hell!"

Without further ado, he simply raised his head and attacked as if the human were an ant. The god thought that their difference in power was so vast that he didn't see talking as necessary.

Once he sensed the Dao power sweeping over, Su Ping solemnly contracted the power within a radius of 50,000 kilometers and condensed it on his arm as a giant sword.

Bang!

The sword aura collided with the guy's Dao power. The world instantly started shaking.

"Huh?" The Ancestral God, who was ready to return to the battlefield, was dazed, not expecting his attack to fail in erasing the boy. Such an ant had unleashed a dazzling power, one that no God Emperors were able to control.



Is he truly a God King?

“Is this the reason why the Rain Clan ancestor failed to kill you? He’s so dumb!” The Chentian expert could not help but despise the Rain Clan Ancestor. He had previously seen the man as a strong opponent, but reality appeared to be different.

Chapter 1438 Dao Ancestor (2)

The power unleashed by Su Ping was indeed strong, but he was definitely not an Ancestral God.

“Go to hell!”

A golden light slashed down as the Chentian’s Ancestral God released a Dao skill, which passed through Su Ping and cut his body to pieces.

The senior expert waved his hand casually, burning Su Ping’s remains into ashes.

“You were truly a rare genius. What a shame,” mumbled the Ancestral God. Even though they were enemies, he had to admit the brat had an amazing talent. Was it due to the ferocious beast’s bloodline mutation?

He suddenly had an idea, but he kept it for another time. He was going to leave for the battlefield, but then he froze all of a sudden.

A crack appeared ahead of him; Su Ping slowly came out and his aura gradually reached the peak.

“That guy failed, so you came? You don’t seem to be any better,” said Su Ping provocatively after resurrecting. He feared that the guy would join the others to attack the Chaos Perception Dragon. The only thing he could do was help it stall an Ancestral God.

“You!”

The Chentian Clan’s ancestor gazed at him as if he were looking at a ghost. Goosebumps ran all over his body. It quickly dawned on him why the Rain Ancestor said he couldn’t kill the boy.

He had killed the target, but the target had uncannily resurrected. What is going on? “What are you?” said the man, staring at Su Ping with fear in his eyes. He couldn’t understand how he was able to resurrect. He was an Ancestral God, an expert who mastered the greatest power in the world, being almost omnipotent and omniscient. Finding something he couldn’t understand gave him a real shock.

Su Ping wasn’t even interested in replying to the same question. He didn’t mind ridiculing the Rain Ancestor, but he wasn’t the least interested in talking with that strange Ancestral God.

“The Heavens may arrive in this world any moment now. You are Ancestral Gods, aren’t you aware of their existence?” asked Su Ping.

The expert’s body shook. “Are you one of the Heavens?”

He soon disapproved of the thought. “No. I’ve seen the Heavens. You’re not one of them!”

“You’ve seen the Heavens?” Su Ping was rather astonished by the answer. “Where? The weakest forms of the Heavenly Dao?”

“What’s it to you? Who are you exactly?” demanded the Ancestral God of the Chentian Clan.

Su Ping suddenly grew furious. “Cut the crap. Where did you see the Heavens? If you’re aware of their presence, you should know that they may arrive with all their forces at any moment and destroy the world of gods. And yet, you choose to fight amongst yourselves?”

The Ancestral God was stunned for a moment, seeing the young human’s angry look. Then, he sneered and said, “We’re here to eliminate the ferocious beast and save billions of lives. You think we’re fighting each other?”

“If the Heavens arrive, all the lives in this universe will be terminated. The Chaos Perception Dragon can also fight alongside you to resist the Heavens. Is this not a civil war?” roared Su Ping.

“Ha. I’ve seen the Heavens. They’re not as strong as you claim; I wonder where you heard the rumor. Did the guys in the Heaven Path Institute tell you? If they’re so terrifying, the Ancestral Gods of the Heaven Path Institute should have called us to discuss the matter,” said the god disdainfully.

“You’ve only seen their weakest members.” Su Ping was gloomy. Even if those Ancestral Gods were enemies, there were still people in that world who had tried their best to protect him, both humans and the Heaven Path Institute. He knew that he would need their strength if the Heavens did arrive.

“The stronger Heavens are even more terrifying than you. Do you think you’re already at the apex of all cultivation?” said Su Ping, holding back his fury.

The Ancestral God raised his eyebrows and gazed at Su Ping. “Brat, you seem to know a lot of stuff. You’re questioning our capabilities? Yes, we haven’t reached the legendary Dao Ancestor level. But are the Heavens truly that terrifying? Are their strongest members on par with Dao Ancestors?”

“Maybe not even Dao Ancestors can hold them back!” said Su Ping.

The Golden Crow ancestor could very well be a Dao Ancestor. However, it was still avoiding the Heavens; it wasn’t hard to imagine how terrifying the Heavens were.

“Ha!” The Chentian Clan’s Ancestral God smiled. “The Dao Ancestor level is the origin of everything and the final destination of all cultivation. They’re immortal, and know everything in the world. And yet, you say they don’t stand a chance against the Heavens? You don’t know what you’re talking about!”

He launched another attack.

A shadow rushed toward Su Ping like a whip. The latter instantly mustered all his strength and slashed furiously.

The sword aura was shattered and Su Ping’s body was forced back.

“Rot in hell!”

The Chentian Clan’s Ancestral God was gloomy. His attack of Ancestral God grade was blocked by a mere God King. He used 70% of his strength, in an attempt to completely squish the boy and see if he could resurrect.

Boom. Su Ping couldn’t resist; his body was obliterated.

However, he quickly came back to life. Seeing how dazed the god was Chentian, he said, "You can't understand why I can resurrect, just like you don't know how terrifying the Heavens are. There are many things in the world that you don't know. Don't think that you're almighty just because you're Ancestral Gods. You're just frogs at the bottom of a well!"

"Impudent!" the Ancestral God roared, but he was truly shocked and furious.

Every word uttered by Su Ping had cut deep into his heart like a sharp edge.

Indeed. He had focused all his attention, but he was still unable to tell how the human could resurrect.

It was as if he were created by the Great Dao out of nothing.

But what kind of power was involved?

Is it a Dao Ancestor, an existence that all Ancestral Gods look up to?

Ancestor would

He soon shook his head. A Dao Ancestor would have the power to suppress them all with a mere thought if he were truly on Su Ping's side. Why bother let Su Ping waste time talking?

However, he truly couldn't understand that strange resurrection.

Is it some forbidden skill of a certain clan? Or maybe the bloodline ability of this ferocious beast? The eyes of the Ancestral God glittered, feeling that Su Ping was carrying a lot of secrets.

"I suggest you go back and get ready for the arrival of the Heavens. It may happen 100,000 or more years later, or it may happen tomorrow. This war concerns all the living creatures in this world. You must prepare, even a million years in advance!" said Su

Ping.

"Ha. You're just an alarmist!" said the Ancestral God with a cold smile. "Although I don't know how you resurrect, it's fine. We'll study you after we take care of that ferocious beast."

Su Ping clenched his fist, overwrought with fury. He didn't expect that those Ancestral Gods would be no different from the Celestials he interacted with in his universe. They never changed; only doing so until a disaster truly happened.

Whoosh!

The Chentian Clan's Ancestral God ran towards the Chaos Perception Dragon's universe, ready to join the other gods. Trying to kill Su Ping was just a waste of time.

The longer he stayed, the more likely something would happen on the other side.

They had prepared a five-people array, based on their estimates in regards to the Chaos Perception Dragon's combat ability. The array's full power couldn't be fully unleashed when he was absent. He had to join them.

Noticing how the god was running away, Su Ping quickly said to the dragon elder via telepathy, "Senior, take me to your universe. I will fight by your side!"

“That’s unnecessary,” was the dragon’s cold response.

“Senior, no need to worry about my safety; they can’t do anything to me!” said Su Ping in a hurry.

After a moment of silence-a vortex appeared and he quickly entered.

Beyond the vortex was the dragon’s universe. A massive battle was taking place.

He actually allowed me to join the battle, which means that it’s difficult to deal with those five experts, thought Su Ping. The thought left him with a heavy heart.

On the other hand, the Chentian Clan’s Ancestral God returned, significantly reducing everybody’s pressure. The Rain Ancestor quickly asked, “How did it go? Did you kill him?”

Chapter 1439 Merging of All Pets (1)

Everybody else looked at the Rain Ancestor weirdly, wondering why he asked such a stupid question. Could there be another result when an Ancestral God fought with a God King?

But the Chentian ancestor’s answer baffled them. “No. It’s indeed impossible to kill him; I don’t know why. That’s not important, though; we can figure it out after we finish off this ferocious beast. Maybe we’ll find secrets that we would all be interested in.”

“He can’t be killed?” said the astonished Ancestral Goddess. They had thought of other possibilities when the Rain Ancestor spoke about the matter, but the situation seemed rather uncanny after two of them agreed on the fact.

“Interesting. I’d like to find out after we deal with this beast,” said another Ancestral God.

The Chentian Clan’s Ancestral God said, “We’ll talk about it later. Let’s finish this beast as quickly as possible. We may get in trouble if the other three ferocious beasts notice this.”

“They don’t help each other,” said the Rain Ancestor, but he was still moving faster.

The array was back in full force with the arrival of the Chentian ancestor. The five-people array turned into a domineering chaos beast that roamed the land in the age of chaos.

Their universes resonated and the chaos beast unleashed a terrifying aura, somehow suppressing the Chaos Perception Dragon.

“Senior!”

Exactly at that moment, Su Ping rushed forward and looked at the two giant beasts fighting fiercely. He slightly changed his expression. The Chaos Perception Dragon had clearly lost the advantage.

“Do all gods love to fight unfairly?” Su Ping charged and roared without caring about his own safety.

“He truly is alive...”

The Rain Ancestor narrowed his eyes upon noticing his enemy.

The other three Ancestral Gods also showed different expressions. Two Ancestral Gods had failed in killing one Dao Child from the Heaven Path Institute. It was a mystery to them.

Bang!

The five Ancestral Gods continued attacking with the array, ignoring Su Ping's taunting.

Su Ping realized that he couldn't provoke them with mere words; after all, they were all old monsters who had cultivated for countless years, and could easily see through the trick. He took a deep breath, then summoned the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon, the Lightning Rat and his other pets.

"I've never tried it before, but I think it's possible. I hope that you'll resonate with me!" Su Ping said to all his pets.

The pets noticed Su Ping's solemn demeanor and dropped their naughty attitude. The two terrifying auras before them made their hearts tremble.

"Boss, what do you want? Just tell me," said the Dark Dragon Hound, sticking out its tongue.

The Inferno Dragon said, "Even if our opponents are Ancestral Gods, we will go all out and never look back!"

"No matter the opponent, I will beat them and become stronger!" There was purple light in the Lightning Rat's eyes, and electricity on its sharp claws.

"All right!"

Su Ping felt proud, seeing their dauntless attitude. Other pets would have been shivering in fear, cowering in the presence of such powerful foes.

They were indeed able to resurrect, but that wouldn't shake off their fear.

Just like people who were afraid of snakes; even if they were told that a snake was nonpoisonous and unable to kill them, it could still scare them out of their wits.

"I will merge with all of you at the same time!" Su Ping revealed his plan.

All the pets were shocked. They looked at Su

Ping.

The Dark Dragon Hound couldn't help but ask, "Boss, can your body bear it?"

He replied, "I'll give it a try. I believe it's doable if our minds resonate."

None of his pets said anything; there were no other questions.

Having fought by Su Ping's side for so long, they had already awakened their wisdom. They understood the relationship between a battle pet warrior and his pets, knowing that fusions were only possible with one pet at a time. There were special techniques that could allow the merger with two pets at the same time, just like Song Yuan did, Su Ping's senior brother.

However, that would weaken one's own power. There were both gains and losses.

“By the power of contract, let’s merge!”

Su Ping took a deep breath. He was going to meld all of them into his body with the power of his Contract Dao Heart, just like he did when he controlled the world of gods’ power.

It would be impossible for others. However, Su Ping felt that he could try with his Dao Heart.

Instantly, a myriad of lights flashed.

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon, the Lightning Rat, the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon and the Purple Python flew into Su Ping’s body as energy beams.

Those beams contained their bodies, power and strength. Bound by the power of contract, they transformed into a special kind of energy that melded with his body.

Su Ping was instantly able to feel his pets’ thoughts and auras. The feeling was slightly different from what he usually perceived with the pet contract; it was closer and more intimate.

Su Ping could almost hear their different heartbeats and sense their different aromas.

Entranced, Su Ping felt that he had transformed into a giant, and that his pets were playing inside his arms.

“Master!”

“Boss!”

“I think... We did it!”

Intimate and excited voices resounded. Su Ping opened his eyes, only to discover that he had become hundreds of meters tall. Although still having a human body, there were bloody scales all over his body, and purple scales concentrated on his back. He had also grown a tail.

Chapter 1440 Merging of All Pets (2)

There were dragon horns on his forehead. The Dark Dragon Hound’s wolf head was attached to his shoulder. On his back were the wings of the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon.

The different features of his pets had grown on his body, fusing with him.

That indescribable, magnificent power filled Su Ping’s body and made him shiver. He felt as if he could tear apart the world with one hand and control that universe!

“We did it!”

Su Ping was rather surprised and excited. He was also touched in a way; it was their very first attempt and he didn’t even go into the details. And yet, they succeeded!

At first he thought he would need a few more attempts to achieve it. Even if an accident happened and his body exploded, he had to make it work; that was the only chance for him to join the battle.

However, it worked with his first attempt. The process was really fast and smooth!

Echo of minds!

Su Ping could feel the minds of his pets. All their thoughts were in his heart, none of it could be concealed. They had completely given themselves to him!

It was an unreserved trust!

“Thank you...” Su Ping said to himself in silence.

The pets felt Su Ping’s thoughts. The Dark Dragon Hound grinned and said, “Boss, what are you talking about? We always belong together!”

“That’s right.” The Inferno Dragon’s voice rumbled like thunder.

Su Ping smiled. No other words were uttered, as they would fall short when trying to describe what he felt. He clenched his fists and sensed the power flowing inside his body. A moment later, he said, “We’re ready to go!”

“Let’s go!”

“Our enemy is outnumbered. They should fear

US!”

“So what if they’re Ancestral Gods? Boss will surely surpass them when he becomes an Ancestral God!”

All the pets were excited and ready to fight, as a result of their minds echoing. Their feelings influenced each other; their fighting will was soaring Su Ping stepped up, sweeping his violent aura. He used the contract to connect to the surrounding universe, only to discover that it contained the Chaos Perception Dragon’s will. Besides, the power of that universe was constantly being sent by the Chaos Perception Dragon into the battle. If he drew from it, he would only be competing with his ally over that power.

Su Ping didn’t compete with the dragon senior, as it would only weaken the latter. He extended his power beyond that universe.

He discovered that he could break out of the Chaos Perception Dragon’s universe on his own while in that state.

That could also be because all the dragon’s power was concentrated on the battle, and it didn’t try to stop him.

Su Ping instantly contracted the outer world when his senses stretched beyond the dragon’s universe. The power of the world surged into his body nonstop through the contract.

30,000 kilometers! 50,000 kilometers!

Su Ping approached his previous limit in the blink of an eye. However, he then felt that it was as easy as lifting an arm. He was far from reaching his limits!

I can control more now!

Su Ping’s eyes were glittering. He extended his power influence, soon absorbing the power within a 100,000 kilometer radius. A furious fire was burning inside Su Ping’s body.

He didn't stop.

120,000 kilometers, 150,000 kilometers, 200,000 kilometers!

He didn't hit the limit until he reached all the way to a 230,000 kilometer range. By then his body was already like a golden ocean, emitting an unparalleled divine power.

The power was emitting such massive waves that both parties on the battlefield noticed it and turned to look at him.

"What's that brat doing?"

The five Ancestral Gods were rather astonished. Su Ping's aura was definitely not something that a God King could have. It even exceeded that of the God Emperors they knew.

The Chaos Perception Dragon's could sense it better; after all, everything was happening in the creature's universe. Astonishment surfaced in his eyes. For the first time, he stared at that junior solemnly. He carried the same ancient bloodline of the chaos clan, but his talent was beyond extraordinary.

He suddenly felt at ease with the thought of letting the boy care for the young Chaos Beast.

Boom!

The void was trembling and Su Ping walked to the battlefield in flames.

In the space battlefield where two giant beasts were fighting, Su Ping approached like an ancient giant. The auras from his movement caused ripples in the universe.

"Come on!!"

Su Ping fiercely drew his sword and slashed at the enemy.

The sword aura swept across half of the universe and illuminated the silent darkness, hitting the behemoth made by the godly array powered by the five Ancestral Gods. The power was so great that all five of them shivered!

"What?!"

They were appalled; all of them looked at the young man as if he were a ghost.

A mere God King is making us shake?

That's a power close to the Ancestral God level!

"It's effective!" Su Ping was delighted by the result. This meant that he had the qualifications to intervene; even if he couldn't hurt them, he could at least distract them.

If his attacks could be directly ignored, that would only mean that he would end up crushed like an ant even if he attacked using his full strength.

Roar!



Noticing their weakness, the Chaos Perception Dragon quickly pushed forward with its only horn, wounding the five-god behemoth. Many Dao Patterns were destroyed.

The five Ancestral Gods were shaking in their boots. They quickly fixed the array.

“Damn it. Let’s get this over with so that this brat doesn’t ruin our business!” said one of the Ancestral Gods. He was shocked and furious, feeling that the strange God King could be an unknown factor.

“Reverberation of the universe. Stop holding back and show your true skills!” said the charming Ancestral Goddess.

None of them hesitated as they quickly summoned their power. Five Undying Universes appeared and connected to form a giant blade, which slashed at the Chaos Perception Dragon.

“I’ll block it!” Su Ping roared.

He realized how terrifying the strike was. The Chaos Perception Dragon could survive it, but the damage would be considerable. He, on the other hand, was different. He could resurrect.

Su Ping stomped and charged forth like a fiery meteor, taking the attack on behalf of the dragon.

Su Ping instantly felt that an insurmountable power had bashed him, just like being hit by a train. His body fell like a kite without a string; all his bones and power fell apart.

All kinds of traits and power disrupted his body and eliminated his consciousness. Many kinds of illusions surfaced before his death. He lingered for decades in some illusions, while briefly staying in some others. However, it was but an instant in reality. The aftershock of the attack was swept out. The Chaos Perception Dragon roared and made it collapse. After Su Ping’s body weakened the blow, the remaining power was no longer a threat. He was prepared to get hurt with that strike, not expecting Su Ping to step in and block it for him.

“Roar!!”

The dragon’s eyes were bloodshot. A brutality hidden for countless years surged out; he gave a deafening roar as he charged at the five Ancestral Gods.

“Damn it!”

The gods looked awful and angry; Su Ping’s daring move was not in their calculations.

They condensed their strength once again to face the dragon rushing toward them. Soon, they were clashing fiercely, causing dents and tremors everywhere in the universe.

While the two parties clashed, Su Ping’s body was condensed in the void. He resurrected yet again.

Right after coming back to life, he saw the ongoing fight and immediately summoned his pets to fuse with them again.

The second attempt was just as successful. There were no accidents.

Su Ping contracted the power of the outer world again and soon became a giant of flames like before. He was enveloped in overflowing power that could no longer be contained in his body.

“Damn it!”

“He truly doesn’t die?!”

The five Ancestral Gods noticed the powerful aura in the distance. The three Ancestral Gods who saw this happen for the first time finally lost their cool. Both the Rain Ancestor and the Chentian Clan’s Ancestral God looked awful; the thing they dreaded most had indeed happened.

If Su Ping could keep resurrecting with such a terrifying power, he would definitely be a huge distraction in their battle.

Pet Store 1441

Chapter 1441 Forced Retreat (1)

Bang!

The joint attack of the five Ancestral Gods was again blocked by Su Ping again with his body and strength. Torn by countless Great Daos, Su Ping exploded after enduring for less than half a second.

But soon after, his body was reconstituted again.

He was very excited, as battling Ancestral Gods was actually useful. It would be unimaginable for other God Kings.

“Damn it!”

“Bastard! This will never be over!”

“We must seal him first!”

The five Ancestral Gods were so furious they almost vomited blood. Su Ping was like the Chaos Perception Dragon’s shield. Most importantly, the shield could fix itself and never be destroyed. The dragon only needed to attack, which imposed a huge pressure on them.

ne

Roar!

The dragon’s attack became fiercer, after realizing that Su Ping truly wouldn’t die.

The five Ancestral Gods were trying to seal the human, but their power was dispelled by the dragon before it did any harm. It was really difficult to imprison Su Ping while that beast was there. Furthermore, the young man wasn’t weak. The power he could harness was enough to influence them somewhat.

“This isn’t going to work out.”

The five gods were having a headache as they carried on with the fierce battle. Their attacks had proven to be useless dozens of times because of the human’s resistance. Even though they did kill him a dozen times over, the Chaos Perception Dragon counterattacked paid in kind just as often. They were finding it difficult to defend themselves.

“Is there really something that can resurrect infinitely? Is he a Dao Ancestor? No way! A Dao Ancestor wouldn’t trick us like this. Damn it. What exactly is he?”

The five Ancestral Gods were exasperated, but there was nothing they could do.

Unification of the Great Dao...

Su Ping resurrected again and again. The consecutive bombardments helped him in sensing the elements behind the power that tore his body apart. The power belonged to the five gods, but it was highly unified. Such unification also contained the features of the infinite Great Dao. It seemed that each of those independent forces was part of a whole.

However, they were extremely complicated and unpredictable as they worked together.

Su Ping had a great epiphany during his movement between life and death.

Is this the Great Dao? Everything is the same at the end of the Great Dao...

That kind of experience couldn't be copied by anyone. After all, they would be completely annihilated after the first experience.

Boom!

Su Ping stepped up again after facing the five Ancestral Gods' attack.

All his power was easily torn apart soon after. An utterly violent power invaded his body, destroying all his cells and Astral Oceans.

Su Ping sensed that the violent Great Dao was tearing his body to pieces. He tried stopping it, but it was like an infant compared to a muscular man. He was crushed.

Maybe, if I can sign a contract...

The idea occurred to him. But his consciousness was invaded and destroyed before he could do anything.

The next moment, Su Ping woke up again.

His previous idea remained. Su Ping looked at the five gods with glittering eyes. They were definitely qualified as sparring partners.

Or rather, he was qualified to practice with the Ancestral Gods.

All in all, he was benefiting immensely as he learned from that battle.

It would have been pointless to practice with them in the past, as there would be no chance to learn a thing, being killed instantly.

It was different now.

Su Ping made a decision in his heart. I should give it a try later.

The five gods felt a strong headache as they looked at Su Ping.

"Have you noticed that he's lasting longer each time?" said an Ancestral God in a gloomy tone.

"Compared to before, he's endured one second longer when we strike!" The charming Ancestral Goddess gnashed her teeth. "He seems to be using us to grow at a crazy rate!"

They all looked awful, and couldn't be more shocked. Su Ping was actually growing at an astonishing speed as they fought. "His vitality aura is less than a thousand years old, and yet he has such terrifying strength. Is his growth being potentialized by his quick brushes between life and death?" asked the Chentian Clan's Ancestral God.

“Very likely. This guy is too strange. My guess is that there’s a terrifying existence backing him, and is using us as mere targets for his training,” said one of the shocked gods with an awful expression. If that were the case, his backer could only be one kind of existence, the legendary Dao Ancestor!

The end of cultivation, and the original point of all power!

“This can’t go on. We should have brought one more Ancestral God had we known this.” The charming Ancestral Goddess’ pretty face was utterly solemn. She was thinking of retreating

The other Ancestral Gods silently exchanged looks.

ev

The Rain Ancestor’s face was darker than ever. He had paid a great price to invite them over; such a turn of events was completely out of all expectations. What angered him to no end is that they might not win even if he asked them to keep on fighting. If they couldn’t deal with Su Ping, they would never inflict real damage to the Chaos Perception Dragon.

The only way for them to kill the ancient beast and Su Ping was if they were truly united and determined to accomplish the task, even at the cost of laying their own lives.

However... They were Ancestral Gods, with huge clans and descendants to protect. Who among them would truly risk their lives?

Chapter 1442 Forced Retreat (2)

“Rain Ancestor, this is completely unexpected. You have to blame yourself for not having enough intel. We are not to blame,” said an Ancestral God.

The Rain Ancestor gnashed his teeth. “Let’s try one more time. I won’t stop you if it fails and you want to go.”

Everyone exchanged looks in silence. They had indeed received plenty of rewards from the Rain Ancestor; it would be inappropriate to leave just like that.

“Let me control the array. I have an incomplete Dao technique that I’d like to try,” said the Rain Ancestor.

“Okay.”

There was no objection. Control was handed

over.

The Rain Ancestor looked at Su Ping thoughtfully. Never before had he felt such hatred for a God King. After all, most God Kings were just ants undeserving of his hate. He could erase them by lifting his hand.

However, the young Su Ping couldn’t be erased.

Most people’s fury came from their helplessness.

They couldn't change what they wanted to change.

The god's eyes turned dark as he gained control over the ancient array; there seemed to be vortices circulating inside them. He was ablaze with divine flames and the Undying Universe surfaced behind his back. An ancient aura was attached to his universe.

That aura was spread out, making the other four Ancestral Gods have a strong ominous feeling

The Rain Ancestor roared, "Misfortune, descend!"

Blue flames were burning on the chaos beast materialized by the ancient array. It carried some sort of terrifying aura of misfortune. A blue pillar of light was shot out as he roared.

Su Ping instantly detected a terrifying and unusual aura. He rushed towards the Chaos Perception Dragon without hesitation.

Roar!

The Chaos Perception Dragon noticed something unusual too. Seeing that Su Ping was risking his own life to protect him, he roared and tried to push the young one away. However, Su Ping was too fast and had already struck the blue pillar of light.

Su Ping instantly felt that all his power was declining and withering. Some sort of huge hand seemed to have stabbed into his body and quickly extracted his vitality.

The power he had acquired through the contract and the merging was removed.

Bang!

Su Ping's body melted and fell apart in the void.

However, the blue pillar of light wasn't entirely blocked by Su Ping. It continued moving towards the Chaos Perception Dragon.

The latter roared. A crimson moon appeared in front of its eyes and struck the blue pillar. Light was splashing. One of his eyes dashed out and struck the blue pillar again. There was a boom, and the blue pillar exploded. The bloody moon was also corrupted by the blue light.

The Chaos Perception Dragon roared in pain. It suddenly hurled the bloody moon to smash the five Ancestral Gods.

The gods were forced to retreat because of the exploding eyeball. They were astonished as they saw how the beast only had an eye left. That power was beyond their imagination, and the dragon no longer dared to recall the eyeball.

"Seems to be a secret technique from the age of chaos..." mumbled an Ancestral God.

The Rain Ancestor breathed heavily, while looking awful. The Chaos Perception Dragon had sacrificed one of his eyeballs to block the attack, which was weakened by Su Ping. During that moment, based on the changes in the young man's body, the dragon realized that the attack was unusual, so he didn't use his body to block it.

Otherwise, the wound would have been graver.

“Damn you, bastard!” The Rain Ancestor was frustrated and infuriated. He had never hated a God King like that.

Back in the void, Su Ping’s body was condensed yet again; shock and suspicion were written all over his face. The attack just then was extremely weird, and he couldn’t sense anything; he probably wouldn’t feel any change, even if he experienced it even if he experienced it dozens of times.

Everything happened in a flash. He seemed to have regressed, and so did his senses; he was unable to feel the subtle changes when he was dying

“Can you perform another attack like the one just now?” someone asked the Rain Ancestor.

“You should have used that ultimate skill sooner,” said the charming Ancestral Goddess.

The Rain Ancestor looked gloomy. It was an ultimate skill; of course it couldn’t be performed easily. Besides, the Chaos Perception Dragon had already found out; it would be useless, even if they tried again.

Everyone else was well aware of that.

They only said it to imply that it was time to retreat, since they couldn’t do it again.

The Rain Ancestor looked thoughtfully at Su Ping who resurrected in the distance. “Let’s retreat.”

They could understand what the Rain Ancestor was feeling, but the situation was also clear. It was better to retreat sooner, or they wouldn’t be able to bear another strange turn of events.

Whoosh!

The Rain Ancestor relinquished control over the ancient array, and another god quickly took over, to break the dragon’s universe open and escape.

He didn’t make any threats or bold declarations. Retreat was the sole idea at the moment, since the result was inevitable and they couldn’t kill the enemy.

m

The weaker and more ignorant a person was, the more likely they would be hotblooded and fight until they died, without realizing what was awaiting them.

The five god’s retreat was awfully abrupt. The Chaos Perception Dragon noticed it before Su Ping even realized what was going on. The creature roared and ran out, dismissing his universe.

After the universe was retrieved, Su Ping saw the outer world and how the dragon elder was charging in the distance.

That was the direction the five Ancestral Gods took to make their escape.

Su Ping rushed to catch up.

He saw that the five gods rushed to another time and space where the last Ancestral God and the demonic ape were fighting fiercely.

“Have you taken care of it?” The last Ancestral God smiled when he saw them.

“Retreat!” said one of the gods in a low voice.

The former was stunned, then felt his heart grow heavy. The situation astonished him, as they had been thorough when making arrangements. Killing those beasts shouldn't have been a problem. Why do we have to retreat?

They didn't come here to help me finish off this demonic ape?

It could only mean that the plan had failed and the ferocious beast was still alive.

Whoosh!

The Ancestral God stopped fighting and quickly left with the five other gods. He also sensed the other beast was chasing them. He was shocked; the Chaos Perception Dragon was indeed alive. Was the creature really that terrifying? Even five Ancestral Gods weren't enough to kill it?

The dragon stopped after the six Ancestral Gods made their retreat. He didn't give chase to kill them, which was impossible. He was only there to defend his lackey, as they would try to kill the fellow as they made their getaway.

Su Ping, who had finally arrived, saw that the Chaos Perception Dragon stopped, then realized what the other was thinking. He looked at the departing Ancestral Gods and was slightly regretful.

He felt that he could tap into a higher power level if he could practice more with them.

However, his gains were plenty, even though the battle had already ended.

First of all, he tested the possibility of merging with all of his pets.

Secondly, he experienced the Ancestral Gods' attacks and vaguely saw a deeper route to the Great Dao.

“Boss, are you okay?”

The demonic ape looked at the six Ancestral Gods as they left. Then, the beast turned around and looked at the great dragon with admiration. “As expected of you, Boss. Not even five Ancestral Gods could hurt you. I was thinking how I could finish off that guy and help you. He was so sordid; he never fought me head-on and he wasn't even hurt.”

He suddenly noticed Su Ping and exclaimed, “This kid is still alive?”

The Chaos Perception Dragon glanced at the fella. “Even if you die, he won't. I would have probably been wounded without his help.”

The demonic ape was dumbfounded. The guy looked at Su Ping in a daze, “He helped you?”



He thought that his senses were playing tricks. It would be remarkable if a God King didn't hold them back as the beasts fought such a high-level battle. How could this guy possibly help?

Su Ping smiled and said to the giant dragon, "Senior, since this place has been exposed, we should probably transfer to somewhere else, that way they won't gather more Ancestral Gods and look for trouble again."

The Chaos Perception Dragon nodded. "Of course."

The creature had seen Su Ping's attempts to help, and thus willingly replied to Su Ping's proposal. He wouldn't have bothered in the past, as he hated others telling him what to do.

"Unfortunately, it's impossible to take away this Divine Eye," said the dragon wistfully as he looked at the Divine Eye in the distance. He then glanced at Su Ping. "Since you're truly undying, I'll take you to experience the power in the depths of the Divine Eye before we go."

Chapter 1443 Conception (1)

"Thank you, sir."

Su Ping looked forward to it.

The Chaos Perception Dragon wasted no time talking, and simply took Su Ping to see the Divine Eye, where golden power was flowing out like a golden river of sticky magma.

The surging divine power in the river gradually dissipated and was spread in the entire world of gods.

The Great Dao in the world of gods took that divine power to all places.

"The divine power is like blood," said Su Ping with mixed feelings.

"The universe is a life form by itself," said the dragon, "It's just that most species' definitions of life are too narrow. Most define flowers, grass and trees as non-living creatures. Some of the other species think that rocks, rivers and clouds aren't alive. However, they are all living entities born from the Great Dao. They are simply different beings.

"For example, lightning dies the moment it's born. Its whole life takes place in that brief moment.

"The wind gathers and disperses slowly. That's the life of the wind.

"It is exactly because of the difference between life forms that most species can hardly understand each other. However, if observed from a higher perspective, you'll realize that most things are alive.

"In the long history spanning billions of years, even some of the powerful species can only glow for a moment, just like lightning does.

"Some species live long lives, so they despise short-lived existences and don't consider them as being alive. However, even those powerful species are simply repeating the same moment until they die. Lightning, on the other hand, reveals the most brilliant side of its life during that one moment, even though it dies quickly. It doesn't need any extra longevity."

Sa

Su Ping felt dazed. That was the first time that the Chaos Perception Dragon had said so many things to him.

The universe was a life?

The difference in life...

Su Ping suddenly thought of his Dao Heart. Different lives tended to reject each other; the contract was actually a power able to connect different lives.

It allowed them to listen to each other's hearts and experience each other's feelings.

If the universe is a life... Su Ping instantly felt goosebumps all over his body. His Contract Dao Heart could control other lives, the Great Dao and even the world to borrow their power. Were they all alive?

Since they were alive, could he make contracts with them?

He suddenly remembered that the system said that everything could be trained.

Su Ping didn't expect that the idea of "everything" entailed such a big scope!

Could the Great Dao and the universe be trained too?

If they were both alive, they could be trained!

Wait, the young Chaos Beast is exactly a creature born in the Great Dao during the age of chaos. In simpler terms, it is a manifestation of the Great Dao! So, the Great Dao truly is a life form and can be trained. The same goes for the universe...

Su Ping narrowed his eyes, feeling his horizon broaden with a new realization. I can build up my universe by training... The Undying Universe... A lot of ideas occurred to him, vaguely finding the way to become an Ancestral God.

The system, which loved peeping into his heart, didn't reply to any of his thoughts, which further assured that his guess was right.

"The gods, who claim to respect and love all lives, only respect and love lives that they're biased for. The ones they are against aren't even defined as lives by them, and are seen as dead. The hypocrisy!" said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

His contempt for gods was evident.

Su Ping gave a slight nod. He had a deep understanding of the gods' arrogance, which was ingrained bone-deep and couldn't be changed; just like every species had its own bad attributes.

"Let's go. I'll show you the real look of the Divine Eye," said the dragon.

He then turned around and ordered the demonic ape, "You stay here."

"All right, Boss." The creature seemed to be extremely obedient at the moment. His boss was almost killed by the six Ancestral Gods that the guy unwittingly guided over, so he feared that his boss would eat him in a fit of fury. He only wanted to make up for what he did.

The dragon shrank its body size and led Su Ping into the Divine Eye.

The strange loss of gravity was felt, followed by the feeling of passing through a thin membrane. Su Ping was surrounded by abundant divine power. He wasn't too surprised, being his second visit. He simply examined the place and followed the dragon.

The Divine Eye's surface was a boundless ocean of divine power. Cultivating there was more effective than cultivating in any of the holy lands in the world of gods.

The rise of the seven greatest clans was exactly because each controlled a Divine Eye. They had ten times more elites than the other clans did.

Su Ping reached a dark area after passing through the ocean of divine power. The place was extremely deep, and not much divine power could be sensed. He seemed to have entered some ruins.

He couldn't even sense other times and spaces there. It was a simple, barren and desolate region.

"Down below is the core of the Divine Eye, and the real source of the artifact. Be careful," said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Su Ping's eyes narrowed.

Their bodies kept sinking. Su Ping sensed the pressure building around him. There seemed to be something at the bottom of that passage.

#### Chapter 1444 Conception (2)

The darkness before Su Ping's eyes suddenly disappeared, and he saw an unforgettable scene. Down below was a world of chaos, with the chaos aura fluctuating everywhere. At the center of the chaos aura was an item that looked like a flower.

There was a meatball at the center of the flower-like item, which had strange, slightly waving limbs.

Su Ping could tell it was an unusual living creature, possibly born from chaos.

"That's the core of the Divine Eye," said the Chaos Perception Dragon in a low voice. "It's a special chaos creature. The divine power you see is just the accumulation of impurities released when the thing was conceived."

Dazed, Su Ping stared at the wiggling body and felt that his blood was curdling. The Divine Eye was a womb to conceive this thing?

"The gods consider themselves superior; little do they know that they're mere accumulations of impurities." There was disdain and mockery in the beast's eyes, as if he also looked down on the gods; the feeling also bone-deep.

Su Ping didn't know what to say; that scene was just too shocking. He couldn't help but ask, "Senior, are all the Divine Eyes in the world of gods conceiving those creatures? What will they become after they're born?"

"I don't know. I've never seen any of them being born. This thing will probably never be born. Countless years have passed and this thing has never changed. Maybe this is what it looks like, and it's already been born," said the dragon elder.

Exactly at that moment—the chaos creature in the flower seemed to have noticed something. Dozens of cracks appeared on the flower's surface. They turned out to be eyes that were staring at Su Ping and the Chaos Perception Dragon.

The next moment, a strange and hoarse roar was heard, and the rays of chaos darted out of those eyeballs. The dragon was already prepared, quickly pulling Su Ping away and saying, "It's angry. We're already old friends; why is it so hostile?"

While speaking, he slapped the flower with its bloody claw, but the force pierced into the flower and was seemingly absorbed.

"Just as I thought," said the Chaos Perception Dragon, "This thing is rooted in the world of chaos and any attacks received would be transferred to this world. To some extent, it is invincible; that's why I warned you not to come here at first."

Su Ping didn't expect such a monster to be conceived in the Divine Eye. He had mixed feelings, thinking that the Heavens were tricky enough; now he learned of another deep secret.

"Do the Ancestral Gods know what this is?"

The dragon gave a slight head shake. "It's both an artifact and a living creature from the age of chaos. Perhaps it was left by some big shot from that era. Maybe it was a weapon of theirs, or a descendant even. All in all, this isn't something we can handle, unless we can reach that legendary level."

Su Ping was quite solemn. A Sorcerer Ancestor?

Maybe he could ask the Golden Crow ancestor for more information. It was one of the Sorcerer Ancestors, one of the most powerful lives ever. It would certainly know something.

"The only way to destroy this thing is to destroy the entire world of gods, but that's impossible," said the dragon, "Although our attacks can break the barrier of the world of gods, it's only part of it; the world can recover quickly. It would be pointless, as our destruction is not as fast as the world's recovery. It cannot be destroyed unless all the Ancestral Gods gather and attack in a crazy manner.

"These Divine Eyes are the power sources in the world of gods. The seven greatest clans who control the seven Divine Eyes must have studied them a lot, but I'm not interested and I don't know much."

Su Ping asked curiously, "Why have no gods come to occupy this Divine Eye? Is it because of you?"

"It's partly because of me, but mainly because of the local environment. The Divine Eye can't be relocated. If any clan wants to control this Divine Eye, the clan would have to be here, or the Divine Eye would be of little use to them."

The dragon added, "This is the desolate area at the border of the world that's home to ferocious beasts. Any clan that moves here will be destroyed before they can benefit from the Divine Eye."

Su Ping could agree, as he remembered the God Emperor monsters found all over the place.

The Chaos Perception Dragon looked at the growling monster in the flower and said casually, "Let's go. This thing is getting angrier."

He then led Su Ping out of the area and retreated.

The latter could tell how the dragon was acting vigilant. It seemed that the thing was not only invincible in defense but also terrifying when it came to offense.

They quickly exited the Divine Eye.

"There are many more Divine Eyes in the borderlands like this one, still unclaimed. They're found in regions teeming with beasts, too many for the gods to handle," said the Chaos Perception Dragon, "The Divine Eyes occupied by the seven greatest clans happen to be in great locations. There were a lot of competitions over those seven Divine Eyes."

The dragon seemed to be reminiscing as he spoke.

Su Ping smiled. "Senior, you seem to know a lot about the gods."

"Of course," said the other, "One of the clans even asked me for help when they competed over the Divine Eye. They have yet to return the favor. I would have asked them for help if two more gods would have shown up today."

The creature seemed to be smiling after seeing surprise on Su Ping's face. "Don't think that we're diehard enemies just because we're called the Four Ferocious Beasts. With enough benefits, any two people can become allies and friends even. That's why the four of us have been able to live as long.

"Of course, you have to be strong enough too; otherwise, your so-called friends will betray you in the blink of an eye."

"Yes, you're right, senior."

Su Ping felt he had learned something. One of the seven greatest clans had actually teamed up with the ferocious beast once. Justice was indeed a mere excuse to fool stupid people.

"Let's go. Time to move," said the dragon.

He then glanced at the demonic ape and ordered. "Go back to where you're from."

"Boss, please forgive me," begged the demonic ape.

The dragon snorted and said, "Get lost!" "Boss, have you forgiven me?"

"Get lost!"

"Thank you very much, Boss!" Thrilled, the demonic ape hopped and disappeared.

Su Ping felt puzzled. How exactly did that creature conclude that he had been forgiven based on two exact same phrases?

The Chaos Perception Dragon didn't dawdle. He teleported with Su Ping in tow.

Time and terrain changed. Su Ping followed the Chaos Perception Dragon and crossed an infinitely long distance and then found themselves in a desolate area. The dragon stopped and looked around with satisfaction. "I'll settle down in this place; you may find me here in the future."

Right after he said that, a furious roar came from the distance.

Then, dark clouds surged in the sky and blocked the sun.

When they moved closer, Su Ping saw it was a giant beast that looked like a combination of an eagle and a dragon. It had a snake tail that stretched tens of thousands of kilometers. Its claws were so sharp that they could easily tear off a mountain.

"Bastard, who dares to break into my territory?" said an angry, high-pitched voice. But then the beast seemed to have clearly noticed it was the Chaos Perception Dragon. It stopped abruptly and then flew away at an even higher speed.

Su Ping could tell it was an Ancestral God beast too. He had expected a fierce battle, but he didn't expect the creature to give in that quickly.

Looks like there are a lot more Ancestral God beasts in the world of gods aside from the Four Ferocious Beasts, Su Ping thought. "Humph. It ran fast enough; I do happen to be hungry." The Chaos Perception Dragon snorted and lay down next to a mountain, before he said to Su Ping, "Don't you like to practice? Go hunting and get me some food."

Su Ping was rather lost for words as he saw the big guy's lazy look. He had previously acted cold and aloof, rarely talking to the former. But the battle changed things, as the fellow kept teaching him and telling him secrets of the world of gods. He was actually not as taciturn as he seemed.

Chapter 1445 New Universe (1)

Su Ping summoned the young Chaos Beast after the Chaos Perception Dragon found the new home.

The youngling was covered in a thick purple cocoon, sleeping like the dead. He did his best to avoid waking it up in advance.

"Leave it with me. You can go hunting," said the Chaos Perception Dragon in a lazy manner.

Su Ping was OK with the idea. He left the little one there.

"It will become a great supporter after it awakens the real power of its bloodline. I hope that you treat it nicely." The Chaos Perception Dragon became solemn and said, "It hasn't been easy for the chaos bloodline to be passed down. We are both survivors from the time when the world was in turmoil and chaos declined."

Su Ping stared at the dragon. "Did you witness the decline of the age of chaos? Was it because of the Heavens?"

"You know this too?"

The Chaos Perception Dragon was slightly surprised as it glanced at Su Ping, then thought of something. "The mysterious existence backing your is at least as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor; it must be one of the survivors too. It's fine for you to know this. That's right, the decline of chaos started with the birth of the Heavens..."

Su Ping was greatly alarmed. The Heavens were indeed the cause of all disasters.

The Golden Crow ancestor led its people to live in seclusion and hide from them.

"Unfortunately, I was too little back then, and I only survived because of luck," said the dragon. It glanced at Su Ping and continued, "Your backer surely knows the whole story. Please ask them why the Heavens did it."

Su Ping was stunned.

It was the answer he had always wanted to find.

However, that ferocious beast-one that even the Ancestral Gods were scared of-also sought the answer.

It wasn't simple curiosity, but more like a humble plea.

Su Ping fell silent. His instinct told him that the system knew everything; it was just that the latter wouldn't tell him the secret until he upgraded his store to level 9.

He didn't try asking at the moment, knowing that the system would surely have a reason for the secrecy. Besides, the system had never hurt him.

The system had been his long-time companion and the one who had helped him the most

Without it, he would have been just an ant, eventually squashed under the hooves of giant beasts, like the unfortunate ones back on the Blue Planet when the big disaster happened. His home planet would have surely become just another beast-ridden place.

"One day, I will make the Heavens tell me why they're doing this!" A strong light full of hatred glittered in Su Ping's eyes.

The Chaos Perception Dragon glanced at Su Ping, surprised by the severe animosity he had towards the Heavens, but it didn't ask

why.

Ever since their first encounter, it had sensed that the kid was different and mysterious.

The young man led the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets to hunt some more. They later found a God Warrior beast; Su Ping personally took action and soon finished it off.

He was greatly enhanced after battling Ancestral Gods. He also learned how to merge with all his pets at the same time, and felt that he could easily crush normal God Emperors.

The strength gap between them was humongous.

Once his pets evolved into God Emperors, his strength after performing the collective fusion would rise to new heights!

Most importantly, his own physique had grown stronger after the merging; he could establish a contract with the power of the world within 230,000 kilometers, which was beyond the limit of any God Emperor.

He took the God Emperor beast and threw it to the Chaos Perception Dragon, then said goodbye and returned to the store.

Hardly had Su Ping returned to the store when he received a piece of pleasant news. They had found a new universe in the void.

They were in fact floating outside said universe at the moment, choosing not to enter recklessly.

Shen Huang and the others waited for Su Ping to come back and discuss whether they should sneak in, mainly because they were concerned that there could be existences stronger than universe dominators inside that universe; it could also be possible that it was a place already conquered by the Heavens.

They had all the time in the world anyway, so they waited for Su Ping to come back first.

After being briefed by Joanna, Su Ping immediately set off to the central palace.

All the Celestials went to the palace the moment they learned of his return, including Chi Ying, the new universe dominator who had mastered the Dao Heart. All the remaining humans were there. They had nothing to do except to cultivate, so they had plenty of time.

“Boss Su!”

“Boss Su!”

Everyone piped down upon his arrival, then offered nods in salute.

They became more respectful after Su Ping helped Chi Ying become a universe dominator.

Su Ping saw Shen Huang and nodded. “Hello, master.”

Shen Huang smiled and said, “You heard the news, right?”

“Yes. I heard that a new universe was found.” Su Ping’s senses stretched out towards the void and soon detected the barrier protecting a universe.

The place seemed to have been covered somehow. The barrier was actually very small; it looked like a grain of dust floating in the void.

However, the cover was incomplete, and Su Ping was able to detect the universe inside fairly easily.

“I stumbled upon this universe by accident. I would have missed it if Boss Su hadn’t helped me awaken my Dao Heart,” said Chi Ying with a modest smile.

Su Ping nodded. “Not entering recklessly was the right thing to do. This universe is covered by a Dao technique. Whoever was able to cover up an enormous universe must be stronger than a universe dominator. It’s a being in the Undying State! Existences at that level can sense everything in the universe. They’ll notice you the moment you go in if you’re not strong enough.”



## Chapter 1446 New Universe (2)

All those present exchanged fearful looks after hearing Su Ping's warning.

Even if their intentions weren't malicious, they would be trespassers nonetheless; the local experts would certainly not know whether they were friendly or hostile.

Besides, if they were too weak, the most normal reaction would be to either destroy or enslave them.

As for making new friends... Would humans make friends with livestock? They had better things to do.

"Should we go in?" asked Chi Huo.

Everyone looked at Su Ping. He had told them that they had to look for more allies out there, after leading them out of their universe.

There were Undying State experts in that universe; it was definitely a potential ally. Still, it remained to be seen whether or not they would want to establish an alliance.

"We need to go in, but we must sneak in first and investigate. I don't think this universe looks good. It may have been detected by the Heavens already..." said Su Ping after pondering for a moment.

Everybody was surprised. Shen Huang asked, "How so?"

Su Ping said, "The Dao technique outside of this universe is damaged. It's a clear sign of having been attacked. If the Undying State experts inside were alive, they would have fixed it. You wouldn't have detected this universe if the cover was fully functional. It would have been completely hidden."

Everybody was dazed, while Chi Ying looked wary. "No wonder I was able to sense it. In other words, is this universe as desolate as the one we visited earlier?"

"We won't know until we see it. In any case, we must sneak in first."

"Wouldn't sneaking in be too dangerous? We'll be hopeless if anything happens to you!" said Shen Huang immediately. He had always seen his disciple as humanity's last hope.

The cultivation levels they had learned from Su Ping made them feel desperate. Without him, it would have taken countless years for a universe dominator to be born in the human clan, let alone the Undying State and beyond!

"I'm good at stealth movement. Should I sneak in?" asked Xu Kong all of a sudden.

Everybody gave her surprised looks. She volunteered? That exploring task could easily get her killed. All of them were Celestials, but they became much more modest ever since they saw the greater experts.

Su Ping looked at her. He smiled once he noticed that her offer was sincere, not just a polite gesture.

"No, I have a better candidate."

There was a slight change in their expressions. Some Celestials looked normal but they were actually feeling nervous, since they were also experts of stealth.

erea

ervo

ICE

Su Ping waved a hand, and a figure appeared from the void. She was none other than the Saint Heir from the Planet of Origin.

Kayafollet looked at Su Ping and the Celestials present. She said with a shy and angry tone, "What do you want from me?"

She knew that nothing good happened to her when Su Ping took her out.

With everything coming to that point, she no longer expected to regain her freedom.

Maybe death would be her freedom.

"There's a new universe in front of us. You need to sneak in and investigate," said Su Ping, "I will teach you stealth techniques. You won't get caught as long as you're careful."

"You're asking me to do your dangerous scouting again!" said Kayafollet angrily.

"That's the only reason why you're still alive. Why else do you think I haven't killed you?" Su Ping asked back.

She gnashed her teeth. However, getting back her freedom after having fallen into Su Ping's hands was impossible.

Su Ping glanced at her and said, "It seems that your memories need some adjustments. Better not resist. If you do a good job, you will always be remembered by future generations as the sailor who discovered the new world."

"Who wants to be remembered?" Kayafollet was furious. She didn't care about that pointless achievement.

Su Ping wasted no time; he simply imprisoned her. He modified her memories and signed another contract with his Dao Heart. It was different from the one used for pet control. He would only enslave and control her; all without being influenced by the latter.

If necessary, Su Ping could even control her through the contract without worrying about her betrayal or receiving false reports.

Kayafollet became docile all of a sudden. Once he was done with the tampering, she opened her eyes and said to Su Ping respectfully, "I will surely try my best."

All the Celestials gasped when they saw her change. They too would probably forget who they were if Su Ping ever applied the same method with them.

Shen Huang and Chi Huo weren't too surprised; they had already seen the young man use the method before. However, a long time had passed and Kayafollet seemed to have found herself again; this was probably because there were loopholes in her modified memories.

"You're too weak right now. I will help you activate your legacy in full, so that you can enter as a dominator," said Su Ping.

Kayafollet's eyes glittered. "Thank you, master." She spoke with awe and loyalty written all over her face.

Ne a

"Master?"

Everybody was dazed. They didn't know how Su Ping had done it, but he had apparently replaced the Saint King in her memories. Noticing her respectful demeanor, none of them thought she would be as obedient, even in front of the real Saint King.

Su Ping rose and said, "I'll take her to the store and help her pass the tribulation. I'll let you know when she's ready."

Everybody else rose in a hurry and saw Su Ping off.

Once he left the palace, Su Ping took Kayafollet back to the pet store. He went to the test room and examined her memories.

The memories related to the legacy were locked. However, considering Su Ping's current Dao expertise, cracking such a lock was an easy task; after all, the War Emperor who had granted her the legacy was only a God Emperor.

He quickly saw the guy's legacy information and relived the guy's life.

He revealed his talent in a weak tribe and rose unstoppably. There were signs of the Heavens in his universe too.

"Huh?"

Su Ping realized that something was wrong. According to the guy's memories, the Heavens were banished from the universe!

Wait a second, the guy's body was in my universe, so the Heavens he saw were the Heavens that entered our universe, except that they appeared a long time ago...

Su Ping quickly changed his expression. The Heavens had been aware of his universe and entered it, but they were expelled!

Back in that war, the War Emperor was just a general. There were many fuzzy figures in his memory; those people were too strong for him to even remember them.

The Heavens were banished...

No wonder his body floated near the crack in the universe after such a long time. It wasn't a coincidence; it was the lingering will in his corpse!

The Heavens were actually banished from the universe. Their last battle had to do with their expulsion. This determination wasn't erased despite the passage of time...

Su Ping didn't expect that the Heavens would have known his universe since a time long past.

There was once a glorious era, with countless powerful beings as strong as Ancestral Gods roaming about. They were able to beat the Heavens!

The experts of our universe must have also hidden our universe, back in that era. However, the concealing barrier was gradually damaged after they sacrificed themselves and banished the invaders, just as the new universe we just found. Then, a crack was formed in our universe, which attracted the Heavens a second time...

Su Ping looked awful. He felt a deep grief and regret.

Had he grown stronger sooner, becoming an Ancestral God 100,000 years prior, he would have been able to wander beyond the universe and review its history, thereby fixing the concealing barrier.

That way their universe would have been left alone; nothing would have happened.

Chapter 1447 Universe of Machines (1)

With everything reaching that point, it was simply too late to talk about the past events. Su Ping only felt deeply regretful; after all, too many lives had been sacrificed in the universe because of the barrier's decay.

After reviewing the guy's legacy memories, Su Ping simply extracted the recorded techniques and summoned Kayafollet's consciousness to interpret them for her benefit.

The guy's Dao Heart was Eternal Fighting.

As long as his soul and body remained, he could continue fighting. It was an eternity of sorts.

Without a doubt, it was an extremely powerful Dao Heart.

No wonder his body was still so determined to fight, years and years after his demise.

"Too many stories must've taken place in our universe; it's just that they were lost in time and nobody knows about them..." Su Ping mumbled.

Kayafollet was able to understand at a very quick pace, all thanks to his teaching and interpretation. She had basically been teaching herself thus far, but now she had the guidance of a teacher. Her improvement was fast and tangible.

A long while later

resu

Once she fully digested the legacy, Su Ping resumed the normal speed of time and switched the test room into a desolate planet, just like he did for Chi Ying. He then said, "I'll help you with your Heavenly Tribulation. Be careful."

"Yes, master."

There was even more awe and respect in Kayafollet's eyes; Su Ping became as great as a god in her eyes.

He flew up to the high sky and summoned a tribulation aura; dark clouds gathered soon after.

She polished her body with the lightning striking down. Her own aura became sharper and more condensed, and she gradually released the aura of a universe dominator.

Kayafollet became a real universe dominator by the end of the tribulation.

After appraising the second dominator that emerged thanks to him, Su Ping patted her shoulder and checked her memories again. He was able to confirm that everything was fine, right before he taught her stealth techniques he learned from the Heaven Path Institute.

Su Ping planned to set off with her when everything was ready.

“Master, I will try my best,” she said with a solemn expression.

Su Ping nodded. “You must be very careful.”

“Okay!”

The pair went back to the palace. The Celestials gathered after receiving the news.

Only three days had passed since Su Ping left with Kayafollet. Everyone sensed that the former Saint Heir from the Planet of Origin was emitting such a terrifying aura that their hair was standing on end. It was just as when they saw Chi Ying.

“A dominator!”

Chi Ying knew she was as strong as him, from the moment he saw her. It was quite shocking for him. Only three days had passed; it was long enough for a Celestial cultivator to transform into a dominator. That was Su Ping’s terrifying ability.

Some Celestials withdrew their surprise and spoke in awe, “Boss Su, you’ve worked hard.”

Su Ping gently waved a hand, showing that Kayafollet was free to go.

Shen Huang spoke after she left, “We’ve prepared some exploration equipment able to transmit the views she saw through the gaps found on the universe’s barrier live. If a few special conditions were met, she could even sever the transmission and record videos for us to watch when she returns.”

“Okay.”

Su Ping nodded and said to Kayafollet, “You can find your universe first.. You may hide your equipment in your universe first; your primary mission is to hide yourself, while the second one is to investigate. Understand?”

“Yes, master.” Kayafollet felt warm. She nodded obediently.

Shen Huang gave the equipment to Kayafollet; all the experts witnessed as she left their last land of hope with everyone’s expectation for that unknown, dust-like universe.

Guided by Su Ping, she soon found a vulnerable part on the barrier protecting the unknown universe and quietly broke in.

The former returned to the palace and waited for updates with the others.

After all, accidents could take place at any time.

Everybody saw a live feed sent by her equipment as she went in. Based on what they saw, Kayafollet was flying in quiet space; the stars in that universe were quite dim, and only some flickering lights could be seen. It seemed that the stars found there were sparse.

Everybody's heart was tight; they were nervously observing the feed.

Kayafollet carefully approached one of the lights.

Su Ping could only watch; there wasn't any feedback other than the visuals. However, Kayafollet was able to sense more through the Original Dao World, which couldn't be captured by any equipment.

The light became gradually clearer as she moved closer. It turned out to be a planetary system. There were dozens of glowing planets around the star, their lights reflecting upon each other. The planetary system was quietly spinning and moving forward in space. There were dozens of planets in it. The smallest planet was like a meteor, while the biggest was even larger than the sun. She lingered outside the astral object for a moment before she pressed forward.

She obviously didn't detect any lives in that system.

The images captured by the equipment were unable to show more details of the planets from such a far distance. None of them expected that one of the few planetary systems in that universe was actually desolate.

Chapter 1448 Universe of Machines (2)

Some Celestial State cultivator mumbled, "I wonder if there are signs of life on those planets. It's fine if there aren't any..."

In the scope of a universe, myriads of planetary systems would be unfit for lives to be born because of their harsh conditions. However, it would be terrible if life signs were detected but not seen.

All the experts watched quietly as Kayafollet continued exploring. After a long time passed, she made a sudden stop; the live feed from the equipment became blurry before it turned dark.

Their expressions changed right after.

"What's going on? Was she attacked?"

"It's so sudden. Did you see anything?"

"I don't think she was attacked. But she must have encountered something. She willingly turned off the equipment."

All the Celestials were rather excited. Su Ping waved a hand and reversed time in the temple. The suddenly interrupted feed reappeared. The replay was much slower than before. They noticed that there was nothing unusual in the entire process. That could mean that Kayafollet had probably turned off the transmission because she sensed a powerful existence and feared that she could be exposed.

After all, the waves from the equipment were clearly visible for powerful existences.

“I wonder if she was detected.”

Everybody was anxious about Kayafollet’s situation.

Su Ping frowned. Considering her combat ability, as long as she hid well—with the God Emperor techniques of the Heavenly Path Institute—very few people could notice her, unless she ran into Ancestral Gods.

The Celestial cultivators, people who had lived hundreds of thousands of years, never felt time flow as slowly as it did at the moment.

Half an hour later, the picture was suddenly restored.

The feed was still showing images from the dark universe, but there were more lights now. Kayafollet approached them one by one. They were planetary systems of different sizes and distances.

However, there was nobody alive in them.

She passed by the glittering solar systems; beyond that was a pitch dark universe without any other light sources.

Kayafollet kept on moving. The darkness relayed by the video feed was permanent, making the viewers think that the equipment was broken. The place was so dark, they couldn’t even tell if she was moving; not even Celestials could detect anything else.

A long while later

The dark feed flickered, followed by an intermittent light. Everybody saw a green colored radiance; then, there was a dazzling light, as if a black curtain would have been lifted. They then beheld a green and vigorous planet; oceans and continents could be seen.

This planet was extremely massive and vast.

Kayafollet paused for a moment, and then chose to slowly approach the planet. Tides in the oceans could be seen, with many giant beasts, swimming up and down.

There were magnificent buildings too, as well as deserts and long bridges joining the continents.

“There are living beings!”

“Great!”

Everybody was thrilled. The existence of living creatures on the planet proved that the newfound universe had yet to be discovered by the Heavens. It could work as their temporary base; they could even look for allies there.

The buildings on the planet were quite futuristic. They were soon able to see images of the main species; highly similar to humans, except that their heads looked like water drops, while their necks and arms were narrow and long. Their torsos were thin and their skin was blue and smooth.

Those creatures were three meters tall on average, and were found everywhere.

Kayafollet was currently hiding with a certain method, allowing her to relay images of those creatures at a relative proximity.

“This is...”

Su Ping looked at the humanoids and frowned. He found them rather familiar, feeling he had seen them somewhere before, but the answer was still eluding him.

The blue-skinned humanoids seemed to be in a harmonious relationship with other living creatures. The giant beasts in the ocean would also play with them.

Su Ping’s aide flew in the planet’s high sky, passing buildings and continents, until she eventually reached a towering mountain.

The mountain rose from the ground like an enormous horn protruding from the planet. However, upon closer look, it could be seen that the mountain was smooth, apparently made of metal. Countless people seemed to be living inside.

“The technology on this planet is rather developed,” said one of the Celestials with a solemn tone; he was a science advocate.

“How did she find the place? She passed through some sort of dark region. Did she block the feed for a moment?”

“No, maybe the planet is being blocked by that darkness,” said Shen Huang solemnly.

Their hearts raced, feeling the strong urge of asking Kayafollet to return and answer their questions. The situation was scary in a way.

“Don’t worry. So far, so good,” said Su Ping, “She wouldn’t have gotten that close if there were universe dominators on this planet. It means that the local experts are in the Celestial State at best. The Heavens wouldn’t come here if such a developed civilization existed.”

Everyone felt much more at ease after Su Ping’s explanation.

Kayafollet reached the mountain a while later. She stopped all of a sudden, as if detecting something. The picture was turned off once again, but they still managed to see that she was fleeing from the mountain. Their hearts raced a second time. “Looks like she found something,” said a Celestial with a contorted face.

Another Celestial chimed in, “Maybe, she’s been found out.”

There wasn’t any extra information they could glean from the video feed, and could only wait anxiously.

Su Ping frowned again. He was still recalling the familiar feeling. It came all of a sudden; his pupils shivered as the memory resurfaced.

He had seen those people in one of the cultivation sites.

It was just a random cultivation site he had picked to train a customer’s pet. The cultivation site was said to be suitable for metal pets training, so he went there.



The metal mountain and the blue humanoids helped Su Ping remember.

This is one of the system's cultivation sites. I remember it's middle-ranked and the strongest person is in the Celestial State... Su Ping's eyes glittered. However, Kayafollet's reaction didn't seem to suggest she had met a Celestial. Could it be that the cultivation site was somewhere else in that universe?

There were too many cultivation sites listed in the system; Su Ping had never counted them. The sites for lightning pets' training were numerous, let alone all cultivation sites combined.

If that's the case, I can go to the cultivation site and ask them for more information. Su Ping's eyes glittered. He had never really explored that place, simply regarding it as a training place. He could pay it another visit. He could establish an alliance with the Ancestral Gods.

d

They had left their own universe in search of more allies. Although the task was risky, he had the protection of his store; there was no need to be overly worried.

"You can wait for her to come back. There's something I need to do," Su Ping said to those present.

He couldn't summon Kayafollet over. Instead of waiting in the palace, might as well go there and learn of the situation.

None of the experts dared to ask him for clarification. Shen Huang said, "Feel free to go. I'll ask someone to send word when she returns."

"Okay."

Su Ping nodded and returned to his store.

Back in the store, Su Ping displayed the list of all the cultivation sites. He entered the middle-rank category and continued screening those he had visited already.

World of Machines (Middle).

Feeling tempted, Su Ping switched to the high-rank cultivation sites, which were much fewer in number. Ten minutes later, he found the World of Machines (High).

Just as I thought. One universe has been divided into different cultivation sites.

Su Ping read their descriptions and found how similar they were. He felt reassured after figuring out they were both the same place, except that the things roaming the land had different combat abilities.

Chapter 1449 Sneak In (1)

Su Ping picked that advanced cultivation site and intended to visit their Ancestral Gods.

He paid the ticket fee and experienced the familiar transfer to the site. When he opened his eyes again—he found himself underneath a green sky.

The sky was like a piece of glass or a green lake. The clouds were thin and the sun was

bright.

Below was a prosperous city.

The city was full of metal structures and seemed to be highly futuristic, with a wild, splendid architectural style. Some buildings were like enormous wine cups, while some of the others resembled airships.

Su Ping spread his senses and soon noticed how the sky was extremely vast; even he was unable to sense its borders. It was clear that the world underneath such a green dome was no smaller than the Archean Divinity.

“One, two, three...”

Su Ping could vaguely sense that many auras were hiding in the buildings, all of God Emperor level but extremely feeble. It was as if they were cautiously holding back.

God Emperors usually weren't that cautious, unless they were battling.

However, there was only prosperity, based on what everyone could see. There were no signs of war.

This must be a place in the new universe. I should go ask someone.

Su Ping concealed his aura and reached a square where gray-blue skinned people were walking around. He morphed into one of them to blend in.

It was very easy for him to change his body structure.

Aside from the core bloodline inside his body, any other part was just like that of a real native, including the blood that circulated underneath his skin.

At the square-a slender, gray-blue woman was walking about. Unlike human beings, the natives didn't have any hair. Even though they looked bald in comparison, their heads akin to water drops carried a strange sense of beauty.

All of a sudden, that gray-blue woman disappeared.

In another layer of time and space, still in the square, Su Ping laid a hand on the woman's forehead. Her skin was cold, metallic and smooth; there was a scorching soul underneath her skin.

Su Ping sank into her consciousness and searched for information.

He quickly figured out where he was.

The city where he landed was named Azi, which was a middle-sized machine city in the world underneath the green sky.

The planet was called Green Glass World. According to the woman's memories, the planet was as boundless as a universe, with countless machine cities.

Hundreds of duchies had been established, and above said duchies were the

Hyper-energy Gods.

The Hyper-energy Gods had a superior status; they could even decide the fate of a duchy.

Su Ping delved into the woman's memories and saw her entire life, starting from birth. To his surprise, she had already lived for three hundred years, and she had just reached adulthood according to her civilization's standards.

Fetus... Glass Pool... Knowledge Irrigation... Her civilization was entirely different from that of humankind, being evidently more advanced.

All the gray-blue natives were born in an enormous, machine-like womb. Once the babies were born from what appeared to be a

huge pool of amniotic fluid, they would be delivered to a place called the Glass Pool; there they would live for three years until their bodies were capable of walking, running and eating. After that, their parents would fetch them and go home.

Knowledge collection would come next.

They didn't go to school to acquire knowledge. Instead, they would pay some money to create a connecting port on their bodies, which they would use when going to the Hall of Knowledge, plugging a data cable to said port.

Knowledge would be transferred directly. They went there every ten days, while having

to pay each time. The first five years were free and mandatory; they would acquire the basic knowledge of their people. Anything after that point there was knowledge that had to be paid. The woman that Su Ping kidnapped was from a rich family, one that supported their members with fifty years' worth of studies. She was a senior engineer among her people and had a well paid job. She also knew some ancient combat techniques, which were something that only nobles had access to. Still, it was in fact no different from arranging flowers or making coffee.

The gray-blue people usually fought with hot weapons; that woman carried three of them. She was strong enough to hunt Ocean State

beasts.

The elites of this society are generally in the Ocean State. Back in the Federation, even the elite members of some big families would be hard pressed to reach this standard... Su Ping's eyes glittered. As expected of an advanced cultivation site supervised by Ancestral Gods. They were strong in general; they even had expensive weapons able to fold time and space.

Weapons of such functionality would give their users Star State combat ability when equipped.

Aside from technology, the Source Energy they cultivate depends on their talent. Is that the real method for them to rise to the ultimate level of cultivation? Su Ping thought. The gray-blue people were not short of knowledge, but they lacked inspiration and creativity. Knowledge was easily accessible by paying money; however, creative minds were

rare.

Su Ping perceived something right then, so he decided to send the gray-blue woman back to the square. She didn't feel a thing while being in that solidified time and space; her only

perception was of falling into a trance while

in the square. She had no idea she had been kidnapped by an "alien".

"Come out. I didn't mean to offend you," Su

Ping said toward the void.

A moment of silence passed, then a figure walked out. He was a brawny gray-blue man who stared at Su Ping coldly. "You're not a local. Where are you from?"

"I come from another universe." Su Ping's aura had been exposed since the teleportation.

It came as no surprise that someone had tracked him down. He said with candor, "It's a place beyond your sky. My hometown was attacked, so we came here to seek help." Their communication was conducted via telepathy; it facilitated the understanding of what Su Ping meant by universe. "Beyond the sky?"

The gray-blue native changed his expression and became even colder. "Everything beyond the green glass is a monster. How bold of you to invade!"

"I'm afraid there's a misunderstanding,"

Su

Ping quickly reacted and said, "There's a vast world beyond your green glass, where all kinds of races and civilizations exist. The

monsters you mentioned may well be enemies we have in common. We too see them as monsters... They destroyed our home, and

that's why we're here."

The local expert gazed at Su Ping; his deep-blue eyes seemed to be scanning Su Ping's body. After a long while the man said, "Better not do anything rash. I will report the matter to the Selvegas; it'll be up to them to decide."

While dazed, Su Ping asked, "Are you a

Hyper-energy God?"

"Looks like you stole some intelligence about my people." The gray-blue man was colder still, but he didn't attack; Su Ping's aura was too powerful. Besides, he was unwilling to recklessly go ballistic against an unknown civilization.

Su Ping then noticed that a few others were approaching, traversing the void. Their auras were well-hidden; all of them were God Emperors.

He wasn't worried. He was calm as he simply said, "Why don't all of you come out? I'm not here to fight. I hope that there's a chance for us to communicate peacefully."

"We're not crazy about war either," said the cold expert keeping watch on him, but he was secretly alarmed. The foreigner wasn't a simple fellow, since he was able to discover his partners who were approaching in secret. "Is the Selvega you mentioned your highest leader?" asked Su Ping.

"Goddess Selvega is our mother. She is omnipotent and omniscient!" declared the gray-blue man proudly. That was also a warning.

While his expression remained casual, Su Ping nodded and said, "How long will it take for her to come here?"

Exactly at that moment—an indifferent and distant female voice was heard. "Foreigner, show us your original appearance."

#### Chapter 1450 Refusal (1)

Su Ping turned around and saw a blue-skinned woman with a streamlined body. Unlike other humanoids, she had a curly-looking crown on her head; it was deeply attached to her body, as if it were part of her flesh.

An Ancestral God...

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. The woman was emitting such a powerful pressure that all the blue humanoids were eclipsed, just like a queen rising to her throne.

"Goddess Selvega!"

The God Emperors of their race quickly bowed, their bodies emitting a dim blue light from their chest to their heads. Showing their machine core was their way of showing the greatest respect.

Su Ping removed his disguise, as he had already been seen through. His body began to crack; instead of turning into a human being, he turned into an almost ten-meter giant emitting the ancient aura of chaos. That was the real look of his Primitive Chaos Clan bloodline.

The humanoid God Emperors had shock on their faces, not expecting Su Ping's original self to be as intimidating. Although his power was beneath Goddess Selvega, he still brought forth a sense of threat.

"The Chaos clan..."

The woman changed her expression a bit. Blue circles of light flashed in her eyes, as if examining his body through a secret technique. Su Ping exposed himself openly, simply letting her observe as a show of sincerity and willingness to establish an alliance. Oftentimes alliances could never see the light because the two parties couldn't agree on mutual interests.

"Why are you here? Are you going to involve us in a war?" The woman stared at Su Ping, shedding all hostility as she didn't sense any ill will from Su Ping. However, his visit was an extremely terrible sign.

"Senior, why do you think that?"

Her answer surprised him. Does she have divination powers? Why would she know the reason I came here?

However, divinations were just calculations based on the operation of the Great Dao. Considering Su Ping's ability, he could predict everybody's fate in his universe, since he could look at the end of time.

However, such predictions were probably not applicable in other universes, due to the blockage of the different universe barriers. At the very least, he would need some time to observe.

There was no such thing as divination in the world. All results were fixed and could be observed.

"The chaos clan was arrogant in the past, nearly going extinct in the ancient war. You must be one of the survivors... You didn't sneak into our territory just to find shelter, did you?" said the woman coldly.

Su Ping asked, "Senior, you seem to know the chaos clan very well, don't you?"

"Of course. After the chaos clan was destroyed and the age of chaos ended, we were the second batch of lives born right after the gods who inherited your legacy of arrogance. However, we attach more importance to history and know you better than the gods do," said the woman coldly.

Su Ping was rather surprised, not expecting her to know about the gods as well.

He asked in a hurry, "Senior, if you know of the gods, do you know how far from here is the Archean Divinity?"

If he could find the Archean Divinity and the Heaven Path Institute, he could at least entrust the lives kept in his universe to the Heaven Path Institute for protection; that way he would again be able to cultivate in peace.

"I don't know," said the woman coldly, "The Empyrean is vast and boundless. Who knows where the Archean Divinity is? They should be hiding if they're smart enough. However, those arrogant fellows probably don't know the importance of keeping a low profile and met their doom already."

Su Ping instantly asked, "The Empyrean? Do you mean the Realm of Heavens beyond the universes? Then, you should know who ended the age of chaos, right?"

"Other than the Heavens, who else?" The woman stared at Su Ping. "You don't seem to know your history well, considering that you're a descendant of the chaos clan. Have you forgotten how your ancestors died?"

"It's been such a long time ago. Many things were lost," said Su Ping, "I'd really appreciate it if you could tell me, senior."

"Ha. The world has truly changed. To think that a member of the chaos clan would be so humble... I'm even starting to wonder if the history I saw is real." The woman chuckled with mockery in her eyes.

"Better give up trying to get us involved in your war. We're living in seclusion; we didn't seek anyone's protection when the war took place, and we will not participate in anyone else's war."

Su Ping felt rather speechless. She had turned him down before he could even broach the subject of the alliance.

Seeing that her guess was right, the woman sneered and said, "For the sake of you being part of the chaos clan, the origin of everything, I won't give you a hard time. Go back where you came from, and I'll consider that this never happened."

"Senior, according to what I've heard, were you attacked by the Heavens too?" Su Ping didn't give a direct answer. He tried to change the subject.

"That's right. It's a good thing that the Supreme Heavenly Dao wasn't alarmed, or we would have been annihilated," said the woman, "We're living a great life right now; we won't fight another war."

"Senior, Indeed I came here with the intention of establishing an alliance with you." Su Ping stared at her. He thought for a moment and decided to face the problem with the most sincere attitude. "My hometown was invaded by the Heavens and nearly got destroyed. However, I know that there are many more universes and powerful species that have also been ravaged by the Heavens."

Pet Store 1451

Chapter 1451 Refusal (2)

"I'm hoping to gather everybody's power to resist the Heavens!

"Senior..."

Su Ping stared at the humanoid goddess and said, "Although I couldn't help when you encountered the Heavens, believe me, I can certainly help if you encounter them again and you let me know!"

The woman smiled derisively. "That won't be necessary. Me and my clansmen will deal with them on our own; we don't intend to ask for anyone's help, nor will we provide it. Everything is antlike in front of the Heavens. I can understand them. As for your proposal... Haha, you're hilariously cute."

Su Ping nodded. "You're right. Everyone who has met the Heavens knows how formidable they are. Nobody would be willing to take risks and sacrifice themselves; however, we must not forget the Heavens' insult... We must avenge the people who died because of them, blood for blood!"

"You're just a mere Hyper-energy creature, and you think you can challenge the Heavens? Ridiculous!"

The woman sneered and continued, "You were eliminated by the Heavens in your most powerful age. What can you do now? Even if all the surviving species join forces, they're not as strong as the ones who lived during the age of chaos. You're nothing if you're not a Sorcerer Ancestor; who knows how many Sorcerer Ancestors are still out there?"

"I do!" Su Ping replied, "I'm aware of the Sorcerer Ancestors, and I'm planning to forge an alliance with them."

"Looks like your universe really took a beating. Do you have no one better to act as a diplomat?" said the woman indifferently, "Do you think you're strong enough to meet a Sorcerer Ancestor? Are you worthy?"

Su Ping said, "Not all the Sorcerer Ancestors are that inaccessible. Strength is not the only thing that matters; I believe that our similar experiences will give us the same faith and determination!"

"Naive!"

The woman sneered once more, then wore a nonchalant expression. "I don't want to waste any more time on you. Get out of here right now; my clan will never get involved in the war, not for any reason. Don't even think about it. You'll be forever buried here if you don't go."

Su Ping gazed at her. The resolution, indifference and pride in her eyes made him realize that words were useless. Some people could be convinced with words, while others would only be convinced with strength.

"I won't force you to join the war effort. However, can you allow me and my compatriots to settle here for a while?" asked Su Ping.

The woman frowned and asked, "How many are there?" "Not many."



The woman thought for a moment and said, "You have to tell me how you escaped from the monster outside and snuck in."

The light in her eyes was a telltale sign; that information was the true reason she was willing to talk to him for such a long time— Otherwise, she would have killed him long before, considering her determination and disdain.

"Sorry. There's nothing I can say," said Su Ping.

Since it was impossible to negotiate without interests, he could only drop his sincere attitude and simply negotiate.

The woman gazed at Su Ping and said, "Do you know that I only need a thought to kill you?"

"You're welcome to try, senior." Su Ping stared back at her without any fear in his eyes.

The woman didn't expect him to be that bold. His eyes were genuinely clear and fearless.

She slowly recovered from a temporary daze. After a long time of being silent, she said, "All right. I'll think about it. Still, it's an important matter, so I have to discuss this with other people."

"You're not the only Selvega in this place?" "That is correct.

Su Ping said, "Then, can I roam around while you discuss?"

"Sorry, but no," said the woman, "This is our territory. Even if we accept your request to stay, you can only be active in a limited range.

Do you understand?"

Su Ping could only acknowledge her conditions.

"Senior, there must be other settlements with survivors beyond your green glass, right?"

asked Su Ping, "How do you communicate with each other?"

Light flashed in the woman's eyes. She said, "You know a lot of stuff. Did you go beyond the green glass?"

"No. Is the monster outside one of the Heavens?" asked Su Ping.

"No, but they're domesticated by them," said the woman, "Although I don't know how you got here, you'd better not go anywhere. I'll let you know when we reach a consensus."

She then spoke to one of the humanoid God Emperors. "Take him to my palace. He cannot leave without my permission."

“Am I going to be imprisoned?” asked Su Ping

with a smile.

“Too many people dream of entering my palace,” said the woman indifferently.

Su Ping smiled, acting compliant. He soon left with the God Emperor.

Soon after Su Ping left-one of the remaining God Warriors felt compelled to ask, “Selvega, why didn’t you execute him?”

The woman replied indifferently, “The chaos clan is the most ancient of all. They had Sorcerer Ancestors; it would be impossible for the kid to sneak in without the help of an expert, or even a Sorcerer Ancestor. After all, not all of their clan members died in that battle. Sorcerer ancestors cannot be killed, unless...”

She paused as she talked, as if terrified of a certain existence she didn’t even want to mention.

She then shook her head and said, “Keep an

eye on him and don’t let him make an opening on the green glass. He can probably run away fairly easily if the monster breaks in, but we would have to bear the

consequences.”

“Yes.”

“We should bide our time and not make a decision until we meet his compatriots...” A cold glint flashed in the woman’s eyes.

...

In the woman’s palace—

The place was magnificent to an extreme. There was metal fluid everywhere, stretching out in an awfully complicated way.

Su Ping followed the blue humanoid to this place and looked around, only to find that the guards were sizing him up curiously. It was obvious that they had never seen any outsiders.

“How many Selvega Goddesses do you have here?” Su Ping asked the blue humanoid curiously.

The blue humanoid frowned, acting vigilant.

“Why do you ask?”

He was really cautious after learning that Su Ping was an invader. He then realized why Selvega didn't execute Su Ping on the spot.

"It's just a random question. Don't be nervous." Su Ping smiled.

"Hmm."

The blue humanoid remained silent, simply ignoring the guest.

"The Selvega are superior beings of your clan. Are you afraid that I'd be plotting against them? They're so strong that no plots would ever work on them, don't you think?" said Su Ping.

The blue humanoid raised his eyebrows. "Of

course. But since you asked, I can't tell you anything. I might have told you

if

hadn't

asked."

you

"What a paradox. Had I not asked, why would you say anything?" Su Ping shook his head with a smile. Although he didn't receive direct

answers, he had just found one. The guy didn't deny that the Selvega were superior beings in his clan. That placed Ancestral Gods as the top on that planet. There were no Sorcerer Ancestors.

That made sense, given that Sorcerer Ancestors were born in chaos. It was hard for anything to reach that level through

cultivation; that was an endowment you were born with.

Several people flew over while the pair talked. They were all God Emperors.

"I heard that an invader showed up. Let me see what he looks like."

"Is he the monster lurking beyond the green glass?"

Several figures appeared and looked at Su Ping curiously.

The latter found it hard to tell those aliens apart, as they all looked the same in his eyes.

He could only distinguish them by their different auras.

“Looks like he’s a member of the chaos clan, the source of all clans my mother often mentions,” said a girl all of a sudden. “That’s right,” said the blue humanoid

escorting Su Ping, nodding. He seemed to be acting awfully respectful before the girl.

Chapter 1452 The First Ally (1)

“What is my mother going to do to him?” asked the girl telepathically. “The Selvega asked me to bring him here and watch over him.”

Watch over him? Maybe my mother is planning to find his backer. He passed through the green glass. If the invaders like him are malicious, they might lure the monsters in. The girl was deep in thought, her eyes glittering.

She stopped speaking telepathically. She looked down at Su Ping and asked, “Member of the chaos clan, do you care to spar with me?”

“Huh?”

Su Ping was rather surprised. A sparring invitation on their first encounter? This girl is rather competitive.

“Sorry. I’m not interested.” Su Ping shook his head and declined.

“Is the chaos clan so cowardly?” The girl frowned, not expecting Su Ping to turn her down. Such an attitude was inconceivable in her clan.

“Not cowardly, just uninterested,” said Su Ping helplessly, “I’m here to establish an alliance with you, not to cause trouble.”

“Humph. Weaklings don’t get to be our allies,” said the girl after a snort.

Well... Su Ping was downright speechless. He couldn’t argue back. He said, “I heard that you’re hiding here from the monsters beyond the sky. Since I was able to sneak in, I can certainly break through your skies. That’s not enough to prove my strength?”

The onlookers showed slight changes in their expressions. Su Ping had spoken of their greatest fear.

The girl snorted and said, “Who knows how you snuck in? You can only tell how strong a person is after you fight them. Besides, I’m interested in the battle techniques of the chaos clan.”

“Fine.” Su Ping relented. Since he wanted an alliance, displaying his strength was on the list.

She smiled with glittering lips after seeing that Su Ping was on board. “Come to our holy arena. Don’t worry. I won’t kill you.”

“I won’t kill you either,” said Su Ping.

The girl raised her eyebrows but didn’t reply. She tore an opening in the void and took Su Ping to a special time and space found in a terrain behind the palace. There were special devices and gems which made it look like a unique small world.

“Please follow me.”

“All right.”

Led by the girl, everybody stepped into the holy arena.

It was more of a small universe than an “arena.” It was so vast that everybody could fight freely.

“Come on.”

The girl looked at Su Ping with anticipation in her eyes. Her body was emitting a flickering blue light.

“Ladies first,” said Su Ping.

“Is that a thing?”

“Yes. It’s considered as part of the etiquette in our civilization.”

“Males are generally stronger than females in your civilization. It’s more like weaklings first, right? You think I’m weak?” The girl raised her eyebrows. Her tongue was really quick; Su Ping didn’t really know what to say.

Communicating across civilizations is indeed difficult... Su Ping heaved a sigh in his heart, then said, “I didn’t mean to offend you. I’ll start then.”

“Bring it on.” The girl slightly raised her head.

Su Ping flashed and disappeared from the spot. All the times and spaces were trembling when Su Ping’s figure passed by. He was absolutely unpredictable, moving faster than time, as if he were etched in memories. Unavoidably, a sharp sword aura darted forth, emerging from Su Ping’s finger.

The girl’s enormous pupils shrank somewhat, obviously surprised by the visitor’s sudden attack. She was quick to react, though, unleashing blue light that looked like some sort of shield. She then rubbed her hands, summoning a lightning blade. She moved to brutally pierce Su Ping’s face.

Never hit a man in the face... Su Ping tilted his head, moving his sword to meet his opponent’s lightning blade, instantly colliding. Su Ping instantly sensed that a high-frequency power had been radiated; however, all the cells in his body were like engines that worked quickly to offset that power.

The girl, on the other hand, had to quickly move back when the sword struck her lightning blade. She had to move dozens of years into the future to avoid the strike’s effect.

But the next moment—she dashed back to her original spot.

“What a sharp attack. Was that the chaos clan’s method?” The girl had a solemn expression. Su Ping’s strike had won her approval.

The other God Emperors tagging along were astonished too. They had never seen the girl lose to any peer, and Su Ping even seemed to be a level below them.

Su Ping didn’t follow up on his attack. He stood on the spot and asked, “Shall we continue?”

“Of course!” There was fury on the girl’s face. “You think I’ve tried my best? Be careful!”

Her eyes turned entirely blue, and her skin was wreathed in abundant blue light. Electricity arcs were appearing in the void; however, it was not real electricity, but the Great Dao in that specific form, emitting a terrifying light.

She suddenly attacked. The lightning blade she held turned from the size of a dagger to a saber almost five meters long, before it slashed at Su Ping fiercely.

Her body figure was slim, but her battle moves were wild.

Su Ping was stunned by the girl's fury. He didn't know the reason why, but he became serious. He released the universe of chaos and summoned its power, then threw a punch.

Chapter 1453 The First Ally (2)

After a boom, the brilliant punch moved like a dazzling meteor, crossing the deep space to meet the lightning blade.

An unstoppable, sharp aura burst out from the fist attack and drowned the lightning blade.

Bang!

The girl was instantly flung away, disappearing from view. She wasn't able to resist the strike, and was sent flying decades into the future.

Su Ping stood on the spot, not moving to chase after her. He felt that the girl would die if he used more strength; such an outcome would sever all chances to make an alliance.

"That's impossible!"

The girl was appalled. While recalling the terrifying force working against her arms just then, she felt as if she were pushing stars. Is that the real power of this chaos clan member?

we

The other blue humanoids were filled with disbelief. She used her original nuclear energy, and yet she was still easily suppressed by the invader?

The girl returned from the future soon after. She said with a troubled expression, "I've long heard that the chaos clan creatures were the strongest when compared with those of the same level, and that they can only be defeated by one of their kind. The rumors are indeed true."

"Thank you. You were not bad," said Su Ping. That girl was as strong as the God Emperors.

"What's your name?"

"Su Ping. What about you?" "Iris," said the girl, "Why did you break into our place?"

"As I said before, I'm here to propose an alliance," said Su Ping, "My hometown was already attacked and destroyed by the Heavens, so I hope we can join forces. I will continue seeking other powerful allies, such as the gods in the Archean Divinity and other powerful races. I want all of us to gather up to fight against the Heavens."

Iris raised her eyebrows. "So naive. Do you know how difficult it is? The gods alone are a big headache. That bunch of arrogant people would never lower their proud heads even in front of the chaos clan."

"I will press their heads down, then," said Su Ping.

Iris felt dazed for a moment. She then clapped her hands and laughed. "I like that. However, you can't do it. There are many experts among the gods; they're just short of a Sorcerer Ancestor. Otherwise, they would have had a place in the age of chaos!"

Su Ping nodded. "It's not a problem as long as they don't have a Sorcerer Ancestor."

Iris raised her eyebrows, astonishment showing on her face. "So, you have a Sorcerer Ancestor as a backer."

"That's one way to look at it." Su Ping thought quickly and decided that bragging a little was necessary to increase his odds of succeeding

"You wouldn't have asked us for help if you had a Sorcerer Ancestor. You could have simply made us do your bidding." Iris seemed to be peering straight into Su Ping's heart. "I can tell you the truth. There are no Sorcerer Ancestors in my clan. That's the final destination of all cultivators. Only the original lives born in the age of chaos can reach that place; it's impossible to reach that level through cultivation."

She was completely honest as she spoke. There was no need to lie.

Su Ping had guessed as much. The humanoids weren't derived from the chaos clan. The chances of them having a Sorcerer Ancestor weren't high.

"Our Sorcerer Ancestor is still asleep. He was badly wounded, so there's no need to wake him up for trivial matters," said Su Ping with a normal expression. "You're lying."

Iris gazed at Su Ping and said, "The age of chaos is long over. After such a long time, even the worst wound should have been healed. Besides, a Sorcerer Ancestor can rise back to the peak as long as a tiny bit of their aura remains."

"This is a special case. I can't tell you the details; you may choose not to believe me." Su Ping was casual about it, not keen on explaining further.

Iris was actually surprised and suspicious of his confident look; however, she was still unwilling to believe him. There was only a small bit of chance he wasn't lying, because he was a member of the chaos clan.

The members of the chaos clan couldn't have survived the catastrophe without a Sorcerer Ancestor's protection. That was the only reason why she thought Su Ping was telling her the truth.

"Since you're not malicious, I won't give you a hard time. Wait for my mother to return and tell you the result," said Iris.

Was practicing with him the moment they met not giving him a hard time? Good thing that he won... Su Ping said helplessly, "I hope it's a good result."

Everybody left the arena and returned to the palace.

Iris didn't leave. She simply asked curiously, "Tell me more about the chaos clan. How did you survive for such a long time?"

Is she trying to dig for more information? Su Ping opened his hands and said, "I wasn't born yet. I don't know."

Iris didn't believe what Su Ping said and snorted. "Humph. How petty."

"Why don't you tell me something about your cultivation techniques? I'm quite interested," said Su Ping  
"I wasn't born yet. I don't know."

II

11

Are the women of every species so vengeful?

Su Ping felt that it was better to simply appreciate the views.

Several hours passed in a blink.

Outside the palace-several magnificent auras were approaching. Su Ping raised his head and looked at the void.

Iris and the others, however, instantly became nervous. They hurriedly stood up with blue lines on their bodies, which was their way of paying respects.

The goddess appeared again, followed by three Ancestral God peers.

There's only four of them? Su Ping slightly raised his eyebrows.

"Is he the invader?" The woman and the other three were also observing him. Their hostile demeanor was significantly reduced after confirming that he was indeed a member of the chaos clan.

"Kid, how did you sneak in?" asked an old  
man.

Su Ping said, "Guys, there's no need for us to investigate each other yet. I'm here with the sincere offer to make an alliance. There's no need to fight the Heavens with us right now; it's fine as long as you're willing to participate after I find enough allies. We will kill the Heavens together!"

All of them were surprised by his straightforward approach; furthermore, he was absolutely fearless, even under their pressure. Such confidence made them think highly of that member of the ancient chaos clan.

"Haha. Very confident. That's indeed the style of the chaos clan," said a male with a smile, "I heard that your hometown was destroyed and you're now wandering without a home?"

"That is correct."

"You couldn't even defend your own universe. Why should we even cooperate with you?"



“If the Heavens came here in large numbers, you couldn’t have resisted them either,” said Su Ping.

“How bold!”

The old man’s eyes became sharp after snorting in discomfort.

Su Ping stared peacefully at him without giving in.

All their interactions thus far made him realize that a mere show of sincerity and friendliness was pointless. An alliance would never be formed unless he was qualified to negotiate with them.

Kneeling would not equate to an alliance, but to slavery.

“You’re not afraid that we’ll kill you?”

“Aren’t you afraid that if you kill me, my backer will break your sky and so that the Heavens can pay you a visit?” said Su Ping coldly.

That was the blue humanoid’s greatest fear, and the main reason why they hadn’t interrogated him.

“We’ve already discussed, and we’re here to inform you of the result,” said the woman, “We’re fine with the alliance. But like you said, we will only take part in the war until you find enough allies to fight the Heavens. Finding more allies first is the condition.”

“Naturally. We’ll all be screwed if we hit the stone with eggs,” said Su Ping.

“In that case, let’s hope for a good collaboration.”

“Sure.” Su Ping smiled. It seemed that those people had chosen to compromise.

After all, his arrival was absolutely unexpected. They couldn’t fathom how his backer had done it, nor were they clear about his identity as a member of the chaos clan, which was intimidating.

“Senior, is this place the last peaceful world in your universe?” asked Su Ping.

“Of course not,” the man said, “This is just the region under our control. Our universe is boundless. The invasion of the Heavens forced us to separate and hide in different green glass worlds.”

Chapter 1454 Token of Trust

Su Ping nodded.

The old expert didn’t lie to Su Ping. After all, his species could be found in middle-rank cultivation sites too, which were probably behind other green glass planets.

However, the middle-rank cultivation sites weren’t protected by Ancestral Gods. Who built the green glass barriers?

Or maybe, it wasn’t built by Ancestral Gods?

Su Ping thought about it, but held back his urge to ask. It would be inappropriate to address such a sensitive matter after they had barely become allies, as it was no different from asking a country about their national defense secrets.

“What if I accidentally pass by another green glass planet and find someone else instead? There might be a misunderstanding,” said Su Ping. The humanoid hosts exchanged looks. Su Ping posed a question that revealed an important piece of information, which was that the young man couldn’t choose the green glass planet he was going to visit, like a skill with a random destination. It somehow proved that the green glass could block the senses of Su Ping’s backer. Even if they were truly a Sorcerer Ancestor, their strength had surely declined.

Considering his alliance proposal, and his claim that his hometown had been destroyed, they found him increasingly trustworthy.

“This is simple. Here’s a token of trust. Whichever green glass planet you enter, their inhabitants will treat you nicely once you show them this.” The woman took out a piece of perfectly curved, deep purple metal that looked like a fish scale. It was so smooth that even a fly would slip once landing upon it. It was like a delicate piece of art.

“All I need to do is show this?” Su Ping accepted the item and examined it. Although extremely thin, there seemed to be some embedded structures within, which he couldn’t see through.

“Yes. This certifies our friendly terms, but only if you don’t do anything an ally wouldn’t do,” said the woman.

She didn’t mention that she had recorded some information in the item, which was only readable to her clansmen. It briefly described Su Ping’s identity, just in case that he would try to boss around in other green glass planets, or even attempt to control the planets without any local Selvega, or steal knowledge of her clan.

“Okay.”

Su Ping accepted the item. That would allow him to settle down in that universe with his companions.

Those cyborgs had been overlooked by the Heavens for such a long time. Humans would at least be in a safe place for the time being; Su Ping needed time more than anything else at the moment. It would be safer and more efficient for him to look for other allies when he became an Ancestral God.

“Since we’re already allies, can I take a tour? It would be better if you tell me about the rules and manners of this place, to avoid accidentally offending you,” said Su Ping.

The group conferred with looks. Everyone nodded.

After all, there was a major species behind Su Ping, who needed to be aware of their rules. Otherwise, there was a chance of crossing people and even the start of conflicts. That wasn’t something they wished to see.

“Happy cooperation,” said Su Ping with a smile.

“I hope so,” said the Selvega goddess. She then glanced at Iris and said, “You will be temporarily responsible for taking care of our ally. You haven’t told me your name yet, have you?”

“Su Ping.”

“All right. If there’s anything you don’t know, just ask Iris.” After that, the woman instantly disappeared, along with the other Selvegas.

The immense pressure declined once they departed, and everybody else was greatly relieved. They were able to breathe again.

Iris, however, wore a troubled expression. Her mother had sent her a telepathic message just before leaving, reminding her not to explain secret matters and to keep a close eye on Su

Ping.

What her mother didn’t know was that she had just been defeated by him. She would probably be helpless if he truly did anything.

After sensing that the Ancestral Gods had definitely left, Su Ping turned around and asked Iris, “Are they all of the Selvegas in your planet?”

The very first question is already this offensive... Iris frowned, but it wasn’t something she couldn’t comment on. She said casually, “Of course not. They’re just some of the Selvegas. They must have reached a conclusion and only some came to inform you. They were also here to check what the invader is like.”

Su Ping corrected her, “I’m not an invader. I’m your ally now.” Iris didn’t respond. She simply asked, “Your hometown was destroyed by the Heavens. Don’t you have a Sorcerer Ancestor backer? How did the Heavens defeat you? Did the Ultimate Heavenly Dao come?” “I don’t know. I was very weak back then,” said Su Ping with a normal expression, “Just now, they mentioned that there are many green glass planets. Why don’t you gather in one place? Wouldn’t you be weaker by splitting up?”

“You want us to gather in one place so we are caught in one fell swoop?” Iris asked, “Have you wandered a long time in the Empyrean?”

“I see.”

Su Ping asked, “How long have you been hiding underneath this green glass sky?”

“A long time. A million years, at least,” said Iris vaguely.

He kept on, “Do you have detailed history records? You even know about the incidents from the age of chaos. You must remember when the Heavens invaded, right?”

Iris glared at him and asked, “Are you an ally or a spy?”

“We’re allies, shouldn’t we be candid with each other?”

“Bah!” Iris said angrily, “How shameless!”

III

He was taken aback by the response.

Su Ping didn’t stay in the temple for long. He asked Iris to show him around in that green glass planet.

## Chapter 1455 Token of Trust (2)

While escorted by Iris and two others at the God Emperor level, Su Ping was like an emperor roaming the place incognito, viewing everything about the humanoids' lifestyle. He discovered that their civilization was highly developed. The locals lived a patterned life; even the people on the streets were walking with the same pace.

Everything was in order.

Furthermore, that green glass world was extremely vast. Su Ping and Iris crossed many cities, continents and oceans, and they had yet to reach the end of such a massive place.

Su Ping stopped in some cities and bought world maps, only to discover that he had only visited less than one tenth of the entire region.

The area he had visited was already equal to seven hundred Blue Planets.

A few days spent there and Su Ping had already acquired lots of information from Iris. Although vigilant at the beginning, she stopped hiding basic information.

They're not arrogant like the gods. However, they are cautious, indifferent and self-contained. He gradually became aware of the cyborgs' indifference and rationality.

After estimating that enough time had passed, he bid Iris and his other hosts goodbye.

Hearing that Su Ping was leaving, Iris and the others were all curious. They were eager to find out how Su Ping would pass the green glass.

After all, even they were unable to destroy the barrier.

Su Ping wasn't secretive about it; he also allowed them to inform the Selvegas. They witnessed how he summoned the system and a vortex appeared; one last wave goodbye and stepped into the vortex, vanishing without a trace. It was a friendly gesture toward his new allies, but it was also meant to intimidate them.

Iris and the others were stunned.

They had thought of many ways that Su Ping could leave. For instance, flying to the green glass and somehow fuse into it, or piercing the barrier. However, none of them expected such a simple approach.

They couldn't even tell where the vortex was leading to.

They could only sense the vague trace of a frightening aura on the other side of the channel.

The bluish woman was the most shocked of all. Being a Selvega herself, she was one of the strongest cyborgs, but she realized that she wasn't able to see the world on the other side of the vortex. She examined it carefully, only to detect a frightening aura, one that no Selvegas could ever have. It belonged to the legendary Sorcerer Ancestors!

So, he does have a Sorcerer Ancestor backing him...

The woman showed a troubled expression. The horror of the Sorcerer Ancestors was recorded in their archives with great detail. They could erase the entire clan with the wave of a hand.

Su Ping was supported by a Sorcerer Ancestor, and yet he went to see them and propose an alliance. She couldn't help but wonder if her suspicion was a stupid offense.

In any case, she had to inform the other Selvegas of such a find; they would have to reevaluate that ally if theirs.

Su Ping went back to the store after leaving the world of cyborgs. Days and nights were much longer than they used to be, ever since he left the old universe. However, everybody still kept the original time system of the Federation. Sometimes, they would bid each other goodnight, even though it was still the middle of the day.

It was sunny outside, but all the staff were resting; it was obviously a later hour in the day. Su Ping's shadow clone was training pets and there weren't any spots available at the moment, which was the main reason why they closed every day.

He saw both Joanna and Tang Ruyan

cultivating, so he didn't disturb them. He quietly left the store and went to the palace.

Once he got there, he noticed that Shen

Huang and the others were still waiting. He had spent a dozen days in the cultivation site, but only twenty-four hours had passed in the real world.

"How is it going?" Su Ping asked.

All eyes were trained on him. One of the Celestials quickly replied, "She's not back yet; she's still exploring. There are many lives hiding in the dark."

Su Ping nodded and looked at the dark on the screen. Kayafollet seemed to be wandering in space, hoping to explore more territory.

space

"Did she encounter any monsters in space?" asked Su Ping, remembering what the bluish woman said.

Everybody felt dazed. Shen Huang said, "There was a giant beast hidden deep in space; however, she avoided it. There weren't any other monsters... Is that giant beast very dangerous?"

“Just one?” Su Ping was surprised. That single beast couldn’t be the same monster the bluish woman was scared of; after all, it couldn’t be possible that the many Ancestral Gods inside would be hiding behind the green

glass barrier to avoid a mere monster. “I’ll ask her to return,” said Su Ping. He immediately took out a red heart that he had dug out of Kayafollet’s body. She could feel it despite the blockage of the universe barrier and was also a beacon to call her back. All in all, telepathic messages and contracts couldn’t send any information; that was the

only way to call her.

The person on the screen paused right after. The next moment—the video feed quickly changed, showing a deep space view. Afterwards, Kayafollet broke through the barrier with a dazzling light.

Su Ping detected Kayafollet’s vague aura from the void outside.

He waited patiently.

Her presence became stronger as she approached, until they could sense each other directly. It didn’t take long for her to get to the palace.

She

“You must be exhausted. How did it go?” Su Ping saw the fatigue on Kayafollet’s face. had definitely gone through many things that weren’t recorded.

“Thank you for your concern, master.” Kayafollet put on a smile, as if she were a little girl who had just been complimented. She then said solemnly, “I found some planets with humanoids that have very developed civilizations.”

“Their planets are hidden behind natural barriers; it’s hard to notice them if you’re not careful.”

“Based on what I sensed, the strongest among them is as strong as me. Still, I didn’t dare get too close. So I left in a hurry.”

“I read from the memories of some ancient Ascendants who have lived for long periods of time. There seem to be some existences stronger than universe dominators among them.

“However, those existences live in secret places and I had second thoughts about searching for them,” said Kayafollet.

Su Ping nodded. “That’s right. They’re cyborgs. They have members who are in the Undying State, and there are plenty.” “Cyborgs?” Shen Huang and the others were stunned; they looked at Su Ping in astonishment. One of them asked, “Boss Su, how... how’d you know?”

"I've met them," Su Ping said briefly, "They were also attacked by the Heavens, but luckily, they survived and hid in their universe. Maybe the Heavens reigned over this place for a while, but their domination has weakened as of late. We'll be safe as long as we hide where the locals live."

Everybody looked at Su Ping with shock and suspicion. Why did he know even more things about that place than Kayafollet, who had just returned from an exploration?

Even so, not asking was still the sensible choice. Su Ping carried too many secrets. Even if he explained, they probably wouldn't understand.

"The most dangerous place is the safest place. If they've hidden themselves for so long in that place, it should be fine for us to stay there for now," said Shen Huang.

"Cyborgs? They're not living creatures?" asked a confused Celestial cultivator.

Su Ping shook his head and said, "They're different from the machines we know, as they're naturally-born life forms; they're not dead objects with artificial intelligence." The Celestial cultivator was still lost and confused.

"Let me see what you've found. If nothing else, we'll pack up and settle down here for now." Su Ping waved at Kayafollet.

Kayafollet stepped up obediently and placed her head below Su Ping's hand, like a cat enjoying touching.

Chapter 1456 Information (1)

The group of Celestials felt a chill when they saw how obedient Kayafollet was.

Su Ping read through Kayafollet's memories; it was as if he would have personally explored the cyborgs universe. There were indeed many green glass planets, well hidden in the deep spaces.

However, she didn't encounter the monsters mentioned by Iris.

The only creature found was a regular beast.

Is it possible that the universe is so vast that Kayafollet never reached the place where Iris lives? Su Ping's eyes glittered. He felt that something was amiss.

After some pondering, he decided to explore the place in person.

Even if he encountered an Ancestral God cyborg, he could hide in the store.

"System, if I die here, can I resurrect by paying energy?" Su Ping asked in his heart.

The system replied, "No, it's only possible in cultivation sites."

"Isn't this place a cultivation site?"

The system stayed silent.

Su Ping felt helpless. The system could be quite rigid sometimes, but there was nothing he could do about it.

He would be invincible if he could resurrect in the outside world with energy.

After all, the energy required to resurrect was only one tenth the ticket cost.

“Guys, I’m planning to go exploring. You should be prepared. We’ll settle down for now if the place is safe,” said Su Ping to the others, sharing his plan.

Shen Huang instantly asked, “Wouldn’t it be too dangerous?”

“It’s risky, but it’s worth a shot,” said Su Ping, “We’ll retreat if we happen to run into a hostile Undying State being.”

Stunned, Shen Huang asked, “Will we be able to retreat?”

“No problem.”

One of the Celestials asked prudently, “Wouldn’t there be a chance that we run across those ultimate lives above the Undying State that Boss Su described before?”

Su Ping shook his head. “Those kinds of existences don’t live here; otherwise, they would have detected us, despite the barrier protecting the universe.”

There was a collective tongue-clicking at the thought, as it was impossible for them to understand such existences.

“Since retreating is possible, we can give it a try,” said Xu Kong.

Chi Huo nodded and chimed in, “Us floating around is not enough; it would be much better if we have a place to settle down. Maybe we can even set up an alliance with the locals.”

Su Ping nodded.

Once everyone was onboard, Shen Huang told the others to gather the people under their command.

All the survivors were excited and nervous when they learned that a new universe had been found.

Everything was prepared. Su Ping then placed his store, all the Celestial cultivators, and the planets with residents into his universe. Later he approached the barrier of the new universe and made a hole to sneak in.

He concealed his aura using the top secret technique he learned from the Heaven Path Institute. Before him was a dark and quiet universe, just as he had seen earlier. However, this time he could personally feel everything about it; he discovered a thin Great Dao pervading that space.

There are some signs of war. What an intense aura of death...

Su Ping’s eyes glittered. A great war had indeed taken place in that universe, which destroyed laws and Dao. They had yet to recover.



He spread out his senses, sending them throughout space. He discovered a lot of decaying auras which belonged to floating corpses in the deeper layers.

Most corpses were from Celestials or God Emperors. The former only had bones left, while the latter were relatively intact. Their faces were still visible; they were all bluish cyborgs.

Su Ping's heart felt heavy. That universe had definitely been powerful and advanced. Nonetheless, they were almost annihilated by the Heavens.

This made him act more cautiously. He roamed the area, occasionally seeing monsters wandering in deep spaces. They seemed to have evolved by absorbing the energy from the floating bodies.

m

Soon enough, Su Ping found a green glass planet.

It was hidden in the eighth space, and was as tiny as a grain of dust, floating randomly. Su Ping would have easily overlooked it if he hadn't been carefully searching.

Su Ping flashed and approached the tiny planet. He carefully tore an opening and snuck in.

A world as insignificant as an atom actually had a vast territory.

Hardly had he entered when he saw an extremely prosperous land, where countless futuristic cities were standing. A lot of bluish cyborgs were living there.

Su Ping had left a gap in his inner universe; that way his master and the other Celestials could see the outside world.

After that, Su Ping made sure his aura was concealed and quietly entered a city.

He quickly transformed into a bluish cyborg to mix into the crowd.

Su Ping had learned the cyborgs' language from Iris. Still a ways before he became proficient, but daily communication wasn't a problem. The young cyborg he transformed into walked on the streets and passed by other cyborgs.

He was careful as he stretched out his senses. After covering the entire city, he discovered that the strongest cyborg was only in the Ascendant State. He immediately captured a random passerby and took him to a deep space to browse through his memories.

The captured cyborg didn't feel a thing as he was restrained. Both time and space was entirely paused.

Chapter 1457 Information (2)

Su Ping was able to quickly learn the basic information about the place, based on the cyborg's abundant memories.

Su Ping then freed the time and space and sent the guy back to the street. None of the cyborgs in the vicinity noticed anything wrong during the process, not even the one that Su Ping captured...

The Hyper-energy Gods are in the kingdom. There are no Selvegas here...

Su Ping's eyes glittered. As far as the bluish cyborg knew, there were no Selvegas on that planet. It was obviously just a mid-rank cultivation site.

However, it was vast enough for Shen Huang and the others to settle down.

As for the surviving civilians, they could live inside Shen Huang and the others' inner universes, as they wouldn't take up much space.

However, since there are no Selvegas as protectors in this place, what if they settle down and encounter danger later... Su Ping frowned, but discarded the thought soon after. The cyborg he just released had been living there since birth, and there had never been any danger. He only knew that disaster had struck outside the green glass barrier, and that it was absolutely safe inside.

Su Ping immediately decided to head to the kingdom and discuss settlement issues with the strongest people there.

If they disagreed, he would still have the power to reign over them by force.

Soon.

Based on the cyborg's memories, Su Ping traveled across countless cities and reached the capital of a kingdom.

Hardly had he made it to the city when he sensed the auras of three God Emperors. He did not panic, though. He quietly entered the royal palace and snuck to meet one of the three God Emperors.

He found the God Emperor in one of the palaces, seated right at the center, with silver tubes connected to his arms and legs. It seemed to be charging up.

Is this how the noble cyborgs cultivate? Direct energy transmission... Su Ping's eyes glittered. Their cultivation was truly efficient. No wonder cyborgs had an advanced world, comparable to that of the gods'.

Suddenly, the cyborg opened his eyes and stared at where Su Ping was hiding.

"Who's there?"

Su Ping showed himself. He had purposefully revealed a hint of his aura to test the guy's strength.

"Hi," Su Ping said.

"You speak our language?" The cyborg slightly changed his expression and gazed at the newcomer.

"Who are you? Where are you from?"

Familiar questions... Su Ping sensed that the other two God Emperors were fast approaching. He replied with a smile, "I'm from another universe. An ally in fact. I hope we can stay here for now."

"Allies?"

The cyborg seemed confused. Sensing that his two companions were there already, he gradually calmed down and said, "In other words, you're an invader."

Su Ping shook his head with a smile. He took out the purple token of trust which resembled a scale. "This is your Selvega's token of trust made for me. Do you recognize it?"

The cyborg gazed at it and his expression changed a bit. He looked at Su Ping with shock and suspicion. "Where did you get this? You know the Selvega?"

"I got it from your Selvega, of course. You don't think I grabbed it from somewhere, do you?" Su Ping smiled.

The cyborg instantly choked. Indeed... The Selvega were the strongest in their mind. Other than receiving it as a gift, there was no other way to get such an important item.

He was more or less relaxed. He asked, "Can I check it?"

"No problem."

Su Ping tossed the item to him.

The cyborg quickly grabbed it with both hands and probed it with his consciousness. He read some information inside. Relief showing, he said to Su Ping, "This is indeed a token of alliance. How should I call you?"

"Su Ping."

"Please keep this item well." The cyborg returned the token.

Su Ping then said, "Can you ask your friends to show themselves? We should meet."

The cyborg was slightly alarmed, not expecting Su Ping's perception. Such an ally was truly strong.

Without the need to say anything—the other two cyborgs, one male and the other female, walked out of the dark. They looked at Su Ping in surprise, as they had already learned about the alliance and the token of trust. Since the Selvega had confirmed he was an ally, there was no questioning the fact.

"Hello, I am Crowe."

"I'm Basha."

The two cyborgs introduced themselves. Basha then asked curiously, "Did you come after meeting the Selvega? Why did you come to our place instead of staying there?"

"We encountered danger and got split up." Su Ping had already thought of an excuse. "Danger?" All three of them were shocked. Crowe asked in a hurry, "What danger? Monsters outside the green glass? Or the Heavens?"

Seeing how nervous they were, Su Ping thought quickly and said, "The monsters lurking outside attacked us; I don't know if there were Heavens among them. The Selvega sent us out first."

"Just as I thought. The green glass is getting thinner and thinner; the monsters outside can already detect us..." Basha mumbled with an awful expression. She seemed at a loss.

Crowe asked Su Ping, "Were the Selvegas wounded, then?"

"I don't know. We got separated." Su Ping shook his head.

There was disappointment in Crowe's eyes. He then shook his head. "The Selvegas will be fine. The monsters can't do anything to them unless the Heavens show up."

"What do you mean, the green glass is getting thinner and thinner?" asked Su Ping.

Basha glanced at Su Ping. Based on Su Ping's information, it was obvious that the Selvegas thought highly of their ally, even sending him to a safe place first. She said, "At first, the green glass was thick and inconspicuous. Even the Heavens could hardly notice it. However, as time goes by, the green glass becomes thinner and thinner."

"Based on estimation, the green glass will be completely gone in 100,000 years. When the time comes, we'll have to fight a life-and-death battle with the monsters outside. We might even have to leave the universe and wander in the Empyrean to find a new place to live."

"Well..."

Su Ping wanted to say that 100,000 years was still a long time away.

On second thought, most Celestials had lived more than that span of time. For them, it was probably just a very short moment.

"Why is it happening?" asked Su Ping.

"Those monsters have probably been weakening our universe," said Basha after a sigh.

Crowe said, "The green glass was created by the universe and the Selvegas. Outside is full of monsters. We can't feed back to the universe while we cultivate inside the green glass. The energy of the universe is being constantly consumed. It'll run dry sooner or later."

Su Ping was slightly dazed. Fortunately, the Chaos Perception Dragon had told him that everything was alive. Furthermore, everything could be trained and raised in the system's eyes.

The universe was indeed alive.

The universe is intelligent, and it secretly protects you. As for our universe... He felt guilt and shame as he recalled their escape, surrendering their universe to the Heavens. After all, it was the universe where they were born and raised. Without it, none of their lives would have been born. In a sense, it was a mother to all of them.

"You didn't encounter those monsters on your way over?" asked the cyborg next to Su Ping.

Su Ping shook his head. "I didn't see any of those monsters in this region."

"You didn't see any?" The three humanoids exchanged bewildered looks.

Noticing their reaction, Su Ping asked, "You've never left this place? You never explored the outside world?"

“The green glass prevents outsiders from detecting us, and it also prevents us from detecting things from the outside world.”

Basha added, “We’ve never left. The Selvegas can sense the world outside the green barrier. They will surely come to our rescue if the monsters outside are cleared. All we have to do is wait.”

## Chapter 1458 Settlement (1)

Waiting for your salvation...

Su Ping could imagine the cyborg’s plan. When the catastrophe took place, they split up and hid in different places of the universe. When the horn of hope sounded again, the experts would break the shackles and rally to unite their forces again.

“Have all the monsters in this region left? Or maybe they’re hiding?”

Basha and the others exchanged glances, not fully convinced of what Su Ping said. They didn’t think the young man was lying; rather, they suspected that the monsters had tricked the latter. The Selvegas should have summoned them if the monsters weren’t there.

“In any case, let’s just keep waiting until the Selvegas do come,” said Crowe.

Su Ping nodded, as it was exactly what he had in mind. He preferred a middle-rank cultivation site for a temporary settlement. Things could go awry if they went to a place with Ancestral Gods.

It had to be considered that, even though he could restrain himself, his master and the others would live there for a long time. It could be risky if their memories could be read without them realizing it.

“Since you’re allies that the Selvegas have approved of, we will prepare a land for you to settle. We hope that you’ll restrain your people and prevent them from crossing the border, to avoid unnecessary conflicts,” said Crowe.

Su Ping nodded. “I will remind them. We will never cause you trouble.”

“Good.”

Basha and the others were relieved. They were somewhat concerned and nervous, given that Su Ping had snuck into their world with the Selvegas’ token of trust. Indeed, he was an ally, but whoever was his backer had to be as strong as the Selvegas. He could easily take over their place if he was greedy.

But with everything coming to that point, they could only compromise. It wasn’t like they could kick Su Ping away. They could only hope that the Selvegas had checked his integrity.

The trio led Su Ping to the palace so he could rest. They also asked someone to prepare a continent for him.

While Su Ping enjoyed their reception, Shen Huang and the others—who were still inside his small universe—were dumbfounded. None of them expected that Su Ping would so easily become an ally to the forces from that unknown universe’s planet.

Ally?

When did Su Ping strike an alliance with them?

Although Su Ping carried many secrets they didn't understand, that was yet another great eye-opener for them.

In the middle of the reception, Crowe asked curiously, "Mr. Su, are you going to pick up your companions?"

Su Ping smiled and said, "They're in my small universe right now. I'll take them out immediately.. You may talk to them if anything is wrong whenever I'm in secluded cultivation."

All three of them were alarmed and nervous. Is his bigshot backer going to show up?

Shen Huang and the others also became nervous after hearing what Su Ping said. They all felt pressure when they met the universe dominators of another universe for the first time.

Tas SOO

A force was soon imposed on them; Su Ping then took his master and everybody else out.

Noticing Shen Huang and the others who appeared out of thin air, Basha and the others observed them, only to be stunned the next moment. Su Ping's companions... were too weak.

"Mr. Su, who are they?" Basha was puzzled, but she tried to hold back.

"They are part of the leaders of my clan. Many others died in the catastrophe, and our strength has declined considerably; I hope that you won't despise us," said Su Ping peacefully.

Shen Huang and the others were secretly sweating bullets, knowing that Su Ping was blatantly lying. Although a few Celestials had indeed been killed by the Heavens, they were not worth mentioning for the three hosts.

Still, they knew what Su Ping was doing. They were indeed allies, but they had to make an effort to avoid being ignored.

Even those who were in love tended to despise each other in a way. Differences in status could eventually lead to complaints and grudges.

"Leaders?"

Basha and the others were dazed for a moment. These people... are among the leaders of his clan? Wasn't Su Ping at the top? What about his powerful backer?

They were slightly dissatisfied, thinking that Su Ping had only presented some of the elites of his clan and purposefully hiding their top warriors, which was a sign of distrust.

However, they didn't point it out; it was just that the smile on their faces was less warm.

"Mr. Su, fighting the Heavens with these people is a truly impressive feat..." said Crowe softly.

Noticing the sarcasm in the man's words, Su Ping knew he had been misunderstood. He didn't explain, however. He said, "A lot of experts of my clan sacrificed themselves in the battle against the Heavens. Some are asleep. I can't introduce them to you for now; please forgive me."

The three experts finally thawed a bit. Basha said, "The continent is ready. Let's go there and take a look."

"Okay."

Su Ping got up.

Shen Huang and the others immediately followed.

Basha waved a hand and a channel appeared. She stepped forward; there were strange waves of time and space inside. One could get lost and fall into deeper, more chaotic regions without sufficient understanding of the Great Dao.

Su Ping knew she was deliberately testing the Celestial cultivators. With a frown, he casually released a power to envelop his master and the others before entering the channel.

As for Chi Ying, the newly advanced universe dominator, he entered the channel with his own Dao Heart.

Chapter 1459 Settlement (2)

Basha and the others looked solemn; they stayed silent after seeing Su Ping's actions. Whether or not the latter was trying to hide the top-tier warriors of his clan, he was an ally nonetheless; perhaps he was just being prudent. They didn't do anything else to test him, as it would be too offensive to overdo things.

At the end of the channel was a blue ocean.

In the center of the ocean was a vast continent, with mountains, plains, forests, flowers and grass, bursting with life. They could sense the remains of laws in the sky above; it was clearly a new creation.

"This place is important; it is located at the border between our south and north territories. This ocean is called Matiya, the largest of all, and this is one of its bays. We're letting you stay here as a gesture of our friendliness," said Crowe.

"Once you get to know this place better, you will know what a great geographical location this place is," said Basha with a smile.

Su Ping nodded; their goodwill was rather impressive. He said, "Thank you very much. If there's anything I can help you with, feel free to look for me."

"Of course," said Crowe with a smile.

"Now, this place is your territory. We will update the world map as soon as possible, so that everybody is aware of the matter. I hope that you'll restrain your people well."

“No problem.”

Su Ping nodded.

Su Ping watched them leave, then looked at the spacious continent before him. Even though it was referred to as a continent, it was ten times as big as the Blue Planet.

There were trillions of survivors rescued from the old universe—even a hundred Blue Planets wouldn’t suffice to accommodate them—and yet, those survivors were mostly living in the small universes of Shen Huang, Su Ping and the others. A lot of them were inside the Ascendant cultivators’ worlds; some Star Lords had also packed their families and friends in their small worlds.

Living in those places was no different from living in the outside world.

Any environment could be created and modified. It was actually more comfortable.

That new continent only had enough to accommodate the Ascendant cultivators and the Star Lords. It was more than enough.

“I will set up a barrier to protect you and block them,” Su Ping said to his master and the others, “This place will be yours in the future. Call me if anything happens. You can also establish a communication port outside the barrier; if there’s anything they want to tell you, they can use it.”

Everybody nodded quickly.

Chi Huo couldn’t hold back anymore and asked curiously, “Boss Su, when did we become allies with them?”

Su Ping smiled and said, “It’s just a coincidence.”

They stopped asking, as they noticed Su Ping’s reluctance to tell. Su Ping carried too many secrets for them to figure out.

Shen Huang looked at the beautiful yet lifeless continent and remarked, “In any case, we have our own home for now...”

“However, according to them, this place is not safe; something will happen sooner or later,” said Chi Ying.

Su Ping nodded. “They were attacked by the Heavens before, but there were more experts in their clan who were able to hide. Perhaps something will happen in a dozen thousand years or so. We must leave before that; you should try to improve your strength in the meantime.”

“We must leave in a dozen thousand years?” Everybody was stunned for a moment. It was like having to move in a few years. Indeed, there was still a long time for that, the feeling of homelessness returned.

“Only if we keep cultivating and reach the apex of cultivation can we be qualified to settle the score with the Heavens, live in peace, and even take back our universe,” said Su Ping.

Hiding was very likely an easy task for Sorcerer Ancestors.



Unfortunately, that level was still too far away. The world observed by Su Ping through the Golden Crow ancestor had been the most bizarre scene. Ordinary lives would never be able to imagine what those existences saw. "Boss Su, you're right." Chi Ying nodded, with ambition surfacing in his eyes.

The other Celestials, however, were showing

bitter expressions, as they weren't confident of rising to higher levels. They couldn't even condense a Dao Heart without Su Ping's help... Su Ping's goal was too far away for them.

They had already lost their cultivation momentum, and only wanted to live in peace. Feeling frustrated was understandable. After

all, cultivating diligently their entire lives had only gotten them to the Celestial State, which had already drained them; the future journey was even more difficult and exhausting.

Shen Huang realized what they were thinking; actually, he was feeling the same, so he could sympathize. He didn't brood on the emotion, though. He spoke with a lively tone. "Let's modify this place first."

"Okay."

They immediately started planning.

Many locations were marked, based on the area and shape of the continent. Then, they went ahead and started working.

The continent was soon divided into nine regions, same as the distribution in their hometown universe. The central area was left for Su Ping; as for the other regions, they built them according to the environment in their own star zones, essentially making them miniature star zones. Their ecosystem and climate were independent, which made them feel at home.

Su Ping went to the central region. The store was still on planet Rhea, but the planet had been perfectly fitted into the continent. He transferred all the planet's residents to the continent.

He then contacted the Star Lords and Ascendants and asked them to accommodate civilians in their small worlds.

In the other regions—Shen Huang and the other Celestials summoned their subordinates to help in settling the civilians. Then, they made arrangements for the Star Lords and the Ascendant cultivators.

The weakest residents on the continent were

Star Lords.

Only the families and friends of some experts who wanted to live in the outside world would be released.

"Is this the world in the new universe?"

At the store's door—Joanna, Tang Ruyan and the others all looked into the distance. The store used to be on a business street, but they currently saw nothing but a vast plain before them.

Their building seemed quite lonely there. However, they knew that the place would soon be crowded.

Joanna raised her head and looked at the green sky, mumbling to herself, "The sky looks familiar..."

Su Ping asked, "Have you ever heard of the cyborgs?"

"The cyborgs?"

Joanna was dazed for a moment. It dawned on her. "I didn't know it was them. They are a species that inherited the legacy of a major clan from the age of chaos; they're essentially a derived species. I heard that they're very smart. I remember what that is: It's the Dao Crystal Piece. They're using the Dao Crystal Piece to hide themselves; no wonder the Heavens can't detect them..." "The Dao Crystal Piece?"

Su Ping looked at the green glass sky up above.

"That's right. The Dao Crystal emerged in the age of chaos; I heard it was created in the big bang. It's a product of the Great Dao; if ordinary lives hold the Dao Crystal in their hands, they will immediately comprehend the Great Dao and reach extraordinary levels," said Joanna.

"So, it's an ultimate treasure born from chaos." Su Ping nodded.

"Anna does know a lot of stuff," Green Lady remarked.

Joanna said, "My grandmother told me about it when I was little. She said that a mythical creature had hidden inside a Dao Crystal to avoid being hunted by a Sorcerer Ancestor, back in the ancient age of chaos. It worked, as it escaped detection. Back then I thought it was just a story; I didn't know that it truly existed."

No wonder the presence of the Great Dao is so active and their cultivation is accelerated, even though they're hiding here. This is the preparation that the expert cyborgs made for them to rise again, right? Su Ping thought. "I wonder when we can return to our universe..."

There was nostalgia in Tang Ruyan's eyes. Ever since she started following Su Ping, she had lost her family, her planet and even her universe. She only felt lucky that Su Ping had always been by her side and she could see him

all the time.

Chapter 1460 Fusion (1)

The continent that had been subdivided into nine regions was given a new name.

The Nine States.

Every part of the Nine States had a unique style. The Ascendants that drifted all the way there were given their own territory. The continent gradually became crowded and lively again.

Aside from the Ascendants and the Star Lords, some of the Star State cultivators were also released to build equipment and stores.

While construction was heatedly underway, Basha and the other humanoid sent visitors over.

Su Ping entrusted the matter to Shen Huang and the rest.

The interaction between civilizations would surely make the development of both sides easier, on the premise that they would continue being friendly.

Soon enough, many cultivators gathered once again in Su Ping's store, all the way in the Central State. They went there to ask him to train their pets.

Having experienced his magnificent pet training service, they considered it as Su Ping's blessing and a virtually free benefit.

The cyborgs are in a way similar to the gods; they don't sign contracts with their pets. However, the gods have beast servants anyway, and no one seems to be controlling beasts here.

Su Ping observed that the cyborgs merely focused on self-cultivation. Although humans were the same, they could gain extra power from their pets, even if they had to spend a lot of time nurturing and taking care of them.

"System, can cyborgs use contracts too? If they can, their overall combat ability would increase, right?" asked Su Ping.

The system said casually, "Of course. Contracts are applicable to all species."

Su Ping nodded. "In that case, I can share the contract method with them as a gesture of friendliness; it'll make them stronger. After all, the stronger our allies, the more likely we'll win against the Heavens."

The system remained silent.

Su Ping discovered that the system was not as talkative as before, even staying silent most of the time. He sometimes even forgot it was there.

"Can I earn energy points if they come to the store after mastering the contract?" asked Su Ping.

The system replied just as casually, "Of course. Although they wouldn't be paying with astral coins, it's fine. Their currency works too; I will convert the currencies to make sure the pricing is the same."

"Good."

Su Ping nodded. But he wasn't in too much of a hurry. They could become wary if he readily offered the contract method to them. His idea was to wait until they became interested. It would be seen as a show of generosity if he gave it to them at that time.

Many things in that world were like that. Voluntary offers were usually not taken seriously.

Su Ping spread out his senses until he covered all the Nine States. After seeing that the overall construction effort was in order, he spoke to his master and Chi Ying telepathically; he told them he

would be training in seclusion, and they would be left in charge. They were expected to send word if anything went wrong.

Shen Huang and Chi Ying knew that Su Ping would often seclude himself to cultivate. Unsurprised, both accepted the task.

Su Ping then took the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets, along with a batch of his customers' pets, to the cultivation sites for training.

Other than training pets, he wanted to see different civilizations in the cultivation sites.

That way he wouldn't be completely ignorant if he encountered them in the ocean of universes later.

Time flew.

Su Ping visited and explored a lot of middle-rank cultivation sites. Some of them were full of ferocious beasts, while others had some warm and friendly locals. He even made friends with some of them, who provided a lot of information.

There were species seemingly incapable of lying; they answered everything that Su Ping asked.

Some were aggressive and extremely audacious.

Others lived on fiery lands and fed on original fire.

He didn't stay for too long on any site because he had just moved to a new place. He would go back everyday or every other day, just in case anything went wrong.

Time passed.

The construction of the Nine States was gradually completed. Thanks to the modifications done by Celestials and Ascendant State cultivators, there were cities everywhere. Some people with low cultivation had appeared in those cities, and appreciated the views of that alien land.

As for the cyborgs

Basha, Crowe and the others were secretly observing the continent too. Although they couldn't directly see what was going on, they would often send envoys who were warmly received by Shen Huang. They would then have a chance to witness the changes in the Nine States.

Different buildings, different civilizations, different technology and different cultivation methods.

In particular, they found that the new arrivals had a cultivation method to contract and enslave monsters, which shocked them. They saw it as a tyrannical cultivation method.

One species forcefully enslaving another.

It was extremely evil in their eyes.

This made them wary of Su Ping, the foreign ally. In one of the cyborg's meetings, some of the leaders even proposed that Su Ping and the others be banished.

The main reason for the initiative was that Su Ping and the others were surely extremely dangerous because of the evil technique they cultivated. If they ever thought about enslaving cyborgs, the consequences could be dangerous.

Many cyborgs agreed with the proposal. The voices of rejection didn't decline until they figured out that the Selvegas had directly approved of their ally. However, many cyborgs were still strongly hostile to Su Ping and the rest.

Pet Store 1461

Chapter 1461 Fusion (2)

That sense of hostility had been noticed by Shen Huang and the others through the words of the envoys who went to visit.

The Celestials had cultivated hundreds of thousands of years. Although their level was not as high, they had governed vast star zones for countless years. Being experienced leaders, Shen Huang wasn't upset when he noticed the cyborgs' misunderstanding. Rather, he proposed to trade with them.

Aside from trading, he also proposed many activities to celebrate the alliance and get to know each other better.

Basha and the rest of the humanoids didn't object to the idea. After all, it was impossible to banish Su Ping's clan; the fact that he was able to sneak through the green glass suggested that he was too strong to be tamed. Besides, he was carrying the Selvega's token of trust.

No matter how Su Ping had obtained it, he was worthy of respect. As the trade and other activities ran their course, all the cyborg autonomous districts sent their delegates. They had been alone for too many years and finally, that alien race appeared. Their curiosity and loneliness prompted them to visit the foreigners. They also wanted to find out if the new arrivals were truly evil.

Time went by, and the number of active cyborgs in the human continent increased. While interacting, Shen Huang and the others would secretly send their subordinates to figure out what the cyborgs were thinking. They were rendered speechless after realizing that they were considered evil in the cyborgs' eyes.

Since they had finally figured out the problem, all they needed to do was to think of a pertinent solution.

Thanks to the demonstrations and all the interpretations, the cyborgs finally learned that the contract was not brutal slavery but mutual cooperation. A pet could renege its master's orders if it was willing to pay the price.

The Celestials arranged exhibitions for the cyborgs, and the latter saw that many Ascendants were so close to their pets that they appeared to be partners. There were even weak Ocean State cultivators who were intimate with their pets. None of the scenes looked feigned, and the hosts gradually changed their attitude.

In the Central State

"I heard that this pet store was established by the leader of the aliens."

"Their contracted pets are truly terrifying. Even if their level is the same as ours, they can easily beat us with the help of their pets; they have the advantage in numbers."

"If only we could learn this technique. Too bad it's their core technique; they would certainly not share it with us."

A few envoys—under the secret orders of Basha and the others—went to the Central State's core area after being warmly received by Shen Huang.

Seeing the splendid building and the long line of customers outside, the envoys realized the lofty status of the aliens' leader and the foreigner's enthusiasm about training pets.

"Hello, can we visit this place?"

One of the envoys stepped forward and skipped the line altogether. They had learned that it was a rule to wait in line to have your pets trained. However, they weren't there to train any pets.

"Huh?"

Tang Ruyan looked at the somehow-familiar bluish cyborgs. All of them looked identical in her eyes.

"It's fine if you're just here to visit." Tang Ruyan had learned a lot about that species thanks to their customers, and knew that they didn't have pets. Besides, Su Ping had asked her to be polite to the cyborgs.

"Thank you."

The envoy was very respectful. The Hyper-energy Gods had asked them to be polite to the aliens. Neither party wanted to ruin the alliance.

Tang Ruyan instantly led the four envoys into the store.

The four visitors instantly noticed that their senses were restricted when trying to probe the closed rooms; they could only observe through the naked eye. They felt that they had entered the territory of some horrifying existence; all of them started to panic.

Fortunately, being envoys hand-picked by Basha and the other cyborgs, they maintained a calm demeanor, and were both in the Celestial State. So, they behaved normally, without displaying the least bit of fear.

"What's that?"

Right after they entered the store—the four envoys were attracted by the scene at the counter.

A middle-aged Ascendant cultivator was soothing a red-scaled dragon. The dragon's eyes were bloodshot; it seemed to have a lousy temper.

"Red Pillar Dragons are just like this; aggressiveness flows in their veins. If caged for too long, it won't be able to release a sense of bloodthirst. It'll be a lot better after training," said Joanna to the customer in a casual manner casually.

Having received a lot of pets, she knew most of them by heart. She had received a Red Pillar Dragon before, and it had the exact same behavior. Su Ping told her the same, back then.

"I see. That explains why it's been so agitated, never responding to my thoughts." The middle-aged Ascendant felt relieved.

"Take it inside," said Joanna to Green Lady.

Green Lady acted as her assistant. Tang Ruyan wasn't strong enough; she was too scared to approach the tough Ascendant pets. Only Green Lady was able to take them to the

pet room.

The redness in the Red Pillar Dragon's eyes faded a lot when Green Lady touched it gently. It smelled a refreshing aura coming from the Green Lady, which helped ease its bad temper.

"That pet doesn't seem willing to let go of its master," whispered one of the envoys.

He could feel the emotion in the pet's eyes. Although he had seen it before, it still felt surreal.

To think that a normal enslaved pet would actually cling to its master.

After hearing that, Tang Ruyan found it odd and said, "Isn't it normal? Which pet would bear to leave their master? Conversely, nobody's willing to leave their pets. They are our partners."

"Partners..."

The four envoys looked at each other, silently repeating the word.

Given their diplomatic status, they had mastered the language of the aliens, and they knew what the word "partners" meant.

"During a moment of life and death, the only things we can depend on are the partners by our side. You have partners too, right?" Tang Ruyan looked at them and said, "For example, your family?"

"Are they the same?" One of the envoys looked at her in confusion. All their fellow countrymen would count as partners, but the humans partnered with beasts.

"Aren't they the same?" asked Tang Ruyan curiously, "Partners stand up for you when you're in trouble. Pets can even die for you; why wouldn't they be considered as your partners?"

The envoys had heard about that theory before. Still, they found it impossible to accept after hearing it again. After all, how could one regard some beasts as part of their own kind?

However, after days of getting to know each other, they realized that the aliens' opinion on the matter was fundamentally different.

That opinion had nothing to do with the evil nature they had mistakenly conceived at the beginning

"Huh, you're out."

Tang Ruyan suddenly saw Su Ping, who had just walked out of the pet room. Her eyes glittered and she abandoned the four envoys to greet him.

"This is..."

The four envoys instantly felt horrified, noticing the man the moment he appeared. They felt a chill so cold, as if they had somehow been thrown into the cage of a ferocious beast.

Su Ping also noticed the four cyborgs. Seeing their troubled faces, Su Ping instantly realized what was going on and retracted all his killing intent. It was a slight gaffe, as he had just returned from a cultivation site and didn't pay attention to the details.



“Who are they?” asked Su Ping in confusion.

“They’re here to visit, and probably to investigate,” replied Tang Ruyan telepathically.

Su Ping said, “Master said that the cyborgs don’t accept our pet training method, that they had even misunderstood us?”

“Yes. Judging from what they just said, they seem to have that idea. Humph. What do they know? Their level is not low, but their understanding is really superficial,” said Tang Ruyan.

Su Ping looked at the four envoys and thought for a moment. “Should I ask my master to hold a tournament with the cyborgs?”

#### Chapter 1462 Reality and Acting (1)

Su Ping believed that sparring was the fastest way for the two parties to get to know each other.

There were no friends who didn’t fight at one point. Those people wouldn’t understand the relationship between pets and their masters without fighting them.

“The four of you, come here,” said Su Ping to the envoys. The small group approached obediently, acting rather timidly before the alien leader. Even though Su Ping had already concealed his aura, he had left an intimidating impression on them.

“When you go back, ask Basha if she wants to hold a friendly contest with my clansmen, so we can get to know each other better,” said Su

Ping.

The four were rather surprised to hear him call their leader by her name. One of them frowned and said, “Wouldn’t that cause misunderstandings?”

“It won’t,” said Su Ping.

Dazed, the man was about to continue, but his companions stopped him.

“We will report the matter when we return,” said one of them.

Su Ping nodded and then ignored them afterwards; he asked Tang Ruyan to keep them occupied. He then went to see Joanna and handed over the pets he trained, asking her to inform their respective masters to pick them up.

Later he briefly told his master about the friendly contest through telepathic communication, then went back to his secluded training.

“A friendly contest? That’s a good idea, indeed.” Shen Huang agreed with the proposal, as he had the same idea in mind. Now that Su Ping proposed it, it was a good chance to put it into practice.

Shen Huang sent someone to contact the cyborg leader.

Several days later, they reached an agreement about the contest.

Both humans and cyborgs were excited when the news got out. All of them were ready to participate.

Preliminary contests were held to select the candidates in every cyborg city. It was just a “friendly” contest, but nobody wanted to lose face.

Furthermore, only the juniors were going to fight. Nobody would lay any blame if they were too competitive. The losers would only be able to blame their representatives for being too weak.

Therefore, both parties were selecting the strongest representatives of each realm for the battles.

The levels agreed upon by Shen Huang and Basha included the Star State, the Star Lord State, the Ascendant State and the Celestial State. They were like the different weight divisions in boxing matches.

There were different numbers of representatives for each realm. The Celestial State had the fewest. Both parties would only send three people.

There were ten for the Ascendant State, twenty for the Star Lord State, and fifty for the Star State.

While the cyborg cities were fiercely picking their representatives, Shen Huang and the others were picking strong battle pet warriors in each level too. As for the Celestial State, Shen Huang would fight in person as one of the representatives. After all, he was much stronger than other Celestial cultivators after his realm was recovered thanks to Su Ping’s help.

As for the Ascendant State, those representatives were picked from amongst the top Heavenly Lords disciplined under the Celestials.

A “friendly” contest indeed, yet they didn’t want to lose.

Half a month later

The friendly contest officially began.

The battlefield was in the cyborgs’ territory; after all, they were the hosts. Shen Huang and the others were glad to see this. The Nine States were similar to their old universe at the moment; it would be troublesome and inconvenient if the battlefield were there, with many cyborgs going there to watch.

In one of the cyborg’s holy capitals

That was where Crowe—one of the three ultimate leaders—lived.

It was relatively close to the Nine States, and was extremely prosperous. The architectural style was rather exotic, but still luxurious and enjoyable.

Shen Huang, Chi Ying and the carefully picked representatives went there.

The friendly contest would be live-streamed to all cyborgs, who could watch the contest in real time.

The Star State battles would take place first.

They were going to be held in a special arena located in the holy capital, which had sufficient reinforcement for Star State battles. The space in the arena had been infinitely expanded, so that the representatives wouldn’t be limited.

“Are they human beings? Their skin colors are so strange.”

“Exactly. There are all sorts of colors. They’re not identical like us.”

“Weren’t we told that they enslave beasts to fight for them? Why don’t I see any beasts near them?”

Everywhere in the world, the cyborgs were watching Shen Huang and the other humans enter the venue.

Basha and the other ultimate leaders were present during the opening ceremony, as were Shen Huang, Chi Ying and other Celestial State cultivators. They would sit at the highest place in the auditorium.

Once the opening speech ended, the contest of the Star State began.

The cyborg candidate who entered the arena raised a round of cheers. He had been picked after rounds in many cities, attracting a lot of fans during the preliminary matches.

“I didn’t think it would be Niwacott. He’s a Star State animal! He defeated someone with his same level with just one hand.”

“I heard that he carries that Original Energy Bloodline.”

All the cyborgs were surprised to see the cyborg participant, not expecting such a strong representative to be sent first.

On the other hand, the candidate sent by the humans was a rather petite girl.

Seeing how slim she was, many cyborgs wondered if Niwacott would be fearful... of accidentally killing her.

It was just a friendly contest anyway. He would be disqualified and punished severely if he killed his opponent!

Chapter 1463 Reality and Acting (1)

“Where’s that human’s beast? Why haven’t I seen it?”

Some cyborgs were curious.

The matrix barrier above the battlefield was then closed.

Both representatives were in position. However, the slave beasts that many cyborgs were curious about were still nowhere to be seen. Some cyborgs who were better informed knew that humans kept their beasts in a place known as contract space; they could summon their pets at any time.

Very soon, the battle began.

The human girl quickly raised her hand. Five vortexes appeared near her, and five battle pets crawled out from them.

One was as agile and minute as a spirit; one was as heavy and brawny as a dragon; another was a blue ice pet, while the last two were dragons with the most ferocious auras.

One of the dragons had two heads, one ice and the other fire. That one was a Star Lord!

“This is a violation!” Many cyborgs were screaming and complaining as the girl summoned her pets.

Seriously? Counting the pet owner, there were six fighters altogether, and that double-headed dragon was a Star Lord. How could her opponent possibly fight?

Niwacott’s arrogant eyes showed utter bewilderment. His body shivered when the double-headed dragon-whose mouths were sparkling-stepped up. That was a Star Lord dragon. How could he possibly fight?

Aside from the girl, there were five opponents who were as strong as him.

“Be gentle.”

Based on her opponent’s expression, the girl felt it was indeed a little bit brutal; nevertheless, she wasn’t willing to be careless. Being a representative who would fight in the first round, she had met the Celestial experts and received their advice in person. She couldn’t go easy.

She chose the safest strategy, which was to treat the opponent as the strongest person she’d seen.

The pet responsible for defense stayed with her. The ones tasked for offense and control stepped up. A special-attributes’ pet stayed behind her, ready to follow orders.

The double-headed dragon and the ice pet charged, imposing a daunting pressure. The double-headed dragon roared and spewed fire; the entire battlefield seemed to be melting.

Niwacott instantly set up an energy shield. However, the dragon breath penetrated the shield and struck him precisely, sending him flying

The ice pet’s secret technique arrived at that moment. A special power was released from the pet’s core. Niwacott instantly felt an unknown threat, but he wasn’t able to react in time and was turned into a huge block of ice.

The Ascendant cyborg referee outside the arena quickly changed his expression. Although dissatisfied, he announced the result for the sake of the cyborg fighter’s safety.

Humans won the match!

It was quiet on the cyborg’s end, as no cheers were heard before the announcement. However, the human side did cheer. The cyborgs in the audience had eyes as wide as saucers; there was utter disbelief.

The battle ended right after it began?

He couldn’t even fight back, at all?

None of them were blaming Niwacott. It’s just that... The human girl cheated!

She was fighting with five allies, and one of them had a crushing level. How could he fight?

“Is this how human beings fight? So unscrupulous!”

“Shameless!”

“You ganged up on him. Is that what you’re capable of?” “Humans are truly wicked. To think they would have such a shameful battle method.”

Many cyborgs were furious. Pride made it impossible for them to accept such a failure. They began to berate humans with excuses.

Basha, Crowe and the others looked at each other, showing unnatural expressions. The real purpose of the friendly contest was for them to see the humans’ special cultivation method, and to confirm whether humans did interact harmoniously with their pets. However, if all the battles were going to unfold like that, it would be one-sided slaughter; it would be impossible to discern how humans and their pets got along.

“Are all humans like this?” Basha asked Chi Ying, who sat next to her.

The latter coughed. Although the victory was gratifying, her question was kind of a slap in the face. He smiled humbly and replied, “This is the cultivation method of our clan. We lived in a harsh environment, often encountering threats we couldn’t deal with on our own. Partners were extremely important in those conditions; our pets are our partners.”

Basha chuckled but made no comment.

Shen Huang overheard their conversation and felt rather helpless. They had foreseen everything except that. They didn’t know the cyborgs well, and they didn’t want to lose. So, the representatives they picked were the strongest from every level.

The girl who had just gone up, for example, had an Ascendant State father who specifically tamed the Star Lord double-headed dragon for her. She turned out to be too strong.

The first match was considered an accident. The second match began soon after, with the exact same ending. Another batch of cyborgs was unable to hold back their discontent.

Then, the third match, the fourth...

Contestants came and went, but the results were the same.

Even the high-level cyborgs wore gloomy expressions.

Those were only Star State battles. If the cyborgs were also crushed in the Ascendant and even the Celestial battles, would they have any face left?

Aside from the cyborgs, Shen Huang and the others were also feeling uneasy, too.

It would have been better to win a couple of matches by a narrow margin. But now... It turned into a pure slap in the face.

Shen Huang saw from the corner of his eye that the cyborg leaders had grim looks. He knew that the friendly contest would become a turning point in the relationship of both races if things went on like that.

He instantly sent a telepathic message to the Ascendant cultivators who led the Star State candidates and asked them to go easy.

Those who received the message understood right away. They used to be powerful experts in the old universe too, and knew that such a one-sided outcome would not end well.

The following candidates, although dissatisfied, chose to sacrifice their own pride for the greater cause of their clan.

Therefore, the people in the audience were finally able to see evenly-matched battles.

The first candidate who went easy only summoned one of his pets and was defeated by a cyborg. Cheers burst out.

Basha and the others finally looked better. Shen Huang and the others heaved sighs of relief.

In the backstage-many candidates were replaced by normal Star State cultivators who only had two or three pets and mediocre combat ability. Some of their pets were even weaker than their owners.

They were sent to the arena mainly to make the show seem more real.

The participants who were replaced didn't look happy, but they were generously compensated, so they felt better.

The atmosphere in the arena became heated as the matches progressed; the contest finally looked like a regular friendly contest. "The human contestants are significantly weaker."

"It's not that the humans are weaker; their slave beasts are."

"Those humans aren't fighting in person. Their capabilities are only mediocre; they're only fighting with their slave beasts." "Their cultivation method is focused on enslaving beasts. They rely too much on external help for them to grow."

"Our cultivation method is much better. We strengthen ourselves; your own body is the foundation!"

Many cyborgs saw the human beings' shortcomings in the following battles, and couldn't help but feel proud. They felt great again after noticing what they considered as the main flaw of the humans' cultivation method.

"Looks like they've sent all of their strongest candidates. I was so scared; I thought they were all like that.

"But to be honest, the contestants at the beginning were truly terrifying."

"They weren't terrifying; their beasts were. Without them, those humans are nothing."

"Their cultivation method is too weak."

Many cyborgs in the audience felt more at ease, no longer frustrated.

The scores of the two parties were close. Other than the normal Star State cultivators, some of the original contestants were sent every now and then to even up.

All the cyborg candidates were strong in their level. They could fight a couple of normal Star State cultivators with ease; the battles were quite intense.

WS

The cyborgs gradually saw something different as the matches took place.

Some pets fought in a stubborn and persistent way for the sake of their masters, even if they were covered in blood.

Some masters, in order to protect their beasts, would block powerful attacks on their own. They were heavily injured and defeated.

Chapter 1464 Upper Limit of the Cultivation Method (1)

After witnessing those actions, the cyborgs gradually changed their minds.

Soon, the matches ended. The final score was 39:61.

The humans, with sixty-one points, had won by a landslide.

However, the cyborgs found the scores completely acceptable. They weren't sad or ashamed at all. They were proud, even.

It wasn't easy for them to score thirty-nine points from the humans, who were essentially cheating!

After the crushing defeats at the beginning, they felt proud when their compatriots won, despite being outnumbered.

See? That's what us cyborgs do! We cultivate ourselves! We beat the enemy even if we're outnumbered!

Once the Star State matches were done, the Star Lords' contest would take place a couple of days after.

All the cyborgs discussed human beings and their cultivation method during that waiting period.

Some mocked and despised the cultivation method, while others thought it was incredible. If all humans had the strongest beasts as pets, they would be invincible at their level!

That was the upper limit!

Even the dissenting cyborgs also had to admit that.

Shen Huang had sent someone to mingle with the cyborgs, all to collect intel and learn of the public opinion during the few days of rest.

Based on the cyborgs' thoughts, Shen Huang realized that the purpose of the friendly contest had been fulfilled halfway.

Many cyborgs were angry and scornful because of how the battles turned out; however, they both loved and hated the cultivation method.

Why did they hate it?

In most cases, people would only hate something when they couldn't get it.

The Star Lords' battles soon began.

This time, it was twenty against twenty.

Shen Huang thought that it was necessary to pressure the cyborgs some more. To make it less eye-catching, he set the overall objective to thirty-one points.

Thanks to Shen Huang's arrangement, all the candidates were picked. The first three battles showed the humans' extraordinary combat ability with crushing victories. The cyborgs fell silent again.

A subsequent match was deliberately lost to save the cyborgs' face.

Shen Huang was calmly sitting at the auditorium. He was like a bartender seated behind the counter, although it wasn't wine he was mixing, but the cyborg's moods.

When having absolute control over the battlefield, he could decide when to win or lose.

As the matches finished one after the other, the final score was undoubtedly fixed at thirty-one.

They won eleven matches, while the cyborgs only won nine of them.

The latter could accept those results, but they felt a greater pressure about the upcoming battles. They realized that the higher the level, the more terrifying the human's cultivation method was!

The higher someone's level was, the more difficult it was for them to defeat opponents at higher levels. It was usually difficult for an Ascendant to kill another Ascendant, not to mention dealing with a couple of peers.

There was a lot that the cyborgs didn't know about the human's cultivation method. For example, how many beasts could be contracted?

If the number was unlimited...

Wouldn't they be invincible?

Basha and the others looked grim. The ten against ten battles would begin soon. If humans were as domineering as in the other matches, they would probably only win in two or three, which would be humiliating.

Shen Huang smiled inwardly when he saw their expressions. That was the result he was going for. The friendly contest had only been a prelude in his plans; he was about to achieve his final purpose.

Soon after, the Ascendant State battles began.

The experts sent to represent humanity were Heavenly Lords from the various star zones, including Song Yuan, Shen Huang's first disciple.

"Master, do I have to use my pets?"



Song Yuan went to see his master before the match. He said, "I've been observing the cyborgs' battles for days, and I've learned something about how they utilize their energy. Although their fighting method is special, it's not that powerful; I want to see if I can fight them on my own."

He was confident in himself.

He believed that he could win without summoning pets.

Although pets represented the most important strength of a battle pet warrior, how could they go far if they weren't strong enough to suppress their own pets?

Seeing the fighting will in his disciple's eyes, Shen Huang shook his head and said, "This is not about battling, but politics. We're demonstrating the relationship between us and our pets. Also, there's no need to reveal too many of our secrets in a friendly contest. We are allies now, but we can't show them everything just yet."

Song Yuan felt dazed for a moment. He then understood.

He was once the leader of a small galaxy; its management made him aware of the importance of power.

"I understand."

"Go."

Soon after, the Ascendant State battles began.

The Heavenly Lords went up one after another. Their battle pets were all in the Ascendant State, too; after all, Star Lord pets would have only been toys in the eyes of Ascendant cultivators, and would be instantly killed in battle.

In one of the matches, an Ascendant cultivator summoned eight Ascendant State pets; the cyborg contender desperately wanted to forfeit.

It was impossible for him to beat nine opponents.

The humanoid tried to fight, but was soon defeated. He had displayed a terrifying power, but he was completely unable to resist the attacks of the eight pets.

After such a crushing victory, the cyborgs increasingly felt the horror that humans posed. The stronger the human, the more terrifying they were!

Chapter 1465 Upper Limit of the Cultivation Method (2)

"The upper limit of this cultivation method is too high!"

"Even the ancient chaos entities couldn't be much stronger than them, could they?"

"That's not necessarily true. They could be stronger than the mythical creatures."

"Do you think humans could contract mythical creatures as pets?"

After days of friendly bouts, the cyborgs were more and more curious about the human cultivation method, since they found it mysterious and terrifying. The upper limit achievable was also unimaginably high.

Furthermore, a horrifying speculation emerged. Could humans only establish contracts with beasts?

Or, could they bond with any living creature?

Their thoughts went wild. If truly feasible, could humans bond them, too?

Many cyborgs felt ill at ease, and considered their human allies a huge threat.

The second Ascendant cultivator went up and easily won with seven Ascendant pets.

The cyborgs suffered consecutive failures as cultivators went up one after another, and only got two points in the end.

The gap was so huge that all the audience fell silent.

They had won 39 points in the Star State category. The higher the level, the fewer points they got.

Would they lose completely in the 3 against 3 Celestial-level battles?

The very notion haunted the cyborgs' minds. Those who didn't participate were having certain thoughts too...

Without pets, they didn't think they would have been any weaker than their human counterparts in the friendly contest. If they had the cultivation method, wouldn't they be able to crush their opponents?

After a few days of rest, the Celestial State battles began.

The battlefield was a special small universe built by the cyborg leaders, enough for the Celestials to fight freely.

Shen Huang, Chi Huo and Xu Kong fought as representatives. They crushed their opponents without giving the cyborgs any hope.

The host humanoids fell silent after such a crushing defeat.

They had picked excellent and renowned experts; they didn't expect such a fiasco!

Shen Huang was the last one to leave the battlefield after the battles ended. He dismissed his pets with a relaxing smile; there wasn't even a drop of sweat on him. He wasn't wearing battle armor, but the golden robe he usually wore. Nothing implied that he had just taken part in a great battle. His opponent, on the other hand, seemed to have been struck by lightning. It was quite embarrassing.

Shen Huang didn't leave the battlefield after the disgruntled referee announced the result. Instead, he stood in the small universe and, facing cameras in various directions, looked at Basha and the others who were seated in a corner. He said with a smile, "Thank you for your participation in the friendly contest. Now that it's over, there's something we'd like to propose."

"What do you want?"

Basha looked awful. Do the humans despise us after such a complete victory?

“Our leader visited a Selvega of your clan and struck an alliance with them. We believe that, as compatriots, you don’t mean us any harm. Besides, we have a common foe to fight against.”

Shen Huang paused for a moment and then continued with a smile, “If you want, we’re willing to share our cultivation method with you for free.”

After a boom, all the cyborgs in the green glass planet exploded.

All the locals who watched via live stream were stunned after reading the captions translating Shen Huang’s message in their language.

They were willing to share?

For free?

Are humans crazy? That’s the fundamental technique of their clan!

Basha and the other leaders were also stunned; they remained silent in their seats for a long time until they recovered. But instead of being overjoyed, they considered Shen Huang’s motive.

“Why?” asked Basha, while staring at Shen Huang in the eye, even revealing the aura of a dominator as she spoke.

“Because we’re allies, are we not?” Chi Ying, who was seated in a chair close by, also emitting a hint of dominator’s aura, while he tilted his head and spoke with a smile.

Basha sensed his powerful aura. Based on what she saw in their contest, the stronger a human was, the more contracted beasts they had. Therefore, the guy next to her could very well have ten contracted beasts at his level!

Basha and the others changed their expressions upon such a thought.

With such a combat ability boost, the three of them together were probably no match for the guy next to them.

Not to mention that there was still Su Ping backing them.

Behind that public leader, there was also the real leader who actually met the Selvegas of their clan... The three cyborgs felt alarmed.

Without a doubt, humans were on par with them. Their chances of winning were unclear if their cooperation ended on bad terms.

The fact dawned on them, and they became much gentler than before, quietly dismissing the dominator auras.

“That’s right. Because we’re allies,” said Shen Huang, “Besides, we won’t lose this technique after teaching it to you. It would only make our alliance stronger, which is a good thing.”

“Is this what humans think?” Basha mumbled. She couldn’t tell whether or not Shen Huang was lying. If true, then she had nothing to say and would only feel admiration for this clan. If it was fake, then what was the scheme?

Is the cultivation method actually flawed?

However, do they really think that all cyborgs would learn the technique because it was taught for free?

The leaders would surely study and experiment first before promoting the technique.

They would eventually discover if the technique had hidden flaws that would harm cyborgs...

The last thought made Basha put on a smile and stand up. She looked at Shen Huang with a pondering demeanor, then said, "I appreciate your generosity very much. As allies, do you need us to do anything in return?"

"You've already repaid us by providing us a place to live in. We're very grateful," said Shen Huang with a smile.

"That's just a small place for temporary residence." Basha shook her head.

Shen Huang didn't propose any requests. He had hoped to establish a real friendly relation with the cyborgs through the friendly contest, so what he said was mostly true.

However, there were certain truths in that world that had to be told in a tactful manner in order for them to be heard and believed!

After the matter was settled, all the cyborgs were thrilled.

"This is unbelievable. Humans are publicizing such a powerful technique for free!"

"Just because we're allies? Is this some sort of scheme?"

"Don't bother. We'll know the details of their cultivation technique very soon."

"I admit it was premature of me to say what I did. I'll beat anyone who says that this battle method is unscrupulous!"

"What's unscrupulous? Isn't battle always about outnumbering your enemies?"

"That's true. Duels are just obsolete."

The gloomy clouds enshrouded the humanoids were halfway gone.

Some of them, however, thought that humans were up to no good.

Shen Huang didn't let the cyborgs wait for too long. He shared the technique with the three leaders and asked them to promote it.

Shen Huang knew that they would experiment on it first, but he didn't point it out.

Once they learned the technique, Basha and the others wasted no time trying it. They also sent a lot of envoys to the Nine States. Some actually captured humans of different levels in secret and took them back.

Basha read the memories of those humans and used them to cross-check with the cultivation technique. She found that it wasn't incomplete, and she also learned a lot more about the human clan.

"I didn't know that Mr. Su, the human leader, is actually a young man who rose to prominence recently." Basha and the others were surprised. Then, they thought of the real leader behind Su Ping who met the Selvegas. They knew that he couldn't have grown to become so strong without a real expert's teaching

The memories also helped them confirm that they had no evil intentions.

Therefore, Basha had those human beings sent back in secret once they drew the information.

### **Chapter 1466** Level-8 Store (1)

Time zipped by.

A hundred years had passed since the friendly contest.

Such a span of time was just the blink of an eye for Ascendant cultivators. However, many things had happened during that century, which the experts remembered vividly.

It took no more than five years for the cyborgs to promote the contract method after the contest.

Since then, the beasts that cyborgs had kept in the ocean and on the continent had become increasingly expensive. Some of the keen-eyed capitalists had bought a lot of beasts right after the contest ended. The move turned them into the richest people in that great era of change.

Other than the business tycoons, there were also great political reforms. For cyborgs, it was no different from an industrial revolution.

As the contract method was promoted, the relation of the two clans quickly heated up. Many of the human Celestials became bigshots among cyborgs.

Some were even interviewed by the cyborg-run newspapers and recorded in their history books.

It only took twenty years for pet stores to appear all over the cyborg world.

Many stores tried to increase their popularity by claiming that they had human pet trainers.

Many cyborgs had indeed learned the technique from humans, they were simply too inexperienced and had to rely on human support in that aspect.

As a result, humans were gradually assimilated into the cyborg society, making their alliance even more solid.

Fifty years after the friendly contest-cyborgs were already used to contracted beasts. Fifty years were enough for humans to adapt to many things, and cyborgs were even better to adapt.

Humans at the moment were no longer restrained on the Nine States, and were scattered on the cyborg world; the talented ones were already treated as honorable guests.

Of course, despite the general peace, conflicts would inevitably arise. However, thanks to the coverage of their higher-ups, news never got out.

Only the good news of them helping each other would be spread.

After all, it was impossible for the two clans to restrain all of their people. Those who caused conflicts would be despised by both clans if word accidentally got out.

Once the contract method was popularized, the overall cyborg strength was significantly improved. Many of the humanoids with powerful backgrounds acquired tough pets that made them much stronger; even stronger than human elites.

The Nine States

In a routine meeting of the Celestial experts at their headquarters.

“There are more and more experts among the cyborgs. Their comprehensive strength is probably far greater than ours. Their leaders seem to have tamed the Whale King recently,” said Chi Ying solemnly, “I also heard some people complaining about the cyborgs. They seem to be acting less respectful as of late.”

“It’s just that some people are getting cocky. That’s normal.”

Shen Huang said with a smile, “Pet training is still our advantage; they cannot possibly learn that so quickly. Our pet training is five times as effective as theirs. Many cyborgs have been voluntarily coming to us.”

“But pet training is just a soft power; it’s the hard power that really matters. I fear that they’ll change their minds after their overall strength improves,” said Chi Ying, heaving a sigh.

“You’re overthinking,” said Shen Huang, “Most cyborgs are friendly to us. The contract method is obviously helpful to them. Many cyborgs are even applying to join our clan; some even hope to change their genes and become complete human beings. This proves the attraction of our species.” “But those people are just fence sitters. They’re useless.” Someone shook their head.

Sollie

Shen Huang smiled. “But it still proves the charm of our clan.”

“That’s true...”

“I heard that the cyborgs have been thinking about the green glass.”

Xu Kong suddenly said, “The available beasts are not enough for all the cyborgs, and the pets on the market are becoming more expensive. Some of the middling pets cost half the possessions of someone at their level. This isn’t going to work out. Right now, the lack of sufficient pets will cause trouble.”

“I don’t think they would dare to do anything to the green glass,” said Shen Huang with a frown, “However, some people at the bottom level might have other thoughts. After all, the returns are truly huge. I’ll talk to them later.”

“That’s right. We should pay attention to this.”

“Well... If there’s nothing else, I’ll be on my way. Boss Su has just finished training Old Qing,” said Chi Huo, suddenly raising his hand. He looked like someone whose girlfriend called in the middle of a meeting.

“This guy...”

The others shook their heads with a smile. Shen Huang chuckled. “Go now. Don’t keep Xiao Su waiting.”  
“Sure thing!”

Chi Huo quickly left with a smile.

“In any case, Boss Su’s training technique is something that those cyborgs will never be able to learn. However arrogant they are, they have to count on him. I heard that Basha and the others went to visit Boss Su earlier, but they were kicked out and had to wait in line,” said Chi Ying with a smile.

Xu Kong chuckled and added, “They are the leaders of their clan, and were too proud to wait in line. What a shame. They wouldn’t have cared one bit about their faces had they known how extraordinary the pets become after Boss Su trains them.”

Chapter 1467 Level-8 Store (2)

“Let me tell you a joke. Xiao Hua, the one I waited in line and trained, is so strong right now that I can’t beat her,” said another Celestial State cultivator, touching his nose. There was pride in his eyes, however. His Xiao Hua was already a peak Celestial pet, an ultimate creature not just anyone could have.

“Be careful then. She might break free at some point.”

“Cut the crap. Xiao Hua has been with me for 100,000 years. She won’t betray me even if her level exceeds mine.”

In the meantime

At the pet store in the center of the Nine States.

There was only one pet store in that place. However, the whole city around the store was established because of it.

It wasn’t that the store was aiming to monopolize the business, and that others weren’t allowed to start a pet store. However, all the other pet stores had gone bankrupt due to the lack of customers.

“Get in line!”

“You’re a cyborg? Your father is a cyborg leader? Even your father has to wait in line if he comes.”

It was extremely crowded in front of the store. A yellow garbed Tang Ruyan was maintaining order. She had grown used to the strange-colored cyborgs in the past hundred years; however, she was much busier than when she only dealt with humans.

All humans knew that Su Ping owned the store, so they were extremely obedient, not even daring to talk loudly.

Cyborgs, however, didn't show any respect, and they didn't know the rules. There were many who came from afar and asked for privileges.

All of them were rejected by Tang Ruyan without exception.

Even the human Celestials had to wait in line, let alone the humanoids.

At first, she was afraid that her refusals would make the human's situation worse. However, she knew she had worried for nothing when Su Ping kicked out a cyborg who was causing trouble.

She was only talking "nicely." She was quite gentle compared to him.

"Get lost! It doesn't matter how much money you give me. Get in line, or get lost!"

"Treasures? What treasures? You think I've never seen treasures? Whatever you may offer, just take it away and get lost!"

"My attitude is terrible? You think my attitude is terrible?!"

Many cyborgs suffered Tang Ruyan rejections. Some of them despised her after learning that she was just an employee, then claimed that they would complain to her boss.

However, once they finally got in after waiting for a long time... they were thrown out and asked to get in line again before they were done criticizing that arrogant employee. Some of the regular cyborg customers talked to their compatriots the moment they saw them yelling. "Why do you have to ask for their money? Given your capabilities, you can create any precious item, including currency, right?"

Inside the store-Su Ping was seated in a room next to the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon and the other pets. On his right side was a glowing silver ball.

That ball was the system.

Many functions had been added when the store was upgraded to level 8. The manifestation of the system was one of them.

As for the usage of that ball... Su Ping found it was useless, except that it felt good when he squeezed it.

Nevertheless, he thought that squeezing that ball was truly satisfying. He could finally make that perverted peeper experience his revenge!

That's right. The store had successfully risen to level 8 in the past hundred years, thanks to Joanna and the others' efforts.

Accumulating energy was not that difficult. It was mainly because Su Ping had met the requirement for the level 8 upgrade... To train a special-grade pet with a Dao Heart.

The Dao Heart State was the universe dominator state.

Su Ping had actually spent a thousand years in cultivation sites during that century.

The Inferno Dragon was the first to acquire a Dao Heart.



He didn't give his pets the three unparalleled Dao Hearts that the Golden Crow ancestor had offered him. He asked them to walk their own roads, even if it wasn't as good. Maybe they would be awakened once more and their Dao Hearts would further evolve.

Evolution would be impossible if they inherited someone else's Dao Heart.

The Inferno Dragon became a universe dominator once it acquired the Dao Heart. Its combat ability was significantly improved. Even the God Emperors of some major clans were no match.

Thanks to the stimulation of Su Ping's power of chaos, the Inferno Dragon's bloodline had mutated, becoming a demi-chaos creature. It was also the reason why its talent easily surpassed the special-grade, and was right before the 300th among the Dao Heart State dragons listed on the system's ranking.

There were no more than three hundred dragons stronger than the Inferno Dragon in the Dao Heart State.

Countless dragons of that level had been born in history. The fact that it was close to the top 300 suggested that it was one of the strongest in that era.

IS O

The following training made its ranking rise to somewhere around the 240th.

Aside from the Inferno Dragon, the Dark Dragon Hound and the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon had found their Dao Hearts, too. The Lightning Rat was the only one that had yet to attain a Dao Heart.

Even though it was the last pet to follow Su Ping, the Lightning Rat was actually as strong as the Dark Dragon Hound and the others. It had once found a Dao Heart, but chose not to pick it, as it didn't seem to be what it truly wanted.

Therefore, the rodent was still stuck in the Celestial State.

"The currency is just a tool." The system's young yet mature voice came from the silver glowing ball. "It's only meant to measure the number of pets you've trained."

"You're obviously very powerful. Why do you have to do something so boring?" Su Ping asked back.

"Humph. You think it's boring? I think it's very fun," said the system angrily.

"Is there anything you're scared of in this world? The Heavens?" Su Ping asked again.

"Don't ask. The answer's no." Although it was just a silver glowing ball, Su Ping felt that it glittered as if rolling eyes at him. "You'll know everything when you upgrade the store to level 9."

"Can't you tell me in advance?" said Su Ping helplessly, "Why do you have to be so stubborn?"

"I'm afraid that your universe will explode in fright if I tell you right now. Let's wait until you reach the Undying State," said the system in disdain.

"You're kidding. What can possibly frighten me? Unless, you tell me that you're not the system, but some gay," said Su Ping.

The system said casually, "Why can't I be gay?"

Su Ping almost fell. He realized that the system was becoming chattier after it manifested. It was no longer like the old system; it was something... meaner.

"If you don't want to tell, so be it. I'm very close to that state anyway." Su Ping stopped asking.. He had found several cultivation methods to attain the Undying State over the past hundred years; all he had to do was confirm them.

Su Ping left the store and went to the Golden Crow world.

Everything was the same. Su Ping teleported to a desert. He spread his senses and soon discovered powerful auras in a certain direction, which was clearly the Golden Crows habitat.

He summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and the others to travel with them.

Su Ping was soon able to sense an exuberant power of vitality further ahead. Once he got closer, he discovered that it originated from the tree where the Golden Crows lived.

This holy tree is probably in the Undying State too...

Su Ping didn't consider the holy tree an object. Although he was unable to sense its consciousness, he knew that the holy tree would surely unleash the power of the Golden Crow elders if they were attacked.

Su Ping's arrival was soon noticed by the Golden Crows, who had already become quite familiar with him. One of the Golden Crows immediately showed up and asked him why he was there to go and report the matter.

Su Ping met the Golden Crows' Chief Elder soon after.

"Young friend, what brings you here this time?" asked the Chief Elder with a smile.

Su Ping said, "I'd like to experience your universe, Chief Elder."

Chapter 1468 New Road (1)

"How audacious!"

A Golden Crow who had a universe dominator level scolded him.

"It's fine." The Chief Elder wasn't bothered. Instead, he looked at Su Ping in surprise and asked, "You want to observe my universe? There's actually a road applicable to everyone if you want to cultivate an undying universe. This is unnecessary."

"Even so, I'd like to try a different road," said Su Ping.

The system had also told him about the existence of cultivation methods for the Undying State. Although a step higher than the Dao Heart State, it involved the use of a tricky method, while the Dao Heart was based on talent.

There were billions of Dao Hearts, but only one method to cultivate the undying universe.

The crux of it was to combine the infinite Great Dao in the universe! Once achieved, the universe would be the Great Dao and the Great Dao would become the universe.

The Great Dao was indestructible.

It was difficult for many universe dominators to become Ancestral Gods because the Great Dao they had comprehended was too complicated. They were unable to find the order or the core to combine all the Great Dao.

Such a task would cost an infinite amount of time for them to reorganize their combat abilities. Some universe dominators would disrupt their own selves during the combination. After all, such reorganization was different from cultivating from scratch using a clone. It would entail overthrowing everything they had and building the one and only Great Dao using the broken pieces.

“You want to try another path?”

The Chief Elder was slightly amused by the idea. “Kid, this is different from the Dao Heart State, which is not teachable and has to be comprehended on your own. The Undying State is the same for everyone; there’s no shortcut, other than combining the Great Dao.”

“I’m not planning to take shortcuts. I’m simply hoping to find a more powerful road...” said Su Ping, “Maybe there isn’t one, but I’d like to give it a try.”

The Chief Elder dropped his smile and gazed at Su Ping. “Why do you think there’s a more powerful road?”

“Because I think there are always many options to reach the end. Just like life; the destination is the same, but anything can happen on the way,” said Su Ping.

“But that’s just for superficial lives,” said the Chief Elder, “The combination of the Great Dao is the only way. None of the ancestors of the other clans have ever thought of a better way.”

“This doesn’t mean that there’s no better way,” said Su Ping.

The Chief Elder fell silent.

He looked at the determined yet passionate young man and thought of many things all of a sudden. He realized why that young man grew so strong so quickly and how he could surpass Diqiong, their princess, who carried the ancestral bloodline of his clan.

The two of them were on par in the past. Diqiong was actually the stronger one.

However, she had been left far behind by Su

Ping.

“Should I say that you’re ignorant, or arrogant?” The Chief Elder chuckled. “But I like it. Maybe you’ll truly find another way. Although the chances are close to zero, I’d like to be part of it. Not just me, I’ll ask the other old fellows to show you their universes, too.”

Dazed for a moment, Su Ping said quickly, “Thank you very much, Chief Elder!”

“That’s all right. If you truly make a breakthrough, we’ll be witnessing a new miracle. You’ll probably become an ancestor-level existence that wasn’t naturally created...” said the Chief Elder with a smile.

The nearby Golden Crows narrowed their eyes and looked at the tiny human in shock, not expecting the Chief Elder to think so highly of the young man.

The ancestors had been spawned by nature; it was impossible to reach that level through cultivation. And yet, this tiny human being has a slim chance of becoming an ancestor?

Even though the chance was slim, it was still terrifying!

“Chief Elder, you flatter me. Let’s begin,” said Su Ping with a calm smile.

The Chief Elder nodded slightly.

He had witnessed Su Ping’s growth in that period of time. Once upon a time, the guy was an ant that he could kill a million times just by blowing air at him. However, the guy had already caught up to him.

The Chief Elder then released his universe and pulled Su Ping inside.

“Chief Elder, please perform freely. No need to worry,” said Su Ping.

The elder crow nodded. He knew that Su Ping’s mysterious backer could ensure his safety.

The power inside that universe surged like a tsunami. Su Ping instantly felt that the entire universe was squeezing him; that limitless cosmos was solid, completely different from a Dao Heart universe.

When in the Dao Heart State, although the power of the Great Dao was unified through the Dao Heart, the power was still disorganized and the weaker Dao would be neutralized, like someone being slapped by a thousand hands. When reaching the Undying State, the power of the thousand hands would concentrate on one hand

Increasing power dozens of times.

S

Therefore, there was an insurmountable barrier between Ancestral Gods and God Emperors. Su Ping focused on sensing all the details of the great crow’s universe. Once the Great Dao was combined, those characteristics were gradually revealed. It was the Great Dao of annihilation that burned the Great Dao around Su Ping into ashes, including his vitality.

Is this the combined Great Dao? It’s absolutely unstoppable, thousands of times more powerful than a single perfect Great Dao... Su Ping examined the power. He was like a worm under a heavy machine. He was crushed by it, completely unable to resist.

## Chapter 1469 New Road (2)

The Great Dao has been combined and consolidated. The universe is the Great Dao and can never be destroyed...

If a single Great Dao can be strengthened until it becomes as powerful as the combined Great Dao, my universe will be more powerful...

Su Ping's body was doing his best to resist, but his consciousness was extremely calm. Despite the agony of being torn apart, his resolve was such that it seemed as if the agony was being endured by someone else. His mind was still functioning rapidly. Even during his moment between life and death, he was still considering what direction to take for his cultivation.

Su Ping's body was soon annihilated.

Still, he came back quickly after.

The Chief Elder narrowed his eyes upon seeing this happen, but kept his own counsel.

My individual Great Dao has already been perfected. It can't be strengthened without being combined with the features of other Great Daos. They must be combined!

How can I continue improving the Great Dao without combining them?

Su Ping examined the features of the universe and summoned his own universe in an attempt to resist, but it soon fell apart like an eggshell, followed by the destruction of the deep spaces contained within.

He was slightly stunned by the sight of his broken universe.

Su Ping respawned.

He summoned his universe a second time.

Watching his universe fall apart again made his eyes glitter.

Death, resurrection, summoning his universe.

Su Ping repeated those actions as if in a frenzied state.

In the blink of an eye, Su Ping died a hundred times while the Chief Elder remained motionless. He could easily destroy that human with the power of his universe. They were on completely different levels. Even so, his eyes looked solemn. He didn't look down on Su Ping, at all.

Technically speaking, Su Ping was two realms weaker than him. However, he had the feeling that it wouldn't take long for the kid to catch up to and even surpass him!

"Deep spaces..."

"Universe..."

Su Ping mumbled to himself. The epiphany became clearer and clearer, giving light to an idea.

If he divided his universe into different layers and consolidated each layer with the Great Dao, wouldn't he be able to create an undying universe? They would be multiple undying universes!

Su Ping thought of the grand universe outside.

When cultivating their universes, they had always based them off of the grand universe.

It had always been the norm for living creatures to learn from nature and observe the changes in the universe.

The grand universe was created by nature; still, it was like the finest piece of art, and everything was in order. It functioned because of the Great Dao at work.

There were nine deep spaces in the universe, and each space was independent.

If I divide my universe into layers and cultivate, I may be able to have multiple undying universes...

Su Ping grew confident about this plan, and quickly asked the Chief Elder to pause. Then, without caring about anything else, he simply sat and meditated on the spot, releasing his universe and separating it into layers.

The layer separation was in fact very simple. He actually finished the process with a single thought.

Following that, he fused all the Great Daos in the first layer of the universe.

Having experience in cultivating multiple small worlds, Su Ping's first universe was one of stars.

All the Great Daos gathered like clusters of

stars.

He soon encountered a problem as he implemented his idea. The universe had to be reborn in order to combine and merge the Great Daos. While rebirth took place, the universe would return to its original form from the peak, and the layers would be destroyed in the process.

In simpler terms, his multi-layered universe would completely fall apart and be recreated as he consolidated his first universe, the newborn undying universe.

In such a case, he would walk the same path as the others who had attained the Undying State.

There were certainly others who thought of this in the long passage of history, but they never succeeded. This is why they ended up getting stuck... Su Ping felt frustrated and wanted to give up. It wasn't due to lack of determination, but because he had discovered a fundamental flaw and could only choose a normal method.

If only there was a way to allow the Great Dao surpass the shackles of perfection without melding with anything else...

Su Ping's eyes glittered. All of a sudden, he remembered the unusual scene he saw through the Golden Crow ancestor's memories.

There seemed to be bodies floating in the depths of the universe, and the Great Dao floated out of those bodies like worms.

At the same time, a sentence popped up in his head.

Everything can be trained!

With a boom, Su Ping's ears rang as if having just received a hit in the head.

Everything... included the universe. So, the Great Dao was among them!

The Great Dao could be trained too!

Su Ping almost shivered at the thought. The system had actually told him the road to the peak since the very beginning! Everything can be trained, including the Great Dao. Training the Great Dao is different from melding it. If I consider the Great Dao as a living entity, I can link to it with my Contract Dao Heart. When a battle pet warrior wants to train their pets, other than feeding them valuable materials, they can also transmit their own powers to the pets through the contract.

However, very few use that method, because it consumes their cultivation. After all, it's possible to ask a pet trainer to train your pet, while no one can cultivate for you. The former can be taken care of with money, but the latter requires time. Cultivation is all about making the best use of time...

Su Ping took a deep breath. He suddenly realized how terrifying the system was. The stronger he was, the more he became wary of the system. It was a horrifying existence he had yet to understand.

Even if the system was a cheat, it existed in that universe. It had to have an origin.

"System, what exactly are you? And what's your purpose?" Su Ping mumbled, but didn't get any reply. He stopped thinking about it, as he knew answers would come after he upgraded his store to level 9.

"How did it go? Any thoughts?" asked the Chief Elder with a smile, seeing that Su Ping had opened his eyes after meditating.

Su Ping gave the beast expert a slight nod and said, "I have a theory."

"Huh?"

The Chief Elder was astonished. It was just a casual question, not expecting a positive answer.

It had to be noted that besides the general approach, not even the ancestor had an alternate cultivation method.

"This is going to be a very unusual way!" Su Ping said with a smile and then closed his eyes. He stopped trying to combine the Great Daos, even thinking about it being an incorrect approach. After all, every Great Dao was unique, with irreplaceable features.

Once the Great Dao was combined, their features would be weakened and reorganized into new ones. They were actually destroyed in such a way.

"Contract!"

Su Ping made use of his Dao Heart to bond with the first Great Dao, the Dao of Fire.

It was Su Ping's first perfected Great Dao. Su Ping picked it again and decided to train it first.

Su Ping instantly felt that the Dao of Fire was a lot closer to him after the contract was established. He could almost feel an intimacy.

It was as vague as an illusion, but it was real.

Su Ping was rather excited, feeling he was on the right track. He then transmitted the power in his body into the Dao of Fire in the way he trained pets.

An intense power of flames burst out of Su Ping's body, setting the void ablaze, even though there was nothing flammable in the void.

Su Ping opened his eyes and looked at the burning flames. He frowned a bit. The Dao of Fire had indeed been strengthened, but not enough. He sensed that the power he had transferred only passed through the Dao of Fire; none of it was absorbed.

If this goes on, it'll only be a simple strengthening, not real growth. Su Ping's eyes glittered. The Great Dao will grow when combined. Do I have to send in the power of other Great Daos to help it grow?

Su Ping looked at himself after that thought popped up. There were originally 108 Dao Glyphs in his body, and Su Ping had deciphered them all. Those Dao Glyphs had a strong mutual attraction; they would naturally gather when separated.

Once combined, they would form an extremely powerful Dao Glyph. Or rather, the 108 Dao Glyphs in fact the components of a dismembered Great Dao.

Chapter 1470 Consolidation (1)

More than half of the 108 Dao Glyphs had been fused thus far.

The remaining half were still drawn to each other.

Su Ping looked at them, but didn't make use of those glyphs. He would ruin their synergy if he removed any.

He wanted to find out what power he would obtain when all 108 Dao Glyphs were combined.

His intuition told him he could become an Ancestral God!

However, that was not the shortcut he was expecting

I need pieces of the Great Dao...

Su Ping opened his eyes. That was the Chief Elder's universe, and the Great Dao had already been consolidated. There were no pieces of Great Dao; he had to look elsewhere.

Su Ping concealed the Dao of Fire in his body and said goodbye to the Chief Elder.

"Have you found the answer you were looking for?" asked the Chief Elder.

Su Ping nodded. "I have a theory. I need to run some tests." "Oh?"

The Chief Elder was rather curious. "What's your method?"

"To train the Great Dao," said Su Ping. "Train... the Great Dao?"



The Chief Elder was stunned. Even though he was knowledgeable, he did not understand what the young man said.

Su Ping didn't know yet whether or not his theory was right, so he didn't explain. He wouldn't mind teaching the method to others who had helped him, but only after his theory was fully confirmed.

After all, the great thing about knowledge was that you wouldn't lose it if you shared it with someone else.

However, there were countless cases where disciples betrayed their masters after learning all the knowledge.

Su Ping didn't care about such things. There was only one thought in his heart, maybe because he was young and arrogant: he could always create more trump cards.

Su Ping met Diqiong after leaving the Golden Crow elders.

Diqiong had already reached the peak of the Celestial State and was halfway into the Dao Heart State. She was emanating an exuberant and scorching aura. The ancestral bloodline had given her the great power of the Golden Crows, which came from the ultimate Great Dao. She could easily become an Ancestral God by activating the power in her blood.

It was the same for Su Ping, who had the bloodline of the Primitive Chaos Clan. He could become a half-Ancestral God, too, if he activated the power in his blood and combined the 108 Dao Glyphs.

"I heard that you practiced with the Chief Elder, did you?"

Diqiong suspiciously looked at Su Ping, who had just left the Chief Elder's residence. It's only been a short while... This guy is already strong enough to fight the Chief Elder?

She didn't quite believe it. However, Su Ping had been growing so fast she had to go there and take a look for herself.

"Why are you so informed?" Su Ping raised his eyebrows. He looked at the Golden Crow guards around the Chief Elder, wondering which of them had snitched.

"Humph. I'm the princess; I have subordinates everywhere. Nothing is a secret to me," she said with a snort.

"Impressive."

"Cut the crap. Judging by your aura, you obviously haven't broken through yet. You're no match for the Chief Elder, at all. Why did you spar with him?" asked Diqiong with a frown.

"Can't I just witness the Chief Elder's power?" Su Ping smiled and waved a hand. "There's something I have to do. Talk to you later."

"You're so rude. You're even unwilling to call me Your Highness before you leave!" said Diqiong angrily. Su Ping rolled his eyes and said, "Have you watched 'The Godfather' recently?"

"Yes, so what? Speaking of which, are there sequels?" asked Diqiong.

“I’ll bring them to you next time,” said Su Ping.

“That’s more like it.” Diqiong didn’t pester him any longer.

Su Ping felt helpless when dealing with her. He then left the Golden Crow settlement and entered the wilderness. There was basically no scent of other beasts within a ten thousand kilometer radius.

Su Ping went further and finally found some unusual beasts.

Those animals carried the bloodlines of ancient mythical creatures and boasted the power of chaos. They could crush both divine and demonic beasts at their level. They were very strong. Even the geniuses among gods had to lower their heads in front of such beasts.

That was the formidable nature of ancient mythical bloodlines.

Su Ping soon encountered a mythical creature in the Celestial State lurking in the desert. The simplest hunter often appeared as prey. The beast attacked when Su Ping passed by, only to be killed the next moment.

Su Ping tore the mythical creature apart and threw it to his pets, as the meat contained a lot of nutrition.

He also used the opportunity to take the Great Dao inside the beast’s body and have his universe absorb it. Then, exactly as he did in the Chief Elder’s universe, he established a contract with the Dao of Fire and transmitted the power of the broken Dao pieces through the contract.

The temperature around Su Ping rose to an unbearable extent as the power of the broken pieces was transmitted. The place began to twist and even melt, even though it was highly resistant to heat.

“It’s truly effective!”

Su Ping was pleasantly surprised. He found that the power of the broken Dao pieces could be absorbed by the Dao of Fire. The features of the Great Dao were removed and only the purest Dao power would remain. The Dao of Fire absorbed it and became stronger, reaching a whole new level, beyond the formerly attained perfection.

An idea occurred to him. If the Dao of Fire reaches the maximum, I wonder if it’ll be more powerful than the Golden Crows’ fire...

He soon thought of another possibility. The Golden Crows had possibly cultivated the Dao of Fire to the maximum.

Only the Golden Crow ancestor could answer that question.

Su Ping dismissed those irrelevant thoughts and focused on controlling the Dao of Fire to absorb it.

## **Astral Pet Store (WN) –**

### **Chapter 1471 - 1480**

#### **Consolidation (2) |**

### **Chapter 1471: Consolidation (2)**

#### Chapter 1471 Consolidation (2)

A long time passed. When Su Ping opened his eyes again, he discovered that the desert around him became golden lava, with a shocking heat of more than a billion degrees. It was even hotter than the center of a nuclear explosion.

“The Dao of Fire...”

Su Ping sensed that his Dao of Fire was fifty percent more powerful than before. Although some of the power from the Dao shards drifted away due to unknown reasons, the rest was absorbed as nourishment for the Fire Dao.

As long as I absorb enough Great Dao pieces, even the Dao of Fire can be used to consolidate the universe...

Su Ping’s eyes glittered. It was just a theory at first, but now he thought it was actually feasible. If that was the new way, he would be able to consolidate many Great Daos and establish true multiple undying universes!

Su Ping rose and looked for more mythical creatures.

Tens of thousands of kilometers away, he found another one with Celestial cultivation, but much stronger; he even thought that many Celestial gods would have a hard time defeating it. As for the Celestials from the Federation, they would probably die instantly.

Same level, different bloodlines. Their combat abilities were completely different.

“However, even though the mythical creatures are so strong, we can bond with them and turn them into our supporters. I have to say, the first battle pet warrior was a true genius...” Su Ping said to himself.

Once he killed the mythical creature, Su Ping repeated the process to absorb its Great Dao.

His Fire Dao became a lot more powerful, but there was still a very long way to go before it could truly consolidate the universe.

I've found the right way, but it's very time-consuming. Fortunately, I have the help of the system's cultivation sites; otherwise, I wouldn't be able to hunt many creatures carrying the Great Dao..."

Su Ping realized how much time and the shocking amount of resources this approach would require. He felt rather lucky, as it would be difficult for others to carry it out, even if they knew.

It would have been practically impossible to gather that many shards of the Great Dao without access to lots of cultivation sites.

Whoosh!

Once done with that prey, Su Ping turned around and went elsewhere. Soon, many mythical creatures were hunted by him. The Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets were full.

His pets were also turning into chaos creatures after eating such a large amount of mythical creatures and absorbing their essence.

Time flew by. Four months passed in the blink of an eye.

Su Ping hunted high and low on the Golden Crows' planet. Fortunately, the planet was boundless, almost the size of half the federal universe; otherwise, there wouldn't have been enough beasts for the Golden Crows to feed on.

Even Su Ping took ten days to reach the Golden Crows' holy tree from the other side of the planet.

It is worthy of note that Su Ping's current strength was enough to cross a solar system within a single breath.

After three months of hunting, the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon and the other pets transformed significantly. Although still in the Dao Heart State, they were much stronger than before, and turned into mythical creatures. They were overflowing with the power of chaos, having become dozens of times stronger than other creatures at their level.

Bang! Su Ping raised a hand and pointed with one of his fingers.

A spark darted out of his finger; like a ray, it penetrated a Dao Heart mythical creature.

Su Ping took a deep breath with glittering eyes as he felt the scorching heat and saw the black crack in the void.

He was at the moment capable of easily piercing a Dao Heart mythical creature with the Dao of Fire alone.

That was a mythical creature. If God Emperors were there, he could kill them all, even if they were standing in line!

Just like before, he threw the beast's corpse to his pets, and then absorbed the shards of Great Dao he found.

The Dao of Fire stood in the center like a dazzling star in his universe of chaos, surrounded by other Great Daos. However, compared to the Dao of Fire, they were as insignificant as butterflies.

If he hadn't done it step by step in the past three months, Su Ping wouldn't have believed that the perfected Dao of Fire could grow to such a powerful level.

This is leading to the highest level. I think that my universe is already influenced by the Dao of Fire. The moment my Fire Dao is able to easily control the universe, maybe I can create an undying universe with only the Dao of Fire... Su Ping's eyes glittered. He would become an Ancestral God after taking that step.

Still, unlike the other Ancestral Gods, he could continue training other Great Daos once his Fire Dao reached the limit.

The more time Su Ping had, the more Great Dao he would be able to cultivate.

Time was power for him; his only concern was that the Heavens would invade the cyborgs' universe.

Give me 10,000 years. If I can cultivate 100,000 years in cultivation sites, I will definitely become as strong as an ancestor... Su Ping's eyes glittered with confidence.

He stopped hunting after absorbing the Great Dao of some mythical creatures.

He had been there for a couple of months, and thought it was time to return and see if everything was all right.

Su Ping had to go out every once in a while. After all, he was seen as the leader of humankind. His master could indeed leave him a message if anything was wrong, but they wouldn't be able to reach out to him in case of emergencies.

He then chose to return.

When back in the store, Su Ping saw delight in the eyes of Tang Ruyan, Joanna and the others. It was obvious that they had been worried for him.

However, his comings and goings had become beyond customary. They were no longer as concerned when they saw him.

as

Su Ping received updates while releasing the customers' pets.

From Tang Ruyan, he learned news both important and trivial. Humans and cyborgs were getting along; there was more trade and communication.

The cyborg's advanced technology was a source of inspiration for humans, while their training techniques were seen as treasures by the cyborgs. A lot of them were there as apprentices.

"I'm glad that nothing important happened."

Su Ping's biggest concern was the green glass protection. As for the big news, he only regarded them as fun facts.

After the briefing, Su Ping went back to the cultivation sites with another batch of pets.

This time, he randomly picked another mid-rank cultivation site.

He trained pets and hunted to improve his own cultivation.

Time moved forward. Twenty years passed in the blink of an eye.

Su Ping had cultivated for two hundred years in the cultivation sites.

He hunted an endless number of powerful creatures during that period, beasts and beings of strange species.

Su Ping's targets were no weaker than the Ascendant State, given that the complete Great Dao was found in Ascendant beings and above. The ones in the Celestial State with their own small universes would have more pieces of the Great Dao, and would drop dozens of times more Dao shards than any Ascendant prey.

The pieces harvested from Dao Heart prey would be even more.

However, those higher beings were very cautious. They couldn't defeat Su Ping, and would often hide, following their natural awareness for danger.

Fortunately, Su Ping learned the importance of disguise and lured them out with the Lightning Rat.

The rodent had yet to reach the Dao Heart State, even after cultivating for two hundred years. Its battle techniques were brutal, but there was still one final step to take.

Su Ping also discovered that the little one was unable to comprehend a Dao Heart because it hadn't found its own heart yet.

"It's time..."

Su Ping examined the scorching power in his universe after absorbing the Great Dao pieces of a Celestial State beast. Even though his consciousness hadn't entered his universe, he could feel the horrifying aura produced by his body, which felt like a furnace.

The Fire Dao was emitting such immense heat inside his universe that the other Great Daos were barely noticeable.

Su Ping's entire universe was illuminated. It seemed to be transforming already.

He knew that he was about to hit the bottleneck and truly transform in a couple of years.

He felt hopeful as he went back to the store. As usual, he took out the customers' pets and picked up a batch. He then asked Tang Ruyan about the current news.

## Chapter 1472: The Planet of Origin (1)

Chapter 1472 The Planet of Origin (1)

"You came right on time. Your master is looking for you."

Tang Ruyan quickly added, "I heard it's urgent."

"Urgent?" Su Ping was shocked. His master would never look for him unless it was something important. This time, he even said that it was urgent. He asked back, "Did my master say what was the issue?"

"Nope."

Su Ping wasted no time spreading out his senses, instantly covering the entire Nine States. Even the worms crawling in the sand were seen vividly.

The next moment, Su Ping went to the conference temple. "Master."

Su Ping went directly to see his master. He asked, "You looked for me, something about an urgent matter?"

"You're here." Shen Huang was greatly relieved to see him. He quickly said, "Great. I thought you would be training in seclusion for a long time. A few days ago, the cyborgs informed us that something went wrong with the green glass." "The green glass?"

Su Ping couldn't help but raise his head. Although the temple had a solid ceiling, his eyes could pierce through it, directly seeing the green sky above.

That was the planet's protective shield, and the ultimate Dao pieces originated from chaos.

"What's the problem?" asked Su Ping.

Shen Huang said, "Basha, one of the cyborg leaders, said that something struck part of the green glass. We're not sure if the impact was accidental, or if some monster was trying to get inside. The cyborgs are discussing whether or not they should go out and check. However, I don't think they're capable of doing that."

"Something struck the glass?"

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. They didn't encounter any monsters on their way over to the planet. Is there really a monster? Or maybe... the Heavens arrived?

"Contact the cyborgs right now. I want to know the latest information and find out what they're up to," said Su Ping immediately.

Shen Huang nodded. "I'll make arrangements right away."

"Never mind. I should personally talk to them. This matter is too important," said Su Ping.

He didn't expect such a turn of events after only a hundred years of peace.

Su Ping's senses were then spread beyond the Nine States to cover the cyborg's territory. All the strong cyborgs were clearly marked by his senses, like glittering spots on a map.

He soon located an extremely powerful aura in the northern region. He sent out a thought. "Are you Mr. Crowe? I heard that something went wrong with the green glass. I'd like to know what's going on. Being allies, shouldn't we discuss the matter together? This place is our home, too."

"Boss Su?"



Crowe felt dazed for a moment after hearing Su Ping's voice. He then tracked down the source of his counterpart's consciousness, only to find that the man was still in the Nine States. This surprised him, not expecting that Su Ping's senses would cover such a wide range. He instantly replied, "No problem. We were going to discuss it with you."

"All right. Let's meet in the Nine States," said Su Ping.

Crowe took a deep breath after the conversation ended. The concern they had after their own meeting seemed to have a way to be addressed now. He instantly informed the other two leaders, and the three went to the temple where Su Ping was located.

All the human experts were already there.

"Nice to meet you, leaders."

Su Ping raised his head.

All the human Celestials were shocked by that greeting, and quickly raised their heads to look. A second later, ripples were formed in the air and three figures appeared. They were the three cyborg universe dominators.

Chi Ying was secretly shocked. He had become a universe dominator with Su Ping's help, and yet he didn't notice their impending arrival. Su Ping was truly stronger than he expected.

The latter had yet to announce his advancement to the higher Undying State, but he suspected that Su Ping's power was already getting close.

"Boss Su."

The three cyborg leaders nodded at Su Ping and then the others. Basha, who stood on the left, said, "We've informed Shen Huang about the green glass incident. After some discussion, we decided to go out and investigate. Although risky, we believe it's necessary."

"Maybe the monsters have discovered us and are trying to surround us," said Crowe, "If it's not them, we won't be exposed, even if we go out and investigate."

Su Ping gave them a slight nod. It was obvious that they reached the decision after carefully weighing the pros and cons.

"Was the glass struck a second time?" asked Su Ping.

"No. However, the previous impact didn't feel like we hit any planet," said Basha.

Su Ping nodded and said, "I'll tag along and investigate with you."

“Boss Su, how truly brave of you.”

Crowe couldn't help but praise him. The purpose of their visit was to invite Su Ping to join them; after all, the human leader was very strong and could be a great teammate. Besides, they were also concerned that if something happened to them and they couldn't return, Su Ping would easily suppress their clan with his strength.

“Boss Su, how did you get in at the very beginning? Can we go out the same way?” asked Basha.

Su Ping said, “I simply tore my way through. I didn't cause much noise.”

The three exchanged bewildered looks. None of them had felt a thing, which suggested that the noise made back then was truly negligible.

## Chapter 1473: The Planet of Origin (2)

Chapter 1473 The Planet of Origin (2)

“Mr. Chi Ying, would you like to come with us? We could use some extra help,” said Crowe.

Chi Ying felt dazed for a moment, then glanced at Su Ping as he realized what was going on. He instantly nodded and said, “No problem. This is our home too; I'm responsible for protecting it!”

“Okay.”

The three cyborg leaders were all smiles, seeing that both Su Ping and Chi Ying were so easily convinced. “Let's go now,” said Su Ping. “Now?”

The humanoid trio was rather surprised, not expecting Su Ping to be that fast.

“Do you have to make preparations?” asked Su Ping.

“Not really. This is actually better; we'll be sooner at ease once we figure out the reason,” said Basha.

“In that case, let's go. We have a map of the green glass. We'll exit the glass from somewhere else and take a detour to avoid the point of impact; that way we won't meet anyone head-on,” said Crowe.

Su Ping nodded.

“Master, you’ll have to take care of the human clan for now,” said Su Ping to Shen Huang.

Slightly concerned, the latter said, “Be careful, and come back if it’s truly dangerous.”

“Okay.”

The other Celestial State experts were slightly worried, too. Su Ping was their backbone at the moment; if anything happened to him, they didn’t know how they could preserve the human bloodline.

The group of five left the temple; Su Ping and Chi Ying followed the three cyborgs to a place right underneath the green glass.

There were no cities within a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers. It was absolutely desolate, and only a few animals roamed about. The excessive radiation in that place made it difficult for beasts to get close.

“This was the first gate we planned in the past.”

Basha stared at the green glass above her and said, “We had imagined that a war would eventually take place somewhere beyond the sky, and this was to be the first stop of our march.”

Su Ping gave her a slight nod. The pressure imposed on a race always surrounded by monsters was enormous; this would motivate them to pursue extreme power.

“This was the mark left when we tried to tear the green glass open, but we were only testing; we never really broke it.” Crowe pointed at a part of the green glass where there was a shallow mark, invisible to the naked eye. Only Ascendants who had mastered a perfect Great Dao could sense it.

“Let’s sneak out from here,” said Basha.

“We’ll have to work together. The three of us are barely capable of breaking through,” said Crowe.

“Let me do it.”

Su Ping didn’t hide his strength. He wasn’t trying to show off; it was because the matter was of critical importance. He wanted to make as little disturbance as possible, preventing anyone outside from finding out.

“Huh?”

The others looked at him in surprise.

Su Ping didn't say anything. He simply raised a hand with a slow gesture, manifesting a scorching power in his palm. Once the arm was fully raised, the power had been fully accumulated, as if he were holding a sun. The energy emitted was terrifying to the others.

"Well..."

They were appalled, as they could sense the Great Dao's pure power. However, such power was too unimaginably strong for someone in the Dao Heart State.

Boss, he's truly... Chi Ying looked at Su Ping in shock, instantly confirming that Su Ping had surpassed the universe dominator realm and reached the Undying State that he looked up to.

Above that level was the end of all cultivation, the chaos ancestor realm that stood above all races! The scorching Fire Dao was condensed into a ray that looked like a golden sword. It slowly drew a line underneath the sky, causing a tiny crack.

Su Ping covered everyone with the aura of illusion and said, "Let's go!"

After that, he made a move and was the first to dash out.

The other four reacted despite their shock. They followed and exited the green glass planet.

Su Ping then saw the dim and dark universe. The green glass behind them was like a glimmering grain of dust, utterly inconspicuous.

"There's some aura left..."

He noticed a feeble aura in space. Although most of it was erased, there were still some marks. It seemed that they had left in too much of a hurry to wipe it clean.

Su Ping's eyes turned into the eyes of chaos, and noticed that space was twisted and time was reversed. He saw that the aura was increasingly obvious, but he didn't see any figure, even though he went back to review time up to a month.

The mark was left two days prior.

"Have they erased their traces in history?"

Su Ping never expected to find too many things from history anyway. He considered for a moment and asked his teammates, "Should we follow up?"

Basha and the others were still looking around. That was their first time ever stepping out of the green glass and observing the universe their ancestors described. Although they had seen it in their ancestors' memories, it was the first time seeing it in person. It was slightly different from what they were told.

Furthermore, there were no monsters lurking around the green glass. They felt both lucky and delighted. Have the monsters already left the universe after such a long time?

The cyborgs finally took note of the vague marks in the void. They looked at each other, then Basha asked, "Would we alarm them if we recklessly followed them?"

"They didn't even wipe their marks clean. They might not be able to detect us," said Su Ping.

The humanoid trio was rendered speechless. The other possibility was that the marks were left for the purpose of luring them.

"You can't be overly cautious all the time if you want to get rid of danger completely," said Su Ping after realizing what they were thinking.

The three of them hesitated and talked amongst themselves for a long time, eventually agreeing.

Su Ping didn't waste any more time. He quickly led them forward.

Half a day later, Su Ping saw a glimmering planet in the dark space. Right when he saw the planet-a furious wind emerged from it and a voice was directly sent to the heads of all living creatures.

What shocked Su Ping and Chi Ying was that the voice seemed to be cursing in the language of the Federation.

"That voice. It seems to belong to..."

Chi Ying's eyes widened, somehow finding the voice familiar. After listening to it carefully, he looked at Su Ping with a crazy thought in his head.

Su Ping noticed Chi Ying's odd behavior and instantly asked via telepathy, "What's wrong?"

"I think it's the Primordial Empyrean Master..." Chi Ying replied with disbelief on his face.

Su Ping was shocked. He remembered that the Planet of Origin was the first to flee. According to Kayafollet, they had coordinates in a place beyond the universe. He didn't expect to meet them there. "It's them."

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and quietly spread his senses. He soon discovered a lot of auras on that planet; most of them belonged to Ascendants, and five were in the Celestial State.

In addition, there was a universe dominator openly releasing his aura.

Su Ping saw that it was a white-robed old man. However, the guy was blushing while he yelled and cursed crazily.

“They are indeed from the Federation.” Su Ping recognized the buildings and clothes of those people; they matched with what he had seen in Kayafollet’s memories. It truly was the Planet of Origin, and the old man was the Primordial Emyrean Master, the strongest man in the old Federation.

He had already reached the Dao Heart State.

No wonder the twelve Celestial State experts obeyed him. Even someone as strong as the Saint King had to run errands for him.

“Why are they here? Why are they making such a racket? Do they want to get killed?” Su Ping was gloomy. He didn’t like them at all. Since the man continued with his roaring, Su Ping flashed to float somewhere above the Planet of Origin. An abundant power was spread out, enveloping the entire planet.

That way it was impossible for the man’s roar to spread out.

Su Ping moved closer to where the white-robed old man was and yelled at him.

“Shut up!”

## **Chapter 1474: Strange Disease (1)**

Chapter 1474 Strange Disease (1)

After a hum, the white-robed old man trembled, and the madness in his eyes was cleared for a brief moment, although befuddled. He looked up and noticed Su Ping who landed like a god, then asked without much thought, “Who are you?”

“Primordial Emyrean Master!”

A crimson light passed by, and Chi Ying appeared next to Su Ping. He glared at the strongest man from their universe.

They once revered the Primordial Empyrean Master, both for his strength and for his contributions. The man had established a Federation, freeing humans on remote planets from being enslaved by alien races or eaten by beasts.

However, when crisis struck, the reputed expert was the first one to flee. They were all disappointed.

“You’re... Chi Ying?”

Stunned, the old expert recognized Chi Ying. The kid had been stuck in the Celestial State for hundreds of thousands of years, and yet he...

Three beams of light passed by, and the cyborg leaders moved close to Su Ping. Once they noticed the people on the Planet of Origin, they couldn’t help but look at Su Ping  
“Are they... humans too?”

“Yes, they are the traitors of humankind,” replied Su Ping coldly.

The three leaders exchanged stunned looks, partially understanding the situation. Being leaders of a major race, they knew that there were traitors in every clan, especially when under enormous pressure. “If they’re traitors, just kill them, that way they won’t cause too much noise and alarm the monsters,” said Basha. They had seen a fair share of traitors, but they couldn’t tolerate them.

“You...”

The Primordial Empyrean Master was fully awake now. He looked at the three alien experts, Chi Ying, and Su Ping who seemed to be a leader of sorts. He had never seen Su Ping, and didn’t know when the guy rose to prominence. Is the guy an old monster from some ruins?

The old expert immediately asked, “Chi Ying, you left the universe too? What’s the situation? Are the Heavens still there?”

Chi Ying sneered and replied, “Do you really care about our universe? Didn’t you know what would happen when you led the people in the Planet of Origin away?”

The Empyrean said bitterly, “The Heavens can be dated back to the distant age of chaos, which was a great era we weren’t able to see. Any creature from that era can crush us with ease. However, the Heavens were able to end the chaos era; I had to keep some hope for humanity.”

“By hope, you mean saving yourselves?” Chi Ying sneered. “That’s just a fancy way of saying that you turned tail. None of us were born yesterday. Don’t bother explaining.”

The Primordial Empyrean Master was silent. Indeed. They had all lived for hundreds of thousands of years, and not even kids would fall for that. It was pointless.

He said, "I knew the Heavens had arrived, but I didn't know how strong they were. I feared they would instantly destroy our universe, so I had to leave with the Planet of Origin right away. I know you can't forgive me. I wouldn't forgive myself if I were you."

"Humph!" Chi Ying sneered.

The old expert looked at him and said, "I didn't expect you to be the most talented one of the twelve Celestials. Now, you're also a universe dominator. Are those aliens your friends? The Heavens are our enemies; we shouldn't fight each other. How about an alliance?"

Chi Ying laughed, but he didn't decline the offer. He looked at Su Ping.

Although he despised the old man's actions, he had to admit that the latter was very strong, and they could use all kinds of help to increase their odds of winning against the Heavens.

"Didn't you leave the universe? How did you end up here?" said Su Ping coldly, not bothering to acknowledge the offer.

The Primordial Empyrean Master was slightly surprised. Judging by Chi Ying's reactions, the young man seemed to be the one who called the shots.

He observed Su Ping carefully, but didn't find a single trace of the universe dominator realm on him. The young man seemed to merely be a Celestial.

However, he vividly remembered that the guy was the first to arrive and yell at him after tearing an opening through the Planet of Origin's barrier.

"Who are you?"

"Just answer my questions," said Su Ping coldly.

The old master was slightly angry, but he didn't let anything show. He smiled and said, "We did have a pair of coordinates outside of the universe where we could temporarily live. However, something went wrong. We encountered a mutated mythical chaos creature that destroyed our planned destination. We've been wandering ever since."

"A mythical chaos creature?" Su Ping raised his eyebrows. "Are there mythical chaos creatures in the Realm of the Heavens?"

"Yes, but their population is not large," said the old man, "According to the records, when the age of chaos collapsed, many mythical creatures scattered about and



escaped. Some of them simply wandered beyond the universe. However, the places beyond the universe are boundless; it's hardly possible to run into them. We were simply too unlucky..."

He couldn't help but sigh as he recalled the situation.

"Why were you yelling just now?" Su Ping asked.

The Primordial Empyrean Master was stunned for a moment. He took a deep breath and said, "I was affected while I fought the mythical chaos beast. The disease has been haunting me since then."

"The disease makes you scream loudly?" Su Ping raised his eyebrows.

## Chapter 1475: Strange Disease (2)

### Chapter 1475 Strange Disease (2)

After a moment of silence, the Primordial Empyrean Master said to Su Ping, "That's my problem, not yours. I've told you everything I know. I'd like to contribute to humankind, being a human myself. Since we're stranded in this foreign land, I suggest that we establish the Federation once more; everybody in the universe will benefit from it. You shouldn't refuse to cooperate with me just because you can't understand why I escaped.

"We cannot seek revenge without working together!"

He spoke in a persistent and righteous manner.

Su Ping remained calm and unmoved. "Let's see if you're telling the truth."

With that, he raised a hand and gathered the five Celestials in the Planet of Origin. They were shocked, as they were teleported from different places; it made them feel like ants in the hand of a giant.

They had only experienced such a terrifying display of force from the Primordial Empyrean Master.

Ignoring their fear and shock, Su Ping pointed at one of them and read his memories.

Su Ping browsed quickly and soon found the memory when he fled from the universe.

According to that memory, Su Ping saw that the Primordial Empyrean Master left the universe while manning the Planet of Origin like a majestic god. He jumped to a point according to certain coordinates through an ancient array.

The coordinates would lead to a hidden space. They lived there for some time.

Time flowed at a different speed in that place. They spent more than five hundred years there, until a mythical chaos creature got close. To avoid conflict, the Primordial Empyrean Master had to abandon their haven and flee to a place beyond the universe.

After wandering for decades, the old expert stopped steering the planet one day and left.

Everything seemed to be as usual when he returned.

However, ever since that day, the Primordial Empyrean Master had been yelling crazily from time to time.

The first time he suffered a lapse of reason, he even killed a Celestial that was merely talking to him.

After that, the remaining Celestials told him of his episodes, so he dismissed them. He established a barrier inside his temple to avoid killing others.

Decades later, they found that cyborg universe and wandered in that place, until they accidentally struck the green glass planet where Su Ping lived.

The latter withdrew his consciousness and started to read the memories of another Celestial to confirm the truth.

“Sir, that’s too domineering!” The old expert was angry, not expecting Su Ping to be so reckless. Is he being this arrogant because he has Chi Ying and three aliens to back him?

“You would be even more domineering if you had my position and strength,” said Su Ping indifferently, “The fact that you’re still alive proves how merciful I am.”

“You!”

The Primordial Empyrean Master changed his expression. What Su Ping said was almost a declaration of war.

Su Ping ignored the fellow. He browsed the second Celestial’s memories and found similar experiences.

He then got hold of two Ascendants and cross-checked facts with their memories, finding that the events were similar; only their perspectives were different. This meant that the guy wasn't lying.

"What did you do a few decades ago?" Su Ping looked at the Primordial Empyrean Master coldly.

The old man changed his expression and said, "I'm a universe dominator anyway. Can't I have some secrets?"

"No," said Su Ping indifferently, "You betrayed humanity in a time of crisis. No matter what contributions you made in the past, it means nothing to me. What you do when your life is at risk shows who you really are. Helping a million people by raising your hand is not as difficult as sacrificing yourself to save one person."

"Hilarious!"

The Primordial Empyrean Master was angry. "You escaped from our universe too. What are you? Didn't you abandon the others, too?"

"At least we tried," said Su Ping frankly, "We tried our best and had to retreat. Even though many couldn't be saved and had to be abandoned, we tried our best and our conscience is clear!"

"Your conscience is clear? Only the extremely selfish would feel the same. You wouldn't have been so extreme if you felt slightly uncomfortable." The Primordial Empyrean Master sneered.

"I don't need your approval. All you need to know is that you're not qualified to negotiate or become my ally. I may spare your life if you behave. If you don't, you won't be needed in the war against the Heavens."

Su Ping spoke in an extremely cold and majestic voice.

The old expert didn't expect that a young man he had never met would be that brutal and confident. He gazed at Su Ping and said, "You're certain that you can catch me? You may not be able to catch me if I want to leave!"

"You're overthinking."

Su Ping knew the guy wouldn't act obediently unless he made a display of force. He snorted and slapped the barrier covering the temple, smashing it to bits. The void shook and a magnificent force was imposed on the Primordial Empyrean Master like a heavy mountain.

The latter was shocked, and nearly fell all the way to the ground. He hurriedly drew power from his universe and reversed time. It was useless, though; Su Ping's overflowing Dao power tore all forces apart. He had the feeling that the young man could even shatter him directly!

He's this strong?

The Emyrean Master was shocked, finding it hard to believe.

Being a universe dominator, he had never experienced something like this.

Could it be that the guy is not a universe dominator, but someone in the legendary Undying State?

Once that realm was attained, one could casually step out of the universe and travel in any realm!

Furthermore, immortality would be achieved; aging would be abolished, and even bodies would become immortal, even if the owner died!

"You can't go without my permission." Su Ping dispelled his power and looked at the old fellow indifferently. "You'd better confess truthfully. It wasn't easy for you to become a universe dominator, so I'll leave you some dignity. Don't force me to read your memories."

The Primordial Emyrean Master wore a troubled expression, not expecting such a powerful existence to be born from his universe.

"I'll speak." He took a deep breath and gritted his teeth. "We were roaming about when we found an item floating somewhere beyond the universe. I contracted the disease because of that thing."

"Huh?" Su Ping frowned. "What thing?"

"A corpse."

The Primordial Emyrean Master looked at Su Ping and said, "You may find it hard to believe, but the corpse was enormous; it had yet to decay despite being bitten by countless Daos. I would have thought it was alive if it weren't for the huge wounds it had."

Su Ping was stunned. There was a body floating in the Realm of the Heavens beyond the universe?

Was it an Ancestral God?

“If it’s a body, how is it related to your disease?” asked Su Ping.

The old man sighed and said, “I don’t know how strong the body used to be, but I felt that my power was almost drained after just a glance. Over the years, whenever I thought of the corpse, some sort of power would try to invade my body, and I simply wanted to expel

it.”

Su Ping was stunned. The guy was a universe dominator with an awakened Dao Heart. Could something so uncanny happen to him?

“What you said makes me quite curious,” Su Ping said, “If you don’t mind, lock your memories in the past. I’ll only browse the memories after you left the universe.”

The Primordial Empyrean Master changed his expression. A dignified universe dominator like himself was being treated as a prisoner, and the only choice was to let Su Ping read his memories?

It was tantamount to letting someone see him naked.

It was obviously an insufferable humiliation.

“I’ve given you enough face,” said Su Ping.

The Primordial Empyrean Master secretly gnashed his teeth. It had been a long time since he was humiliated and angered in such a way.

However, Su Ping was beyond terrifying, let alone that he had four helpers.

## **Chapter 1476: Ancestor (1)**

Chapter 1476 Ancestor (1)

“If you want to read, I’ll show them to you.” The Primordial Empyrean Master didn’t say anything else; he simply cursed inwardly, hoping that Su Ping would also contract the strange disease after seeing the strange

corpse.

He quickly locked his memories. As he did so, the indescribable scene popped up in his memories; he couldn’t help but shiver and roar uncontrollably.

Su Ping and the others were surprised by the old expert's reaction, which was clearly the previously mentioned disease. However, it was unbelievable to see how a universe dominator would go crazy just because he saw a corpse.

Su Ping's eyes glittered, as he was arriving at a terrifying speculation. That corpse was definitely not from an Ancestral God.

Could it be... some chaos ancestor?

Su Ping had seen Ancestral Gods before. The ones alive were hardly intimidating in his eyes, let alone dead ones.

Although the Primordial Empyrean Master couldn't compare to him, the guy was a universe dominator in his own right. An Ancestral God couldn't have affected him so.

"Freeze!"

Su Ping raised his head, sending a stream of soul power into the guy's consciousness. He instantly felt some assorted thoughts. The guy truly seemed to have gone crazy; it wasn't a trick.

The old man woke up shortly after. He seemed to have realized something, his expression looked awful. He said to Su Ping, "Just read!" "Okay."

Su Ping was not worried about the risk of editing or hiding some of the memories. His thoughts went through and soon detected the soul of the Primordial Empyrean Master.

"Is this your soul power?"

The old expert sensed Su Ping's soul power and felt shocked; it was like a dark ocean carrying an ominous aura. It was hard to imagine how brutal this young man's heart was, completely unlike the calm person he seemed to be.

Su Ping didn't respond. His soul power invaded the man's memories, which were soon replayed. However, the memories were short, and those further away had been locked by some power.

He didn't try to tear the lock open; he simply read the accessible parts.

The memories started from the moment the Primordial Empyrean Master left the universe.

Very soon, Su Ping located the memories he was interested in.

A strange image was suddenly displayed before Su Ping's eyes.

In the dark and quiet space, the shape of an ancient object came to view; perfectly still, seemingly made of black materials. It was silent, cold, while at the same time mysterious and terrifying.

There were sudden changes in the world Su Ping was viewing, right when the shape of the ancient corpse appeared.

The body shook all of a sudden. Then, it appeared to be reviving, as it began to move. The bodily tissues were slowly detached from the body and turned into thousands of threads, like hairy tentacles trying to surround him.

An indescribable fright clenched Su Ping's heart. He was having a hard time breathing. The actual scene made him suspect that he wasn't reading the man's memories, but actually witnessing that terrifying existence in person and was being corrupted...

"No!"

Su Ping roared and unleashed his power to break free.

"Boss Su!" someone said in a hurry.

Su Ping sensed a few powers covering him; although weak, they were clearly concerned for him.

He woke up right after. He finally realized that his muscles were tight and his universe of chaos had appeared. He had also revealed the gigantic body of the Primitive Chaos Clan. Su Ping turned around, only to find that the three cyborg leaders, Chi Ying, the Primordial Emyrean Master and the others were looking

at him in fear.

Su Ping guessed that he had lost control at some point. He was quite distraught because

of the experience. "I am sorry."

None of them could stop him if he lost control.

"I'm glad that you're fine..." Chi Ying was quite scared. Just then, he thought that they were screwed. Fortunately, Su Ping woke up

in time.

The latter managed a smile, and then raised his head to reverse time and see what happened. He was meditating as he read the Emyrean Master's memories. Then, he trembled and roared, revealing his true form and the chaos universe. He almost started

attacking.

I truly lost control...

Su Ping's heart was heavy, as losing control over reading some memories was completely

unexpected.

"Did you see it too?" The Primordial Empyrean Master looked at Su Ping in shock and suspicion. The aura that the latter displayed had terrified him. He no longer treated the young man as a peer, but as a

person with the legendary Undying State. "Where did you see the corpse? Do you remember the location?" asked Su Ping.

The old expert shook his head and said, "I can't recall those memories anymore. I go crazy whenever I think of it; I only know that it happened."

Su Ping nodded ever so slightly. There was indeed something wrong with the guy's memories. He even suspected that it wasn't a corpse, and was somehow residing in the elder's memories.

Furthermore, the owner of that corpse could be in a different time and space; in the past,

or maybe the future.

That kind of existence was beyond his understanding. It was undoubtedly a chaotic ancestor!

Even though the body had been left behind, nobody could observe it; if someone did, it would have a strong influence on their memories.

## Chapter 1477: Ancestor (2)

Chapter 1477 Ancestor (2)

"How should I cultivate once I'm in the Undying State? The world that the Golden Crow ancestor saw is a void. All lives are as insignificant as grains of dust; they can create and destroy everything with ease, including the universe..." Su Ping mumbled while feeling confused.



He could understand the Undying State, and he had already touched it.

However, the ancestral level was beyond his imagination.

What lies beyond the Undying State? How can I continue to become stronger?

The most terrifying fact is that... Even an existence such as that one was killed by the Heavens...

Su Ping's face was covered with grimness and desperation. Although he had cultivated quickly with the system's help, and not many were faster than him in all of history, he found it hard to breathe when facing the terrifying Heavens.

"You'll go back with us for now. It wasn't easy for you to cultivate; make up for what you did later," said Su Ping to the Primordial Empyrean Master. He planned to let the guy be for now, because he wanted to read his memories after he reached the Undying State. Then, he would locate the corpse and go there to have a look.

The experts in the Undying State were basically immortal. Su Ping believed that he would be unaffected if he saw the body again; at least the influence wouldn't be as bad.

The Golden Crow ancestor sleeps all the time. Perhaps, it's partly for cultivation, and partly for the sake of others...

When you're too strong, you must learn to live in seclusion, because you'll disturb and even hurt others with your strength when they see you. That might be the case for any top expert... Su Ping thought.

It might be a good thing that they were hard to come by.

If they were truly seen, they could scare someone to death.

"Okay."

TIOL

The Primordial Empyrean Master nodded, although he didn't feel anything special. In his eyes, it was normal for Su Ping not to kill him, having a universe dominator's cultivation. After all, he was definitely one of humanity's pillars of humanity.

"Let's go back now. Sorry, guys. He's from my clan. Sorry for the trouble he's caused," said Su Ping to the cyborg leaders.

Basha and the others exchanged glances and hesitated, but stayed silent in the end.

They wouldn't have spared the guy in the past. After all, not only did he hit the green glass, he had also yelled loudly, which significantly increased their risk of exposure.

However, Su Ping had said his piece and revealed his terrifying form. None of them dared to disobey.

All of them sensed that Su Ping's power could easily kill them all when he lost control. He was on a completely different level.

As no objections were raised, Su Ping covered the Planet of Origin with his power and shrank it, turning it into a ball. He held it in his hand and returned with Basha and the others.

Everything was quiet as they made their way back. Su Ping was searching their surroundings with a keen eye, but didn't detect any of the monsters the cyborgs had mentioned.

He wiped all traces of their presence, being more thorough than the Primordial Empyrean Master.

They were soon back, near the green glass covering. Su Ping moved a finger and made a tiny crack, then led everyone inside.

The old expert followed. Seeing the vast world inside, he remarked with glittering eyes, "It's true that there can be a whole world in a grain of dust..."

Su Ping thought of something and asked him, "You struck the green glass before. Why did you leave?"

The Primordial Empyrean Master was clearly acting more respectful in Su Ping's presence. Even if the youngster had just forcefully read his memories, he was smart enough not to let any anger show. He replied casually, "I noticed that something was off, so I came to take a look. I found that it would require a lot of time for me to open this. The Fortune Bell rang just as I was about to keep trying, so I decided to leave in a flash."

"The Fortune Bell?"

Su Ping was surprised.

"It was an ultimate treasure that I found by accident years ago." The elder glanced at Su Ping and took out a black bell. "I couldn't have made all my achievements without it. I would have been just a normal cultivator."

"So, this is your cheat?"

“Huh?”

“What did you mean when you said it rang?”

“Oh, this Fortune Bell will alert me if something good or bad is about to happen. I survived a lot of dangers thanks to this item,” said the Primordial Empyrean Master with a smile, ‘This is a chaos treasure bound to my soul, and it’ll fall apart if I die. There’s no way to unbind it. One bell for one life.”

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. It seemed that the last part was said because the old man feared that he would try snatching the artifact.

However, he was probably telling the truth, since he had frankly confessed the treasure’s usage.

“Let me take a look.” Su Ping extended a hand.

The old man’s lips twitched; he unwillingly handed the item over. He was more or less worried, as normal people wouldn’t try stealing it, but it would be troublesome if Su Ping wanted to try.

“What a strange item. There seems to be a great Dao power sealed within.” Su Ping examined the Fortune Bell and felt as if it were alive. It was even rejecting him.

He looked and confirmed that it was a treasure from the age of chaos. However, it wasn’t born from nature; it was handcrafted.

“You said that this item can predict things. Let’s do an experiment,” said Su Ping.

The Primordial Empyrean Master felt dazed. “How?”

Su Ping gave the bell back to him. Then, his expression changed as he released a surging killing intent.

The old fellow became petrified and his pores were shrinking. The universe in his body popped up behind his back under the stimulation.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

Exactly at that moment—the Fortune Bell rang three times in rapid succession.

The Primordial Empyrean Master narrowed his eyes, knowing that the danger predicted by the bell came from Su Ping.

However, Su Ping dispelled his killing intent and the bell quieted down.

"It's truly effective..." Su Ping mumbled.

The old man almost cursed aloud. The Fortune Bell only rang because Su Ping was truly going to kill him. If it didn't ring, maybe he would have truly died!

What a lunatic!

He secretly gritted his teeth. However, since he was weaker, there was nothing he could do.

"So, if you hadn't left, you would have encountered danger outside the green glass..." Su Ping frowned, while his eyes glittered.

Is it possible that some of the monsters the cyborgs mentioned were still lurking about, even though most of them had left?

His mood took a dive at the thought.

He lacked time to cultivate; however, it seemed that fate was against him. He would never cultivate in peace.

Su Ping heaved a sigh and took the Primordial Empyrean Master back to the Nine States with a heavy heart.

"He will stay with us for now. He won't cause any more trouble. Sorry for the inconvenience," said Su Ping as he apologized to the cyborg leaders.

The cyborg trio was much less angry, seeing that Su Ping was being sincere. Their only choice was to drop the matter.

Once they left, Su Ping returned the minimized Planet of Origin to the Primordial Empyrean Master. "This is the continent that the cyborgs have given us; you will live here for now. The territory has already been divided. There's no place for you; you can live with Chi Ying for now."

The old expert glanced at Chi Ying, knowing that Su Ping wanted Chi Ying to supervise him. He didn't refuse. He smiled bitterly and said, "I'm homeless. It's not bad to have a roof over my head. I'm not picky."

Su Ping nodded and glanced at Chi Ying, who understood the intention and nodded back at him.

After helping the Primordial Empyrean Master settle down, Su Ping spoke to his master telepathically. He planned to raise a few more universe dominators, so that there would be enough people supervising the newcomer while he was away.

As for the monsters outside the green glass, Su Ping intended to make the Primordial Emphyrean Master keep an eye on them. The guy's Fortune Bell had useful potential.

I simply want to cultivate in peace for 100,000 years. I hope that nothing happens... Su Ping prayed in his heart.

## Chapter 1478: Limit (1)

### Chapter 1478 Limit (1)

Su Ping wasn't in a hurry to resume cultivation after helping the Primordial Emphyrean Master settle down; he planned to raise a few more universe dominators.

He told his master about the idea. Very soon, all the Celestial cultivators gathered in the temple and drew lots again.

They were all hopeful and excited, as they had been feeling envious of Chi Ying's strength after his breakthrough. They used to be equal under Su Ping's command, but then they had to look up to him when he became a dominator.

The result was out. This time, Su Ping picked two: Xu Kong and Zi Ying were the lucky ones.

Both of them smiled in delight. While the rest could only congratulate them while feeling jealous, they were polite. Xu Kong would go first to uphold the lady's first rule.

Xu Kong bid everyone goodbye and went to Su Ping's store.

She was slightly nervous as she looked at the mysterious and yet charming store. She took a deep breath and stepped out of the deep space; it was as if she appeared out of nowhere.

She climbed the stairs and approached Tang Ruyan who stood by the door while others exclaimed.

"Hello, please inform Boss Su that I'm here." Xu Kong was very polite to the little girl. She knew that the girl was Su Ping's employee; her level was low but her status was extraordinary. Even the Ascendant cultivators would never dare offend her.

"That's all right. Just follow me." Tang Ruyan recognized that the visitor was a Celestial on relatively close terms with Su Ping. She had also fought against Ye Chen, Su Ping's enemy, along with Shen Huang earlier. So, she was quite courteous.

Xu Kong felt a mixture of slight surprise and delight by the treatment. She followed Tang Ruyan into the store and saw a busy scene. Su Ping was doing business behind the counter with the highly attractive Joanna.

“She’s here.”

Su Ping raised his head. He had noticed Xu Kong’s arrival from the very beginning. So, he completed a pet registration and handed the next customer over to Joanna.

He left the counter and waved at Xu Kong. “Come.”

Xu Kong nodded and quickly followed him.

Joanna glanced at them in silence. She was making quick notes.

“Well, excuse me, but my name is Cao Huowang, not Cao Xiaowang...” said the middle-aged Ascendant State cultivator prudently.

“You are now,” said Joanna coldly.

II

11

Inside the test room.

Su Ping led Xu Kong in and then closed the door. “You’re quite the lucky one.”

Xu Kong gave him an awkward smile, not knowing what to say.

“I have three unparalleled Dao Hearts here. Pick one.” Su Ping didn’t waste any time. He explained the three Dao Hearts in detail.

After pondering for a moment, Xu Kong picked the Harmony Dao Heart.

Once receiving confirmation, he started to impart the selected Dao Heart.

Time flew.

The Dao Heart transmission was completed a few hours later. Su Ping changed the test room into a desolate planet and created a tribulation environment for her.

Xu Kong had already learned this process from Chi Ying. It was not a secret, so she wasn’t too surprised, even though she was a bit stunned when she saw it happen for real.

The tribulation soon ended, and Xu Kong started to emit the aura of a universe dominator.

Su Ping asked her to stay there and practice until she was fully accustomed to her new power; after all, her mission was to supervise the Primordial Empyrean Master. She had to be familiar with her power in order not to be tricked by the old expert.

Su Ping summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon to spar with her.

Xu Kong was barely capable of resisting both two pets as they battled. Her potential was squeezed out thanks to her brushes with death, and she quickly gained control over her new power.

Xu Kong was indeed shocked. Her excitement after advancing was completely gone, as she finally understood why Su Ping could easily help them become universe dominators.

It had to be noted that none of the Celestials would dare claim they could help their disciples reach the Ascendant State, even with their cultivation realm.

It depended on luck whether or not they could raise a Heavenly Lord, or help a disciple rise to the Celestial State.

The only reason that Su Ping could raise universe dominators so easily was his highly superior level. By now he was already an unfathomable existence.

The level they could perceive could very well be just a deliberate disguise of his.

He's only lived a few hundred years. Is he really not a reincarnation? Xu Kong was curious about Su Ping's background; however, she didn't think he was the reincarnation of some ancient existence, as she recalled how respectful he was to Shen Huang.

Even his pets are incredibly strong. Shen Huang is right; he is indeed humanity's last hope. There won't be any human capable of surpassing him in the next million years... Xu Kong thought.

She left the test room, promising that she would fulfill the mission Su Ping had set for her.

However, she didn't like the Primordial Empyrean Master, at all.

After seeing her off, Su Ping received another Celestial expert and also gave him an unparalleled Dao Heart.

The guy picked the Desolation Dao Heart like Chi Ying did.

Once he raised two universe dominators in one go, he asked them to work with Chi Ying and supervise the Primordial Emyrean Master, as well as maintaining order in the Nine States. Humans would be safe while he was away, unless they encountered someone in the Undying State.

## Chapter 1479: Limit (2)

### Chapter 1479 Limit (2)

Even if he were there, he wouldn't be able to do anything to those higher beings.

He could instantly kill universe dominators, but he couldn't compare to experts in the Undying State. The gap between levels was enormous. That cultivation realm was legendary; it was impossible for him to defeat someone who would be incredibly stronger.

Su Ping summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon, and set about collecting more pieces of the Great Dao in cultivation sites.

The Nine States became more lively after the Primordial Emyrean Master arrived. Many Ascendants knew about the Planet of Origin and its betrayal. However, nobody dared to speak up because the Celestials and Su Ping had accepted the old fellow, even though they still despised the escapees from that planet in their hearts.

The people from the Planet of Origin knew their past actions were unforgivable. They were smart enough to stay put on their planet, rarely coming out.

As for the Primordial Emyrean Master, he regularly traveled around the green glass planet with the Fortune Bell, while accompanied by Xu Kong and Chi Ying.

The three cyborg leaders knew of the Fortune Bell and accepted the old man's actions.

Decades passed in the blink of an eye. Everybody got used to the Planet of Origin, and the second interracial friendly contest began.

This time, it was a contest of battle pets. The cyborgs who participated also had battle pets. Conversely, humans learned a lot of the cyborgs' secret techniques. Their combat abilities grew after combining with their own techniques.

"Damn it, why are humans still so strong?"

"It must be because they learned our battle techniques."

"Damn it, their pets are clearly stronger than ours. We don't have a good trainer."



“You think there are no good trainers in our clan? Isn’t Master Ruo Lan a great trainer?”

“Didn’t Master Ruo Lan learn from humans? I heard that his master is the human leader’s disciple, right?”

Humans achieved a crushing score. Humans showed no mercy this time, and the elites they picked overpowered the cyborgs.

Cyborgs were new in the contract techniques and they didn’t know how to make the best use of their pets yet. They were still in the emulation phase.

“Humph. The Planet of Origin’s training methods are the absolute best.”

Also from the human race, someone from the Planet of Origin went to participate. They scorned the cyborgs for what they said. When they escaped, they had taken the Federation’s central computer and database, as well as more than ten sages with them. All of it was the essential knowledge reservoir of all humankind; they could use them to reestablish the Federation anywhere!

Their return to prosperity would only depend on their reproductive speed.

The other Celestials demanded access to those secret techniques when they reunited with the people of the Planet of Origin, and the Primordial Empyrean Master had to obey. The three new universe dominators had imposed great pressure on him, making him even more wary of Su Ping.

Only one of the three cyborg leaders was here; the other two were in their respective temples. They felt at a loss, since they had to become battle pet warriors after learning the contract method; however, there weren’t many unusual beasts available. The strongest had been locked in harsh environments by them.

They had worked together and even requested Chi Ying’s help over the years to tame the beasts.

Once the first beast was tamed, it was quite easy to deal with the others.

Every new pet acquired would increase their combat abilities.

The three universe dominator beasts were split up amongst the three. Crowe only got one, but that was the strongest and toughest one.

However, it was far from their upper limit.

They could bond with ten beasts, at least, considering their level.

If they acquired the maximum pet amount possible, it would mean that they could fight eleven universe dominators on their own; that would be enough for them to conquer most of the universe.

Although the green glass world was huge, it wasn't infinite. Learning the contract method had only spurred their desire to go outside, beyond the green glass. Their momentum was curbed when they recalled the monsters lurking outside.

Luckily, training pets in Su Ping's store yielded astonishing results; some Ascendant pets could even resist a Celestial strike after the training

Celestial State pets could reach the peak of their level, too.

Such an astounding effect was enough for the store to always have customers waiting in line.

Even the three cyborg leaders had paid a visit to the store. Alas, their pets had already hit the upper limit and could no longer be trained.

"I heard that the human leader can help others awaken their Dao Hearts. I wonder if he can help three more people in our clan awaken them." The three cyborg leaders found out the inside information about Xu Kong and the others' promotion. After all, Su Ping didn't keep it a secret and they soon found out.

"There are countless amazing geniuses in our clan, but many of them are stuck at that level. Our clan will become even stronger if they awaken their Dao Hearts."

"But we're just allies anyway; we're foreigners to them. I wonder if he's willing, and how much we have to pay him for it!"

The cyborg trio intended to ask Su Ping to help their prized disciples awaken their Dao Hearts. They were ready to pay a high price, as long as he was willing to accommodate.

At the same time

Su Ping was hunting in a dark cultivation site.

The world was pitch black, not a single ray of light existed. The local creatures either had shocking hearing or smelling abilities, or were able to see in the dark. Even the weakest worm could easily kill an adult.

The place was extremely dangerous. Many terrifying assassin-type creatures roamed the land.

There were traps everywhere. Extra care was needed.

Su Ping trained a few batches of good pets there, all with a certain assassin trait. Their stealth abilities were significantly improved and their senses became keener.

Su Ping quickly traveled that world with the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets tagging along. The dark world was extremely clear in Su Ping's eyes; the environment didn't affect him much after experiencing the Great Dao.

Besides the darkness, there was a special substance that would suppress your senses. Even the Ascendant State creatures would have their senses impaired; they eventually developed other organs to perceive their surroundings.

Roar!

A beast appeared out of nowhere and opened its bloody maw in the darkness down below.

Still, Su Ping seemed to have seen it coming. He dodged the smelly mouth and leaped to the sky.

He raised a finger, and a spot of light that felt like the sun was gathered on his fingertip.

"Light is the most cruel thing in this world of darkness..." With a smile on his face, Su Ping threw the tiny condensed sun into the beast's mouth.

The next moment, thousands of scorching rays burst out of the beast's mouth and illuminated the dark world.

The creatures within a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers were instantly blinded by the light. They were all shrinking and hiding; some plants were also closing their scary trunks and branches.

Such powerful light caused them to quickly wither, twist and die.

The local creatures would rather live in the dark than die in the light.

Su Ping saw the distorted figures. However, he had already seen them through the Original Dao World and he wasn't surprised at all by their moves. He didn't feel regretful either; he was a natural disaster in those creature's lives. Casualties were seen as normal and inevitable during natural disasters.

"It's better to die than to live in boredom."

Su Ping waved a hand and pulled the universe behind a beast's back. His hand turned red as he squeezed the universe and broke it. Countless Great Dao began to spread out.

However, all of them were caught and he absorbed them before they could get away.

Those Dao shards quickly flowed into the Dao of Fire inside his universe like some sort of shadow.

“Have I reached the limit...?”

Some of the pieces were absorbed and the others were left out. Su Ping knew that he had reached the limit, as he recently discovered that his Fire Dao’s absorption was becoming slower.

## **Chapter 1480: Unification and Dao Heart (1)**

Chapter 1480 Unification and Dao Heart (1)

As the Dao of Fire reached the limit, Su Ping sensed that his entire universe seemed to be changing. It seemed to be collapsing inwardly from the edge.

The center of that phenomenon was the Dao of Fire.

The power of his entire universe was moving toward the Dao of Fire in an uncontrollable manner.

He took a deep breath, letting the process take its course. Everything was happening exactly as planned. He quickly divided his universe into different layers, using the first layer to accommodate the Dao of Fire.

Once the universe was divided, the first universal layer was thinner, and the Dao of Fire was absorbing at a much faster rate.

Very soon, the universe section attached to the Fire Dao turned into a transparent burning membrane. At first glance, it was like a star, and the universe was like the atmosphere.

The Fire Dao kept absorbing, the universe grew closer, until it gradually melted into the Dao of Fire.

The scorching light of the Fire Dao was gradually condensed. There were some sort of drastic changes that caused terrifying energy waves.

Su Ping gazed at the Fire Dao, feeling that his power was being drained in a frenzy; he was almost sucked dry. He had to summon the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon to borrow their power and send it to the Fire Dao.

More and more pets merged with him and lent him their power. In the end, he even summoned the Void Bug and merged with it too. After invoking half of its power, the Fire Dao restlessness subsided, gradually calming down.

In a trance, Su Ping felt that the Dao of Fire seemed to be alive, growing and awakening!

His body was like a womb giving birth to a terrifying baby.

The Great Dao can be trained. The Great Dao is alive... Su Ping's eyes glittered. He held back his panic and uneasiness and waited patiently. He also caressed it with his energy.

Elsewhere, outside—the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets were recovering and protecting Su Ping.

He was indeed able to resurrect, but disturbances had to be avoided at all costs while he went through that critical moment.

Time moved on.

Some wandering beasts would occasionally make an appearance, but they fled as the pets scared them off.

Su Ping's consciousness was completely focused on the changes of his Fire Dao. It was a beautiful and splendid picture; a rarely seen, magnificent painting drawn by the entire universe.

The Dao of Fire was emitting the aura of a universe. Everything was exactly as Su Ping had foreseen. It truly worked!

The membrane of the universe that had been absorbed earlier was already melded with the Fire Dao. It looked like a thin skin covering the Dao's surface. It was the shape of the universe.

The Fire Dao was evolving miraculously, gradually concealing its power and fusing into the universe.

The Dao of Fire was the universe, and the universe was the Dao of Fire.

The Great Dao stored within was unified; there were no impurities.

Any other Great Dao would be absorbed by the Fire Dao, or pushed out.

In simpler terms, the Dao of Fire had evolved and turned into a universe.

Daos couldn't be destroyed. The Fire Dao universe would be reestablished instantly, no matter how many times it was shattered. The "shattering" couldn't even cause any real damage. It was just like punching water, which wouldn't produce any damage, even though ripples would be produced. The "destruction" appearance was just one of the universes' many forms.

Su Ping was no longer able to feel the exuberant and scorching aura as the Fire Dao gradually perished in the universe. However, he discovered that the universe was already deep and scary, like a calm abyss, able to unleash ten times more power than before.

The Fire Dao universe had taken shape.

Su Ping's heart was pounding; he couldn't suppress his excitement, knowing he had finally found a different way. If he continued on this path, he would go further and become much stronger than anyone!

Su Ping tried to control his new universe, instantly feeling he was wielding an unimaginable power, like a mortal holding a hammer heavy enough to shatter the earth. It would obliterate everything around him if he swung it.

The undying Fire Dao universe...

Su Ping took a deep breath and suddenly detonated the power in his universe; a dazzling light burst out with an explosion. The horrifying blast shocked the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon; they looked at Su Ping and raised their shields.

Su Ping controlled the explosive power and circumvented them, unleashing its force on the surroundings.

The forest was instantly razed to the ground; the soil was also affected.

The attack was akin to a nuclear bomb weighing billions of tons exploding; everything within a radius of hundreds of thousands of kilometers was wiped out. All that remained was a deep crater.

None of the creatures within that range survived. There were Dao Heart beasts further away, shocked by the unexpected power, then trying their best to run. Those that failed to react in time were killed on the spot.

"Condense!"

Su Ping could still feel the Fire Dao power around him. With a thought, the blasted universe was instantly reorganized. It was as scorching as before, as if the explosion never happened.

“Is this... the power of Ancestral Gods?” Su Ping mumbled in shock.

It wasn't until he truly stepped into the level that he realized how powerful Ancestral Gods were!

## Astral Pet Store (WN) –

### Chapter 1481 - 1489

#### Chapter 1481: Unification and Dao Heart (2)

Chapter 1481 Unification and Dao Heart (2)

No wonder he was unable to resist against Ancestral Gods, even though he could easily kill Dao Heart enemies. Ancestral Gods could detonate their universes whenever they wished to unleash maximum power, and such outbursts didn't consume a thing!

It was terrifying!

Dao Heart cultivators exploding their universes would mean that they would die or end up crippled, while it was no different from drinking water to Ancestral Gods.

"The universe with the unified Great Dao is immortal despite countless explosions. That is the method of the Ancestral Gods..."

Su Ping took a deep breath. He then thought of the Golden Crow ancestor and the Heavens, and could only heave a sigh.

Even though Ancestral Gods were terrifying, the Golden Crow ancestor was still far stronger in comparison.

As we walk on the cultivation path, we have to condense a sky, cultivate a small world, build a small universe, and make it undying. But that's still not the destination...

Where exactly is the destination?

Why is the way to the final destination destroyed? His confusion grew along with his strength. He actually felt his awe for the Heavens increase.

The stronger he was, the clearer he noticed the gap between them.

Su Ping shook his head. Whatever the future would bring, he had no choice but to keep getting stronger and surpassing his limits.

If the ending of all cultivation was tragic, then he would surpass the ending!

Su Ping tried to control the Fire Dao universe and perform other secret techniques. He found that it was very easy for him to use the techniques that were previously tiresome.



He could reverse time and space with just one thought.

He could even see what would happen in the next hundred years through the burning Dao of Fire. He was almost like a prophet.

If he went all out, he could even see what would happen in the next ten thousand years.

In ten thousand years, there would only be a deep crater in that place. Only some ferocious birds would fly by prudently.

It really isn't easy to scheme against an Ancestral God. Su Ping heaved a sigh. He was much more powerful than the legendary existences known by mortals.

He could see and go to the past or the future, and easily create lives, or reshape the universe with a thought.

All the Great Dao was just food for him.

Unfortunately, not even Ancestral Gods survived the ancient turmoil and the hunting of the Heavens...

He shook his head, then collected his Fire Dao Universe. Outside this new universe—his universe of chaos circled around it like a satellite.

Su Ping didn't stop. He planned to continue building up a second Great Dao and with it a second universe.

Before that, he transmitted images related to the birth of his new universe to the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets. The amazing sequence would be of great help for their cultivation.

se

“Little guy, when are you going to condense your Dao Heart?”

Su Ping touched the Lightning Rat resting on his leg. The Lightning Rat was already the size of a wild cat in its normal form. Its fur was deep purple and soft, and was able to turn into spikes that could pierce through alloys at any moment.

With ears dangling down, the Lightning Rat looked up at Su Ping and squeaked, feeling wronged.

Having spent a long time with them, Su Ping had already gotten used to their language. He could understand his pets even if they couldn't express themselves in the human language.

“There are too many things you want to do. It’s impossible to bring the dead back to life, unless we can approach the ultimate level...” Su Ping touched the Lightning Rat’s head and said, “If you want to see them, there is only one way, which is to cultivate to the strongest level!”

Purple light glittered in the Lightning Rat’s eyes when it heard the word “strongest.” It seemed to be deep in thought. Moments later, an intense electric light surfaced on its body, followed by a deep purple fog; there were terrifying electric currents within.

Slightly dazed, Su Ping looked at the Lightning Rat, only to discover that its eyes were extremely clear.

“Have you found your Dao Heart?”

He felt slightly surprised and relieved at the same time. The Lightning Rat had already come across many Dao Hearts, but none were what it truly wanted. However, based on the reaction just then, it had found its ultimate goal.

“Whatever your Dao Heart is, just believe in it and you will reach the real destination someday...” Su Ping mumbled.

The Lightning Rat soared from his hand to the sky, attracting thunderclouds.

The bloody thunderclouds roiled with an ancient pressure. It seemed that an old giant was sitting in the clouds, looking down at the mortal world.

The pet rodent suddenly raised its head, roaring at the lightning as if sensing something

The pet’s shrieks were as deafening as the roars of a dragon, traveling a hundred thousand kilometers. There was actually a hole in the bloody thunderclouds.

The Lightning Rat revealed its true form. Shaking its hairs, it instantly turned into a beast thousands of meters tall. Even though it preserved the form of a rat, it was so intimidating that even the legendary creatures would be eclipsed.

It roared and voluntarily charged at the Heavenly Tribulation.

As lightning surged, the bloody thunderclouds became rampant and dark. It was the most terrifying type of tribulation.

Su Ping slightly raised his eyebrows. Many clans in the Archean Divinity would be covetous at the sight. Who would ever think that a pet could cause such a terrifying Heavenly Tribulation?

Looks like this little guy's Dao Heart isn't simple. Su Ping smiled and felt happy for the Lightning Rat. However, he also knew that the more powerful the Dao Heart was, the more difficult the road it would be in the future.

However, the experts always walked on thorns, and only the weaklings would tread on smooth roads.

Boom!

Roars and rumbles echoed in the depths of the thunderclouds. The Lightning Rat seemed to be fighting against the sky.

It was roaring so furiously, as if competing over something.

Maybe it was trying to get back the time it had lost.

Or maybe a certain someone who had already died.

The tribulation lasted for a long time, until the roars grew to a frenzy and the black clouds faded away. Only the enormous Lightning Rat remained in the void with blackened fur.

It roared at the ebbing Heavenly Tribulation and the recovering dark night, but there was no response.

It hovered there for a while, and eventually shrank to its normal form and returned to where Su Ping was. It nestled in his arms with deep fatigue in its eyes.

Su Ping hugged the creature for a while. He simply moved on in silence.

His cultivation efforts continued.

Everything was in order on the green glass planet. Aside from minor conflicts between both clans, most people liked each other and lived in peace.

The relation between the two clans improved over time. The three cyborg leaders could only become less vigilant when dealing with humans, having realized it was impossible to resist if their allies were truly up to something.

It was better to make friends with them and strengthen their alliance.

Shen Huang and the other Celestials noticed the change in the cyborgs' attitude and found that many things became smoother. They somehow felt at home in the Nine States.

Su Ping returned to his store and asked, "System, you said that you would tell me all the secrets if I became an Ancestral God. Does it still count?"

"In any case, you can upgrade the store to level 9 when you become an Ancestral God. Of course, my word counts," said the system.

Su Ping nodded. Upgrading the store was no longer difficult for him; he could easily create dozens of clones and have them train pets in cultivation sites. It was much more effective.

He could also accelerate time. Even if he accelerated time a thousand fold, it wouldn't affect his cultivation, nor his meditation. That way he could maintain the store's service output at the maximum.

This would allow him to fulfill the requirements to upgrade the store in a year or two.

"All right, I'm going to try right now."

Su Ping went to the cultivation sites again. This time, he picked the Archean Divinity he was familiar with.

He was still a God King at the moment; he was planning to become an Ancestral God straight away.

## **Chapter 1482: Annihilation With One Sword Attack (1)**

Chapter 1482 Annihilation With One Sword Attack (1)

Once back in the Archean Divinity, Su Ping found the divine power in the air familiar. It had been a hundred years since his last visit. It was a mere blink for the other Celestials, but it was long enough for him to reminisce.

The divine power he pursued in the past was like thin water in Su Ping's eyes. When compared with the aura of chaos, divine power was like exploited refugees that had nothing but bones left.

He spread his consciousness and entered the Original Dao World, soon realizing where he was. He wasn't planning on returning to the Heaven Path Institute. Going through a tribulation was crucial for any God King, but it didn't give him any pressure.

He was just a God King at the moment, but his current power was enough to shatter the test, even if he faced the most terrifying black tribulation.

His main concern was the Ancestral God tribulation.

He was planning to go through the process alone in a desolate area.

Whoosh!

He disappeared soon after and arrived at the border of a mid-ranked clan's territory. The place was extremely desolate; even the strongest creature was merely in the Celestial State.

Su Ping released his aura and scared off all the beasts.

Once the area within hundreds of thousands of kilometers was cleared, he summoned all his pets, hoping that his Ancestral God tribulation could inspire them.

"Come on."

Su Ping released his aura.

The aura had to be on full display while passing the tribulation. Some people had to seek the protection of experts to hide from enemies. Most people were protected by their seniors and their enemies wouldn't have a chance.

Su Ping thought of the Rain Clan, but didn't consider it a big deal. If they truly pestered him, he would have them pay a bloody price. Even if the Rain Ancestor showed up in person, he wouldn't get anything good; after all, he was basically an immortal when he entered the cultivation sites.

Certain changes happened quietly in the world as he revealed his aura.

The originally thin air began to solidify. Then, something seemed to be injected into it, making it as sticky and heavy as seawater; even the wind became oppressive and violent.

The next moment, light gradually went away and the world became dark.

Thick clouds appeared and gathered from all over, filling up the sky. They were like a spider's web about to catch prey.

Su Ping raised his head and stared in silence.

The breeze rustled his hair. His eyebrows were like sharp blades and his eyes were like stars. There was calmness and a hint of loneliness on his face.

The thunderclouds gradually covered the skies above Su Ping. Thunder rumbled and the world became grim.

The roaring lightning seemed to be yelling at him.

Su Ping watched the thunderclouds change. They soon turned red, and a deep dark followed. All the lightning bolts inside were black.

Boom!

The first lightning strike arrived without any warning

However, Su Ping didn't move in the slightest; he didn't even bother to bat an eye. The lightning passed through his body as if he were a phantom, not even moving his hair.

"If this is your best... might as well get lost!"

Su Ping spoke softly, as if talking to himself. However, his last two words were so loud that the thunderclouds shook, as if unable to handle it.

The ocean of heavy clouds seemed to be dissipating, but they recovered and surged again moments after.

However, the buildup time was much longer.

At the same time-inconspicuous auras appeared in the void nearby.

"It truly is him. Damn it, he's still alive!"

"That beast's son, he's causing trouble again. Unforgivable!"

"Damn it, the other clans haven't realized it yet. We should work together and kill him!"

"He's actually going through a tribulation? Is it a God Emperor's tribulation? He killed so many God Emperors while still not being one himself..."

Angry voices whispered, while many eyes were staring at Su Ping with hate. They hoped that he would be completely destroyed by the terrifying black tribulation.

That kind of tribulation was very dangerous, even for renowned geniuses. Too many of them had been killed in the process.

Someone said that if all the geniuses killed by the black tribulation were brought back to life, there would be fifty percent more top experts in the world.

It wasn't a lie. After all, the geniuses who could invoke a black tribulation were the very best of their generation. Some were unsurpassable, even in the span of a million years.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Many figures stepped out. They were the elders from the Heaven Path Institute.

Yan Qing had sensed Su Ping's aura and informed the other elders as soon as possible to go there. They knew that the Rain Clan would also detect Su Ping's aura. He would be in danger if they shamelessly hunted him like in the past, and if the Rain Ancestor participated.

Su Ping had survived back then, but he couldn't be as lucky every time.

"It's true that all geniuses are young."

An old man stroked his white beard with a smile and delight in his eyes. Elder Yan Qing had told him a lot about Su Ping, but he had never seen him in person. The Rain Clan had erased the battle from history and nobody could reverse time to watch it. Nobody could see their humiliating moments, ever.

## Chapter 1483: Annihilation With One Sword Attack (2)

Chapter 1483 Annihilation With One Sword Attack (2)

Now that the elder saw Su Ping in the flesh, he instantly detected the immeasurable power in the young man's body.

Such power far exceeded that of normal emperors. Even he felt inferior. "Is he really going to become a God Emperor..."

A slim figure stepped up. It was none other than Qian Hong, the oldest Dao Child of the Heaven Path Institute.

Bright eyed and endowed with an attractive figure, she was like a beautiful and intoxicating flower blooming in the mortal world.

She had already found many Dao Hearts, but none was satisfactory.

She had an epiphany after learning that Su Ping killed the emperors of the Rain Clan, whose level was higher than his. She found her Dao Heart and broke through.

She was no longer a Dao Child, but a real God Empress. She became an honorary elder, and was revered even more than her normal peers.

Her combat ability was greater than many elders, too. Only a couple of them were more powerful, Elder Yan Qing among them.

Qiaoan Hong's eyes flashed with fighting will upon seeing that Su Ping was becoming a God Emperor too. She was too proud to challenge him now that she was a God Empress. Although Su Ping deserved her attention since he had killed many emperors,

it would be humiliating if she lost to him, and unsatisfying even if she won. After all, her level was higher and beating him would only be seen as the natural outcome.

Even if I'm no match for you, I'd like to know the difference in our strengths... Qian Hong thought. Su Ping's achievements were too shocking. She didn't think she could defeat him after he advanced, but she was eager to find out how huge the gap between them would be.

"He's finally becoming an emperor, too..."

Several figures stepped out from the void. They looked quite old and were extremely low-profile, compared to the others around them. Their auras were barely noticeable.

They were the human emperors.

It was Emperor Xin who received Su Ping in the past, and many other emperors.

They were the pillars protecting humankind in that world.

Su Ping had shocked the entire godly world by slaying the Rain Clan's emperors. Although the Rain Clan tried to keep it a secret, the event was too grand; even the Ancestral Gods had taken action. All the other high-ranked clans were aware of the matter.

The human clan didn't see it coming, and were awfully concerned about Su Ping's wellbeing.

After all, Su Ping was too talented. Back then, Emperor Xin gave him the Ember Palace he treasured the most, and invested whatever top materials humankind had gathered, hoping that Su Ping would become a new pillar of humanity someday.

Only a thousand years had passed, and Su Ping was already on that level.

Every emperor was a bigshot in the eyes of high-ranked clans, which made Su Ping an even greater treasure for humans. "Damned Heaven Path Institute, damned humans!"

The auras hiding in the dark all gritted their teeth in secret after noticing the new arrivals.

"Ask the Ancestral God to catch them once and for all. That ferocious beast might not be here. The Ancestral God can go and investigate in person." Someone was already determined to kill.

Very soon, more and more figures appeared in the void.



Besides the Heaven Path Institute and the human clan members, the other high-ranked clans also went there to watch.

Su Ping was no longer a nobody. He had become famous in all clans, ever since he killed the emperors in the Rain Clan.

Some remote and weak clans even believed the rumors about him, blowing his abilities out of proportion.

“I had already felt that he was extraordinary when we escorted him out of the Rain Clan territory!”

“That’s right. Our actions were only meant to annoy the Rain Clan. I didn’t expect that we could make friends with humans.”

“Is he the one who killed the emperors from the Rain Clan? He’s so calm after invoking a black tribulation. Impressive!”

“Some Ancestral God assessed that he’s the best genius in the past hundred thousand years. He ranks first on the Chaos List in a hundred thousand year span. I wonder if it’s true.”

“It can’t be. How hard is it to make it to the top of the Chaos List? Don’t even mention staying up there for a hundred thousand years. An Ancestral God could be born in that period of time. Is he more talented than an Ancestral God?”

“True that. Besides, I think Ancestral Gods have better things to do than gauging the strength of a junior.”

“You’re right. I heard that Ancestral Gods only see eye to eye with their peers. The rest are like ants to them.”

The number of onlookers increased with time, filling the place with powerful auras. The black thunderclouds in the sky became more violent, too.

Su Ping noticed the figures around him. He didn’t expect to attract so much attention, even though he had picked a remote place. His eyebrows scrunched a bit. He saw the elders from the Institute and the human emperors, and knew they were there for his safety.

In the crowd, there was a female shouting. “Young man, keep it up! I think highly of you!”

Su Ping looked at her, only to discover that she was a fair-skinned goddess with purple eyes and purple hair. He had learned the specifics of high-ranked clans thanks to some searching in the Heaven Path Institute’s library... All to dispose of them completely if he

was forced to kill them someday. Purple Pole Clan. They're hardliners who worship the strong. Su Ping then looked elsewhere.

The girl's shouts made the other gods chuckle. They bore no grudges against the human, and were only there to witness the evolution of a genius.

Su Ping frowned at the number of observers around him. He didn't like being stared at, not because it made him nervous; he preferred a peaceful environment.

Clouds were still surging and the thunder were rumbling, but not a single lightning had struck.

He felt like the lightning had been brewing for almost ten minutes.

"If you're not coming, I'm going to you," said Su Ping.

His words were sent to the depths of the Heavenly Tribulation along with his anger.

The thunder was still rumbling, seemingly oblivious to Su Ping's taunt.

The latter no longer bothered talking. He simply punched the thunderclouds.

After a boom, his fist illuminated the entire world like a rainbow. A hole in the thunderclouds was made the next moment.

Violent lightning was coming out through the hole. It was like a punctured ocean and the water was flowing out.

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. This black tribulation was much more powerful than the Lightning Rat's. So, it seemed to be preparing an ultimate strike!

This thing is truly conscious... Su Ping's eyes were cold. There was no Heavenly Tribulation that would only strike twice. He blocked the first one easily, but the second one was ten thousand times more powerful. That was definitely cheating!

Fortunately, he could cheat, too; even if he was unable to resist, he could still resurrect.

However, Su Ping wasn't planning to use that option. Coldness flashed in his eyes and he closed his fingers, gathering a brilliant sword aura, which seemed to be illuminating every corner within a radius of hundreds of thousands of kilometers.

The next moment, the sword aura rose against the sky.

Everything happened in a flash. The lightning about to fall like a torrent was frozen, and then cut in half. The thunderclouds fell apart like a painting, exploding with the art of cutting. The explosion energy collapsed after spreading for only dozens of meters.

After that, all the thunderclouds were consumed, even those from up above.

There was a sun in the dark sky within a few seconds. It was sunny again.

He cleared the sky with one sword attack!

Everybody was shocked into speechlessness by that crazy move, which happened too fast for them to react. They only felt terrified due to the lightning, but the next moment—the rising fear was gone and the skies were clear again.

## Chapter 1484: Ancestral Gods' Battle (1)

Chapter 1484 Ancestral Gods' Battle (1)

“The Heavenly Tribulation... was destroyed?”

Everybody was dumbfounded after realizing what happened.

That was the black tribulation for God Emperors!

It was the most horrifying type of tribulation in history!

All those able to invoke such a test were geniuses, and few of them had survived it. However, not only did Su Ping pass it, he even destroyed the black tribulation!

“Is this what a monster who killed emperors above his level can do?”

“Horrifying!”

“The Rain Clan has truly offended the wrong guy. Such an emperor is one of a kind. I don't think becoming an Ancestral God is impossible for him. As far as I know, none of the Ancestral Gods were as good as him when they were young...”

The guy lowered his voice after mentioning the higher gods. After all, discussing the Ancestral Gods was a major offense.

In the crowd-Qian Hong looked at the scene and felt stunned. “He destroyed the black tribulation...”

There was fighting will in her eyes moments before, but now only bitterness remained. They never had the chance to fight, but she wasn't confident of slashing a black tribulation. Even the lingering effect of its power was shocking to her.

If Su Ping were to attack her the same way, she didn't think she could resist.

I can't even resist one attack of his... She inwardly heaved a sigh, somewhat disappointed and somewhat relieved.

It wouldn't do for her to compare herself with such a monster. It would be too embarrassing.

"He's never been to the Ancestral God's Mysterious Realm, and yet..."

"What an amazing genius!"

"Elder Yan Qing said earlier that he would be the fourth Ancestral God of our institute. I didn't believe her back then. But right now, I can only say that her eyes were keen!"

The elders of the Heaven Path Institute were all excited.

Those who had personally seen the boy kill emperors in the Rain Clan were much calmer. Those who only heard about it were thrilled.

"Damn it!"

The Rain Clan emperors hiding in the dark wore awful expressions. Su Ping's toughness refreshed their understanding. Did he grow recently, or did he not try his best last time?

While looking at the dissipating clouds, Su Ping raised his eyebrows a bit, not expecting them to be so worthless. He shook his head and dismissed them, unwilling to waste his time. He continued releasing more auras, as he was going to challenge the Ancestral God's Heavenly Tribulation.

I hope those people know what's best for them!

Su Ping glanced at the void where the Rain Clan emperors were hiding, showing troubled and solemn expressions. They thought they were good at hiding; however, Su Ping was deeply connected to the world of gods, all thanks to his undying universe. He could see anything, unless it was something beyond that godly universe, or if the ones observed had undying universes too.

As Su Ping's auras became more and more powerful, everybody realized that something was off; they readily began to observe him with shock and suspicion.

After surviving a tribulation, the power imposed on one's body would be released, causing a rapid improvement.

However, Su Ping's auras weren't just improving rapidly; he was almost suppressing everybody around him. He wasn't targeting anyone in particular, yet all of them perceived a fatal threat.

“Not long ago he killed God Emperors while merely being a God King. He can probably kill them in an instant, now that he’s a God Emperor himself...”

“Good lord. He’s invincible at his level right after his breakthrough!”

“Only Ancestral Gods can tackle him, not even the arrogant guys from the seven major clans can face him...”

“Damn it, do you think he’ll notice us?”

The hidden emperors of the Rain Clan began to worry. None would survive if Su Ping were to attack.

The fear they felt when the young man attacked and killed so many emperors haunted them again.

Right when Su Ping kept releasing his auras

-the world trembled and a brilliant arrow was shot from the distance, passing through layers of space. It was more like a raindrop falling from a willow leaf than a real arrow. Disregarding time and space, it reached the target the moment everybody sensed it!

Aggressive!

The elders from the Heaven Path Institute were stunned for a moment, then realized what was going on.

“The Rain Clan!”

The white-robed elder was the first to react. He suddenly widened his eyes and let out a furious roar while trying to prevent a tragedy and save the promising young man. However, his strength was suppressed the moment it was released.

He was shackled by an invisible membrane, and was completely unable to break free. “This has nothing to do with the Heaven Path Institute. It’s personal; it’s best if you stay out of it,” said an extremely indifferent voice directly into the elder’s head. It belonged to the Rain Ancestor.

The elder widened his eyes in fury, not expecting the Rain Ancestor himself would take action, sending to kill Su Ping with a sneak attack!

At the same time—the brilliant raindrop was right by Su Ping’s eyes.

Time seemed to freeze just then. Aside from the elders from the Heaven Path Institute, other experts who went there just to watch had eyes as wide as saucers due to disbelief.

However, everyone's pupils were illuminated by dazzling flames, which seemed ready to burn everything in the world. Next to the flames, Su Ping was the only one standing in midair, hands behind his back in a carefree manner, as if it were just an illusion.

Everybody was dazed.

The next moment, a horrifying aura arrived from the void and dragged them all back to reality.

## Chapter 1485: Ancestral Gods' Battle (2)

### Chapter 1485 Ancestral Gods' Battle (2)

The aura belonged to an elegant young man clad in a green robe, his face alluringly beautiful. He carried the dominance of a man in power, along with an ancient aura of solitude. He was frowning, with coldness in his eyes.

"A-Ancestral God!"

"It's the Rain Ancestor..."

Everybody was wide-eyed in shock. Their pupils shrank, and they trembled uncontrollably, as if fearing they would somehow offend his honorable existence by their smell alone.

The people of the Heaven Path Institute looked awful, not expecting the Rain Clan to be so petty. That was essentially a war declaration against them.

The clans that were hostile against the Rain Clan heaved sighs. At first they thought that the Rain Clan had one more enemy while they acquired an ally, but it would be for long.

"Ancestor!"

The emperors in hiding, including Lin Tianzhan, jumped out and paid their respects in delight. Their ancestor wouldn't have gone there if the ferocious dragon was present. That was the best moment to kill Su Ping.

While ignoring his underlings, the Rain Clan Ancestor only stared at Su Ping coldly and indifferently. "Looks like that beast gave you a lot of power."

"You can only cultivate power; no one can give it to you," Su Ping said coldly, "Last time I warned you not to mess with me. Our grudges had been already cleared, and I'm not

planning to retaliate anymore. However, you just keep making trouble for me. Do you really want your clan to be wiped out?"

All the onlookers gawked at Su Ping in shock.

He told an Ancestral God that he was going to annihilate his clan?

He's even more arrogant than in the rumors!

Although they had to admit that Su Ping had the capital to be arrogant, he was facing an Ancestral God!

Anyone would have to bow in the presence of an Ancestral God!

No matter how extraordinary a genius was, becoming an Ancestral God was the highest achievement.

"Humph!"

The Rain Ancestor's eyes were cold. No longer wasting time talking, he launched another attack. His power surged like a green rainbow, with the phantom of an ancient tree behind him. The tree seemed to be rising through the clouds, in remembrance of the world tree from the age of chaos.

It was said that there were eight world trees that held up the skies.

Lin Tianzhan and the other emperors looked at their ancestor in shock. Undoubtedly, their forefather was serious. Is it in answer to Su Ping's provocation?

The others also realized that the Rain Ancestor wasn't going to casually erase Su Ping from existence; he was using his real strength. Even his bloodline power was manifesting, which was proof of how formidable the strike would be.

The elder roared suddenly, "Rain Ancestor, do you really want to become the Heaven Path Institute's enemy?"

The Rain Ancestor didn't stop. If Su Ping wasn't dealt with, there would be four Ancestral Gods in the Heaven Path Institute, making it harder for the Rain Clan to resist.

As for their three Ancestral Gods, one of them was pursuing the greater Dao; another was wounded a million years in the past, and had ever since cultivated in seclusion. As to the third and youngest, he wasn't scared of them. The Rain Clan could face those three. However, the case would be different if Su Ping became an Ancestral God, too.

The guy had once killed emperors whose levels were higher than his, and would be tricky to deal with if he became the fourth Ancestral God.

“How stupid!”

Su Ping’s eyes grew even colder as he saw the attack. He suddenly countered, and the scorching Fire Dao universe appeared behind his back; it turned into a brilliant golden bird, which was the legendary Golden Crow.

He was already able to activate all the power in the Golden Crow bloodline and transform into a real Golden Crow, which was just one of his forms when he switched bloodlines.

Su Ping spat out flames like a ferocious bird that would burn the world. The Rain Ancestor was surrounded.

The seemingly young expert lost his cool the moment he noticed Su Ping’s Fire Dao universe. He couldn’t help but shout, losing his Ancestral God composure for a moment, “This is impossible!”

He had already felt that something was wrong when Su Ping resisted his strike. He believed it was an infused power from the ferocious beast, never expecting that it came from Su Ping’s undying universe!

The brat is already an Ancestral God!

He had learned everything there was to know about Su Ping through his sources, ever since their last failure. He analyzed thoroughly and realized that it was merely a young man with an extraordinary growth speed.

However, he then realized how terrifying that growth speed was!

Even Wen Tian—the most gifted Ancestral God of the Heaven Path Institute—was beneath Su Ping’s talent!

Bang!

The scorching flames were swept out, colliding with the green rain. The two terrifying powers began to tear the world of gods apart; even the aftershocks had forced the nearby emperors to flee.

In the blink of an eye, the territory within millions of kilometers was reduced to smithereens. All the beings in that area died in the wake of their attacks.

Without a doubt it was a veritable fight between Ancestral Gods, which could turn the entire world upside down!



That was the main reason why Ancestral Gods would be reluctant to fight, as casualties would soar if they intervened. In particular, the battlefield would be completely destroyed.

While in the midst of an energy storm-Su Ping and the Rain Ancestor marched to the void beyond the world of gods.

Su Ping thought of the Heavens and was more or less vigilant. He could leave that world at any moment, but he didn't want to draw the Heavens' attention.

The Rain Ancestor, on the other hand, stared at Su Ping with a contorted expression; no one knew what he was thinking.

A few attacks had helped him confirm that Su Ping had an actual undying universe. This would basically make it impossible to kill Su Ping on his own.

It was really difficult for an Ancestral God to kill a peer.

Only if several Ancestral Gods took action would this be possible, wearing the victim to death.

The Rain Ancestor would end up exhausted before he could make the kill, even if Su Ping stood still and allowed the strikes to land. The exception would be for a far stronger Ancestor to act, like the Chaos Perception Dragon.

That was the reason why the Four Ferocious Beasts were so infamous.

They could eat Ancestral Gods!

"Do you regret it?"

Su Ping looked at the Rain Ancestor coldly.

The latter took a deep breath. "How do you want to end this?"

Both of them were top experts. They had already weighed the pros and cons, and their speech was very concise.

"Half of your territory," said Su Ping coldly, "Or your clan will be destroyed!"

The Rain Ancestor said gloomily, "You have to protect humans, too. I will destroy them if you destroy my clan, so we're the same. After you transcend the tribulation and become a real Ancestral God, you must follow the rules and not wantonly invade other clans!"

“In other words, you don’t want to pay for anything?” Su Ping looked at him with disdainful eyes. “You made up those rules for the Ancestral Gods to follow, so you can abide by them. So far, I’ve only walked as a mere mortal, and I’ve only followed the rules of one

place.”

The Rain Ancestor frowned. He didn’t ask Su Ping what that place was, as he wasn’t curious about it and was too lazy to ask. He only said in a cold voice, “No matter what you say, you should know the consequences when you violate the rules. Since you’re practically an Ancestral God, let’s wipe the slate clean. The Rain Clan won’t trouble you again, and you should do the same.”

“Wipe the slate clean?” Su Ping smiled. “Only I get to say that. You attacked me first, and now you talk of peace after realizing that you can’t beat me? It just so happens that I need a new territory for humankind. The Rain Clan will offer half of its territory, or it’ll be useless, even if you beg for mercy when I raze the Rain Clan to the ground!”

“Ha. Come and try then.” The Rain Ancestor sneered. Although wary of Su Ping’s potential

—and knowing that Su Ping would probably be a troublemaker even after becoming an Ancestral God—rules were rules. Su Ping couldn’t violate them. Calling his ferocious beast backer would violate a taboo and all the gods would gather to kill the boy.

He would love to see that happen.

Bang!

Right when the Rain Ancestor turned around to flee—Su Ping condensed a sword and slashed furiously.

The dazzling sword aura reached the target in the blink of an eye.

The Rain Ancestor turned around all of a sudden, then used a green rain to block the sword aura, like a water curtain.

But the next moment... The sword aura tore it apart and struck his chest.

## **Chapter 1486: The Ancestral God’s Tribulation (1)**

Chapter 1486 The Ancestral God’s Tribulation (1)

"I'm only returning your favor," Su Ping said coldly. He casually waved a hand to make the sword aura on his fingertip disappear. Then, he simply ignored the gloomy Rain Ancestor and returned to the world of gods.

Killing intent flashed in the man's eyes, but he stayed his hand. It would be dangerous if they continued to fight and the ferocious dragon noticed anything.

The young human was no longer the same. The godly ancestor could hardly kill him on his own.

Su Ping returned to the desolate plain.

The place had already become a dark void. There was a bottomless pit on the ground.

He opted for staying there; that way no innocents would be killed. He looked at the sky, and saw how the world was already healing, and the Rain Ancestor's aura was gone. The man had probably left.

Su Ping ignored the latter's actions. If there was another sneak attack during the tribulation, he would make the guy experience the Heavenly Tribulation along with him.

With no hesitation, he released his auras unreservedly and soon reached the peak God Emperor level. The world suddenly became quiet when the Fire Dao's undying universe was released.

There was still a breeze and clouds were floating, but nothing was ordinary.

In the distance, at the border of the desolate plain-none of the ones forced to retreat had left; they only stayed by the edge of the battlefield. All of them were shocked by Su Ping's aura, not expecting him to still be there after such a fierce battle. It could only mean that he didn't lose!

He couldn't be a mere God Emperor if he was able to resist the Rain Ancestor's attacks. He couldn't be killed if he was also an Ancestral God!

Such realization left all the Rain Clan's emperors with troubled expressions.

The elders of the Heaven Path Institute and the human emperors, however, were so thrilled that they were shaking.

Elder Yan Qing looked into the distance, where Su Ping was. There was shock and disbelief in her clear eyes. After such a short time, the junior in her eyes was already qualified to fight the Rain Ancestor!

"He's already..."

Qian Hong swallowed as she stood in the crowd. She felt that her throat was extremely dry. It was incredible for her; she would have taken everything as a hallucination if it weren't for the barren ground and the bottomless abyss.

She was trying to become a God Emperor, while Su Ping was already trying to become an Ancestral God.

No wonder... That's why he was able to destroy the Heavenly Tribulation apart with one sword attack.

The tribulation for a God Emperor wasn't much in Ancestral Gods' eyes.

But then... Does it mean that he already had Ancestral God might while still being a God King?

Qian Hong's mind went blank after such a thought; it was impossible to find any words to describe such an existence. He had shocked all the gods by killing emperors while being a realm lower. To be able to go head to head with Ancestral Gods while still being a God King... It was definitely unique!

He was the first to achieve that in all of history...

Her heart jolted when she looked in a certain direction, given that an intense aura was being emitted. Every genius wanted to be remembered. Her goal had never been to defeat those at her level, but to challenge the most famous geniuses in history. However, according to the records, she knew she was far from achieving such a goal.

As for Su Ping, she believed he was definitely the best in all of history!

I wonder if it's lucky for me to live in the same age as this genius... Qian Hong thought bitterly.

Other than the Heaven Path Institute and the human representatives who were genuinely happy for Su Ping, the rest of the gods were shocked because of the young man's feat. Nobody expected that a battle with Ancestral Gods would take place.

A new Ancestral God would probably rise very soon!

Dum!!!

All of a sudden-an illusory bell appeared right underneath the wall protecting the universe. As huge as a mountain, the artifact was ringing in the distance.

The sound seemed to be traveling through time.

Everybody was shocked by the ancient bell's phantom.

“That’s the Grand Emperor Divine Bell!”

“The Grand Emperor Divine Bell is ringing! It’s the sign of an Ancestral God!”

“The other continents are probably hearing this too, right?”

Everybody was shocked. They had doubts at first, but the phenomenon reassured them.

The bell would appear every time an Ancestral God emerged. It was a chaos-made item, born in the depths of the godly universe. Nobody controlled it and nobody knew where it was; however, it would ring every time someone broke through to the Ancestral level.

The ringing would sound throughout the world of gods. This would alert all clans that a new Ancestral God had emerged.

Such a level was the peak for gods; any clan would have to look up to those apex cultivators.

Right then, in the sky above the godly world

—the illusion of a bell more than 100,000 kilometers wide appeared like the sun. It did seem illusory, but the carved Dao Glyphs it had were clearly visible. The odd thing was, normal people would soon forget those symbols after seeing them. Only God Kings managed to remember some.

The appearance of the bell would always be seen as a feat for any and all the cultivators in the world of gods!

All experts would benefit from the birth of an Ancestral God!

“The Grand Emperor Divine Bell!” “It’s appeared again. I’ve seen it three times in my life!”

“Who knows which clan has the Ancestral God hopeful. I wonder if they will die during the tribulation!”

“An Ancestral God... I wish there was an Ancestral God in our clan.”

## **Chapter 1487: The Ancestral God's Tribulation (2)**

Chapter 1487: The Ancestral God's Tribulation (2)

“Remember. The Grand Emperor Divine Bell is said to be a Dao item, engraved with the most original Great Dao which leads straight to chaos. If you comprehend all symbols, you can also become an Ancestral God!”

The entire godly world was shocked by the bell’s appearance. There was overall excitement in the air.

“A new Ancestral God? Judging by the aura, it’s coming from that direction...”

“Let me go there and take a look. Which clan’s God Emperor is advancing?”

Ancient auras were spreading from the depths of some high-ranked clans. Many old monsters who hadn’t been seen in a long time chose to reveal themselves.

Above the desolate plain—

Su Ping was surprised by the sudden appearance of the bell’s illusion. At first he thought that the Rain Ancestor hadn’t given up and marched back with the artifact. But he then realized it wasn’t the case. The bell was a terrifying artifact. The Rain Ancestor would probably have the power to even suppress the Chaos Perception Dragon if he had the treasure.

*This is only an illusion, not the artifact itself; even so, it’s already this powerful. It must be an artifact close to the primordial ancestor realm...* Su Ping’s eyes glittered.

The Dao Glyphs were extremely weird. However, Su Ping realized that they were all part of the undying Great Dao!

There were nine of them!

Just this divine bell alone could easily suppress any Ancestral God.

*There are nine undying Great Daos on the bell, which means that my cultivation is in the right path. If I see my body as an artifact, I can condense more and more undying Great Daos too. I can get nine, or even more!*

Su Ping’s eyes glittered. Whether or not it was an optimum path leading to the ultimate height, he was willing to try.

Exactly at that moment, there was a surge with a scary aura.

The dense black clouds in the sky rolled like a tide, as if about to swallow the whole world.

Su Ping felt stunned for a moment. *An Ancestral God’s black tribulation?*

He didn't think his undying Fire Dao universe was that good; after all, only the most exceptional geniuses in a certain realm could invoke a black tribulation.

"Everybody goes through the black tribulation to rise to the Undying State. The black tribulation was created to suppress those who aimed for the Undying State. What you've seen so far is just a shadow of the real thing," said the system's voice sounded inside Su Ping's heart.

"Suppress? Shadow?"

Su Ping was slightly surprised. The explanation offered by the system was awfully confusing. *The black tribulation was created to suppress the ones in the Undying State? Why?*

Su Ping couldn't help but ask, "Are Heavenly Tribulations really controlled by the Heavens?"

The system said, "Why else would they be called Heavenly Tribulations?"

*What a great rhetorical question...* Su Ping was rendered speechless. The system could have chosen not to answer in the past, while it showed willingness to explain many secrets after the store was upgraded to level 8.

"If that's the case, wouldn't the Heavens notice us if we transcend here?" asked Su Ping.

"Naturally."

"Then..."

"You will know the answer later."

Su Ping's eyes glittered. The information revealed by the system was shocking.

All cultivators had to go through Heavenly Tribulations to advance.

The testing phenomenon was controlled by the Heavens. They would certainly know where a tribulation would take place.

However, those worlds had yet to be destroyed.

Furthermore, even the Federation's universe had been safe until the crack in the universe became wider; only then did the Heavens break in.

The Heavens could sense all universes through the tribulations, but there were still survivors...

A cold and depressing aura descended upon Su Ping right then. He looked up and saw the black tribulation above him; the entire sky had become dark at some point. The sunny sky was quickly covered by the spreading tribulation in the far-off distance.

The whole world was covered by the black tribulation.

Depressing, maddening, cold, suffocating... Su Ping felt as if he were a hundred thousand meters deep in the water. He could hardly breathe, while his body was about to fall apart.

All his cells were telling him to run as quickly as possible. A sense of crisis he didn't have in a long time made him shiver.

He looked at the dark sky. The God Emperor's black tribulation was like a gentle feather in comparison, while the current one was like a heavy rock. He had the feeling that he couldn't resist it!

*Such a tribulation is controlled by the Heavens...*

*Did they create tribulations to erase us?*

Su Ping noticed the suppressed killing intent within the tribulation. This reminded him of the human corpses in the Federation's space, the empty universes he had seen during his escape, and how cyborgs had been hiding in tiny grains of dust.

Everything was because of the Heavens.

"Everyone has to be tested by tribulations as they cultivate. The weak are shattered and their cultivation was done in vain. The strong survive and rise to higher levels. But... It's still a disaster!

"Why do I have to endure your tribulation?"

Su Ping's bones expanded as he grew hundreds of meters tall, standing like an ancient mythical creature. The aura of chaos surged from his body, surrounding him like smoke. He rose to a height of 10,000 meters in the blink of an eye and stood like a massive mountain. The 108 Original Dao Glyphs surfaced on his body.

Once those Dao Glyphs were combined, they would form an undying Great Dao.

Every member of the Primitive Chaos Clan could become an Ancestral God because of their bloodline!

However, Su Ping didn't go through that path. He condensed his undying universe on his own.



Still, the 108 Dao Glyphs on his body were already drawing onto themselves to form an undying Great Dao. His body was as sturdy as that of an Ancestral God's. After all, he was already a chaos creature, far stronger than the gods themselves.

"Everyone can still cultivate and rise to higher levels without Heavenly Tribulations!" Fury shone in Su Ping's eyes. He even rejected the idea, after learning that the Heavens were behind all tribulations. It was like taking a test at the age of eighty and their life becoming meaningless if the test failed.

It was outright suppression and exploitation. However, after getting used to it, everybody was proud of transcending Heavenly Tribulations.

"Life isn't easy. There are enough hardships and challenges as it is. And yet, you set up another deadly test!" Su Ping gazed at the black clouds with hate in his eyes. "If you're the Heavens, I will break you the same way!"

Bang!

The black lightning illuminated Su Ping's cheeks.

A black lightning pillar descended like a furious dragon, as if ready to punish that impudent human.

Su Ping let out a roar. A mist of blood burst out from the pores on his arm and gathered to form a bloody sword. He held the sword and slashed furiously.

All the sword techniques he had learned were fused at that moment for the ultimate attack.

*Destroy the tribulation!*

*If the Heavens want to destroy me, I will destroy the Heavens!*

*If the tribulation wants to punish me, I will obliterate the tribulation!*

"Roar!!"

The crimson sword aura reflected Su Ping's fury and hate. The bloody light illuminated the entire world, and spread further by billions of kilometers. Many emperors saw it.

Boom. The sword collided with the descending lightning bolt. The next moment, the bloody light pushed forth and drowned the lightning bolt, cutting deep into the pillar.

There was a bloody crack in the middle of the dark clouds. It looked like a strange eye that had just opened. It was healing quickly, however.

Su Ping didn't stop. The undying universe surfaced behind him, and exploded with the most dazzling light.

The power from the explosion was transmitted into his arms, producing red cracks on them. The fiery power was then transferred to his hands and gathered in the bloody sword.

Su Ping roared and slashed furiously again.

The second attack was as astounding as thunder, even sharper and with a stronger momentum than the first!

It stubbornly slashed into the sky.

“Great sword!”

In the void—a few figures who had just arrived were amazed by the bloody sword, not expecting that the young man going through the tribulation had mastered such a powerful Ancestral God technique.

“He's trying to resist the Heavenly Tribulation. How brave.”

“Back when we dealt with our tribulation, we all shrank our universes and struggled to weather through it. This world-destroying tribulation is no joke; his undying universe could be completely annihilated.”

Those Ancestral Gods thought that Su Ping's behavior was rather crazy.

## **Chapter 1488: Slashing the Tribulation (1)**

Chapter 1488 Slashing the Tribulation (1)

With a boom, the entire godly world seemed to be shaking

The freshly healed crack in the clouds was slashed open, revealing greater damage. Su Ping tirelessly detonated his newly-condensed undying universe. He transferred the explosive power on his arm and unleashed it with the God's Arrival secret technique.

99% of his power was fully released with a momentary beam of sword light, which was even more dazzling than before.

The third attack!

The tribulation clouds were torn apart, revealing a gap tens of thousands of kilometers wide. The bloody sword light entered deep into the clouds, dyeing the world red.

Su Ping roared and slashed relentlessly.

He forcefully slashed the dark tribulation to pieces with his sword.

That unbelievable scene dumbfounded the emperors who were watching in the distance. Even the Ancestral Gods who showed up after receiving reports were shocked, as they felt the sharpness of that new Ancestral God!

“Another stubborn kid. Looks like the world won’t be peaceful anymore.”

“I heard that the Rain Ancestor is his enemy... Looks like the Rain Clan’s life won’t be easy in the next hundred thousand years.”

“I hope his actions stay within the rules of us gods.”

The Ancestral Gods had mixed feelings. They had once been dazzling geniuses who suppressed their peers, they weren’t as domineering as Su Ping was during his tribulation. However, despite his momentum, they knew how powerful the test was; it wouldn’t fall with a few slashes.

Just as the Ancestral Gods pondered, the opening on the clouds got bigger and bigger. A rumbling sound originated from the depths of the clouds.

The sound echoed in the void and was transmitted through time and space. It was simply bloodcurdling.

It sounded like some ancient existence snorting furiously in the depths of the clouds!

The bloody crack caused by the sword aura was swiftly mended. All of Su Ping’s sword auras were consumed by the clouds and the clouds recovered in full. All the work didn’t cause a thing

Whoosh!

Su Ping didn’t stop, though. Instead, he swung his sword faster and faster. His universe of fire exploded and was condensed again and again, unleashing its destructive power. His terrifying sword auras were released at a faster pace.

Exactly at that moment—a bloody light appeared in the depths of the dark clouds all of a sudden, with crimson lightning darting down aggressively.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. He sensed that a scorching aura from the lightning had the same origin as his sword technique.

The Heavenly Tribulation had melded his attack unto itself and was sending it back to him!

Su Ping's eyes were cold. Was it a provocation? Or mockery?

His sword spun and a sharp aura slashed out, only to be shattered by the bloody lightning. The clouds' attack was slightly weakened, but it kept on pressuring him.

There was no time for Su Ping to slash again. He could only condense his universe and resist.

Bam. The undying fire universe was penetrated. Su Ping trembled and nearly fell, as if hit by a mountain.

He raised his head, and saw a second bolt of lightning rushing down. Detonating his universe with a roar, he slashed again.

His sword aura was shattered. He quickly condensed his universe and resisted the second strike.

Then came a third lightning bolt, a fourth, and so on...

Su Ping had attacked the tribulation with sixteen sword auras. In the blink of an eye he was hit back by sixteen bloody lightning bolts. He felt as if all his cells were escaping from his body.

He stared at the sky and raised his head again, detonating the universe he had just condensed and gathering everything in his hand as a bloody sword aura.

This time, he activated the Contract Dao Heart and immediately linked himself to the power of the world within a radius of 300,000 kilometers. The violent power surged into his body.

His arm was about to burst because of the terrifying power being gathered. It was emitting an unprecedented aura, like a scorching sun.

"This is... the original power of our world?"

"He can actually invoke the power of the world?"

"Or maybe, is the world's original consciousness helping him?"

The Ancestral Gods in the distance showed different expressions, revealing shock when they saw the change in Su Ping's aura. He was as frightening as the Ancestral Gods who had transcended the tribulation a long time before.

"Break!!" Su Ping roared and slashed again.

There was an explosion, and a horrifying aura tore the world apart. All the species on the continents nearby sensed the uncanny vibrations in the air. It seemed that there was an earthquake thousands of kilometers away.

In fact, Su Ping was billions of kilometers away from them.

The terrifying sword aura rose to the skies and ripped everything apart, including the tribulation clouds!

The latter—which were indestructible at the beginning—instantly fell apart. The crack extended for hundreds of thousands of kilometers. A brilliant golden light illuminated the world. The shape of a sword could be clearly seen at ground level!

The tribulation clouds surged and rumbled, as if roaring in pain and fury, quickly swallowing the sword-shaped gap.

Su Ping roared and detonated his universe again. He connected himself to the power of the world again, this time encompassing a radius of 400,000 kilometers!

The energy turbulence was even more intense than before. Su Ping's body became taller, too, reaching 100,000 kilometers, arms like mountains. The bloody sword in his hand looked like a rough mountain ridge. He slashed furiously as his energy erupted, prepared to raze everything to the ground. An indescribable energy was shot forth instantly, faster than the black hole swallowing rays of

light.

## **Chapter 1489: Slashing the Tribulation (2)**

Chapter 1489 Slashing the Tribulation (2)

The still-healing tribulation clouds were torn apart again, the gaps growing larger.

The Ancestral Gods were already solemn and expressionless in the distance.

Su Ping's undying universe wasn't truly remarkable. However, his bloodline power along with the terrifying power of the world—made him much stronger than ordinary Ancestral Gods!

This didn't mean that he was capable of killing Ancestral Gods, though.

He was only slightly stronger. Defeating them was possible, but not killing them.

Still, such a capability in itself was unbelievable. After all, he was still going through the tribulation. Furthermore, experts of that level would have to cultivate hard for hundreds of thousands of years to become stronger than their peers. Everybody had reached their limits, and any kind of progress was difficult, however small.

"Come again!" Su Ping roared and made a third slash, this time invoking the power of the world within 500,000 kilometers, thus making him even stronger than before. There was so much power that he had to hold his sword with both hands.

Then, he slashed in a different direction, drawing a massive "X" in the sky.

The clouds surged, and destructive black lightning bolts darted from both sides. They could easily pierce through the universe.

There was intense killing intent in Su Ping's eyes. He directly gathered the power within 600,000 kilometers, and his power was more terrifying than ever before. He was getting close to his limits.

The enormous power was gathered in his body. Su Ping held his sword with both hands and attacked.

All the lightning bolts in the sky were extinguished.

However, the golden sword aura didn't disperse. It was thrown further into the sky, causing another opening in the clouds.

"You don't deserve to be my tribulation!"

Su Ping didn't stop. He summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon to merge with them at the same time.

A violent power surged into his body, dragons scales and sharp claws appearing. Minuscule Dao Glyphs were added to the ones already etched onto his body.

A dragon head and a wolf head, both thousands of kilometers tall, appeared on his shoulders like clouds. However, they simply looked petite in proportion to the gargantuan Su Ping.

Roar!

The Inferno Dragon roared. Its mind was connected to Su Ping's and sensed his emotions. It knew that Su Ping needed power, so it didn't hesitate to burn its soul and unleash all its power to infuse his master's body.

The Dark Dragon Hound was also roaring at the clouds ferociously. All the power in its body was sent to Su Ping, establishing plenty of shields to protect him.

Su Ping was further strengthened by the two pets. His exuberant power made him feel capable of squeezing the sky apart.

He bellowed and invoked the power of the world again, this time reaching his limit of 800,000 kilometers!

Time and space seemed to be shaking. Infinite power from the world of gods surged into Su Ping's body, who then felt that his body was melting. Such made him think there was nothing he couldn't easily destroy.

Condense!

Su Ping gritted his teeth and gathered the power in his hands. A dazzling golden power was manifested, with hands as brilliant as suns as he detonated his universe.

"Break!!" Su Ping roared and swung his sword, launching a dazzling sword aura to the sky.

The clouds covering the area shook violently. A huge pillar of lightning was condensed in the middle of the clouds and rushed to meet the sword aura.

But the next moment—the lightning pillar was easily torn apart.

The sword aura sliced the pillar like tofu.

The sky within a radius of a million kilometers turned into a pure gold color. The ones observing at ground level saw this spectacle as a brilliant river of gold stretching to infinity

Those watching from a distance would clearly see a golden sword mark.

The entire sky near Su Ping was golden and the clouds were gone!

While looking at the brilliant golden river above and feeling the terrifying energy fluctuations, all the emperors shivered. Is that the power of an Ancestral God?

When Ancestral Gods were furious, they could tear the world apart!

The few Ancestral Gods witnessing the phenomenon were silent, mulling over complex feelings. Although they hated to admit it, they knew that the young man could easily be counted among the strongest Ancestral Gods.

He wasn't yet on par with the old monsters of the Seven Families, but he was definitely one of the top gods!

Su Ping stopped attacking and gazed into the sky, as he could tell that the clouds were ebbing and would not gather again. There was a crack spanning a million kilometers, and the clouds were collapsing.

He had destroyed the Heavenly Tribulation for Ancestral Gods.

It had been a truly destructive test controlled by the Heavens, but he didn't see any of them.

They didn't show up despite such provocation. Then, why would they destroy so many universes? Su Ping stared at the sky, feeling that the Heavens were rather unpredictable.

In any case, the system seemed to know a lot of secrets about them. Since he had become an Ancestral God, the system would tell him everything after upgrading the store to level

Su Ping looked at the Purple Python, the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon and the rest, then said softly, "You guys should hurry up. The upgrading prerequisite for a level-9 store is to cultivate an Ancestral God pet. Your Dao Hearts awakened a long time ago. It's time to create your undying universes."

All the pets were rendered speechless by the demand. They were already smarter than humans at the moment. For how long had they been God Emperors? Only someone like their master would expect them to become Ancestral Gods that fast.

Su Ping kept waiting patiently. Ten minutes passed, and the clouds were completely gone. He had officially passed the tribulation test.

Although he didn't receive the tribulation's power at the end, he wasn't regretful.

He had the Dao of Tribulation and could simulate tribulations to nurture his body. He didn't need that gift.

"It's over!"

"He really drove away the world-destroying tribulation..."

"It seems that a powerful species will be born very soon."



The Ancestral Gods watching from a distance were heaving sighs. Who knew that such an unbelievable thing would happen? They could tell that something groundbreaking would take place very soon.

Whoosh!

A few figures flashed by. The Ancestral Gods made an appearance.

Su Ping's eyes glittered, but there was no surprise in them; he had already sensed their powerful auras while transcending the tribulation. He asked calmly, "Who are you?"

"Congratulations on achieving immortality."

"Congratulations!"

The Ancestral Gods offered praises with smiles. Since they were already there, it wouldn't hurt to greet such a badass. In all honesty, they didn't really care about friends or even their own clan; Su Ping had reached their level and deserved some respect.

Ancestral Gods would live forever. This meant that they would get to see Su Ping's face often for the rest of their lives.

"Thank you."

Su Ping nodded, as he saw that their intentions weren't malicious.

The experts introduced themselves and talked with Su Ping for a while, then left one after another.

Being lofty creatures, they had no need to suck up to anyone. No matter how strong Su Ping was, he couldn't break the rules of the gods. Besides, they were too strong to have any worldly desires; they were only aiming for the cultivator's final destination. They lived without a care for anyone else's opinions, nor they needed to hold back. They were truly free.

Su Ping resumed his human form after they left.

He concealed his aura and examined his surroundings. He instantly approached the human emperors.

Emperor Xin and the others were stunned by his presence. Then, they bowed respectfully and addressed him in the most respectful way possible, "It's an honor to meet you, Human Ancestor!"

Dazed, Su Ping quickly said, "That's too much, seniors. You can just call me Su Ping."

“We wouldn’t dare, Human Ancestor,” said Emperor Xin quickly.

“Consider it an order,” said Su Ping helplessly.

Being their junior, he found it unbearable to be called “Human Ancestor,” a supreme title.

“As you wish, Human Ancestor.”

All the emperors nodded, but still exchanged looks and hesitated. Su Ping was indeed young, just a toddler compared to them, but his strength was extraordinary. In any clan, the strong were always the most respected.

After becoming an Ancestral God, Su Ping was bound to see views others could not.

It had only taken him a thousand years to reach and surpass their attainments of hundreds of thousands of years. Their old age was nothing to be proud of; after all, too many people had lived ten thousand years in the same way, just repeated ten thousand times.

Age was never something to be respected.

The things gained because of age were the source for respect.

“Ancestor Su, I heard you were surrounded by the Rain Clan and nearly killed. It was too late when we received the report; we were too useless and almost allowed for something to happen.”

Emperor Xin spoke with guilt.

The other emperors lowered their heads with troubled feelings.

Su Ping’s breakthrough made them realize what humanity could have lost. He was the dawn they had been waiting for too long.

“Can you not call me ancestor?” said Su Ping with a bitter smile.

“Ancestor Su, forgive us for disobeying, but you should accept this. All Ancestral Gods are called this way. We cannot break the rules. Besides, you’re the first Ancestral God in the history of humankind. We can’t show you enough respect,” said Emperor Xin in a hurry.

He didn’t regard Su Ping as a young genius who wasn’t even a God Warrior, but as a real, supreme Ancestral God.

Su Ping stopped bothering about the title. He said, "Now that I'm an Ancestral God, I should establish a new world for all humans. From today onward, humans will no longer be anyone's vassal race. We'll become a high-ranked clan standing above the other clans. We will live as long as the world exists!"

Emperor Xin and the others trembled after such a statement, with faces already covered in tears when they raised their heads. They had long waited for those words.

Humans were weak, having paid dearly to rise to that height. The humiliating deaths of their geniuses; the enslavement of so many humans. There was too much darkness, too hurtful to remember. However, it had happened, and was remembered by those living fossils.

"Thank you, Ancestor Su!"

"Ancestor Su, you've made the greatest contribution!"

The emperors shook as they spoke.

"I've only done my part as a human should," said Su Ping, "However, I'll often be away. You'll have to take care of our clan after the new world is established."

Emperor Xin and the others had heard something about Su Ping's background. They heard that Su Ping was a ferocious beast's child, and that he didn't have much of a human's bloodline.

Su Ping's admission to being a human was delightful nonetheless.

He had revealed the body of a mythical creature when he fought the Heavenly Tribulation. It wasn't easy for him to acknowledge his human identity.

"We'll certainly do that. Don't worry, Ancestor Su," said Emperor Xin in a hurry.

Su Ping nodded.

After that, Su Ping took the human emperors to see the elders of the Heaven Path Institute. He saw Yan Qing and the others, then chuckled and said, "Elders, it's been a long time."

"It's an honor to meet you, Human Ancestor!"

The white-robed old man at the center—seeing Emperor Xin and the others—understood everything and immediately bowed to pay respects.

Elder Yan and the others were also excited as they lowered their heads to greet him.

Su Ping felt rather helpless. It seemed that he couldn't get rid of that title as long as he acknowledged his human identity. He said, "No need to be polite, elders. I wouldn't be what I am today without the Heaven Path Institute's help. If you'd like, I'm willing to become the fourth Ancestral God of our institute. I'll lend a hand if the institute is in trouble!"

The leading elder was excited by the offer. He said, "Thank you, Human Ancestor. You didn't cultivate for long in the institute and we didn't help you much. Even so, you still remember the little things we did. I'm truly touched!"

"You're too kind, elder. I wouldn't have walked this far and this fast without the institute's help. I wouldn't dare forget your favor," said Su Ping.

With Su Ping as the institute's fourth Ancestral God, the Heaven Path Institute would become even more threatening than before.

"Human Ancestor, are you going to establish a new territory for all humans? If you want, you can create one on the continent near our institute, that way we can take care of it," said the Chief Elder.

Emperor Xin and the others had glittering eyes.

"Okay." Su Ping nodded. Such a proposal would spare him some worries while being away in other cultivation sites.

Led by the Chief Elder, they went to the Heaven Path Institute.

The journey was fast. Elder Yan Qing and the others were only taking peeks at Su Ping in silence, clearly delighted. They kept sizing him up, as if never having seen such an Ancestral God.

Su Ping could sense their thrill. He smiled at them, and took the initiative to talk about things in the institute, as he noticed how scared they were to say a peep.

He set Emperor Xin and the others down, then he spread his senses and explored the continent around him.

Su Ping was soon able to find a suitable location in the wilderness, and instantly made construction plans.

Right then, a voice sounded. "Please wait a moment."

A shadow appeared in the world. It was invisible to emperor-level beings, but Su Ping could see him clearly. It was a young man wearing a black robe, with a purple vertical eye on his forehead. The fellow walked in a relaxed manner, but his every step seemed

to be echoing with the world in a strange rhythm. It seemed that the world was shaking because of his feet.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. "Who are you?"

"I just heard the Grand Emperor Divine Bell and you don't look familiar. You must be the new Ancestral God, right?" said the black-robed young man with a smile, "If you're looking for a territory, I suggest you go somewhere else; this place belongs to the Bright Moon Clan."

"The Bright Moon Clan?" Su Ping raised his brows and asked, "It's not one of the Seven Greatest Clans, is it?"

The young man's smile fell. "What do you mean?"

"If you're not one of them, don't meddle in other people's business," said Su Ping with an unwelcoming expression, "We'll only be using this continent. We won't be stepping on your territory."

Creation was an easy task for him.

He could instantly create a small universe.

In order to create a territory for humankind, he only needed to gather a huge amount of land and create mountains and rivers. It would be an additional piece of territory at the edge of the main landmass. It wouldn't affect any previous arrangement, as the continent would be enlarged.

"I know, but this is the Bright Moon Clan's territory, and we don't like noisy neighbors. You'd better find somewhere else," said the black-robed young man coldly, discarding all niceties.

Su Ping snorted. "Better move elsewhere if you don't like neighbors. Humans are getting this place!"

"Why don't you try?" said the black-robed young man coldly, "Besides, you must have the Seven Clans' permission to establish a territory. Did nobody tell you the rules after you became an Ancestral God?"

"As far as I know, any high-ranked clan is free to settle down in a place they like. Being Ancestral Gods, if they can't freely pick a land for their clans, what's the point of being an Ancestral God?"

Su Ping looked at him coldly and added, "I don't have time to waste on you. You can either move away or shut up!"

“How arrogant!”

The black-robed young man laughed because of fury. The purple eye on his forehead cracked open, with chaotic light flashing. A moment later, an expression of understanding appeared on his face. He said, “So, you’re related to the Heaven Path Institute. Did you rise there? This is indeed close to the institute, but it’s useless. You can’t settle down here, even if all four Ancestral Gods come!”

“I don’t need the other three Ancestral Gods to deal with you.”

Su Ping attacked just like that. He suddenly bellowed and the universe of fire appeared behind his back, then instantly turned into a ten-thousand meter tall giant. He stepped on the land, and chaos blood erupted from his pores to gather into a sword.

With a boom, the universe exploded and violent power surged as a sword aura.

“Condense!”

The black-robed young man sneered as the purple eye on his forehead was opened. There was the aura of a universe inside the purple eye, as if all the power was condensed there.

Boom. The purple light passed, piercing the sword aura.

Su Ping’s eyes were cold. He quickly set up a contract, invoking the power within a radius of 500,000 kilometers. The original power of the world was instantly gathered in his arm.

His other hand detonated his just reconstituted universe. He grabbed the sword with both hands and slashed furiously again.

The world was a mess and the continent was shaking. Time and space within ten thousand kilometers fell apart. Such an unusual phenomenon caused the spatial outer layer to shatter.

The black-robed young man changed his expression and looked at Su Ping in shock. He suddenly extended a hand, and a purple universe slowly rose behind him, exploding right after. The vertical eye on his forehead exploded at the same time. The two streams of terrifying power collided and turned into a purple burst of light.

The purple light and the sword aura collided, annihilating everything.

The horrifying impact was almost soundless. The sword aura continued and sliced through the purple light and reached the young man’s chest, obliterating his body.

Once the attack auras receded, there was a deep ravine a million kilometers long, spanning the continent's area behind the black-robed young man's back. All the cities, beasts and villages in that path were destroyed.

Ancestral God battles were world-destroying. It was inevitable.

In the void—the black-robed young man's body was reconstituted, along with the purple light. It was his purple undying universe.

“The Chaos Clan?”

The young looking ancestor was giving Su Ping a sullen look. He didn't die, but he failed!

It was a known fact that Ancestral Gods could hardly kill each other, unless the most terrifying among them would gather to attack. There was only victory and defeat under normal circumstances.

He didn't expect to be defeated by a new Ancestral God.

The power condensed by Su Ping had even scared him. He didn't know what kind of method it was.

“You can leave on your feet, or on your back!” Su Ping offered with a cold tone.

The black-robed young man's eyes also turned cold. “You can't kill me. Spare me the arrogant act!”

“You're just a loser!”

“You!”

The young man was infuriated, but facts were facts. He didn't think he could block the attack, even if he had a second try at it. He would fail, no matter how many times he tried.

He didn't die, but failure was embarrassing!

It would be humiliating if word got out!

“No matter what, you cannot take this place as long as I'm here,” said the young man angrily.

Su Ping's eyes were cold. “Do you want me to destroy your clan?”

“Destroy my clan, and I'll destroy yours!” said the unrelenting fellow.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and stared at the guy for a while. He nodded and said, "I'll remember what happened today."

"Humph!"

The black-robed young man snorted, not taking Su Ping's threat seriously.

Both of them were Ancestral Gods. Su Ping had indeed defeated him, but he couldn't kill him. Threats were pointless.

Not wasting any more time talking, Su Ping left the Original Dao World and returned to the Heaven Path Institute.

"Ancestor Su?"

Emperor Xin and the others saw that Su Ping's expression was off. They had also heard a great noise, which made them a bit nervous.

The Chief Elder thought of something and asked, "Did you meet Ancestral God Hao Yue, Human Ancestor?"

"Do you know him?" Su Ping looked at the Chief Elder.

"The Bright Moon Clan members have a strange temper and are difficult to communicate with. They also love to live alone. Only their Ancestral God would approach you to stir a conflict," said the Chief Elder with a bitter smile.

Su Ping nodded. "The place I picked is near their territory. He doesn't want me to use that area."

*Just as I thought...* the Chief Elder pondered. He said with a bitter smile, "The Bright Moon Clan has always been this petty. Don't be too hard on them."

Su Ping shook his head but dropped the subject. He couldn't do anything to that guy yet, and could only hold back for the sake of all humans. After all, he would mostly be away, and would have no chance to help if humans were attacked.

It was impossible to ask the Chaos Perception Dragon for help, either.

Being a ferocious beast, it would be seen as a public enemy of all gods once it stepped on that continent.

*I'll teach him a lesson when the Dark Dragon Hound and my other pets also become Ancestral Gods...* Su Ping's eyes were slightly cold. He said to Emperor Xin and the others, "I'm afraid you'll have to stay where you are for a while. You can start packing for the time being. I will establish our territory in that place when I get back."



“Ancestor Su, if the Bright Moon Clan is difficult to deal with, we can think about picking another place,” offered Emperor Xin after seeing Su Ping’s expression.

The latter shook his head. “I won’t change the place that I’ve picked.”

Su Ping asked Emperor Xin and the others to head back to the old human territory for the time being. He then went to the depths of the Heaven Path Institute under the Chief Elder’s invitation.

It was a secret land exclusive for elders. Even Dao Children had to receive approval to enter.

“Human Ancestor, here are the three Ancestral Gods of our institute,” said the Chief Elder as he pointed.

Facing the secret land, there were three majestic statues, more than ten thousand meters tall and in different postures. One was holding a sword with both hands, another was holding a spear, and the last one was half-lying on the ground.

Right above the three statues—a spring of divine power was flowing down like a waterfall.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and noticed that the springs were connected to a familiar aura in the depths of the void.

“Is that?”

The Chief Elder had mixed feelings in his heart as he said, “That’s the Divine Eye occupied by Ancestral God Qing Feng. It’s one of the foundations of this world, too.”

“A Divine Eye…”

It never occurred to him that the institute would have laid claim to a Divine Eye. No wonder the divine power was so abundant on the mountains used by disciples to cultivate. *So, they were actually supported by a Divine Eye.*

“Since you’re willing to lend a hand to protect the institute, Human Ancestor, please leave your statue here,” said the Chief Elder to Su Ping in a respectful tone.

Su Ping noticed the immense Dao aura on the three statues, probably left by the Ancestral Gods themselves. So, he simply waved a hand and created a red statue surrounded by many smaller-sized heads. Those who knew him well would recognize the heads of the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets.

A white skeleton was created in his hand.

Su Ping's eyes glittered and he slowly clenched his fist.

He had already become an Ancestral God. Once the store was upgraded to level 9, he find out how to resurrect his skeleton pet.

Su Ping would do anything to make it happen, even if he had to rise to the sky or dash into hell!

"They are..." The Chief Elder looked confused as he saw the beast heads around Su Ping's statue.

Su Ping smiled and said, "They're all my partners."

"Partners..."

The Chief Elder was dazed for a moment, but didn't ask further. After all, Su Ping could very well do whatever he wanted after becoming an Ancestral God. Ancestral God Wen Tian, the third ancestor, had simply built a statue of him lying down, claiming it was too tiresome for his statue to be standing all the time. It was hard to imagine an Ancestral God ever feeling tired, not after only taking a hundred thousand years to reach their level.

"Human Ancestor, are you going to the Mysterious Realm of the Ancestral Gods?" the Chief Elder asked Su Ping, "Ancestral God Wen Tian is sleeping there. He'll definitely be very happy to greet you."

"Okay."

Su Ping nodded. He was a new Ancestral God, and there were still a lot of things he needed to learn.

"Human Ancestor, please follow me."

The Chief Elder waved a hand and opened a vortex. The Mysterious Realm of the Ancestral Gods was in front of Wen Tian's statue. The statue shined, projecting a vortex which led to an unknown land.

Su Ping entered the Mysterious Realm with a normal expression.

Light and shadow changed. Once everything was stabilized, Su Ping found himself in a vast blue world, devoid of all vegetation. There was no soil, either; he was standing on the surface of an absolutely peaceful sea.

Su Ping looked around but no one but himself was there.

It was only him and his reflection below his feet.

“Senior Wen Tian.”

Su Ping sensed the exuberant aura of an Ancestral God present. That Mysterious Realm seemed to be the second spatial layer inside Wen Tian’s undying universe.

“Huh?”

A ripple appeared in the void, and then a tall young man in white clothes walked out. He looked identical to the lying statue outside. He looked at Su Ping in surprise and asked, “Who are you?”

Su Ping briefly introduced himself, “Su Ping. I just became an Ancestral God. I was a Dao Child in the institute.”

“Dao Child...”

The young man in white gave him a slight nod. *The guy must’ve entered with the Chief Elder’s help. Only elders from the institute have the privilege.* He would have sensed any break in. He had already guessed something when he saw Su Ping, but simply didn’t expect that a new Ancestral God would rise so soon in the institute.

“How many days has it been? It’s been only several dozen thousand years or so.” The young man in white did the math but still had mixed feelings. “Is the world of gods going to enter a glorious age? For an Ancestral God to appear so soon, and in our institute, no less. Which clan are you from? You carry the aura of chaos. There are only a hundred clans that carry this bloodline.”

“I’m a human being,” said Su Ping.

“A human being?”

The young man in white was stunned. He thought for a moment and asked in confusion, “I don’t think that’s a clan, is it?”

“It’s a middle-ranked clan.” Su Ping felt somewhat helpless. It was clear that Ancestral Gods would only pay attention to high-ranked clans.

“Well...”

The young man in white was obviously stunned. He sized Su Ping up in astonishment. “An Ancestral God from a middle-ranked clan? In other words, you’ve turned your clan into a high-ranked clan, all on your own? Impressive!”

Su Ping said helplessly, “Senior Wen Tian, I made my breakthrough just recently. I’m here to ask for more information about Ancestral Gods.”

“All right, just as I thought.”

Wen Tian chuckled and waved a hand. Two comfortable chairs appeared in the void. He claimed one and said, “There must be a lot of things you’re curious about now that you advanced. There are also rules among Ancestral Gods that I must make you aware of. Although we are at the top in this world, it doesn’t mean that we can be completely lawless.”

Su Ping nodded and said, “Please enlighten me, senior.”

“I’m not really your senior. You’re already an Ancestral God now, the same as me, and you’re the ancestor of a clan. We don’t have to lower our heads to anyone. That is, except for the old monsters from the Seven Greatest Clans.”

Wen Tian patted the chair and said, “Come on, have a seat.”

Su Ping felt at a loss when he saw the guy enjoying himself on the comfortable chair. He suddenly understood why the guy’s statue was lying down. This Ancestral God was obviously a person who would never stand if he could sit.

Once Su Ping took a seat, Wen Tian said, “It’s hard for an Ancestral God to kill another Ancestral God, but it’s best not to cross the Seven Greatest Clans, because their eldest are already at the peak of our realm and close to the end of chaos. I don’t know how strong they are exactly, but all of them have killed other Ancestral Gods before!

“Therefore, it’s better to stay clear of their path.

“Apart from the Seven Greatest Clans, there are a hundred and twenty-one high-ranked clans in the world of gods, and thirty-two of them have two Ancestral Gods. They’re much stronger than normal high-ranked clans. After all, one of their Ancestral Gods can keep you busy while the other destroys your clan. There’s nothing you can do.

“Among the thirty-two clans, nine have three Ancestral Gods. They’re only second to the Seven Greatest Clans.

“It would be better for you not to cross those people, unless you intend to carry your clan with you and flee forever.

“As for the others... There’s nothing important. There are a few clans that basically act as the dogs of the Seven Greatest Clans. Try not to offend them. For example...”

Wen Tian made comprehensive introductions of all the high-ranked clans in the world of gods.

Only brief descriptions could be found in the institute’s library; on the other hand, Wen Tian revealed many secrets, including which Ancestral Gods were behind the clans and

their proficiencies. In particular, Wen Tian had fought some of them and would obviously know them better. He then asked Su Ping to commit the information to memory.

Once the topic was fully addressed, Wen Tian continued with the rules Ancestral Gods followed. For example, there were forbidden lands that nobody could wantonly enter, unless they had the Seven Greatest Clans' approval.

There were also some Mysterious Realms that required the seven clan's approval to explore.

The best resources were mostly monopolized by the Seven Clans in the Archean Divinity.

Aside from them, there were only the dangerous, indomitable lands left.

*The strong get everything. This should be the rule in any world, unless someone even stronger breaks it and establishes his own monopoly...*

Su Ping's knowledge of that world became richer. He was still too weak to fight all the high-ranked clans. It would be a suicidal idea that would only bring about the destruction of mankind.

So, there were some rules he had to abide by.

However, it wasn't a really strict arrangement. The worst consequence for violating rules was to offend the Seven Clans, provoking the old monsters to kill him.

However, he couldn't be killed in that world.

Nobody knew that, not even Wen Tian. Therefore, Su Ping only needed to be relatively respectful; he would only take action if attacked.

Several days later—

Su Ping left the Mysterious Realm and remembered everything Ancestral God Wen Tian had told him.

The two sparred a bit before he left. Su Ping didn't draw power from the world to enhance himself, resulting in Wen Tian completely suppressing him.

However, it was only suppression, not death.

Of course, Su Ping didn't know if Wen Tian had gone all out.

He thought that the latter was even stronger than Ancestral God Hao Tian and the Rain Ancestor.

It was hard to kill someone who was on the same level, but defeating them fast enough would be the same as killing them!

Once out of the mysterious realm, Su Ping held lectures in the Heavenly Path State under the Chief Elder's invitation. It was a way to reciprocate for the institute's guidance.

Being an Ancestral God, Su Ping attracted everyone to the lecture hall, including many elders. He then demonstrated the Dao of Fire and showed his undying universe in the process, which could inspire Ascendants and even God Emperors.

*The undying universe of fire... He's reached the supreme level with only the Fire Dao. I will surely surpass him when I cultivate my own undying universe...* In the crowd, Qian Hong's eyes glittered; her fighting will was reignited.

She still had an opportunity!

After the lecture—

Su Ping looked for the Chief Elder and the others to talk about what he knew about the Heavens. He had stayed in the Heaven Path Institute partly because he wanted to send the message to all gods with his new identity, so that everyone could take precautions.

Su Ping's identity was extraordinary at the moment. The elders promised that they would deliver his message to all the clans. No one would underestimate an Ancestral God's warning.

After bidding goodbye to the people in the institute, Su Ping went to the Chaos Perception Dragon's new home.

Hardly had he arrived when Su Ping noticed two hidden, yet terrifying auras of chaos, one bigger than the other. Su Ping was familiar with the bigger one; it belonged to the Chaos Perception Dragon.

However, his senses were sharper than before. He could also feel the terrifying power contained in the dragon's suppressed aura.

*No wonder it's called a ferocious beast.* Su Ping didn't think he could resist, even if he invoked the power within a radius of 800,000 kilometers.

Aside from the Chaos Perception Dragon's aura, Su Ping was very familiar with the smaller aura of chaos, too. Even though smaller when compared with the dragon elder, he was surprised by the enormous size.

Su Ping moved closer and saw the Chaos Perception Dragon mountainous body lying on the ground. In front of its chest was a gigantic cocoon, which resembled a chaotic storm. An immense aura of chaos was spreading out every now and then. Evolving was made easier and faster when cultivating near the cocoon.

“Huh?”

The Chaos Perception Dragon rolled its bloody eyes and found Su Ping’s tiny body. “You’re an Ancestral God already? You change enormously every time I see you. I even suspect that you come from the long-gone world of chaos.”

“I hope that was true.” Su Ping then asked, “Is it not fully recovered yet?”

“Its consciousness has already recovered. It’s at the moment assimilating the Great Dao inside its body. It’ll become an Ancestral God as strong as you when it fully evolves,” said the Chaos Perception Dragon, “Still, it would be better to leave it alone for now. Let it focus on cultivating; this is a rare opportunity.”

Su Ping nodded. The young Chaos Beast had stayed there a long time. However, hundreds of years were just the blink of an eye for the old dragon.

“Keep taking care of him, then,” said Su Ping.

“It’s my job anyway.” The Chaos Perception Dragon snorted.

Su Ping smiled and talked to the dragon elder for a while, then said goodbye and left the Archean Divinity.

Once back in the store, Su Ping concealed his aura and spread his consciousness beyond the store, covering the entire green glass planet.

The planet was like a tiny ball in Su Ping’s eyes; he could explore any place with ease.

He even sensed the three cyborg leaders busily doing their things, while they never sensed his presence.

Furthermore, Su Ping noticed that the Primordial Empyrean Master was cultivating. To his surprise, a bell rang close to the guy when he examined him.

Su Ping even felt that his consciousness had struck something. It was stopped like a tide crashing against a reef.

*The Fortune Bell is really a great item.* Su Ping’s eyes glittered as he withdrew his senses.

On the other hand, the Primordial Emyrean Master woke up in shock. He looked frightened as he turned to examine the Fortune Bell ringing in his hand. He was cultivating in seclusion. *How could there be any danger? Besides, this is a safe place!*

The Fortune Bell soon calmed down.

This meant that there was no more danger.

“What’s going on?”

The Primordial Emyrean Master was stunned and anxious. The Fortune Bell was never wrong. That could only mean that some sort of danger had indeed approached him, but it somehow disappeared.

*Was the danger... from this continent?*

*Did someone plan a sneak attack?*

The old expert thought of Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other dominators. He could truly be in danger if they joined hands to attack him.

He solemnly gazed at the Fortune Bell. While pondering, the bell glittered and rang again, indicating a bad omen.

“Again?”

The Emyrean Master was slightly nervous. He stepped out of his temple and observed the situation.

There was no sign of Chi Ying or anyone else outside the barrier, but the bell’s ring was becoming increasingly louder, which meant that danger was approaching.

“Damn it!”

The old man looked awful. He found nothing, but the Fortune Bell was never wrong.

“The danger isn’t close by? Or are they escaping detection in some way? Or maybe...”

The Primordial Emyrean Master narrowed his eyes and looked up at the green sky.

He quickly changed his expression and rushed to the temple in the center of the continent.

He quickly arrived, finding Shen Huang as well as two more Celestials.



He knew that Shen Huang was the acting commander; even Chi Ying and the other dominators had to listen to him.

Just as he saw them, he shouted, "Hurry up and inform Boss Su and the cyborgs. Some danger is approaching the green glass planet!"

He found that the Fortune Bell kept ringing, even though he had moved to a different location. This meant that the danger wasn't near his temple. It wasn't something directly targeting him, but the entire planet!

"Empyrean Master... Huh?" Shen Huang was surprised; his expression changed quickly. "Are you serious?"

"My Fortune Bell is ringing!" said the old expert. He was working alongside the human settlers, and he didn't want anything to happen to their place.

Shen Huang's heart raced when he heard the Fortune Bell. He asked Song Yuan, his first disciple, to inform Su Ping as soon as possible. He then contacted the cyborg leaders to gather for a meeting.

Hardly had he sent the telepathic message when someone else appeared in the temple. It was Su Ping.

Having become an Ancestral God, he could easily cover the entire green glass planet with his thoughts. Although not on purpose, some of his attention had been fixed on the Primordial Empyrean Master. However, it was an inconspicuous, non-malicious monitoring, so the Fortune Bell didn't consider him an enemy; he saw everything that the Primordial Empyrean Master did.

Therefore, Su Ping realized that something was off when the old expert rushed over to the main temple.

"There's danger outside of the green glass planet?" Su Ping looked at the Primordial Empyrean Master.

The latter and Shen Huang were stunned, not expecting Su Ping to be as unpredictable.

"Y-Yes," said the Primordial Empyrean Master in a hurry. His heart was trembling, as he found that the young man was even more terrifying than before. Besides, all his cells were screaming, reminding him to stay clear from that youngster. It was just like being instinctively afraid of a monster.

Su Ping's eyes looked solemn. The Fortune Bell had even detected the danger sooner than him. It was a rare treasure that couldn't be neglected.

He instantly waved his hands. Vortices appeared before his eyes, which led to every part of the green glass planet.

“Gather!” Su Ping said softly.

Figures instantly stepped out of the vortices, all of them astonished after seeing him. They were the three cyborg leaders, as well as the other human dominators, including Chi Ying.

A channel had been directly established to the places they were at the time. Some of them were cultivating inside the barriers they had set up, but the channel appeared out of nowhere, completely disregarding those barriers.

“Boss Su!”

The cyborg leaders narrowed their eyes after assessing the situation. They had been in their respective temples until Su Ping pulled them to the temple. Such power was beyond their imagination.

“There might be danger outside the green glass planet. I need to investigate. Leaders, are you coming with me, or do you want to wait here?” Su Ping asked the cyborg leaders.

It was their world anyway. Su Ping was respectfully taking the stance of a guest.

“Danger?”

The hearts of the cyborg trio began to race, but they didn't question the news. Su Ping's serious demeanor was an indicator of how critical the situation was. Basha said, “I'll go with Boss Su. You can wait here.”

“Okay.”

Su Ping said to the other human experts, “Wait for updates here, and get ready for war!”

Everyone's hearts shook at the mention of war, as the word was often followed by gore and bloodshed.

Su Ping covered Basha with his aura and stepped out, escaping from everyone's perception and approaching the green glass sky.

Basha sensed that her body was covered by an immense power, clearly beyond her ability. She was helpless against it, which shocked her even more. *This human leader is far stronger than me. He could easily destroy all cyborgs and claim our territory.*

However, Su Ping's attitude made her feel much more at ease.

The next moment, to Basha's shock, Su Ping drew on the green glass with a finger. He easily made a hole, like a burning iron melting snow.

The human and cyborg pair passed through the hole and went beyond the green glass protection.

There was nothing different under the naked eye. It was the same silent universe.

However, Su Ping's senses quickly rushed forward like a torrent faster than light. He quickly sensed a deep green object moving at an astonishing speed, and its goal seemed to be their location.

*That's... another green glass planet?*

Su Ping narrowed his eyes, but he was secretly relieved. It was fine as long as the Heavens weren't involved; otherwise, he would be forced to flee again.

After all, there was no way of knowing if the Heavens would send terrifying existences, including the unknown Heavenly Dao that even the Golden Crow ancestor was afraid of.

Su Ping detected Ancestral Gods' auras outside of the incoming planet. There was more than one.

*A high-level green glass world? It's probably where the bigshots of cyborgs are hiding.* Su Ping's eyes glittered, as he was a bit delighted by the prospect. The bad omen sensed by the Primordial Empyrean Master was probably that green glass planet. After all, he was also considered a bad omen when probing the old expert.

He had been planning to look for Ancestral Gods in that universe; it was a surprise to see them looking for him instead.

He was an Ancestral God now, which enabled communication among equals to establish an alliance.

"Danger? I don't see any monsters here..." Basha looked around but didn't find anything. She couldn't help but look at Su Ping in confusion.

Su Ping said, "Just wait. The Selvegas of your cyborg clan are coming."

"The Selvegas?"

Basha's eyes widened with excitement. She said, "Boss Su, by danger, did you mean the Selvega?"

"Maybe," said Su Ping.

Basha looked around hopefully. The lifelong dream of her people was to find the Selvega and join the bigger community; otherwise, they would always feel like stray dogs.

The deep green glass moved close enough to be noticed by Basha.

She was so thrilled she was on the verge of tears. She would have cried if she weren't afraid of alarming nearby monsters.

"Who are you?" said a solemn and intimidating voice that came from the newly arrived planet.

They had obviously noticed Su Ping's presence.

"I'm Su Ping, a human being. I'm an ally of your clan," replied Su Ping with a smile.

The green glass planet decelerated and stopped a million kilometers away. The auras of three Ancestral Gods appeared. One of them said telepathically, "Human? I've never heard of your kind. You're an intruder from another universe, aren't you?"

"Same as you, my hometown was attacked by the Heavens. We've been wandering beyond our universe until we accidentally ran into yours," said Su Ping calmly, "We have no ill intentions. I hope you won't misunderstand."

The Ancestral cyborg gods paused for a moment. Then, they all flashed and appeared dozens of meters away from Su Ping.

Basha felt dazed for a moment, overwhelmed by the Selvega who appeared out of nowhere. She was excited as she greeted her superiors with the most respectful cyborg etiquette.

The Ancestral God in the middle looked like a slim and tall man. He asked Basha, "Is it true that he's an ally of our clan?"

Basha was a bit stunned. Su Ping had handed over the Selvega's token to win her trust. *Was the token not from these Selvega?*

However, as she remembered the behavior of Su Ping's people, she nodded and said, "Boss Su has the Selvega's token. His people have been living with us. They are indeed peaceful, and have no ill intentions toward us."

"Humph. We have to see with our own eyes," said a young man on the left. He then waved at Basha.

She instantly understood, and obediently flew over.

The young man placed a finger on Basha's forehead. Soon after, he withdrew it and exchanged a glance with his two companions. He nodded and said, "Indeed, they've done nothing inappropriate. He's strong enough to suppress all of you. Fine. Now that we've met you, we'll take you away with us."

"What do you mean?" Su Ping asked.

"The Origin of the Universe warned us that the Heavens are approaching. We must leave. We can't hide here any longer, not even with the Dao Crystal," said the beautiful woman on the right, who had the perfect body curve.

Su Ping's expression changed somewhat, not expecting that they would need to escape again after such a short peaceful period.

"Elaine, drive the Dao Crystal along with him. We can't waste any more time. Let's talk on the way," said the slim and tall man in the middle.

The beautiful woman gave a slight nod and said to Su Ping, "Your cultivation method is interesting. I hope you can teach us someday."

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. The young man on the left had obviously read Basha's memories and shared them with his companions. He didn't refuse her. "No problem. We're allies, and we should help each other."

Elaine smiled. She could tell that Su Ping's people were friendly, based on Basha's memories. She didn't see Su Ping conquer the place with strength. Rather, he treated the locals respectfully.

It was rare to see an Ancestral God behave in such a way. Had Su Ping been willing to, all the cyborgs could have become slaves for humanity. Their heritage and knowledge would have also been taken.

"Let's go!" said the tall cyborg in the middle.

Elaine said to Su Ping, "You don't know the coordinates. How about I control it?"

Su Ping thought quickly and said, "No problem."

If anything happened, he could hide all humans inside his universe and then he could take shelter inside the pet store. The system would protect him in the event of a grave crisis.

Elaine instantly covered the green glass planet with her power and pushed it forward. She also said to Basha, "You can go back. Tell your people that we're going to a new world where we'll be free."

Basha felt dazed. She nodded obediently; she was bursting with questions, but she didn't dare ask while the three Selvega were present. She merely returned through the hole made by Su Ping.

"Boss Su, let's go inside, too." Elaine also went to the planet inside the Dao Crystal.

Su Ping followed her. As he watched Elaine push the green glass planet with her power while standing inside, he asked curiously, "You seem to know where you're going. Do you have another place to live besides here?"

"Yes," Elaine said, "The Heavens live in the world beyond the universes. However, that place was not their territory in the past. That is where the mythical creatures lived in the age of chaos. It's the most ancient realm of chaos!

"Unfortunately, the realm of chaos and the Great Dao collapsed. Infinite time and space turned into nothingness. You can only find an ocean of nothingness outside.

"However, there's one place that survived. It's also going to be our last shelter."

Su Ping was slightly dazed by the revelation, not expecting mythical creatures to live beyond the universes in the past.

"Wait, you're saying that the realm of chaos collapsed? The twelve Sorcerer Ancestors must still exist, right? Is that place where they live?" asked Su Ping.

"You know of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors?" Elaine looked at Su Ping in surprise. "I didn't expect to find that there was another race with a long history besides our clan. You should know that even direct descendants of the mythical creatures have forgotten that humiliating period.

"They've forgotten how great and prosperous their ancestors are!"

Su Ping could sense her disdain for gods in her tone. As he remembered the arrogance of the gods in the Archean Divinity, he shook his head and said, "If we can find the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, at least we'll have a place where we can settle for a long time."

"That is correct."

Elaine nodded. "We're going to the place where the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors are found. Only great existences born in chaos like them can keep a safe land."

Dazed, Su Ping hurriedly asked, "Which Sorcerer Ancestor are we going to meet exactly?"

“We must not call Sorcerer Ancestors by their names. You’ll know when we get there.” Elaine glanced at Su Ping. Basha’s memories showed that humans weren’t arrogant and she liked them, but that didn’t mean she would trust Su Ping completely. There were many bloody lessons in their history.

Some clans were intimidated by the Heavens and voluntarily became their dogs. That was why the new cyborgs were so vigilant of Su Ping at first.

“Fine.”

Su Ping didn’t ask further. He would know the answer once they met. Still, he knew it wouldn’t be the Golden Crow ancestor. After all, the Golden Crows had already secluded themselves from the outside world.

*Of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, I’ve only seen one, the Golden Crow ancestor. I haven’t seen the others...*

Su Ping’s eyes glittered and he said to Elaine, “How long is this trip going to take? Are you confident in getting there safely?”

“It depends on whether our journey is smooth or not. There are a lot of collapsed and rotten Great Daos we must avoid. If we’re unlucky, we may be delayed by a couple of hundred years.”

Elaine added, “As for whether or not we can arrive safely, we can only try our best. If anything happens, we’ll flee together.”

Su Ping nodded and asked in confusion, “Aren’t we going to inform others before we flee?”

“Others?”

“The other Ancestral Gods of your clan.”

“Huh?”

Elaine instantly looked at Su Ping. “You’ve seen other Ancestral Gods of our clan? Where?”

“...” Su Ping certainly wouldn’t admit he had seen them in a cultivation site. He hurriedly said, “You can’t be the only Ancestral Gods in your clan, right?”

Elaine found his words increasingly weird; she looked at Su Ping even more suspiciously. She became vigilant, and got ready for any sneak attacks. She said calmly, “We were invaded by the Heavens and a lot of Ancestral Gods died in the war.

The losses were tragic, and we're the only survivors left. Of course, there may be other survivors elsewhere, but there's no time to search for them."

Su Ping asked, "You must have a special locating method, right? How exactly did you find our place?"

Elaine's expression changed a bit. In the catastrophe caused by the Heavens, they were forced to split up and hide in different Dao Crystals. They remembered each other's locations and agreed that they wouldn't drift away even if they encountered something; they would only retreat if a destructive crisis took place.

They had a map of the several Dao Crystal's locations.

After years of searching, they found that a lot of Dao Crystals had been destroyed by the beasts left by the Heavens.

"We're in a rush. You happened to be on our escape route, so we came to take a look." Elaine glanced at Su Ping and asked, "Are you the only Ancestral God among humans?"

"I'm the only one in our universe," said Su Ping, "That's why we couldn't resist the Heavens at all, and were forced to flee."

Elaine didn't say anything. She didn't fully trust him.

Su Ping noticed her vigilance but didn't try explaining further. He said, "Madam, go ahead and keep on manning the Dao Crystal. Look for me if there's a problem."

Elaine's eyes glittered. She said, "Fine."

Su Ping returned to the continent. The journey would take hundreds of years, so he certainly wouldn't waste time steering the planet; it was enough for him to train in cultivation sites for a long time.

Although it was rather risky and equivalent to leaving the car's steering wheel to a total stranger, Su Ping believed that those people wouldn't kill their own kind.

The cyborgs were also victims of the Heavens. Su Ping was fine with any direction, as long as they weren't going to meet the Heavens.

Besides, even if there was any danger, he could hide everyone inside his universe and escape in his store.

He had yet to test the store's defensive limits, Su Ping estimated that it should be at the ancestor level.



That was already the upper limit Su Ping knew of, and also the cultivator's final destination. No creatures could ever cultivate to that level after being born.

However, Su Ping didn't enter the cultivation site before leaving the cyborgs' universe. After all, he had learned that the Heavens were approaching and it was still unknown if they could leave safely.

Seizing the opportunity, Su Ping informed his master that he was going to help all Celestials advance to the Dao Heart State.

In case of a crisis, they would be able to gather all humans on the continent as soon as possible and keep everyone inside his store.

Shen Huang was delighted by the news. He immediately asked all Celestials to gather in the temple.

The first Celestial went to Su Ping's store.

The latter didn't dally with chitchat. He took the man to the test room and had him pick the Dao Heart he wanted. Once the inheritance was imparted, he prepared a tribulation for him.

The man's potential was fully developed, and his strength was completely consolidated.

In the sky under the green glass—Elaine flew alone in the silent universe as she manned the Dao Crystal like a barely noticeable grain of sand.

It was a surprise for her to see Su Ping give her the full control of the Dao Crystal. *Is the human so innocent that he fully trusts us, or does he have other trump cards?*

She recalled Basha's memories, so she didn't think there was another Ancestral God among humans.

That being the case, even if Su Ping had hidden some of his strength, it would be impossible for him to defeat the three of them.

Besides... They didn't represent the entirety of their top forces. They were still hiding something.

As she thought of this, Elaine could only say that the human was innocent and trusting.

She looked at the dark universe through the Dao Crystal as she flew forward, feeling sad at the thought of permanently leaving the universe where she was born.

It had been a brilliant place once, with dazzling nebulae and countless flying spaceships. However, only desolation remained.

The debris of many spaceships floated in the void; part of it was already covered in thick dust. Some of the bodies of her powerful compatriots were frozen in the void.

“The Heavens...”

Hatred surfaced in Elaine’s eyes. She wasn’t an Ancestral God when the war broke out, only a Dao Heart expert.

A hundred thousand years after the war, the gore still haunted and tortured her day and night. She was eventually awakened, and became an Ancestral God.

...

Time flew.

A week passed in the blink of an eye.

On the continent—

All the human Celestials became dominators, using one of the three Dao Hearts presented by Su Ping, according to their preference. It would be impossible for them to become Ancestral Gods after receiving a preselected Dao Heart, but that was already a great gift for them.

After all, they could barely reach the Dao Heart State with their own potential.

The Dao Crystal was gradually flown to the other side of the universe as the week passed. They encountered two more Dao Crystal worlds on the way; one of them had an Ancestral God cyborg.

Altogether four Dao Crystals were moving towards the edge of the universe.

Elaine and the others were silent as they watched the wall protecting the universe ever closer. They knew they would never return.

They could vaguely feel the will of the universe when they were about to leave. It was a very gentle power, whispering goodbye to her children like a mother would.

Elaine and the other Ancestral Gods’ had moist eyes. Only they—being Ancestral Gods—could feel the will of the universe, and the profound feelings therein.

They had relied on their talent and the help of the Universe’s Origin as they grew. That kind of help couldn’t be felt until they became Ancestral Gods, and could only ascribe it to their luck.

However, there was a law behind everything. The rise of the sun, the setting of the stars, and even the falling snowflakes were all made of the Great Dao, somehow predestined.

Destruction, birth, recreation, and death. This was just a miniature, a tiny gear on an enormous wheel that pushed the greater fate.

They silently said goodbye in their hearts. Then, they saw the universe split open, to find a strange channel outside.

That was a channel that the universe had opened for them. It led to somewhere safe.

It was also the last thing the universe would do for them.

Elaine and the others gritted their teeth and flew into the twisted channel without hesitation.

Time was paused there. The area inside the channel was a strange place where time and space didn't matter. They were already far in a distant location when they got out on the other end of the channel.

The vortex slowly closed and dispersed behind them.

The cyborg universe's aura was gone, just like that.

They gazed in silence, and showed their highest respects according to cyborg etiquette. It was the first time for them to use that gesture since they became Ancestral Gods.

After paying respects, the tall and slim cyborg took out a map and a festering severed hand; even some bones were showing. However, it emitted the aura of immortality, as if it had existed for countless years.

The severed hand floated in the void. Then, it slowly raised the index finger and pointed to a certain direction.

The tall and slim cyborg heaved a sigh of relief. He stored the hand and said, "Let's go."

They returned to the Dao Crystal and concealed their auras, carefully erasing all of their traces as they moved.

Inside the Dao Crystal, on the continent—Su Ping looked on with hands behind his back, completely silent.

He had seen how the cyborgs escaped the universe. They had fled successfully with the help of the Universe's Origin.

"We've already found the direction. We should be able to get there soon, as long as we're careful." Elaine's figure was formed near Su Ping as a gentle light.

"How soon exactly?"

"Soon means soon. Three hundred years, perhaps," said Elaine.

Su Ping nodded and said, "Thank you for your hard work in advance."

"You're still planning on letting me control the crystal?" asked Elaine.

Su Ping said, "I'm planning on cultivating for a while. Find my people if you need anything. They'll inform me."

She couldn't help but say, "You already have an undying universe. The next realm belongs to the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; it's not a level that we can reach through cultivation. Cultivating is pointless from this point on. Aren't you being too careless if you're only cultivating?"

"How do you know it won't work if you don't try? Besides, I'm not trying to reach higher levels. In any case, I'll always become stronger as long as I keep cultivating, even if just a little bit," said Su Ping.

Elaine touched her forehead and said, "Are all humans as weird as you?"

"I don't think so."

After saying goodbye to her, Su Ping returned to the pet store and asked the system in his heart, "System, you can sense the things around the store, right? Can you send messages inside the cultivation sites if anything happens?"

"Yes, but it's not free," said the system casually, "Don't be nervous. It only costs a hundred thousand energy points."

Su Ping's lips twitched. The system was truly as greedy as ever.

It was just a simple notification. It was clearly taking advantage of him.

Su Ping shook his head, unwilling to argue with the system. His store was always filled with Ascendant guests every day, who took Ascendant-level pets for training. That tiny bit of expenditure was nothing compared to his abundant income.

After passing by the counter, Su Ping asked Joanna for a list of pets that required professional training. He then picked them in the pet room.

He was strong enough to sign temporary contracts through the Contract Dao Heart, without the need of the system's temporary contract.

He could also randomly bond or release pets without suffering soul exhaustion after canceling a contract.

His understanding of the Great Dao was perfect after reaching the Ancestral God level. He was now even more unbelievable than the Creator.

After all, the Creator only created one universe.

That could easily be done by someone with cultivation in the Celestial State.

After picking the pets, Su Ping brought up the sites' listing. He didn't browse through the list this time, since he focused on the very first name, which was also the hidden cultivation site above all the other cultivation sites: the Remains of High Heavens!

The ticket to enter that site was very expensive. A hundred million energy points per visit.

Every resurrection would cost a million energy points.

Su Ping didn't have much savings in the past. Also, judging from the ticket fee, it was an extremely dangerous place. Even if he went there, he would probably be killed in a flash. That kind of trip used to be pointless.

However, things were different now. He had become as strong as the best experts in history after breaking through.

Only the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors were stronger than him.

He now felt confident of exploring that place.

He wanted to find out how dangerous the place was, to deserve such an unbelievable ticket fee.

"Warning! The host is about to enter a chaos-level cultivation site. The ticket fee is a hundred million energy points. Please confirm!" The system's solemn voice made Su Ping's heart race.

He replied without hesitation, "Confirm."

He soon noticed how his store was a hundred million points short. But before he could feel the pinch, he saw the transportation vortex open. The vortex itself emitted an ominous aura, as if some sort of unknown power had invaded the store.

Su Ping suddenly felt nervous, like in the first visit ever to a cultivation site. He took a deep breath and stepped into the vortex.

The familiar teleportation feeling lasted a long time. Once he regained his senses, he saw a dazzling light and heard deafening noises.

“This is...”

Su Ping found himself in the middle of a magnificent war. He was as unremarkable as an ant on the battlefield.

The dazzling light was caused by the explosion of countless Great Daos, and the deafening noises were actual universes blowing up.

A terrifying war taking place right before his eyes.

Warships as huge as universes exploded in the void. Even more warships surged out like bees dashing out of a honeycomb.

Myriads of people rose to the sky, letting out roars that could set one’s blood on fire. They marched on.

Dragon roars echoed in the world. They collapsed, wailing and shedding blood. The fire of divine phoenixes illuminated the infinite darkness, and dashed into the sky as dazzling red colors.

In front of the roaring, marching soldiers were figures as great as glittering statues. They had almost the same height, face and aura, as if copied from the same model. They belonged to a species he would never forget.

The Heavens!

Countless members of the Heavens were moving forward like a high wall.

On the other hand, the unknown species, including countless experts, dragons and phoenixes, were crushed by the iron wall. They were like fireflies in front of a bulldozer, leaving blood and shattered Great Daos everywhere.

Su Ping was right at the battlefield’s edge. His cells seemed to have melted by the infinite furious roars around him. The intense hatred and fury in those roars, despite being from another species, touched the feelings in Su Ping’s heart. He could feel their anger and despair!

A thousand, ten thousand, countless dragons flew towards the high wall of Heavens like the sand in a river.

Su Ping could notice their scales as they flew past him. All those dragons were in the Dao Heart State. Some were even Ancestral Gods.

Boom!

Their scorching auras swept over and Su Ping was knocked away. The pain instantly woke him up. He saw that countless experts were charging forth, almost thirty of them being Ancestral Gods, and thousands of Dao Heart experts.

Su Ping looked at the Heavens in the distance and quickly asked, "System, you can resurrect me even if I'm killed by the Heavens, right? Just like before?"

"Yes," replied the system peacefully.

Su Ping felt relieved. Then, his eyes turned purely black; even the whites were gone. His face was filled with hatred and an immense killing intent.

He roared and his body expanded as he turned into a member of the Primitive Chaos Clan. He stepped out like a hundred-thousand meter tall mythical creature, causing the ground to tremble as he moved. A bloody sword was formed in his hand, made of his blood and the Fire Dao. It could slash an undying universe apart.

"Die!!" Su Ping roared and charged along with the dragons.

The dragon ancestors noticed his presence and looked back at him. They showed surprised when they saw his furious face but none of them stopped him. They could tell that his hatred wasn't aimed at them, but towards the Heavens further ahead.

None of them ask where he was from or why he was attacking. They had already become comrades, because they had a mutual enemy!

"Roar!!"

The dragon ancestors' roars echoed in the high sky. A golden light surfaced on their bodies, covering the dragons behind them. The rest of the dragons issued their own roars and their scales shone. It seemed that their bloodlines were resonating at that moment. An enormous, majestic figure appeared: it was a dragon made by the fusion of countless dragons!

The dragon eclipsed the entire world. The universes released by the other experts were incredibly small spheres in comparison to that behemoth.

After a boom, the dragon ancestors sunk their claws on the wall of Heavens. Immediately, tearing three of those humanoids to pieces. Black Dao Glyphs spurted out of their bodies and splashed in the void like worms.

The bodies quickly dried up, but they were soon replaced by three more members of the Heavens who filled the vacancies.

The dragon ancestors roared and waved their claws, crushing many Heavens.

A black circle darted from the rear of the Heavens and swallowed everything, while one of the dragon ancestors was attacking intensely. It looked like a black hole, only ten thousand times more terrifying.

The black circle obliterated everything on its way, until it expanded and caught the dragon ancestor's neck, pulling it out of the enormous fused dragon.

Without the dragon ancestor's lead, the dragon fusion instantly started to blur, as if about to disperse.

The dragon ancestor struggled furiously. It tore the black circle on its neck, but that only made the black circle narrower.

It suddenly roared and decisively sliced its own neck!

The dragon preferred to break its own neck than be humiliated!

The missing neck section was slowly regenerated. At a slow pace, but it was happening. However, a black circle appeared along with the flesh and blood.

The dragon ancestor was shocked and furious. It was like an unshakeable curse.

Splash!

A black chain was suddenly connected to the circle, which led to some place further behind. This instantly turned the black circle into a collar that pulled the dragon ancestor toward the wall of the Heavens.

The dragon ancestor roared and struggled hard. It severed its head a second time and simply turned around to fly back.

However, black circles grew out all over its body, and the chain quickly turned into several chains to haul its body.

The dragon ancestor released its universe, which was also wreathed by a black circle.

Its head grew out again, and roared as it was pulled by the black circles.

Boom. The massive creature suddenly detonated its universe. The terrifying power allowed it to spew destroying flames that drowned the Heavens. The flames died out soon after, though. The blackened flesh of the Heavens was quickly healed, too.



The dragon ancestor roared in grief. The dragons behind it also roared, feeling sad and furious.

Bang!

All of a sudden, a sparkling figure flew by and a burning sword fiercely slashed down on the black circles constricting the dragon ancestor, causing infinite sparks.

The dragon ancestor raised its head, only to see a tiny figure trying to cut the chains.

“Damn it!”

Su Ping slashed in a furious frenzy, realizing he was unable to break them. The chains only shook, however. They were extremely hard.

Whoosh!

One of the chains split up and tried to trap him.

Su Ping quickly dodged them. He wore an awful expression. He had used all his strength in his attacks, but he couldn't damage the black links. *Is it an ancestral-level attack?*

The dragon raised its head and gazed at Su Ping.

Their eyes met. It was the first time seeing each other, but Su Ping felt an extreme pain. He knew he couldn't save the great dragon.

“We won't regret fighting the Heavens, even if we burn away!” said an intimidating and determined voice inside Su Ping's head. He knew it was a thought coming from the dragon ancestor, conveying its solid determination.

Su Ping's heart was shaken.

The next moment, he saw that powerful light erupted from the dragon ancestor and a soul flew out, burning in the most dazzling way possible. Its blood, life and its universe were all fully condensed at that moment. It charged at the Heavens with a shocking roar that would last eternally!

The burning dragon soul drowned the wall of the Heavens.

The furious flames burned for a long time without stopping, until a dark fog appeared from a place behind the wall; its highly corrosive nature was actually able to extinguish the flames. Only some empty shells of the Heavens remained in the burnt parts of the wall. However, those shells were soon pulled back.

A new batch of Heavens filled up those spots. There seemed to be an infinite number of them.

Su Ping stared at the scene; however, there was no despair in his eyes. He suddenly turned around and flew back to where the dragons were gathered.

While flying, Su Ping summoned the Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets.

Hardly had the Inferno Dragon flown out when it detected its kin nearby. Although there were many types of dragons, their core bloodline was the same.

Su Ping's dragon was rather surprised, but soon felt the grief and wrath of its brethren. The feeling was hard to describe, but some sort of fire was instantly ignited deep in its heart.

It roared and flew to meet them.

Su Ping moved to a place near the dragons and expanded his Dao Heart, his thoughts spreading toward the dragons. He was trying to sign a contract with them, to gather the enormous dragon figure again. Only this could unite their power!

Otherwise, the Ascendant-level dragons would be squeezed to death before they reached the front lines.

The dragons instantly roared, feeling Su Ping's will. Many Dao Heart dragons were resisting.

But the next moment, Su Ping poured his will and fury into his thoughts, letting them know his intentions.

Soon after, all those dragons gathered around Su Ping. They weren't following him exactly, but the fury and killing intent he had sent out. They all shared the same target, which was the Heavens.

"Die!" Su Ping roared and all the dragons echoed.

The deafening roar was spread all over the battlefield, astonishing many beings on the warships and the Ancestral Gods in the distance.

Su Ping felt that the contract was quickly expanding, like vines in the bodies and souls of the dragons, as they gave their lives to him unconditionally. Their draconic might and their hate towards the Heavens also influenced him through the contract, making him even more furious.

“Since we’re all ready to sacrifice ourselves, we must make them pay a dear price, even if the cost is death!”

Feeling the resolve of those dragons, Su Ping realized why they would fight in a war they could not win. They had to go on and fight, even if they were doomed to failure and destruction!

There was nowhere else to go!

Since they were cornered, they were going to give it all!

The dragon’s dignity stopped them from running for their lives or even keeping seeds of their kind for the future, because even the weakest dragons had their pride and would do anything but abandon their kin!

A golden light surfaced on the dragons and the dragon illusion was condensed once more. Su Ping roared and charged in front of the dragons to clash against the Heavens, with himself spearheading the attack.

The golden illusion that gathered the power of all dragons and Su Ping’s struck the wall of the Heavens.

Su Ping instantly felt overwhelmed by the abundant willpower gathered. It was like hitting into a vast ocean of cotton. Such a magnificent amount of willpower could swallow him easily.

However, he was quick to recover his consciousness; like a sharp needle, he pierced that magnificent willpower. As he looked at the rows of Heavens’ creatures, Su Ping gathered all his blood and aura and swung his sword fiercely.

After a boom, a sword aura erupted from the golden dragon figure, as if the dragon were spitting it out. It slashed the high wall of the Heavens and instantly caused a terrifying impact.

Almost ten members of the Heavens were knocked down, huge wounds inflicted on their bodies. The unaffected aliens looked at them with appalling light in their eyes.

The dozens of aliens raised their hands and fused their power to form a gigantic hand to suppress the enemy.

Lightning was coursing the palm’s edges, which was actually the Heavenly Tribulation for Ancestral Gods!

“Break!!” Su Ping roared. While relying on his resurrection ability, he charged at the gigantic hand on his own. He instantly felt the surging power; his universe was suppressed, making him incapable of self-detonating.

Boom. Su Ping's body exploded.

He was quickly revived the next moment; not by the system, but through the power of his undying universe. The previous strike wasn't enough to kill him.

However, a black chain flew over and tied him up right after respawning.

Su Ping instantly felt his power was being restrained; the parts of his body making contact with the chain were sending him extreme pain signals, not only physical but also to his soul. It was unavoidable.

Su Ping detonated his universe and broke free from the chain with the power of the explosion. He exerted some strength and pulled the chain toward him.

It wasn't until that moment that Su Ping understood the pain and despair experienced by the dragon ancestor while ensnared by the chain.

"Do you think all creatures are your slaves?" roared Su Ping. He pulled the chain so hard his hands bled. The other side of the chain was like a heartless machine pulling him over inch by inch, and was about to be hauled out of the golden dragon figure. Once out of the fusion, the dragons would lose their backbone.

Su Ping gritted his teeth. Although he could bond the dragons through the contract, he didn't use their power. They were in the Emyrean. Su Ping tried to establish a contract with the world, only to find that there was no consciousness to bond with.

He was able to make use of the Archean Divinity's power because it had Original Wisdom.

The vast Emyrean, however, was empty. There was nothing but the wandering Great Dao.

All the Great Daos were fleeing at the moment. The only thing remaining was the power that other people were releasing.

"Explode!"

Su Ping had no choice but to self-detonate again, since he was about to be pulled out of the dragon figure. His body, mind and undying universe exploded at the same time.

The violent power only made him endure a few seconds.

He used that time window to pull the chain with both arms and forcefully return to the dragon fusion.

The self-explosion effect was soon gone, and Su Ping's body and mind perished, too. All the dragons sensed that the furious and stubborn willpower on the other end of the contract was gone. Maybe because of the contract—although they had never seen Su Ping before—they roared in grief at the same time.

Su Ping's body quickly reappeared as they roared. This time, he resurrected through the system.

He took a deep breath, then sighed in relief, noticing that the chain pulling him vanished. The artifact was extremely strange, tantamount to a curse. He felt that he would have been haunted by it, even if his body were reborn a million times. He could only completely die and get rid of the chain through the system.

Since he realized the golden dragon image was about to disappear, Su Ping released his willpower and signed contracts again.

The dragons—which were about to scatter—were shocked by Su Ping's resurrection. There was no time for them to think. They quickly accepted Su Ping's invitation.

The golden dragon figure reappeared, and Su Ping charged at the Heavens again.

Su Ping was only mediocre among Ancestral Gods since he was incapable of using the power of the world or that of the dragons.

He didn't want to use the power of the latter because they couldn't replenish it easily.

As for Su Ping, he could resurrect through the system by spending some energy points.

Bang!

Su Ping swung his sword again, and the dragon illusion roared. Some of the Dao Heart dragons controlled the claws and struck the high wall of the Heavens, causing cracks.

On the other side—flames soared to the sky. The other Ancestral Gods were crazily charging at the high wall.

Hum!

A beam of dazzling light suddenly appeared in the frontline.

Su Ping instantly felt an overwhelming pressure that poured down over him like a bucket of cold water; his entire body felt cold. The most enormous Wheel of Judgment spun out of the high wall of the Heavens and swallowed everything on its way.

The golden dragon figure made by the dragons became blurry, as its golden light was attracted to the grand artifact.

Su Ping stared at the scene in a daze. While facing the rapidly revolving Wheel of Judgment, he was like a person under a downpour. He felt so insignificant, it felt like being in a dream.

Bang!

All of a sudden—there was a resounding noise from an impact, and the violent force flung Su Ping as well as the dragons backwards.

The dragon illusion protected them; none of the dragons were injured or killed.

Su Ping raised his head, only to see the most unusual scene. An indescribably brilliant universe had collided with the Wheel of Judgment and stopped it from moving. It was as if the Wheel of Judgment were choking after swallowing something beyond massive.

Also, that universe... was too brilliant.

The light's power filled up every corner. Su Ping had never seen such a brilliant cosmos, which seemed to harbor billions of stars.

*This is not an undying universe...* He raised his head and looked towards the source of a horrifying pressure. He then saw a gigantic creature emitting an imposing aura, its size as big as a star. Just one quick look inspired such reverence that made Su Ping want to kneel.

*Ancestor!*

Su Ping knew it was definitely as strong as the Golden Crow ancestor.

However, the appearance was different. It was a fat creature with the likeness of a huge toad, only much more formidable. It was radiating an abundant aura of chaos, and its pores released infinite light. It was surrounded by brilliant stars as it breathed.

The pressure felt by all the travelers was considerably reduced as the ancestor took action and blocked the Wheel of Judgment. Su Ping stopped hesitating; he turned around to charge at the high wall of the Heavens along with the dragons.

The high wall was no longer intact after the attack of the massive golden dragon; cracks began to appear.

The Heavens seemed to have given up on their previous plan, now splitting their forces into squads and marching towards the dragon formation.

Su Ping controlled the dragon head and fought five Heavenly Dao warriors. To his surprise, all of them were as strong as Ancestral Gods. Furthermore, their coordinated attacks rendered him incapable of defending, despite the help of the dragons.

The longer he fought, the more brutal he became. Although forced to retreat, he stopped trying to block them and attacked with full strength.

Bang!

His sword was soon able to rip one of the Heavenly Dao warriors apart, but the remaining four returned the favor and ripped him to pieces. Even his undying universe was pulverized.

Su Ping's body was soon reborn and he established a new contract, which reconstituted the weakening golden dragon. He charged at the remaining four Heavenly Dao warriors.

The aliens were rather surprised, but they were still expressionless as they surrounded him. Their teamwork was seamless; Su Ping was unable to fight back.

The latter burned all his power and slashed at one of the enemies, but they were ready for it this time. The other three took action and blocked Su Ping's attack, which failed to destroy the target's Wheel of Judgment.

Su Ping's power was burnt up. He could only wait until it was regenerated.

As he fought on, he discovered that the giant dragon formation was quickly declining. He turned around, only to see the dragons being slaughtered by the Heavenly Dao.

Despite the dragon array's protection, the Heavenly Dao warrior squads were on a killing spree, causing several wound-like cracks on the golden dragon figure.

Deprived of the protective side of the array, the dragons within were easily hunted by the Heavenly Dao squads, incapable of offering resistance.

Su Ping noticed the dragons' relentless attitude, fighting without a single thought of running.

He even saw the Inferno Dragon and the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon fighting alongside them with bloodshot eyes.

Su Ping's expression looked troubled. All his allies would be annihilated if they continued like that.

He raised his head and looked around, only to see battles everywhere. The other Ancestral Gods were also surrounded by Heavenly Dao warriors.

As for the ancestor, it was fighting a blurry shadow in another dimension, high above. It had no time to lend a hand.

*All of us will die if this goes on...*

Su Ping's heart was turning cold as he watched. He wasn't afraid of death; besides, he wouldn't truly die here. He only felt sorry for those who were fighting hard; they would die for good under such conditions.

He was determined to fight alongside them, but he had the option of leaving by resorting to resurrect in a random place if he was the only one standing.

As for the others, only their bodies would be left there.

Bang!

Su Ping forced the four Heavenly Dao warriors to retreat. The golden dragon's strength had declined, even more as dragons were injured and killed. Su Ping could barely resist against the four Heavenly Dao warriors, and he was no longer able to fight back. Even if he risked his life, the enemy was prepared to counter that tactic.

*Should we just run?*

Su Ping swallowed. Being an Ancestral God, he could spread his thoughts to the entire battlefield. Who knew if those fighters would listen to him, but at least they would hear him.

However, Su Ping found it difficult to spit out what he had in mind.

While looking at the furious faces of the blood-soaked fighters, he knew they had already ruled out the option of "escape."

They would fight until their last drop of blood was shed!

"Heavens... You've gone too far!!" Su Ping gritted his teeth. If all those beings died, it wouldn't just be the demise of a single universe.

There were already countless dragons behind him.

Boom!

The battle continued. Su Ping's didn't last for long after his combat ability was negated, so he chose to burn his vitality and resurrect through the system, all to rejoin the fight right after.

The lack of strength became increasingly evident as the battle continued. The undying universe of fire was too weak to tackle four Heavenly Dao Ancestral Gods.

As for an epiphany in battle... It didn't matter anymore.



Su Ping had already seen his path. What he needed was not an epiphany, but the time to cultivate.

When his level was low and the gap in strength was small, a momentary enlightenment could represent a lot of cultivation time spared and a surge in combat ability. However, it was very difficult for an Ancestral God like him to become stronger.

For his strength to grow, he could only work on condensing a second undying universe. However, this would take time.

Boom!

Su Ping fought and shed blood again and again. He couldn't remember how many times he had resurrected, and he couldn't see the dragons anymore. They were all dead.

He saw that some Ancestral Gods had died in other battlefields; they were clearly on the losing side.

Still, even though failure was so clearly inevitable, those who were still alive seemed oblivious to the fact. They were still fighting in a crazy and tireless manner, as if the war had just begun.

Su Ping didn't roar anymore; he simply drained his strength over and over to attack. He knew they were losing the war, but he chose to fight with them until the last moment.

Bang!!

The entire battlefield shook after an intense impact. Su Ping stopped his crazy hacking and slashing to see the enormous ancestor landing. The brilliant universe behind its back had already dimmed; it looked like a black ball, as all its light was completely gone.

Su Ping's heart couldn't help but race.

The ancestor rolled its enormous eyes and looked down at the entire battlefield with sadness and impotence. It suddenly opened its mouth and released a power.

Su Ping and the Heavenly Dao Ancestral Gods he was fighting were instantly knocked away.

At the same time, our hero sensed how he was being enshrouded by a warm and magnificent power; still there was a sense of exhaustion coming from it.

The previously chaotic battlefield was split apart at that moment.

The Heavenly Dao was separated from the others.

“Leave this place. Try your best to survive. Your sacrifice is meaningless...” said a distant thought. Although the message was constructed in a different language, Su Ping could clearly and precisely feel the emotion conveyed.

He was in shock.

At the same time—the others who were saved also recovered from their battle-frenzied status. They looked at the ancestor’s majestic back with bloodshot eyes. Some even fell on their knees and cried.

A gentle yet exhausted voice sounded in Su Ping’s head, “Little guy from the primitive clan, thank you for your help. The Hun Yu Clan will remember your favor. I’m sorry for not helping when your clan was destroyed. I hope your bloodline is able to carry on...”

Su Ping was instantly dazed. His pupils widened a little bit, as the ancestor was talking to him alone.

So, he had been considered as a member of the Primitive Chaos Clan.

“Senior, you should run with us!” said Su Ping in a hurry.

Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu’s voice was transmitted again, “They’re trying to monopolize chaos. I cannot leave...” The message stopped there. It was obvious that none of the allied forces would survive if the great expert left. Besides, it had nowhere to run; it wouldn’t have led its people to fight so relentlessly had they not been cornered.

Since it had decided to fight, it would be to the death!

Boom!

A magnificent power pushed Su Ping and the others away. They instantly saw flashing colors and the scenery changed quickly. The Sorcerer Ancestor’s image became blurry, while the Heavens also became twisted in a flash, until everything in front of their eyes was gone.

Following that, infinite darkness.

To his surprise, Su Ping discovered that they had been pushed countless light years away. He was no longer able to sense the auras of the Heavens or that of Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu.

Su Ping felt sad as he looked at the dark and silent void and remembered the great expert’s back.

He knew it would be impossible for the guy to escape.

Those Heavens were clearly aiming for the Sorcerer Ancestor.

It was impossible to become a Sorcerer Ancestor through cultivation, since the state itself was a gift bestowed from birth. Their population was limited. As the Heavens saw it, Ancestral Gods were just troublesome ants that would fall eventually. That is, after the Sorcerer Ancestor died!

None of them would have the power to resist the Heavens by then.

Hardly had Su Ping arrived in the Empyrean Cultivation Site when he witnessed a Sorcerer Ancestor sacrificing itself and countless species fighting fearlessly alongside it.

*There had always been twelve Sorcerer Ancestors in history, but one of them just died. The Golden Crow's Chief Elder mentioned that a Sorcerer Ancestor died before the Golden Crows had chosen to live in seclusion. I wonder how many Sorcerer Ancestors are still out there...*

Su Ping's face was gloomy. His cultivation had been meteoric as he quickly reached the Ancestral God realm; he was standing at the peak of all lives, yet he still felt lacking.

That feeling of weakness had haunted him ever since he started cultivating. He could not rest because of it.

A loud voice echoed among all the survivors. "Hurry up and leave this place. We must not let the Sorcerer Ancestor die for nothing."

The owner of the voice was an Ancestral God with the body of a lion and the tail of a dragon, which was an intimidating sight. There were several incurable wounds on its body, left by the Heavens; the lingering black-colored energy was eating away its flesh.

There were survivors from different species, but all of them were mythical creatures. Anyone with a thousand-meter stature was basically a dwarf in comparison.

Their leaders snapped out of their stupor and ordered their forces to retreat.

"Friend of the primitive clan, are you coming with us?"

A figure flew over. It was a massive bird with colorful feathers, and a wingspan of a hundred thousand meters. The creature emitted an abundant aura of chaos, while its sound was as pleasant as spring water.

Su Ping asked, "Do you have anywhere to go?"

Frustration flashed in the bird's eyes. It said, "Our home has been destroyed. We can only go to the Original Dragons for help. They've always been close to us, and will probably let us stay. We'll reestablish our home when the Sorcerer Ancestor returns!"

“The Original Dragons?”

Su Ping was slightly dazed. It had to be a clan with a Sorcerer Ancestor, too.

After all, only another Sorcerer Ancestor could be a Sorcerer Ancestor’s friend.

“All right. I’ll go with you,” said Su Ping.

The bird was not surprised, since the Primitive Chaos Clan had already been shattered by the Heavens. Su Ping, the only survivor, had probably escaped with his Sorcerer Ancestor’s help.

Besides, all the survivors had witnessed how he had led the dragons to fight in place of their ancestor.

“Come on, I’ll give you a ride,” said the bird.

Both of them were in the Undying State. For such a being to let Su Ping sit on its back was a gesture of gratitude.

Su Ping didn’t overthink the situation; he simply jumped to its back and sat down. He also narrowed his body down to the size of a human being, which made him look like a speck of dust on the bird.

The latter returned to the team and led its clan forward along with other Ancestral Gods.

“Is Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu coming back?” Su Ping asked on the bird’s back.

The bird replied with the firmest voice, “Of course. He is the strongest of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; the Heavens cannot possibly hurt him. We were too weak and were only liabilities. He had to stay to resist the Heavens in order to protect us.”

*Is that so...* Su Ping was silent.

The Primitive Chaos Clan’s Sorcerer Ancestor had been destroyed. The Golden Crows’ Sorcerer Ancestor was living in seclusion. The Heavens were stronger than he imagined... Could Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu really come back?

Su Ping didn’t know what to feel. He was somewhat confused and desperate, while also frustrated and helpless. He even wanted to turn himself off and fall asleep.

Perhaps all the problems would be gone after waking up.

He wore a troubled expression as he looked at the silent skies. He suddenly made out a familiar shape in the eternal darkness.

The Little Skeleton.

Su Ping's sense of loss was instantly gone. He clenched his fist.

The Little Skeleton hadn't been resurrected yet. How could he give up so easily?

He hadn't trained the Inferno Dragon to become the strongest dragon yet. How could he give up before fulfilling that promise?

He hadn't avenged the people from the Federation...

*I still haven't...*

He took a deep breath.

Su Ping's eyes became cold and calm again. He asked the giant, colorful bird, "I know little about the Sorcerer Ancestors. Tell me, besides your clan's, was another Sorcerer Ancestor defeated by the Heavens?"

"Defeated or killed?" the massive bird replied, "Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang and Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que were defeated. I don't know much about the others. As for the ones killed... Your Primitive Chaos Clan's Sorcerer Ancestor and Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi. I heard that the Sorcerer Ancestor of the Kun Peng's clan also encountered the Heavens, but I don't know the exact outcome."

Su Ping was dazed, and his heart pounded. "So, the Sorcerer Ancestors can escape from the Heavens? Are you saying that Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang is still alive?"

"Sure." The bird replied without thinking, giving the other an eye roll, dissatisfied by that question. "The Sorcerer Ancestors are the strongest creatures born from chaos. How could they be killed so easily? They would never lose, if the Heavens weren't so cunning."

The bird thought, *Do you think they're all as weak as your Sorcerer Ancestor?*

However, it chose to not say it aloud. In any case, Su Ping had risked his own life to help them. His actions didn't change the outcome in the slightest, but his courage was admirable.

Su Ping felt relieved.

Sorcerer Ancestors could die, but they weren't completely defenseless when facing the Heavens.

If some managed to escape, it was possible that Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu could make it to safety.

This also meant that it wasn't easy for the Heavens to kill Sorcerer Ancestors. They weren't much stronger in comparison.

"Do you know the Golden Crows?" Su Ping asked all of a sudden.

He didn't know if he could go and meet the Golden Crows from where he was at the moment. Their world was merely a secluded, yet advanced cultivation site, while he currently was in a chaos cultivation site you had to access with a hundred million energy points. If he reached the chaotic site from the Golden Crow world, his resurrections would only cost 900 energy points, which was nothing to him at the moment. That would practically make him invincible!

He would then become the Chaos clan's sharpest blade and play a role that no other Ancestral God could in the war against the Heavens.

"The Golden Crows?" the colorful bird said, "Of course I do. They are in the far south, which is too far from here. We can't go, unless Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu returns and takes us there."

"How long would it take for us to get there?" asked Su Ping.

"It's not a matter of time," replied the bird, "We would bump into the Heavens on the way. It's a long and dangerous journey. We would be destroyed if we travel alone through chaos."

Su Ping dismissed the thought upon hearing the answer. The only option at the moment would be to wait until they reached the Original Dragons.

Time flew.

Su Ping was incapable of sensing the flow of time while traveling in the Empyrean, as the concepts of space and time weren't present. Everything seemed to be still; only those who had awakened their Dao Hearts could move. Celestials could only hide in their small universes and push them to move, which was a slow and dangerous process.

Our hero felt odd, as they hadn't spotted other universes on the way.

He had seen many universe fragments in his previous travels beyond his world's universe. However, the journey thus far had been completely clean of any debris.

*Was this place swept clean by the Heavens recently?"*

Su Ping was puzzled by this.

Using the time flow of his inner universe as reference, he knew a month had passed.

The bird said, "We're almost there."

Su Ping also saw a vague light in the darkness ahead. The light grew as they approached, which turned out to be continents floating in the void.

Those extremely vast continents were protected by barriers that blocked the effects of outer space.

Their width and length had to be measured by light years.

Su Ping activated his chaos eyes, allowing him to see some of the continental views. Countless dragons were flying about; the place seemed to be a paradise of their kind.

Whoosh!

Two majestic dragons flew out from one of the continents. Their bodies were almost as big as half a planet, while their backs were like steel mountains. They carried an ancient feeling of toughness.

Both dragons had Undying State realms.

"Hun Yu Clan? What are you doing here!" one of the dragons whispered, but the voice rumbled; everybody was surrounded by the dragon's might.

Su Ping's eyes glittered. *This dragon is even more intimidating than the dragon ancestor I saw earlier. Is it a dragon king from the age of chaos?*

He summoned the Inferno Dragon and his other pets to have them experience the great dragon's true might.

Hardly had the Inferno Dragon appeared when it raised its head and stared at the two dragons with fright in its eyes. The fright became even deeper soon after, and flames seemed to be burning in its eyes. It was shaking, while its bones were cracking; even blood was flowing out of its scales.

Su Ping glanced at the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon and saw that it was having a rougher time resisting. It was almost crouching, as if holding back an excruciating pain.

The Dark Dragon Hound, on the other hand, was only slightly nervous; it was the same for the Purple Python and the others.

Su Ping examined the Inferno Dragon, and finally realized that the fellow was struggling to resist the two dragons' might.

Bloodline superiority was a substantial threat for other dragons. All dragons would have to bow before an Ancestral God dragon king. The fear was deep in their blood.

The Inferno Dragon was trying to suppress and resist the fear.

The effort was tantamount to resisting an instinctual trait.

If breathing was one of those instincts, the Inferno Dragon was essentially holding its breath. Not for a moment, but permanently!

Undoubtedly, going against your nature could be fatal.

Instincts couldn't just be disposed of; they were etched in your genes and blood. Removing them could prove fatal.

While looking at his stubborn dragon pet as it trembled, Su Ping suddenly felt that he didn't really help as a master.

Even if it truly became the strongest dragon in the world, it would all be through its own merit. He only gave it a push. Nothing more.

Su Ping extended his hands, to touch his dragons' legs.

Both dragons flinched, then stopped shivering. They looked at Su Ping simultaneously.

He smiled at them and said, "Don't give in. You won't lose to anyone!"

The two dragons felt dazed for a moment, but then their eagerness to fight grew.

*That's right. We won't lose to anyone!*

They had followed Su Ping and seen countless worlds, and numerous mythical creatures!

They could die, but they would never lose!

Roar!!

The Inferno Dragon was wreathed in flames as it let out a roar to the sky. The sound reached the billions of mythical creatures moving with them.

The two chaos dragons—whose teeth were already bigger than the Inferno Dragon itself—both heard the roar and looked at the colorful bird's back.

They noticed two fellow dragons, with impure bloodlines and an unremarkable Dao Heart State. However, instead of kneeling, they were staring back with heads held high!

Both of the massive dragons narrowed their eyes, with a glint of danger flashing in them.



Dragons would always be ruthless to inferior kin who challenged their authority.

The world of dragons was crueler than what outsiders could imagine. Hierarchy was extremely strict.

The colorful bird noticed this exchange and its expression changed a bit. At first, it was angry because Su Ping had summoned a few lesser creatures to ride on its back. *What does this guy think I am? Some sort of mount that anyone can ride?* Then, an even more infuriating act: those kids even roared at the Original Dragons!

They went there to seek refuge, not to provoke!









## Astral Pet Store (WN)

### Chapter 1494: New World (1)

Chapter 1494: New World (1)

"What's going on?"

The Primordial Empyrean Master was stunned and anxious. The Fortune Bell was never wrong. That could only mean that some sort of danger had indeed approached him, but it somehow disappeared.

Was the danger... from this continent?

Did someone plan a sneak attack?

The old expert thought of Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other dominators. He could truly be in danger if they joined hands to attack him.

He solemnly gazed at the Fortune Bell. While pondering, the bell glittered and rang again, indicating a bad omen.

"Again?"

The Empyrean Master was slightly nervous. He stepped out of his temple and observed the situation.

There was no sign of Chi Ying or anyone else outside the barrier, but the bell's ring was becoming increasingly louder, which meant that danger was approaching.

"Damn it!"

The old man looked awful. He found nothing, but the Fortune Bell was never wrong.

"The danger isn't close by? Or are they escaping detection in some way? Or maybe..."

The Primordial Empyrean Master narrowed his eyes and looked up at the green sky.

He quickly changed his expression and rushed to the temple in the center of the continent.

ADVERTISEMENT

He quickly arrived, finding Shen Huang as well as two more Celestials.

He knew that Shen Huang was the acting commander; even Chi Ying and the other dominators had to listen to him.

Just as he saw them, he shouted, "Hurry up and inform Boss Su and the cyborgs. Some danger is approaching the green glass planet!"

He found that the Fortune Bell kept ringing, even though he had moved to a different location. This meant that the danger wasn't near his temple. It wasn't something directly targeting him, but the entire planet!

"Empyrean Master... Huh?" Shen Huang was surprised; his expression changed quickly. "Are you serious?"

"My Fortune Bell is ringing!" said the old expert. He was working alongside the human settlers, and he didn't want anything to happen to their place.

Shen Huang's heart raced when he heard the Fortune Bell. He asked Song Yuan, his first disciple, to inform Su Ping as soon as possible. He then contacted the cyborg leaders to gather for a meeting.

Hardly had he sent the telepathic message when someone else appeared in the temple. It was Su Ping.

Having become an Ancestral God, he could easily cover the entire green glass planet with his thoughts. Although not on purpose, some of his attention had been fixed on the Primordial Empyrean Master. However, it was an inconspicuous, non-malicious monitoring, so the Fortune Bell didn't consider him an enemy; he saw everything that the Primordial Empyrean Master did.

Therefore, Su Ping realized that something was off when the old expert rushed over to the main temple.

"There's danger outside of the green glass planet?" Su Ping looked at the Primordial Empyrean Master.

The latter and Shen Huang were stunned, not expecting Su Ping to be as unpredictable.

"Y-Yes," said the Primordial Empyrean Master in a hurry. His heart was trembling, as he found that the young man was even more terrifying than before. Besides, all his cells were screaming, reminding him to stay clear from that youngster. It was just like being instinctively afraid of a monster.

Su Ping's eyes looked solemn. The Fortune Bell had even detected the danger sooner than him. It was a rare treasure that couldn't be neglected.

He instantly waved his hands. Vortices appeared before his eyes, which led to every part of the green glass planet.

ADVERTISEMENT

"Gather!" Su Ping said softly.

Figures instantly stepped out of the vortices, all of them astonished after seeing him. They were the three cyborg leaders, as well as the other human dominators, including Chi Ying.

A channel had been directly established to the places they were at the time. Some of them were cultivating inside the barriers they had set up, but the channel appeared out of nowhere, completely disregarding those barriers.

"Boss Su!"

The cyborg leaders narrowed their eyes after assessing the situation. They had been in their respective temples until Su Ping pulled them to the temple. Such power was beyond their imagination.

"There might be danger outside the green glass planet. I need to investigate. Leaders, are you coming with me, or do you want to wait here?" Su Ping asked the cyborg leaders.

It was their world anyway. Su Ping was respectfully taking the stance of a guest.

"Danger?"

The hearts of the cyborg trio began to race, but they didn't question the news. Su Ping's serious demeanor was an indicator of how critical the situation was. Basha said, "I'll go with Boss Su. You can wait here."

"Okay."

Su Ping said to the other human experts, "Wait for updates here, and get ready for war!"

Everyone's hearts shook at the mention of war, as the word was often followed by gore and bloodshed.

Su Ping covered Basha with his aura and stepped out, escaping from everyone's perception and approaching the green glass sky.

Basha sensed that her body was covered by an immense power, clearly beyond her ability. She was helpless against it, which shocked her even more. This human leader is far stronger than me. He could easily destroy all cyborgs and claim our territory.

However, Su Ping's attitude made her feel much more at ease.

ADVERTISEMENT

The next moment, to Basha's shock, Su Ping drew on the green glass with a finger. He easily made a hole, like a burning iron melting snow.

## Astral Pet Store (WN)

### Chapter 1495: New World (2)

Chapter 1495: New World (2)

The human and cyborg pair passed through the hole and went beyond the green glass protection.

There was nothing different under the naked eye. It was the same silent universe.

However, Su Ping's senses quickly rushed forward like a torrent faster than light. He quickly sensed a deep green object moving at an astonishing speed, and its goal seemed to be their location.

That's... another green glass planet?

Su Ping narrowed his eyes, but he was secretly relieved. It was fine as long as the Heavens weren't involved; otherwise, he would be forced to flee again.

After all, there was no way of knowing if the Heavens would send terrifying existences, including the unknown Heavenly Dao that even the Golden Crow ancestor was afraid of.

Su Ping detected Ancestral Gods' auras outside of the incoming planet. There was more than one.

A high-level green glass world? It's probably where the bigshots of cyborgs are hiding. Su Ping's eyes glittered, as he was a bit delighted by the prospect. The bad omen sensed by the Primordial Empyrean Master was probably that green glass planet. After all, he was also considered a bad omen when probing the old expert.

He had been planning to look for Ancestral Gods in that universe; it was a surprise to see them looking for him instead.

He was an Ancestral God now, which enabled communication among equals to establish an alliance.

ADVERTISEMENT

"Danger? I don't see any monsters here..." Basha looked around but didn't find anything. She couldn't help but look at Su Ping in confusion.

Su Ping said, "Just wait. The Selvegas of your cyborg clan are coming."

"The Selvegas?"

Basha's eyes widened with excitement. She said, "Boss Su, by danger, did you mean the Selvega?"

"Maybe," said Su Ping.

Basha looked around hopefully. The lifelong dream of her people was to find the Selvega and join the bigger community; otherwise, they would always feel like stray dogs.

The deep green glass moved close enough to be noticed by Basha.

She was so thrilled she was on the verge of tears. She would have cried if she weren't afraid of alarming nearby monsters.

"Who are you?" said a solemn and intimidating voice that came from the newly arrived planet.

They had obviously noticed Su Ping's presence.

"I'm Su Ping, a human being. I'm an ally of your clan," replied Su Ping with a smile.

ADVERTISEMENT

The green glass planet decelerated and stopped a million kilometers away. The auras of three Ancestral Gods appeared. One of them said telepathically, "Human? I've never heard of your kind. You're an intruder from another universe, aren't you?"

"Same as you, my hometown was attacked by the Heavens. We've been wandering beyond our universe until we accidentally ran into yours," said Su Ping calmly. "We have no ill intentions. I hope you won't misunderstand."

The Ancestral cyborg gods paused for a moment. Then, they all faded and appeared dozens of meters away from Su Ping.

Basha felt dazed for a moment, overwhelmed by the Selvega who appeared out of nowhere. She was excited as she greeted her superiors with the most respectful cyborg etiquette.

The Ancestral God in the middle looked like a slim and tall man. He asked Basha, "Is it true that he's an ally of our clan?"

Basha was a bit stunned. Su Ping had handed over the Selvega's token to win her trust. Was the token not from these Selvegas?

However, as she remembered the behavior of Su Ping's people, she nodded and said, "Boss Su has the Selvega's token. His people have been living with us. They are indeed peaceful, and have no ill intentions toward us."

"Humph. We have to see with our own eyes," said a young man on the left. He then waved at Basha.

She instantly understood, and obediently flew over.

The young man placed a finger on Basha's forehead. Soon after, he withdrew it and exchanged a glance with his two companions. He nodded and said, "Indeed, they've done nothing inappropriate. He's strong enough to suppress all of you. Fine. Now that we've met you, we'll take you away with us."

"What do you mean?" Su Ping asked.

ADVERTISEMENT

"The Origin of the Universe warned us that the Heavens are approaching. We must leave. We can't hide here any longer, not even with the Dao Crystal," said the beautiful woman on the right, who had the perfect body curve.

Su Ping's expression changed somewhat, not expecting that they would need to escape again after such a short peaceful period.

"Elaine, drive the Dao Crystal along with him. We can't waste any more time. Let's talk on the way," said the slim and tall man in the middle.

The beautiful woman gave a slight nod and said to Su Ping, "Your cultivation method is interesting. I hope you can teach us someday."

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. The young man on the left had obviously read Basha's memories and shared them with his companions. He didn't refuse her. "No problem. We're allies, and we should help each other."

Elaine smiled. She could tell that Su Ping's people were friendly, based on Basha's memories. She didn't see Su Ping conquer the place with strength. Rather, he treated the locals respectfully.

It was rare to see an Ancestral God behave in such a way. Had Su Ping been willing to, all the cyborgs could have become slaves for humanity. Their heritage and knowledge would have also been taken.

"Let's go!" said the tall cyborg in the middle.

Elaine said to Su Ping, "You don't know the coordinates. How about I control it?"

Su Ping thought quickly and said, "No problem."

If anything happened, he could hide all humans inside his universe and then he could take shelter inside the pet store. The system would protect him in the event of a grave crisis.

ADVERTISEMENT

Elaine instantly covered the green glass planet with her power and pushed it forward. She also said to Basha, "You can go back. Tell your people that we're going to a new world where we'll be free."

Basha felt dazed. She nodded obediently; she was bursting with questions, but she didn't dare ask while the three Selvegas were present. She merely returned through the hole made by Su Ping.

"Boss Su, let's go inside, too." Elaine also went to the planet inside the Dao Crystal.

Su Ping followed her. As he watched Elaine push the green glass planet with her power while standing inside, he asked curiously, "You seem to know where you're going. Do you have another place to live besides here?"

"Yes," Elaine said, "The Heavens live in the world beyond the universes. However, that place was not their territory in the past. That is where the mythical creatures lived in the age of chaos. It's the most ancient realm of chaos!"

"Unfortunately, the realm of chaos and the Great Dao collapsed. In nite time and space turned into nothingness. You can only find an ocean of nothingness outside.

"However, there's one place that survived. It's also going to be our last shelter."

Su Ping was slightly dazed by the revelation, not expecting mythical creatures to live beyond the universes in the past.

"Wait, you're saying that the realm of chaos collapsed? The twelve Sorcerer Ancestors must still exist, right? Is that place where they live?" asked Su Ping.

"You know of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors?" Elaine looked at Su Ping in surprise. "I didn't expect to find that there was another race with a long history besides our clan. You should know that even direct descendants of the mythical creatures have forgotten that humiliating period.

"They've forgotten how great and prosperous their ancestors are!"

ADVERTISEMENT

Su Ping could sense her disdain for gods in her tone. As he remembered the arrogance of the gods in the Archeon Divinity, he shook his head and said, "If we can find the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, at least we'll have a place where we can settle for a long time."













## Astral Pet Store –

### Chapter 1501 - Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long (1)

#### Chapter 1501: Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long (1)

Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu's voice was transmitted again, "They're trying to monopolize chaos. I cannot leave..." The message stopped there. It was obvious that none of the allied forces would survive if the great expert left. Besides, it had nowhere to run; it wouldn't have led its people to fight so relentlessly had they not been cornered.

Since it had decided to fight, it would be to the death!

Boom!

A magnificent power pushed Su Ping and the others away. They instantly saw flashing colors and the scenery changed quickly. The Sorcerer Ancestor's image became blurry, while the Heavens also became twisted in a flash, until everything in front of their eyes was gone.

Following that, infinite darkness.

To his surprise, Su Ping discovered that they had been pushed countless light years away. He was no longer able to sense the auras of the Heavens or that of Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu.

Su Ping felt sad as he looked at the dark and silent void and remembered the great expert's back.

He knew it would be impossible for the guy to escape.

Those Heavens were clearly aiming for the Sorcerer Ancestor.

It was impossible to become a Sorcerer Ancestor through cultivation, since the state itself was a gift bestowed from birth. Their population was limited. As the Heavens saw it, Ancestral Gods were just troublesome ants that would fall eventually. That is, after the Sorcerer Ancestor died!

None of them would have the power to resist the Heavens by then.

Hardly had Su Ping arrived in the Empyrean Cultivation Site when he witnessed a Sorcerer Ancestor sacrificing itself and countless species fighting fearlessly alongside it.

*There had always been twelve Sorcerer Ancestors in history, but one of them just died. The Golden Crow's Chief Elder mentioned that a Sorcerer Ancestor died before the Golden Crows had chosen to live in seclusion. I wonder how many Sorcerer Ancestors are still out there...*

Su Ping's face was gloomy. His cultivation had been meteoric as he quickly reached the Ancestral God realm; he was standing at the peak of all lives, yet he still felt lacking.

That feeling of weakness had haunted him ever since he started cultivating. He could not rest because of it.

A loud voice echoed among all the survivors. "Hurry up and leave this place. We must not let the Sorcerer Ancestor die for nothing."

The owner of the voice was an Ancestral God with the body of a lion and the tail of a dragon, which was an intimidating sight. There were several incurable wounds on its body, left by the Heavens; the lingering black-colored energy was eating away its flesh.

There were survivors from different species, but all of them were mythical creatures. Anyone with a thousand-meter stature was basically a dwarf in comparison.

Their leaders snapped out of their stupor and ordered their forces to retreat.

"Friend of the primitive clan, are you coming with us?"

A figure flew over. It was a massive bird with colorful feathers, and a wingspan of a hundred thousand meters. The creature emitted an abundant aura of chaos, while its sound was as pleasant as spring water.

Su Ping asked, "Do you have anywhere to go?"

Frustration flashed in the bird's eyes. It said, "Our home has been destroyed. We can only go to the Original Dragons for help. They've always been close to us, and will probably let us stay. We'll reestablish our home when the Sorcerer Ancestor returns!"

"The Original Dragons?"

Su Ping was slightly dazed. It had to be a clan with a Sorcerer Ancestor, too.

After all, only another Sorcerer Ancestor could be a Sorcerer Ancestor's friend.

"All right. I'll go with you," said Su Ping.

The bird was not surprised, since the Primitive Chaos Clan had already been shattered by the Heavens. Su Ping, the only survivor, had probably escaped with his Sorcerer Ancestor's help.

Besides, all the survivors had witnessed how he had led the dragons to fight in place of their ancestor.

“Come on, I’ll give you a ride,” said the bird.

Both of them were in the Undying State. For such a being to let Su Ping sit on its back was a gesture of gratitude.

Su Ping didn’t overthink the situation; he simply jumped to its back and sat down. He also narrowed his body down to the size of a human being, which made him look like a speck of dust on the bird.

The latter returned to the team and led its clan forward along with other Ancestral Gods.

“Is Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu coming back?” Su Ping asked on the bird’s back.

The bird replied with the firmest voice, “Of course. He is the strongest of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; the Heavens cannot possibly hurt him. We were too weak and were only liabilities. He had to stay to resist the Heavens in order to protect us.”

*Is that so...* Su Ping was silent.

The Primitive Chaos Clan’s Sorcerer Ancestor had been destroyed. The Golden Crows’ Sorcerer Ancestor was living in seclusion. The Heavens were stronger than he imagined... Could Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu really come back?

Su Ping didn’t know what to feel. He was somewhat confused and desperate, while also frustrated and helpless. He even wanted to turn himself off and fall asleep.

Perhaps all the problems would be gone after waking up.

He wore a troubled expression as he looked at the silent skies. He suddenly made out a familiar shape in the eternal darkness.

The Little Skeleton.

Su Ping’s sense of loss was instantly gone. He clenched his fist.

The Little Skeleton hadn’t been resurrected yet. How could he give up so easily?

He hadn’t trained the Inferno Dragon to become the strongest dragon yet. How could he give up before fulfilling that promise?

He hadn’t avenged the people from the Federation...

## **Chapter 1502: Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long (2)**

*I still haven't...*

He took a deep breath.

Su Ping's eyes became cold and calm again. He asked the giant, colorful bird, "I know little about the Sorcerer Ancestors. Tell me, besides your clan's, was another Sorcerer Ancestor defeated by the Heavens?"

"Defeated or killed?" the massive bird replied, "Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang and Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que were defeated. I don't know much about the others. As for the ones killed... Your Primitive Chaos Clan's Sorcerer Ancestor and Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi. I heard that the Sorcerer Ancestor of the Kun Peng's clan also encountered the Heavens, but I don't know the exact outcome."

Su Ping was dazed, and his heart pounded. "So, the Sorcerer Ancestors can escape from the Heavens? Are you saying that Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang is still alive?"

"Sure." The bird replied without thinking, giving the other an eye roll, dissatisfied by that question. "The Sorcerer Ancestors are the strongest creatures born from chaos. How could they be killed so easily? They would never lose, if the Heavens weren't so cunning."

The bird thought, *Do you think they're all as weak as your Sorcerer Ancestor?*

However, it chose to not say it aloud. In any case, Su Ping had risked his own life to help them. His actions didn't change the outcome in the slightest, but his courage was admirable.

Su Ping felt relieved.

Sorcerer Ancestors could die, but they weren't completely defenseless when facing the Heavens.

If some managed to escape, it was possible that Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu could make it to safety.

This also meant that it wasn't easy for the Heavens to kill Sorcerer Ancestors. They weren't much stronger in comparison.

"Do you know the Golden Crows?" Su Ping asked all of a sudden.

He didn't know if he could go and meet the Golden Crows from where he was at the moment. Their world was merely a secluded, yet advanced cultivation site, while he currently was in a chaos cultivation site you had to access with a hundred million energy



points. If he reached the chaotic site from the Golden Crow world, his resurrections would only cost 900 energy points, which was nothing to him at the moment. That would practically make him invincible!

He would then become the Chaos clan's sharpest blade and play a role that no other Ancestral God could in the war against the Heavens.

"The Golden Crows?" the colorful bird said, "Of course I do. They are in the far south, which is too far from here. We can't go, unless Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu returns and takes us there."

"How long would it take for us to get there?" asked Su Ping.

"It's not a matter of time," replied the bird, "We would bump into the Heavens on the way. It's a long and dangerous journey. We would be destroyed if we travel alone through chaos."

Su Ping dismissed the thought upon hearing the answer. The only option at the moment would be to wait until they reached the Original Dragons.

Time flew.

Su Ping was incapable of sensing the flow of time while traveling in the Empyrean, as the concepts of space and time weren't present. Everything seemed to be still; only those who had awakened their Dao Hearts could move. Celestials could only hide in their small universes and push them to move, which was a slow and dangerous process.

Our hero felt odd, as they hadn't spotted other universes on the way.

He had seen many universe fragments in his previous travels beyond his world's universe. However, the journey thus far had been completely clean of any debris.

*Was this place swept clean by the Heavens recently?"*

Su Ping was puzzled by this.

Using the time flow of his inner universe as reference, he knew a month had passed.

The bird said, "We're almost there."

Su Ping also saw a vague light in the darkness ahead. The light grew as they approached, which turned out to be continents floating in the void.

Those extremely vast continents were protected by barriers that blocked the effects of outer space.

Their width and length had to be measured by light years.

Su Ping activated his chaos eyes, allowing him to see some of the continental views. Countless dragons were flying about; the place seemed to be a paradise of their kind.

Whoosh!

Two majestic dragons flew out from one of the continents. Their bodies were almost as big as half a planet, while their backs were like steel mountains. They carried an ancient feeling of toughness.

Both dragons had Undying State realms.

“Hun Yu Clan? What are you doing here!” one of the dragons whispered, but the voice rumbled; everybody was surrounded by the dragon’s might.

Su Ping’s eyes glittered. *This dragon is even more intimidating than the dragon ancestor I saw earlier. Is it a dragon king from the age of chaos?*

He summoned the Inferno Dragon and his other pets to have them experience the great dragon’s true might.

Hardly had the Inferno Dragon appeared when it raised its head and stared at the two dragons with fright in its eyes. The fright became even deeper soon after, and flames seemed to be burning in its eyes. It was shaking, while its bones were cracking; even blood was flowing out of its scales.

Su Ping glanced at the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon and saw that it was having a rougher time resisting. It was almost crouching, as if holding back an excruciating pain.

The Dark Dragon Hound, on the other hand, was only slightly nervous; it was the same for the Purple Python and the others.

Su Ping examined the Inferno Dragon, and finally realized that the fellow was struggling to resist the two dragons’ might.

Bloodline superiority was a substantial threat for other dragons. All dragons would have to bow before an Ancestral God dragon king. The fear was deep in their blood.

The Inferno Dragon was trying to suppress and resist the fear.

The effort was tantamount to resisting an instinctual trait.

If breathing was one of those instincts, the Inferno Dragon was essentially holding its breath. Not for a moment, but permanently!

Undoubtedly, going against your nature could be fatal.

Instincts couldn't just be disposed of; they were etched in your genes and blood. Removing them could prove fatal.

While looking at his stubborn dragon pet as it trembled, Su Ping suddenly felt that he didn't really help as a master.

Even if it truly became the strongest dragon in the world, it would all be through its own merit. He only gave it a push. Nothing more.

Su Ping extended his hands, to touch his dragons' legs.

Both dragons flinched, then stopped shivering. They looked at Su Ping simultaneously.

He smiled at them and said, "Don't give in. You won't lose to anyone!"

The two dragons felt dazed for a moment, but then their eagerness to fight grew.

*That's right. We won't lose to anyone!*

They had followed Su Ping and seen countless worlds, and numerous mythical creatures!

They could die, but they would never lose!

Roar!!

The Inferno Dragon was wreathed in flames as it let out a roar to the sky. The sound reached the billions of mythical creatures moving with them.

The two chaos dragons—whose teeth were already bigger than the Inferno Dragon itself—both heard the roar and looked at the colorful bird's back.

They noticed two fellow dragons, with impure bloodlines and an unremarkable Dao Heart State. However, instead of kneeling, they were staring back with heads held high!

Both of the massive dragons narrowed their eyes, with a glint of danger flashing in them.

Dragons would always be ruthless to inferior kin who challenged their authority.

The world of dragons was crueler than what outsiders could imagine. Hierarchy was extremely strict.

The colorful bird noticed this exchange and its expression changed a bit. At first, it was angry because Su Ping had summoned a few lesser creatures to ride on its back. *What does this guy think I am? Some sort of mount that anyone can ride?* Then, an even more infuriating act: those kids even roared at the Original Dragons!

They went there to seek refuge, not to provoke!

## Chapter 1503: Dragon Prison! (1)

“Hun Yu Clan, what’s the meaning of this?” said one of the dragons with a deafening voice, reaching all the members of the Hun Yu Clan.

Sensing the hostile attitude, Su Ping narrowed his eyes and stepped out and said, “We bear no ill will, and we’re not related to the Hun Yu Clan; we only represent ourselves. We’d like to apologize if we offended you, but I don’t think we did anything offensive.”

Both of the great dragons shifted their gazes from the pets to him. Su Ping had an Undying State cultivation anyway; he was one of the influential people, even in the tribes of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors.

“The Primitive Chaos Clan?”

The two dragons had glittering eyes, already knowing of that clan’s demise. They were the Heaven’s first target, and were completely wiped out.

It was surprising to see a survivor. It was true that not all rumors could be trusted.

“They’re your subordinates? You may well be a survivor of the Primitive Chaos Clan, but your subordinates offended us, which is punishable by death!” said one of the dragons.

Su Ping raised his eyebrows and replied, “I just said that we didn’t mean to offend you. If you consider resisting your dragon might is an offense, don’t you think it’s a bit too domineering?”

“That’s the rules of our clan. As someone in the Undying State, you should know that!” said one of the dragons with anger and dissatisfaction.

“Those are the rules of your clan; they only apply to your clansmen. We have our rules too, one is to never bend or yield!” Su Ping gazed at the host dragons with cold eyes. They were indeed seeking an alliance, but he didn’t want to back down.

What he needed was to be treated as equals, not to be bossed around.

“They carry the bloodlines of dragons, so they have to abide by the rules of the Original Dragons!”

One of the dragons said furiously, “All dragons derive from the Original Dragons. Have your seniors never told you that?”

“Even so, they carry other bloodlines too. Even if they’re dragons, they weren’t raised by you, nor do they have to follow your rules,” said Su Ping.

“How talkative!”

One of the dragons became angry. “Don’t come to us if you don’t follow our rules. You would also be punished, if not for the fact that your clan was destroyed and your contribution to the resistance against the Heavens!”

Su Ping’s heart felt heavy. He didn’t expect those dragons to be so strict about rules. The mere unwillingness to kneel was already a major offense. Such a hierarchical system was terrible.

“Please don’t be angry.”

The colorful bird didn’t expect to have a conflict with the Original Dragons that quickly. She quickly said, “Perhaps they had no knowledge about those rules. Please forgive their first offense; I’ll ask them to apologize.”

She also said to Su Ping telepathically, “Make your subordinates kneel and apologize right now. Break their horns and hand them over; then they’ll probably let us off.”

Su Ping was stunned. He was so angry he could almost laugh.

However, it was clear that she was sincerely trying to help him, although the price was rather hilarious.

“Sorry. They’re not just my subordinates; they are my friends, and I never make things difficult for my friends. They have their rules, and I have mine; the Original Dragons’ rules aren’t the only things that matter!” replied Su Ping telepathically.

The massive bird was stunned, not expecting Su Ping to turn down her offer so decisively. She didn’t think he had any reason to refuse. *Subordinates? Friends? Could subordinates really be friends?*

Besides, there was a major level gap between them.

It was just a realm, but the difference in power was enormous. *How could they be friends?*

“You... Don’t be stupid. Where else can you go if you offend the Original Dragons? If you go and search another clan, you’ll probably encounter the Heavens on the way, and you’ll definitely die,” the colorful bird tried to persuade him again. She really didn’t want anything to happen to Su Ping; after all, he had done his best to help them, even though he didn’t have to. She remembered the favor.

“I know.”

Su Ping looked at the two dragons in the sky. Their oppressive and condescending aura was all too familiar. He suddenly felt sad.

Equality would never be an option unless both parties had equal strength.

That seemed to be the rule everybody had agreed upon!

However... Friendship was pure!

Or rather, any kind of feeling was pure.

Family, friendships, love... Did those things have anything to do with strength or status?

If they did, would they still be pure?

“I thought that gods were the most arrogant of all species. I didn’t know that dragons were even more so!” Su Ping chuckled lightly. He didn’t feel angry anymore, just sad.

He suddenly realized why the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors were incapable of defeating the Heavens. It could have something to do with strength, but also because they were never united.

“Sorry...”

Su Ping flew away from the colorful bird’s back, as an indication that his next actions would have nothing to do with her. “I’d rather die before making things difficult for my friends. Besides... They did nothing wrong.”

The colorful bird was dazed.

Su Ping flew with all of his pets to face the two dragons. He didn’t stop until he was eye to eye with them.

## **Chapter 1504: Dragon Prison! (2)**

He turned his neck and said, "Sorry, my neck is uncomfortable. I don't like to look up at someone for too long. I only met the Hun Yu Clan on my way and asked them for a ride. I thought we could establish an alliance with you and figure out how to deal with the Heavens. It never occurred to me that my friends would infuriate you."

The two dragons were unhappy. However, they held back and said calmly, "Now that you know, it's time to give them away. We'll make them understand that the authority among dragons cannot be provoked!"

Su Ping shook his head and said, "Sorry, you didn't let me finish... What I mean is, I didn't know that my friends would infuriate you, but I'm very satisfied with their performance, because they were capable of resisting your intimidation, even though they're only in the Dao Heart State. I wonder if it's because you're too weak or they're too strong. Anyway, I'm proud of them!"

"You!"

The two dragons flew into a rage. What Su Ping said was a blatant provocation!

The Inferno Dragon and the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon were both shivering, gritting their teeth and growling. Both were on the verge of tears when Su Ping said that he was proud of them.

"Do you want the Primitive Chaos Clan to be completely destroyed?" One of the dragons moved and emitted a suppressive aura to cover Su Ping. It looked down at Su Ping with a body almost as massive as a planet, just like staring at a grain of dust in the universe.

"Unfortunately, you can't do that." Su Ping looked back with a smile. "I believe my friends will easily defeat you when they reach your level."

"How dare you!"

"Outrageous!"

Both dragons were infuriated; Su Ping was more arrogant than they thought. That was the Original Dragons territory, which was protected by a Sorcerer Ancestor. Even the Primitive Chaos Clan's Sorcerer Ancestor would have to tread with care if he were there!

And yet, Su Ping was bold enough to make such a declaration in their territory!

"Catch him!"

“Send his subordinates to the Dragon Prison!”

The two dragons roared and charged at Su Ping and his pets.

The colorful bird and the rest of the Hun Yu Clan were shocked. Their heads were already exploding when they saw Su Ping’s reactions. They were on someone else’s territory!

They wanted to put a stop to this, but their telepathic voices were disrupted when entering the dragons’ heads. The latter asked them to stay out of it.

Meanwhile, Su Ping also told the colorful bird and the other Ancestral Gods to stay clear of the matter. He didn’t want to implicate them.

Boom!

A battle burst out. Su Ping fought one of the dragons.

He tried to connect to the power in the void; however, he couldn’t find an anchor for his contract, and could only fight with his undying fire universe.

The chaos dragon, being an Undying State expert, had practiced ultimate Dao techniques and had the best bloodline. Su Ping felt pressured from the beginning and had to fall back.

He was but mediocre among Ancestral Gods, since he couldn’t draw support with his Contract Dao Heart; the fire universe was his only resource, whereas his opponent was one of the best. The difference was soon made evident.

However, Su Ping had the Primitive Chaos Clan constitution; it would be hard for his opponent to kill him quickly.

The colorful bird and the other Ancestral Gods looked awful as they witnessed the fight. They would have stepped in if Su Ping hadn’t told them to stay put via telepathically. Sure, their relationship with the Original Dragons would have been affected, but they could always patch it up when the Sorcerer Ancestor returned. They couldn’t simply watch Su Ping—someone who had risked his life helping them—endure such a dangerous situation without doing anything.

“This won’t do. The strength gap is too far apart!”

The colorful bird was troubled. Su Ping was no match for the chaos dragon, at all. Furthermore, she discovered that something was off. Su Ping had never used the universe of original chaos, which was the core element of the Primitive Chaos Clan!

Instead, he was using a rather subpar fire universe.



She suspected that the latter was hiding his strength and preparing for an eruption, but the ongoing situation made her think otherwise.

“What’s going on? Isn’t he a member of the Primitive Chaos Clan? Why isn’t he using the universe of original chaos? That way their power difference wouldn’t be as great, even if he doesn’t win in the end. He might even become stronger if it’s coupled with his fire universe!” said another Hun Yu Ancestral God, who was just as anxious and puzzled.

Su Ping’s body had been torn apart hundreds of times by then. He was almost cornered, but he never used the universe of original chaos.

It never occurred to them that Su Ping didn’t become an Ancestral God with the universe of original chaos.

“You’re no match for me. Stop!”

The massive dragon released his universe of chaos all of a sudden. The scary universe slithered quickly, entangling and imprisoning Su Ping.

The creature stared at Su Ping and said, “If you weren’t the last survivor, I would have asked your clan for an ultimate treasure as ransom. Humph! I’ll give you a chance to avenge your clansmen on the battlefield after we reach an agreement with the Hun Yu Clan to fight the Heavens!”

“Is that so?”

Coldness emanated from Su Ping’s eyes. A terrifying amount of power erupted from his body, blowing up his opponent’s universe. He punched, making a giant hole on the dragon’s chest, ripping its body apart.

The unexpected turn of events shocked all the Hun Yun clansmen who were about to take action. They all looked at Su Ping in disbelief.

Their first thought was that Su Ping had found an opportunity to attack!

However, they noticed that the fire universe was still behind his back, not the universe of original chaos!

“What is going on? Why did he suddenly become so strong?”

The colorful bird was dumbfounded. She found that she could not see through Su Ping.

In the void—the chaos dragon’s body was quickly reconstituted. It looked at Su Ping with shock and suspicion. Moments before, the power that erupted from the young fellow made it feel insignificant and defenseless.

*Was it my imagination?*

The Original Dragons were the fiercest and most brutal of the Sorcerer Ancestors' clans, with stronger physiques in comparison to those of the Primitive Chaos Clan.

Su Ping turned around and looked at the other dragon. "Release my friends!"

The latter had already suppressed the Inferno Dragon and the others, and kept them in its own universe of chaos.

The pets were completely helpless before that top Undying State existence. After all, it could slay Ancestral Gods, and was even stronger than the Chaos Perception Dragon!

"Your friends will be punished in the Dragon Prison. You should thank us for not executing them directly!" The dragon looked at Su Ping coldly. "We'll be happy to entertain if you keep on causing trouble. Don't blame us for ending the Primitive Chaos Clan!"

Su Ping's eyes were slightly cold, but he knew that continuing the fight was pointless.

He had moved the fight closer to one of the continents just then, which allowed him to summon its power and turn the tables.

Even if he had the strength to defeat the two dragons, more would come after defeating them. Even the Original Dragons' ancestor could make an appearance.

"Release my friends and I'll go," said Su Ping.

"It's impossible!" said the dragon coldly, "I've sent them to the Dragon Prison. This is the lightest penalty for their insubordination!"

Anger flashed in Su Ping's eyes. He quickly searched through the pet bond and discovered that his partners were indeed somewhere distant and vague.

Obviously, his opponent had teleported them away through its universe.

"One day you will pay a price for your arrogance!" Su Ping clenched his fists and glared at them. He then flashed and tore an opening in the void to teleport.

The contract not only made it possible to summon pets, but to also to send oneself to where the pets were found, once a certain level was reached.

But, it was all on the premise that the pets would be "masters" for a moment, which required great trust. After all, the pets would be momentarily free from the contract during the process, and they could even control their masters with a thought.

## Chapter 1505: Thousands of Floors (1)

“Huh?”

The two chaos dragons examined the traces Su Ping had left after tearing the void and disappearing. The aura was very familiar... It was the Dragon Prison!

However, only their clansmen could open that place; no one else could enter or leave without the bloodline permit granted by the clan. *How did the guy do it?*

“He dared to break into the Dragon Prison? That Primitive Chaos fellow is too arrogant!”

“Humph. The Dragon Prison is not as simple as he thinks; even Undying State experts would be caged by it. He chose to brave danger for a few Dao Heart subordinates; I wonder whether it’s loyalty or if he’s just too cocky!”

Two dragon clones were instantly condensed inside the prison. Since he had voluntarily caged himself they would keep him there and figure out how he managed to enter.

“Guys...”

The colorful bird saw Su Ping disappear; she didn’t know where he went, but she knew that the Original Dragons wouldn’t let him go easily. Remembering their conversation on the way, she couldn’t hold back any longer. “The Primitive Chaos Clan contributed to the resistance against the Heavens, buying time for other clans to survive. Can you spare him?”

“We will deal with the matter,” said one of the chaos dragons in a cold tone, “He would never leave this place because of his rude behavior if he weren’t from the Primitive Chaos Clan!”

The others sighed, knowing that trying to persuade them would be pointless. They had to wait for their Sorcerer Ancestor to return and help Su Ping.

“Don’t let the rude guy affect the goodwill between our clans. Please come in,” said the other chaos dragon.

They were indeed angry because of Su Ping’s actions, but the Primitive Chaos Clan’s Sorcerer Ancestor had died, making him the sole, yet unworthy survivor.

On the other hand, the Hun Yu Clan was a whole different matter. Their Ancestor was a tough figure among the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. Besides, unity was very important in

their current situation; otherwise, all clans would follow the Primitive Chaos Clan's footsteps.

...

In the meantime—

Inside the Dragon Prison.

The sky was red, with burning flames everywhere. However, the grounds were snowy; everything was frozen, including light and time.

Ice sculptures of dragons could be seen there. Those creatures were entirely frozen, but their souls were wide awake. They were eternally being tortured by the cold.

Elsewhere, on scorching black lands, there were magma springs everywhere, with enchained dragons soaking in them. They struggled in the scorching substance; most were ice dragons vulnerable to heat. Their agony was extraordinary since they had been thrown to an environment completely opposite to their nature. Maybe they would slowly adapt over time, but the process would be excruciating.

*Is this the Dragon Prison...?*

Su Ping could only see dragons being punished.

However, the environment didn't affect him much. He glanced around and saw that the Inferno Dragon was fighting some chains connected to the bottom of a pit.

Their respective teleportation points had differed by thousands of kilometers.

Su Ping had already noticed the reigning chaos inside. Time and space meant nothing there; a second in the outside world could represent several months in that prison. One step forward and he could stumble into a folded space, reappearing a thousand kilometers away.

Whoosh!

Su Ping flashed and appeared right in front of his pets. He casually slashed the chain apart with a fire blade.

The chain was made with the Great Dao. Dao Heart experts would hardly make a dent on them.

The color of chaos surfaced in Su Ping's eyes, allowing him to see through the illusion, and the prison was manifested in its original form. He was soon able to see the whole picture.

What shocked Su Ping was that the Dragon Prison had thousands of floors and was currently housing an endless amount of lives, including those from other clans!

The inner space was infinitely massive, practically on par with a grand universe!

Underneath their feet was a deeper universe, which served as the prison's core; the Great Dao's aura was the most abundant there. Su Ping's abilities merely allowed him to see a vague view; however, there were several Undying State auras that were particularly eye-catching.

*Even Undying State beings are kept as prisoners here. Is this how domineering Sorcerer Ancestors are?*

The Undying State was at the top in any cultivation site, while they were treated as prisoners there.

Bang!

Just as Su Ping looked around—a crack in the sky was formed, and a figure as enormous as a cloud showed up. It was one of the chaos dragons.

However, it was a creature he hadn't met before. The new dragon had purple-gray scales and was emitting an intense aura of chaos. Its horns were as long as tentacles, with thick, interconnected membranes. It was quite the intimidating fellow.

It looked down at Su Ping with cold, dark golden eyes. "Member of the Primitive Chaos Clan, you've broken into the Dragon Prison. Your life may be spared if you stay here for ten thousand Ancestral Dragon Cycles!"

"Ancestral Dragon Cycles?"

"One Ancestral Dragon Cycle means the sleeping and waking pattern of an ancestral dragon, which is equal to a thousand years!" the system explained for Su Ping in a calm voice.

The voice tone made Su Ping feel more confident.

After the prison as a whole moments before, he realized it had to be the work of the Original Dragons' ancestor. It wasn't something that Undying State beings could do.

However, the system didn't panic, even in such conditions. This meant that, even if Su Ping was attacked by Yuan Long—the Original Dragons' Sorcerer Ancestor—the system would still be capable of taking him back to the store.

With that in mind, he had nothing to worry about. He said to the chaos dragon, "You're judging me like a criminal. Your fellow dragons imprisoned my partners and violated my rules. I haven't made you pay for this yet!"

"Humph. Noisy!"

The chaos dragon snorted, showing no interest in wasting time on Su Ping. After declaring Su Ping's sentence, it released dragon might and a bloody badge appeared out of nowhere, spinning in the void with indescribable authority.

Following that, the Dragon Prison shook and changed.

Su Ping instantly noticed that the fuzzy space underneath him became clear and surrounded him.

"Roar!!"

The Inferno Dragon and the others sensed that Su Ping was in danger. They roared and charged at the chaos dragon and the bloody badge emitting an endless surge of authority. Their scales were collapsing, as they barely stood because of the bloodline pressure. Their bodies were falling apart, even as they were determined to fight back!

Each of their cells were terrified because of the surmounting pressure, and were falling apart beyond their control.

The bloody badge was even more intimidating. It caused their deepest fears to emerge from their blood, transcending everything.

Their flesh fell apart as they rushed to attack. The scene was splendid and miserable; they wouldn't die, but Su Ping's eyes were still bloodshot.

"Ahhhhhhh...!" Su Ping roared and dashed over relentlessly. While swinging the giant sword, transformed from his blood and fury, he moved to slash the spinning bloody badge in the void.

Boom. The sword shattered, and an illusory dragon with exceptionally vivid eyes appeared on the bloody badge. It seemed to be staring at Su Ping.

All of Su Ping's fury and hot blood were becoming solid at that moment.

It was as if some sort of freezing willpower had instantly enshrouded and frozen him.

Su Ping was deprived of his senses, just as if his body would have been sent to another space, to then fall into a soundless darkness. By the time he regained his senses, he found that he had already fallen into the Dragon Prison's fuzzy floor, where several Undying State prisoners were caged.

Su Ping's senses were recovering. The world before his eyes was almost completely dark; dark red spots could be seen every now and then. He could vaguely tell that there were some dark figures fixated to the void, as if pinned into place.

"Break!" Su Ping roared, gathering his aura and blood into a sword. He detonated his undying universe to slash with full force.

However, the attack was useless. He roared and swung his sword dozens of times in a row. His mind was exhausted; his undying universe could be infinitely reconstituted, but his mental strength would be difficult to recover.

A loud voice was heard on Su Ping's left, which belonged to an Undying State figure. "Haha, it's useless. Even I am incapable of breaking out; this is a universe personally constructed by the Original Dragons' ancestor. In other words, this is his universe, the combination of thousands of universes. Each can summon the power of a hundred other universes. This means that you have to break a hundred universes with one strike. Nobody can do that, except for the Sorcerer Ancestors..."

They could vaguely feel the presence of the other. However, there seemed to be an infinite distance in between, and they couldn't see each other.

## **Chapter 1506: Sorcerer Ancestor's Universe (1)**

"Break a hundred universes?"

Su Ping's expression changed a bit. Such a task would equate to increasing his strength a hundred fold!

Considering Undying State experts, even the tiniest improvement would require ten thousand years of consolidation. Epiphanies were insignificant from that point onwards.

Furthermore, time was no longer relevant.

Ten thousand years was just a measuring unit. Making progress in ten thousand years was worth celebrating.

No wonder the guy who sent the telepathic message sounded crazy. He probably was beyond desperate.

"Let me try again!"

Su Ping gathered his strength again. This time, he was going to use a contract with the power of that world.

He was soon able to perceive a vague consciousness of the land as the Contract Dao Heart began to spread. It wasn't a weak entity, but they seemed to be infinitely far apart.

However, if he could feel it, he could link to it.

The next moment, he made contact with that consciousness. The vague and weak feeling instantly became clear. However, it responded by flooding towards him with fury.

Boom! Su Ping's mind trembled and collapsed, almost falling apart completely. However, the mental shards managed to gather once more in the end.

*It refused me?!*

Su Ping was shocked and infuriated. His contract was rejected; the sentience of that world was unwilling to help.

It dawned on him. *Damn it, this is the Dragon Prison. That consciousness probably belongs to Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long!* He was regretful and angry. That was the first time making contact with the Sorcerer Ancestor; he could have died if not for his willpower having long exceeded the normal Undying State.

*He knows I'm from the Primitive Chaos Clan and yet he still tried to kill me; this Sorcerer Ancestor is not easy to deal with. He doesn't show any respect for the people of the Primitive Chaos Clan. But then again, the Primitive Chaos Clan's Sorcerer Ancestor is already dead. He doesn't have to give us any face anymore...*

Su Ping gritted his teeth. It was impossible to break free with the power of his fire universe alone.

Could it be that he could only return to his store?

Or maybe, should he kill himself and leave by resurrecting in a random place?

But that was the Sorcerer Ancestor's universe. Could he leave this place through random resurrection?

Su Ping silently asked the system in his heart.

"Nope," the system quickly replied, "The range of random resurrection is limited. Ancestor Yuan Long's Dragon Prison contains thousands of universes; it's more than ten times larger than the Archean Divinity. You cannot possibly reach its boundary however many times you resurrect. The center and the border of this world change places all the time. It's impossible for you to escape."

"Ten times bigger than the Archean Divinity?"



Su Ping was dumbfounded.

*This is just a universe that Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long established, and it's more than ten times bigger than the Archean Divinity?*

It had to be noted that Su Ping would need a whole day to traverse the whole Archean Divinity. There were many dangerous places that even he wouldn't dare enter recklessly.

*This is the power of a Sorcerer Ancestor? No wonder it's an inborn power that can't be cultivated. The combination of thousands of universes...* For the first time, Su Ping realized the gap between Sorcerer Ancestors and Undying State experts.

That explained the existence of only twelve Sorcerer Ancestors in history.

There had been countless geniuses since the beginning of time. Ancestral Gods were at the top, but there were a hundred of them in the Archean Divinity, and more than ten thousand in all of the system's cultivation sites!

However, only twelve Sorcerer Ancestors had ever existed!

"So, in other words, I can only return to the store and come back again?" asked Su Ping.

The system said, "That's the only way, unless you can instantly break a hundred universes on your own."

Su Ping took a deep breath and said, "Let me give it a try then!"

"?" The system slowly popped a question mark in Su Ping's head.

"I've already paid a hundred million energy points to visit this site; I can't just go back like this. I came to this cultivation site to train. I was never desperate when I entered the Chaotic Realm of the Undead as a mere mortal, and I certainly won't act desperate now!" Su Ping then started cultivating in earnest.

However, there was no Great Dao or energy on the Dragon Prison's floor. It was impossible to cultivate.

"Hahaha. How did it go? Given up already? Like I said, it's impossible. You're from the Primitive Chaos Clan, right? Pray that your ancestor comes to save you. Hahaha..." The loud voice laughed hysterically.

Su Ping calmed down and asked, "Which clan are you from?"

“Me? I’m from the Haotian Clan, the strongest of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors’ clans!” declared the loud voice proudly.

Su Ping asked, “Is Haotian one of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors too? Why didn’t your Ancestor save you? And why were you imprisoned in the first place?”

“My ancestor loves sleeping; he’ll come to my rescue once he wakes up. We will surely kill the Original Dragons’ ancestor when the time comes!” The loud voice sneered. “I just hooked up with a few Original Dragons. Speaking of which, they seduced me first; I should be the one demanding an explanation from them!”

“...” Su Ping didn’t expect such a reason. He asked with a weird expression, “Do they also have strict rules for that?”

The loud voice suddenly chuckled and said, “Why, do you want to try it out as well? You should if you have a chance when we get out. I’m sure you won’t forget the taste. Dragon liver, in particular, is the most delicious of all; you’ll never forget the taste!”

Dazed, Su Ping asked, “Oh, you mean you eat them?”

“Of course. Isn’t it normal to eat them after having enough fun with them?” said the loud voice.

1

“...”

Su Ping was lost for words. He suddenly realized he was judging the guy according to a human lifestyle. Morals didn’t matter to those mythical creatures; they had their own code of conduct.

For instance, Original Dragons sentenced his pets to death just because they didn’t kneel. That was their own code of conduct.

It was ridiculous for humans. However, human morals were probably just as ridiculous to them.

“What about you? Why were you imprisoned here?” asked the Haotian expert.

“Maybe because I’m too handsome,” said Su Ping.

He had no patience to explain because he thought it was ridiculous, so he offered an equally hilarious reply.

“I think you’re quite ugly,” said the Haotian fellow.

Su Ping rolled his eyes and replied, "Just because of that I won't take you away after I break out from this place!"

"Hahaha, you want to escape? Come on. Show me how it's done!" The Undying State guy started laughing.

Su Ping preferred not to waste time on the fellow. He simply sat cross-legged and cultivated.

Another voice was heard; it was gentle and soothing, "Brother from the Primitive Chaos Clan, ignore that lunatic. Not only did he eat Original Dragons, he also committed felonies in his own clan; that's why his Sorcerer Ancestor will never bail him out. He will be eternally caged here... He will never age or die, and he'll be tortured forever."

Su Ping raised his brows and asked, "Who are you?"

"I am Yan Tai from the Heixiang Clan. Have you heard about us before?" asked the voice.

"Nope."

"Our clans once fought side by side. Come here, stay away from that lunatic. Sometimes he snaps and wrecks havoc; you don't want to get injured by him," said Yan Tai.

Su Ping frowned a bit. He wanted to cultivate, and would rather not be disturbed.

"Okay."

Su Ping instantly flew toward the source of the voice.

The Haotian Clan fellow noticed Su Ping's movement and quickly said, "Hey, why are you going that way? That's a guy from the Heixiang Clan. They love eating people of their level."

"Huh?"

Su Ping paused.

"Don't listen to his nonsense. He lost his mind a long time ago," said Yan Tai gently.

The former stayed where he was, then stared at the gentle guy, who was also blurry; he obviously was fixated to the spot like the guy from the Haotian Clan. Su Ping shook his head and said, "Thank you for your kindness. I'll just stay here. It's good to keep some distance from both of you."

"If you believe his crap, don't blame me for not having warned you when you suffer," said Yan Tai with a sigh.

Su Ping stayed silent.

The gentle guy didn't send more telepathic messages.

"Didn't you say you were going to break out from this place? Show me!" The Haotian fellow shouted earnestly, seeing that Su Ping had sat down.

Su Ping frowned and set up a barrier around him, blocking the guy's noises. Then, he focused his consciousness upon himself.

At first he wasn't planning on walking the Primitive Chaos Clan's path. However, his current cultivation method wouldn't be bound by the Great Dao of the Primitive Chaos Clan. His plan was to completely fuse the 108 Dao Glyphs in his body.

That was the advantage of the bloodline heritage left by the Sorcerer Ancestor.

Just by fusing and combining Dao Glyphs would enable him to enter the Undying State and become only second to Sorcerer Ancestors!

However, no matter how strong the Undying State experts were, they were absolutely vulnerable when facing the ultimate experts!

## **Chapter 1507: The Third Strongest In All Worlds (1)**

The 108 Original Dao Glyphs were quickly decomposed in Su Ping's consciousness. There was an abundant surge of chaos aura as the glyphs were melted. The universe of original chaos appeared when the Dao Glyphs were almost fused.

Hum!

The 108 Dao Glyphs were completely fused, and the chaos universe pushed the fire universe behind Su Ping's back. The two universes collided, as if fighting for the core position.

The chaos universe gained the upper hand soon after. After all, it came from the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; it wasn't something a single fire universe could resist.

Su Ping tried to control them, but there was nothing he could do, just as regular mortals were incapable of splitting one of their cells with willpower alone.

*It seems that the power of my fire universe is being blocked...*

He was having trouble drawing power from his fire universe, which had been completely suppressed by the chaos universe; it was only capable of emitting a measly bit of power. It would be negligible for Undying State battles.

*Good thing I didn't condense the universe of original chaos at first. Otherwise, its pressure would have made it impossible to condense more universes!*

Su Ping secretly felt lucky. His road to advance would have been completely blocked otherwise, unless he spent a long time completely changing his bloodline and dismembering the chaos universe and descend to the Dao Heart State to start all over.

However, this would be difficult and it would take him a very long time.

Su Ping tried working with the universe of original chaos again.

A terrifying amount of power was instantly released, which tore the isolating barrier he had made with the fire universe and continued to sweep across the void.

The guy from the Haotian Clan was still shouting. "Hey, hey, you haven't given up yet? Break out for me!"

Su Ping automatically ignored the fellow's ranting. He was shocked by his newfound power. *No wonder it completely suppressed my fire universe. The universe of original chaos is at least five times stronger!*

It was noteworthy to say that the tiniest gap in the undying universe realm could determine the outcome of a battle. A five-fold gap was like comparing a brawny man and a child. He could easily kill the other party!

*This is the universe of the Chaos Ancestors' bloodline, which is the best of all clans... My current power is enough to crush all Ancestral Gods in the Archean Divinity; there wouldn't be a need to use a contract...* Su Ping speculated.

He even thought that the Chaos Perception Dragon was probably no longer a match for him.

Adding the contract power... He felt he was definitely among the very best Ancestral Gods.

"System, do you know my ranking among all Undying State experts in history?" asked Su Ping in his heart.

The system replied calmly, "In terms of comprehensive strength, the third."

“The third?!”

Su Ping was rather shocked. He thought he would be the best, or second best. However, there were still two experts stronger than him?

“How is it possible? In terms of universe, I carry one of the Chaos Ancestors’ bloodline, which is the best. Not even the mythical creatures from the other twelve clans amount to much when comparing with my current condition. If we add the powers of contract and those of my pets, I can definitely win against the two chaos dragons and even kill them instantly!”

After a moment of silence, the system replied, “In a way, you have indeed surpassed those mythical creatures; now you’re only second to the Sorcerer Ancestors themselves. However, the ones stronger than you are special.”

“Special?”

“Remember what I told you before? I was bound to someone else in the past.”

Su Ping instantly understood. “You bi\*ch.”

“Watch your tongue!” said the system rigorously.

Su Ping almost felt a stinging pain, and was a little bit surprised. The system had never been as angry when he cursed before. It seemed to be seriously pissed.

He discovered that the system was becoming increasingly humanlike as the store was upgraded... or emotional. It was more and more like a real living creature, and not just an AI.

“Sorry, I apologize. So, in other words, I’m your weakest host?” Su Ping felt rather helpless. He always thought that his performance was good, never thinking that he would actually be weaker than the system’s previous hosts. The idea made him feel uncomfortable, and even a little bit... jealous.

“It’s not your fault.”

The system calmed down, then said with a snort, “You’ve done a good job. It’s my problem; I didn’t give you the proper resources.”

“That doesn’t sound like an apology,” said Su Ping.

“...”

His disappointment faded away, knowing that the system never lied; this could only mean that his performance wasn’t too bad. He then asked, “What about those two

guys? Cultivation-wise, I think I'm already the strongest that anyone can become, right?"

"The one who ranks first obtains the Chaos Qualification, and once it's absorbed, they will become a new Sorcerer Ancestor!" said the system, "Therefore, they would have the power to crush Undying State experts and to generate a million illusory universes!"

"..."

Su Ping did not know what to say.

*Well... Fine, I admit defeat.*

"Don't they say that the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors are fixed?" Su Ping finally asked after a long time.

The system said, "Only the number is fixed."

"In other words, the members can be replaced?" asked Su Ping immediately, "The Chaos Qualification is the Sorcerer Ancestor's secret? Whoever gets it becomes a Sorcerer Ancestor?"

"That's right," said the system, "And a Sorcerer Ancestor happened to perish back then."

Su Ping knew it was a truly lucky situation; he thought he was already lucky as things were. When compared to the real sons of destiny, he was just an ordinary person who had to earn everything through hard work!

"What about the second strongest?"

"He established a contract with a Sorcerer Ancestor," replied the system.

"!!"

Su Ping was greatly shocked again.

One of them scooped up the Chaos Qualification, and the other made a contract with a Sorcerer Ancestor!

No wonder they were the two strongest amongst all clans throughout history. Him fuzzing about being third was a bit too much; he was actually dozens of times weaker than those two when they were at his level!

*So, this is what it feels like to have a cheat...* Su Ping sighed, completely convinced.

“Where are they? When are you going to introduce us?” He wanted to find out what those two looked like.

“They’re already gone,” whispered the system with obvious sadness in its voice.

Dazed, Su Ping suddenly realized he had asked the wrong question. Why would the system pick a new host if those two were alive?

“So, they’re both dead? They were so strong and they had your help, but they still died in the end... Were they killed by the Heavens?” asked Su Ping.

After a moment of silence, the system replied, “If I say yes, would you be afraid of fighting the Heavens?”

“Of course not,” replied Su Ping without missing a beat, “If I don’t fight, I will regret it for the rest of my life. If I fight, the worst outcome is death. It’s not the length of life that matters, but the way you choose to live!”

He then changed the topic. “You’ve been training me just so I can fight the Heavens someday, right? So, you’re probably the Heavens’ nemesis. Maybe you were a victim, too?”

“You will know everything and see the real me when you unlock the level 9 store,” said the system.

“Just as I thought...”

Su Ping heaved a soft sigh. He had already realized that everything had an origin, including his system, when he saw the real universe through the Golden Crows ancestor’s memories.

Furthermore, the Earth he transmigrated from was just one of those planets.

It just so happened to be shockingly similar to the Blue Planet from the Federation.

The overall history and the industrial revolution were similar in many aspects. After all, there were countless planets and countless universes; it wouldn’t be too difficult to find two identical planets.

“I hope you’ll answer everything for me,” said Su Ping. Unlocking the store’s level 9 wasn’t too hard; he believed he would soon know all the secrets.

The system simply fell silent.

Su Ping dropped the topic. Whatever might happen in the future, his own strength would always be his most reliable asset; he could only rely on himself, and that wouldn’t



change because of the environment. So, whenever you feel uncertainty or don't know what to do, just try your best and improve yourself!

Bang!

Su Ping detonated the original chaos universe, then gathered his essence and blood to slash furiously again.

The dazzling sword aura illuminated the dark Dragon Prison. The other prisoners were visible for a moment, but Su Ping simply focused on the edge of the sword.

The sword aura disappeared like a stone falling into the ocean. It failed to break the floor!

"Hahaha... You want to break it just like that? I have to admit, your attack was more powerful than before, but did you really think you could break free so easily?" The guy from the Haotian Clan laughed crazily.

There was muffled laughter coming from other places. The others present also deemed Su Ping's behavior as too stupid. They had tried many things, but all of them gave up in the end.

Tearing through a hundred universes was the bare minimum.

And that was just a theoretical way to escape. No one had ever achieved such a feat.

Su Ping's eyes were deep. Without a word, he set up a barrier and sat cross-legged once more.

The power of his chaos universe had indeed fallen short. It wasn't even close.

*The fire universe has been too badly suppressed. If I can invoke the power of both universes, their power will double. Unfortunately, the chaos universe is too domineering...*

Su Ping tried to activate the fire universe again. Again, only a tiny bit of power was able to leak out. It was pointless.

*Good thing I condensed the universe of fire before. At least it created an opening for me. If I condense other undying universes and have them balance each other out, I'll be able to control them all!*

Su Ping felt lucky again. He stood up and looked at the other prisoners.

*I will need a lot of Great Daos in order to condense other undying universes. Unfortunately, my body and power will be gone every time I resurrect; otherwise, I can*

*just leave countless Great Daos and then resurrect to absorb them. That way, I'd be able to condense an undying universe very quickly...*

Since he couldn't consume himself, he could only rely on the power of the other prisoners to condense new undying universes.

Su Ping said, "I can leave this place, but not without your cooperation."

"Hahaha... You're still dreaming. How are you going to leave?" The Haotian guy laughed.

"Just ignore him. Tell me, what do you want?" said Yan Tai gently.

Su Ping replied with a calm expression. "I need you to release your Great Daos and let me absorb them. I have to take in all of your power."

"You want to absorb our Great Daos?" Yan Tai was clearly stunned, obviously not expecting that he would outright say what she had always been trying to do. *Can this really be said so casually?*

"I think you're the crazy one!" The guy from the Haotian Clan laughed.

...

## **Chapter 1508: The Most Scorching Dragon Soul (1)**

"I'm serious. I hope you can consider this seriously," said Su Ping.

"Hahaha... I didn't know that the people from the Primitive Chaos Clan were so funny these days." The Haotian guy laughed.

Yan Tai smiled and said, "Fine. I'm willing to lend it to you. Just come over."

"Not interested. Leave your craziness for someone else. I'm going to sleep."

"F\*ck off!"

All the other prisoners uttered dissatisfied remarks, thinking that Su Ping was just making a scene and disturbing the peace. None of them wanted to bother with his antics anymore.

Su Ping looked around and narrowed his eyes. "I was just discussing matters with you, and you think I'm just too nice. If you're unwilling to cooperate, I can only impose and fetch them myself!"

"What's the meaning of this?"

"Humph. Come and have a try."

The prisoners felt Su Ping's hostile attitude, which made them even angrier.

The latter ignored them, and flew straight to where Yan Tai was.

She chuckled and said, "All right. I'll cooperate with you."

Su Ping crossed infinite time and space, feeling he had traveled half a universe before he finally reached her. He couldn't help but get the chills when he saw her appearance.

The pleasant, soft spoken Yan Tai turned out to be an enormous monster with the body of an elephant body and the head of an octopus. She stank like the guts of a fish.

She chuckled and said pitifully, "Don't be scared by my appearance. I wasn't like this before I was punished in the Dragon Prison..."

Su Ping ignored what she said and flew straight to her.

"Very good..."

Yan Tai's breath became heavy, conveying a strange enchantment. She shivered the moment he moved closer.

Even more decomposed fluids were excreted from her shivering body. She raised her head, showing her hideous teeth and crimson eyes, while her voice became sharp and deranged. "Good, great. It's been years since I've tasted Primitive Chaos Clan flesh. Come on. Give it to me..."

She shrieked and swung her tentacles, quickly surrounding our hero.

At the same time—a black and twisted universe rose and surrounded him.

A strong binding force was manifested; Su Ping felt as if he were inside a deep ocean. The effect slowed him down.

"What do you want?" Su Ping asked calmly, his expression impassive.

Yan Tai was obviously stunned for a moment, before she shouted with an eerie tone, "Your blood!"

“All right!”

He quickly agreed, which stunned her yet again. This puzzled her for a moment, wondering if there was something wrong with the guy’s brain. *How could he descend to madness right after entering the prison?*

But the next moment—a bloody, dazzling light appeared, and a red and clear edge was gathered in Su Ping’s hand. Meanwhile, the original universe surfaced behind Su Ping’s back and instantly exploded, its power pouring into the edge.

“Here you are!”

Su Ping suddenly swung his sword and slashed the target furiously.

“You’re asking to be killed!”

Yan Tai let out an angry shriek. Her black universe also exploded. A dark and corrosive fog was abundantly produced by her body.

Su Ping’s sword was quickly melted upon making contact with the fog, just like ice entering boiling water. He didn’t stop, however; he continued slashing down ruthlessly.

Bang!

The edge of the sword sliced through the fog and struck Yan Tai’s body, inflicting a massive wound.

Su Ping’s own body was also corrupted by the fog, and showed signs of decay. He had the tough Chaos body, and yet it was still rotting.

“Do you want to die?” Yan Tai roared furiously. Although the Undying State realm implied the inability to perish, it only applied to their universes. Killing them was possible if they were too badly hurt, or were restrained somehow.

Some of the top Undying State experts happened to master skills which allowed them to execute their peers.

Yan Tai had been imprisoned for killing other Undying State experts. That was why she had dared to lure Su Ping over to eat him.

“What’s so scary about death?” Su Ping asked back. He expressionlessly slashed again, causing gaps in the fog.

Although considered the third strongest in the Undying realm according to the system, that was only considering all his capabilities. At the moment he could only harness his chaos universe; he couldn’t draw power from his Contract Dao Heart or his pets.

In terms of combat ability, he was at the top tier among Undying State experts of all clans.

However, he was only average when only considering the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors' clans.

Yan Tai, on the other hand, was a bad ass in those clans; that was why she was caged in the Dragon Prison.

Bang! Bang!

Su Ping attacked time and again, not caring about his own life; he was seriously wounded already. Yan Tai's power had been mostly drained by then. Her being fixated in the void was a fortunate condition; Su Ping would have long been defeated otherwise.

*Damn it, why wasn't he punished by the Dragon Prison!*

Yan Tai was really angry. At first she was delighted to find he wasn't restricted and could move freely, thinking it was the ancestor's gaffe she could profit from, thus getting a chance to eat him to strengthen herself and at least send a message to her clan, even if she couldn't break free.

However, this freedom allowed him to attack however he wanted to, while she on the other hand was restrained.

"Are you truly not scared of death?!"

Yan Tai saw that Su Ping was absolutely defenseless, and wouldn't dodge even if she was about to kill him. She had never seen such a madman before; he was even crazier than Haotian fellow!

## **Chapter 1509: The Most Scorching Dragon Soul (2)**

Bang!

Yan Tai was answered by Su Ping's blade.

The other prisoners fell silent when they saw the battle; Su Ping's ruthlessness was an eye-opener for them. It was a first for them to see that the Primitive Chaos Clan—which was known for their gentleness—had such a brutal member.

“He’s even crazier than the Crazy Original Dragon!” mumbled the guy from the Haotian Clan.

“Yan Tai is truly unlucky. Even if she kills him, she’ll be badly wounded, too. Maybe... I’ll have a chance to taste her someday,” one of the Undying State prisoners remarked.

The battle lasted a long time, until Su Ping was finally exhausted.

“Rot in hell!!”

Once she noticed that Su Ping couldn’t hold on for much longer, Yan Tai went on a rampage and ripped his body to pieces, splashing his blood in the void.

She didn’t give him a chance to beg for mercy, as she simply vented her fury.

“It’s over...”

The other prisoners were surprised to see Su Ping’s vitality aura disappeared. They had thought that he had some trump cards, considering how fiercely he was fighting, but there were none.

“Have we been caged for too long that the world outside has changed? Even the Primitive Chaos Clan has gone crazy.”

“Huh?”

Before the prisoners finished discussing, the extinct aura reappeared.

All the blood disappeared, and Su Ping’s figure was condensed once more.

“Come again!”

Su Ping’s eyes were cold. He detonated his chaos universe and fought desperately, just like before.

Yan Tai narrowed her eyes and lost her cool. “This is impossible!”

She was absolutely certain Su Ping had died. There was no way for him to resurrect, yet there he was.

The higher one’s level, the more truths would be revealed, and the more stable their world views would be. So, shock and fear would hit them harder when something blew their minds.

The other prisoners were also dumbfounded, looking at the battle in disbelief. Everything felt like an illusion, but they believed in their senses. Death while in the

Undying State was irreversible; not even Sorcerer Ancestors could do anything about it. *And yet, the guy resurrected?*

*Could it be that everything was an illusion and we were all tricked?*

When ruling out all the impossible, what remained—however unbelievable—was a fact.

They could only conclude that they had been tricked by Su Ping with some sort of ability, and that he never truly died.

While the prisoners were still coping with the shock, Su Ping was back at it again, battling against Yan Tai.

Bang!

Bang!

Time flew.

There was no concept of time inside the Dragon Prison. However, Su Ping knew that two weeks had passed, based on the time flow in his inner universe.

During that time he had used up three lives, finally killing Yan Tai of the Heixiang Clan in the end!

Yes, he killed her!

*If not for her being locked in space and the prison's weakening effect, it would have taken me ten lives to achieve this... Is every top expert from the Sorcerer Ancestors' clans like this?"*

Su Ping held Yan Tai's body and swallowed it. All his pores opened up to absorb Yan Tai's Great Dao and improve his condition.

The second undying universe he was planning to condense was the universe of illusion.

2

That was also the second small world he had established.

The perfected Dao of Illusion began to grow in the depths of his original univers at a fast pace, once a considerable amount of Great Dao fragments were absorbed. Such a development was much faster than when the Dao of Fire was formed.

The Great Dao in Yan Tai's body fell apart into countless pieces, and Su Ping absorbed them all.

The Dragon Prison was absolutely quiet; only the sound of Su Ping assimilating Yan Tai's body could be heard.

If it were possible to see them, the prisoner's faces would show ashen expressions.

They saw how Yan Tai had begged for mercy and perished, and they knew that they could share the same fate.

At the moment they weren't in the mood to figure out why Su Ping could resurrect indefinitely. Instead, they cursed the Original Dragons for not restraining the guy from the Primitive Chaos Clan!

They would basically be screwed if that monster was allowed to roam free!

The formerly loud Haotian fellow was also silent.

It was in that quiet environment that Su Ping assimilated Yan Tai's flesh, absorbing her essence and Great Dao. His aura became increasingly powerful, deep like an abyss. He skimmed through Yan Tai's memories and realized why those people were so brutal.

*So, the easiest way to improve was to feed on beings in the same cultivation realm!*

He resumed his cultivation after he was done eating.

Two weeks later, the undying universe of illusion took shape.

2

Two months later, the new undying universe of illusion was completely condensed.

*Fortunately, the fire universe created an opening which allowed me to transfer the pieces of Great Dao to the Illusion Dao. Otherwise, it would have been impossible to condense another universe.*

Once the undying universe became active, it began to radiate a power that joined forces with the fire universe to counter the universe of original chaos.

The previous opening was instantly widened, as if there was an arm.

However, the combined effort of those universes was still not enough to overthrow the pressure from the universe of original chaos. He couldn't even invoke the power of his three universes at the same time.

*As expected of the power from one of the Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines. Looks like a balance can only be reached until I master at least two more universes...* Su Ping took



a deep breath and finished Yan Clan's remaining flesh. His body was then improved, while also inheriting some of the Heixiang Clan's morphing abilities.

The Heixiang Clan excelled in shapeshifting, just like Golden Crows were good with flames. That strange power could be very useful in battle. Su Ping had experienced the shapeshifting effect firsthand when facing Yan Tai, as she killed him using a different form each time. Those transformations had been truly complex.

The morphing power was also useful for concealment. The Heixiang Clan had the best lurking abilities among all the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors' clans. That was why Yan Tai was able to ambush many other Undying State mythical creatures.

Su Ping stood up and looked at the other prisoners.

Without saying a word, he approached the fellow from the Haotian Clan.

"You, nutcase, what are you doing?" said the guy quickly. After seeing how serious Su Ping had acted while eating Yan Tai, he was a little bit scared.

Most importantly, half his combat ability was being restrained by the Dragon Prison, which would leave him at a huge disadvantage. He would be worn out to death.

"I'll be bailing you out from the Dragon Prison." Su Ping strode towards him. "Through my stomach."

"No. I don't want to leave. Don't come any closer!" cried the guy from the Haotian Clan.

The other prisoners' eyelids twitched as they witnessed the situation; it would probably be their turn once he was done with the fellow.

Once he saw that Su Ping wasn't planning on stopping, the Haotian guy roared furiously, "Original Dragons, are you blind? Can't you see what's going on here?" Sounds of tremors were heard coming from the ceiling, as if in response to what he said.

Su Ping stopped and craned his head, only to detect a few extremely familiar auras. The void inside the prison floor was split open and a few figures dashed out. They were none other than the Inferno Dragon and his other pets.

Su Ping was dazed.

The Haotian fellow was also taken aback. He said in shock, "Damn, why were Dao Heart guys thrown here?"

The other prisoners were just as stunned as they looked at the junior newcomers. *Are these creatures snacks?* They had been caged for a long time, and the Original Dragons' ancestor had never provided such a service.

"You..."

Su Ping didn't expect the Inferno Dragon and the others to show up.

Roar!!

A furious call instantly echoed throughout the entire prison floor.

The Inferno Dragon was ablaze with scorching black flames. A vague shadow appeared on its back, which was its burning soul. The beast instantly saw his master and flew over with hot tears flowing. "We found you!"

1

They rushed to meet him. They seemed to be only a few thousand meters apart, but they were located in different spaces. However, the pets broke through and soon arrived where Su Ping was.

## Chapter 1510: Dragon Ancestor (1)

"How did you get in?"

Su Ping was surprised. They were still in the lesser Dao Heart State; how had they managed to reach the prison's deepest floor?

"Boss, if you're in danger, how can we not be by your side?" The Dark Dragon Hound grinned.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes as he inspected the fellow. All his pets were riddled in wounds; without a doubt, they had been through unimaginable battles to get there.

"Did you... get here on your own?"

The Purple Python wriggled and said, "We broke through the dragon pit and came here." The cracked scales on its mountainous body had fallen off; there was also a corrosive power eating away its flesh.

Su Ping waved a hand to drive away the remaining Dao power afflicting them to heal their wounds.

He clenched his fist tightly as he noticed how delighted they were despite their grievous wounds.

“Boss, let’s break out of this Dragon Prison together!” said the Dark Dragon Hound. Its eyes were glittering with fighting will.

Our hero glanced at the Inferno Dragon. It had already resorted to burning its soul, and its vitality was still burning irreversibly. Fortunately, resurrecting was an option.

“It’s easy to get all the way down from the top, but it’s hard to leave once you’re here,” said Su Ping.

“No matter how difficult it is, we’ll be by your side,” said the Dark Dragon Hound.

“All right!”

Su Ping took a deep breath and walked to the Undying State fellow from the Haotian Clan. “Help me kill them; I will absorb their power. Let’s break out of the Dragon Prison... I will make the Original Dragons learn that a real dragon doesn’t have to bend to anyone!!”

Roar!!

The Inferno Dragon bellowed. Its furious and scorching eyes were like suns that pierced through everything, while its power surged and its dragon soul burned brighter. The scalding light of life was affecting the other prisoners, making all the mythical creatures feel the burn.

Roar!!

The Inferno Dragon roared again with an even louder sound, which echoed throughout the Dragon Prison. It became even bigger, along with an expanding aura.

Su Ping couldn’t help but stop and look back in surprise.

Their mutual bond allowed him to feel his pet’s determination and unparalleled pride!

After a boom, something seemed to have broken free.

The violent power erupted from the Inferno Dragon’s body; a black and red universe appeared behind its back. It seemed to have absorbed an infinite amount of power, which made it shake. Then, under everyone’s gazes, it suddenly exploded!

The exploding universe produced an endless amount of power that filled the pet dragon’s body. The dragon flew up and roared once more.

All its broken scales were quickly regenerated, and its necrotized flesh was healing at a fast pace. Even the irreversibly burning soul died out at the moment.

However, even though the dragon soul had died out, the aura emitted was even more terrifying than before.

It was like a vicious abyssal dragon awakening and looking at the human world.

The broken black-and-red universe was reconstituted and condensed in its mouth, before it was thrown toward the prison walls like a wave of light.

When the light flashed, the dark Dragon Prison seemed to be illuminated for a brief moment.

From somewhere in the invisible depths came the sound of the pet's universe exploding. However, the power didn't spread out; it was still absorbed by the Dragon Prison.

Su Ping looked at the Inferno Dragon in a daze, never thinking it would break the shackles and enter the Undying State in that place!

The Inferno Dragon gradually calmed down as it released the power. Its enormous body wiggled in the void, having already grown as massive as a planet, in no way inferior to the pair of chaos dragons. Its mouth seemed large enough to swallow half a planet.

Its red ironlike body emitted an infinite sense of power.

Su Ping looked up at his pet. After overcoming the initial shock, he only felt proud and happy for the Inferno Dragon.

"Seriously? This dragon carries so many bloodlines, and is still able to unify all the Great Dao?"

"There are so many different types of power. How exactly was the guy able to combine them?"

"This dragon seems to be his companion. Damn it, he's even harder to stop now..."

All the prisoners felt puzzled and frightened. Su Ping was already tricky enough to deal with as it was, and now he had an Undying State dragon as a partner. They were all immobilized by the Dragon Prison, and were incapable of hiding. They would surely be swallowed by Su Ping, one by one.

"This guy is faster than us again," mumbled the Dark Dragon Hound as he looked at the Inferno Dragon, but there was delight in its eyes. They had been stuck in the Dao Heart State for too long, and knew how difficult it was to break the last shackle; it was

something that they could probably never achieve in the rest of their lives. Since their dragon partner had made a breakthrough, all of the pets felt happy about it.

“We must hurry to catch up,” said the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon, unwilling to give in.

“I will also unify all the Great Dao someday!” The Purple Python felt confident, as it was no longer the tiny python it used to be. Having fought many creatures with Su Ping, it had transformed completely, and had an unparalleled resolve.

After calming down, Su Ping said to the Inferno Dragon, “Try to fight by yourself. Get familiar with your current power.”

He pointed at the guy from the Haotian Clan.

The Inferno Dragon understood what he meant. It roared and charged at the fellow.

Seeing that, the Haotian guy quickly said, “Hey, hey, don’t come over. We admit defeat...”

However, the dragon didn’t care, simply releasing dragon aura and attacking.

The fight began soon after.

Su Ping was then able to see what the guy looked like. It was an enormous, oval-shaped creature with countless pairs of arms, which turned out to be sharp blades.

His body was pinned to a spot and couldn’t move freely. His only option was to fight.

He swung his arms and sent the Inferno Dragon flying. Su Ping was definitely shocked. The Haotian fellow was shockingly strong; he could probably punch a hole in the grand universe with a finger, and pierce through a couple of small universes with a single strike!

After forcing the dragon to retreat, the Haotian guy roared, “I don’t want to kill you. Stay back!”

The Inferno Dragon, however, ignored him and simply attacked in various ways.

The Haotian guy was furious. Having no time to worry about Su Ping, he quickly gathered all his arms and formed two enormous hands, which grabbed the Inferno Dragon’s wings and ripped them apart. The arms acted like sharp blades and slashed the dragon into countless pieces.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes, as the fellow was indeed tough, one of the best among the Undying State experts from the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors’ clans. There was still a major gap between the Inferno Dragon and him.

However, the dragon's body was soon reconstituted; it wouldn't die so easily. The beast continued attacking the Haotian fellow.

"Damn it, you're clearly not one of the Original Dragons. Why are you so tricky to deal with?" The Haotian Clan guy was angry; his body was restrained, making it hard to kill that dragon.

Once he noticed that the dragon was done testing, Su Ping immediately stepped forward.

"Let's attack him together!"

"Hooooooooooooo!"

The Haotian fellow became anxious the moment he saw that Su Ping would also take action. He quickly said, "I admit defeat! I'll give you the Great Dao pieces you wanted! I'll cooperate!"

"Too late!"

Su Ping didn't stop. He released his universe of original chaos and attacked.

The fellow was soon defeated under the coordinated attacks, then they dug out the Great Dao power from his body.

Su Ping absorbed the power as he fought. The third universe he planned to condense was the Dao of Origin, which he had perceived while being in the Federation.

The Dao of Origin grew as it absorbed the power, even though it had already been perfected.

Su Ping simply fused with the Inferno Dragon, which was the first time ever merging with an Undying State creature. A violent power instantly surged in his body; Su Ping felt as if there were another universe inside his body. The two powers fused; it wasn't a simple multiplication, but an improvement in different aspects.

Su Ping's body became magnificent. Tiny scales grew all over, giving him a terrifying look; he had the power to shatter the universe by simply waving a hand.

The prisoners couldn't be more shocked. One of them shouted, "What kind of power is this? It's impossible for Undying State beings to improve their powers like this. Impossible!"

"Fusion! That dragon sacrificed itself. It abandoned its own fate!"

"That's so stupid. It had just advanced to the Undying State and achieved immortality!"

All those prisoners were deeply shocked, unable to conceive how an Undying State creature would be willing to abandon everything and fuse into someone else's body.

Bang!

Su Ping threw a punch with a force of hundreds of millions of tons imbued with Dao power. The Haotian Clan fellow tried to resist with its enormous arms, but they gave out and shattered.

The fusion increased Su Ping's power and exceeded that of the Haotian Clan fellow.

The former was quick to attack with a bloody sword he condensed. Each attack was many times more powerful than before.

The guy from the Haotian Clan had to reconstruct his body again and again. He cried miserably.

Su Ping sensed the Inferno Dragon's universe and took a deep breath to draw power from it. Both the black-and-red universe and the chaos universe appeared behind his back, but the former was apparently much smaller, like the moon next to the earth. Su Ping could feel how his chaos universe was suppressing the others.

It would have been impossible to harness that power if not for the fusion, and the dragon controlling its own black-and-red universe.

"Break!"

Su Ping detonated the two universes at the same time. The violent powers gathered like twin stars, mutually illuminating the other, which then surged into Su Ping's body like storms. Once the terrifying power was swept, the guy from the Haotian Clan cried in panic, "Let me go! I know I was wrong! I'm willing to give all my power to you! Stop!"

"I will spare your soul!" said Su Ping.

Then, he furiously slashed with his sword.

The Haotian fellow's enormous body, akin to that of an ancient god, was instantly cut in two. It exploded and fell apart, and then it was turned into countless pieces by a certain power.

Su Ping instantly pulled those pieces toward him and quickly absorbed them.

His merging power allowed him to absorb faster than before.

The Undying State soul of the Haotian fellow was floating amongst the pieces. It looked at Su Ping in shock and fury, but didn't have the courage to make a move.

Su Ping ignored the guy; he kept absorbing the Great Dao and assimilating the flesh.

Very soon, the Dao of Origin thrived, and a universe took shape.

Two weeks later, a new undying universe was born.

A superior aura emerged once the universe of origin was condensed; the fire and illusion universes, which had been pushed aside, quickly gathered around it as if having found an ally.

The three universes connected their powers under the pressure of the chaos universe.



## **Chapter 1511: Break the Dragon Prison (1)**

The suppressive effect of the chaos universe was instantly weakened by the linking of the other three universes. They basically had a 70:30 ratio, with the universe of original chaos being the predominant force.

*As expected of the power inherited from the Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines. It's easy to cultivate and it's more powerful than a lot of Great Daos...* Su Ping couldn't help but sigh. The universes condensed from other Great Daos were nothing in comparison.

It was fortunate that the joint effort of the three universes allowed him to draw some power from the fire universe through the opening created.

Although seemingly unimportant, the fire universe had more than doubled his combat ability. The resulting energy from the collision of two universes was three times greater than the single universe of original chaos!

After gauging the explosive power in his body, Su Ping believed he was strong enough to dominate the Archean Divinity.

He would be unmatched, even if all the Ancestral Gods from the Seven Greatest Clans took action.

The chaos universe from one of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors was already nothing the Archean Divinity could compare to. He also had the fire universe, his Inferno Dragon, and he could establish a contract to harness the power from the godly world.

*It's a pity that I'm still too weak when compared to the Heavens. I can't even break out from this Dragon Prison!*

He wasn't too happy about the situation. After taking part in the grand battle against the Heavens, it became more than evident that Ancestral Gods weren't as strong as he thought; at most they were only bigger ants in front of the Heavens.

Nobody was a real threat to the Heavens until the Sorcerer Ancestor realm was achieved.

Su Ping looked at the other prisoners.

“We’ll give you our Great Daos you want. The Original Dragons’ ancestor will surely punish you if you kill us all. We can share the burden if the Original Dragons look for you in the future,” said one of the prisoners in a hurry, voicing the other’s thoughts. They feared that Su Ping would eat them all, just as he ate Yan Tai.

They had already discovered that the Primitive Chaos Clan fellow was extremely weird. He had significantly improved after swallowing their flesh and Great Daos. They wouldn’t miss that opportunity to advance if they were in his shoes.

Su Ping snorted and said, “Hand over your Great Daos.”

None of the prisoners dared to hesitate; they quickly released their Great Daos, which flew toward Su Ping.

The latter stayed his hand, noticing their willingness to cooperate, and simply absorbed the Great Daos.

He didn’t resort to violence because he was merciful; he simply thought that the Original Dragons would surely fight the Heavens later, and those prisoners would inevitably be sent to the battlefield. It would be a waste to kill them right away.

He only needed to absorb their Great Daos; blood and essence weren’t as necessary at the moment. His body had almost evolved completely after assimilating Yan Tai’s flesh.

Further beyond was the Sorcerer Ancestor level.

However, countless Undying State experts had remained stuck in that stage and couldn’t make a breakthrough.

If they could break the bottleneck, they would rise to the sky with a single step.

The Haotian fellow, now only a soul, felt wronged and regretful since he saw how the other prisoners were spared, but he had no courage to voice a complaint, fearing that Su Ping would swallow his soul. If that came to pass, he would be completely obliterated, without any possibility to resurrect.

Su Ping was already capable of killing Undying State beings. He was a fearsome existence even in the eyes of his peers.

Only some of the ancient existences in the twelve main clans had such a combat ability. They were the original mythical creatures, able to live as long as the Sorcerer Ancestors!

Such existences were only second to Sorcerer Ancestors.

Su Ping's absorption rate increased as the prisoners transmitted their Great Daos. He asked the Inferno Dragon and his other pets to protect him while he focused on condensing his fourth universe.

Time flew.

In the depths of the ancient and silent Dragon Prison—a group of figures were staying inside the black and red void. Those figures were all gargantuan and ferocious; at the center was a ten-thousand feet tall young man.

Without having buildings or other items as reference, the young man looked as petite as a normal person when compared to the enormous pets around him.

“The seventh...”

The seventh universe took shape; Su Ping slowly opened his eyes, and electricity flashed in both orbs. His body emitted an indescribably deep aura of chaos.

The prisoners shivered in silence as they sensed that magnificent and horrifying aura.

Su Ping had grown rapidly in a short amount of time after swallowing their Great Daos. That improvement was beyond their imagination.

Merely Su Ping's aura could pose a lethal threat to them.

They even felt the same awe and fear as if they were in the presence of a Sorcerer Ancestor.

The soul of the Haotian guy was hidden in the distance, shivering. He suddenly started to believe what Su Ping had said before; the man from the Primitive Chaos Clan probably had the capability to break the Dragon Prison on his own!

“It's been a year and a half...” mumbled Su Ping, sensing the flow of time in his universe. He then looked at the drained prisoners, and knew he had reached the limit.

There weren't enough resources and energy for him to condense an eighth universe inside the prison.

If he wasn't able to break out of that prison with his current power, he could only choose to head back to the store and loot Great Daos from other cultivation sites and return later.

## **Chapter 1512: Break the Dragon Prison (2)**

“Are you ready?”

Su Ping looked at his pets, all set to give it a try. He knew his escape from the prison could alarm the Original Dragons’ ancestor, who would then suppress him again; it would be no different from directly returning to the store.

However, he still wanted to do it.

Sensing their master’s determination, both the Dark Dragon Hound and the Inferno Dragon both moved next to him.

They exchanged looks; Su Ping could feel what they were thinking.

He then took a deep breath and released his contract power.

All his pets were instantly assimilated as raw power in his body.

Such a multiple fusion would be really difficult to other battle pet warriors, but it was already possible to merge with five pets in the Celestial State.

It was fairly easy to fuse with ten pets at the same time while in the Dao Heart State.

As for Ancestral Gods, they had already seen through the Great Dao; they could merge with as many pets as their bodies could tolerate.

3

Su Ping’s body changed significantly as he completely fused their power. He became much bigger, with scales and claws growing. A soft tentacle emerged from his brow and turned into the Purple Python’s enormous head; one shoulder had the Dark Dragon Hound’s scary head, while the other had the Inferno Dragon’s.

All the prisoners were truly shocked by the transformation. The bodily structure and its sense of power reminded them of the term “perfection.”

It was a feeling only caused by the Sorcerer Ancestors.

The twelve Sorcerer Ancestors looked different; however, no matter which of them they saw, they would feel that their bodies were natural and perfect.

Such perfection was beyond the understanding of normal beings; it couldn’t be seen, understood or described.

The power from the merging alone made Su Ping feel that he could easily kill Yan Tai without having to use up a couple of his lives.

He then took a deep breath, and a rotating vortex appeared behind his back, which produced many illusory universes. They overlapped and gradually became real.

The chaos universe was no longer dominant when he condensed the fifth universe. Once the sixth universe came to be, the chaos universe chose to join the rest.

The seventh universe he had just condensed had been fused into the ring of universes. Everything was natural; the chaos universe gave no signs of rejection.

Adding the latter's might, Su Ping now had the power of eight universes at his disposal.

Considering the Inferno Dragon's undying universe, there were nine universes in total.

He stared at the void inside the Dragon Prison, then summoned both his essence and blood and quickly burned his vitality, all to transform it into a crimson sword.

His own arms and legs were already the most powerful weapons in the world. The sword made of his essence and blood was the sharpest; each drop of blood contained dozens of perfect Great Daos.

Bang!

Su Ping suddenly detonated his chaos universe.

A violent power spread out. The other eight universes exploded one after the other; such a tremendous blast pushed out the power of the entire universe.

That was an attack that Dao Heart experts could only use once in their entire lives.

However, it was the most common method used by Undying State experts. Their universes could gather again and again, even if they were shattered a thousand times.

Nine streams of chaotic power gushed out simultaneously after the explosions; Su Ping glared and focused all his strength to contain them. It didn't take long for the power to surge and collide. He felt as if he were holding a quickly expanding hot balloon about to explode!

Slash!!

With a roar, Su Ping infused the power into the bloody sword and slashed forth.

Countless Great Daos lit up the entire Dragon Prison, just like the light from the explosion caused by a black hole.

This sword was like the dawn ended the momentary darkness.

Boom!

The Dragon Prison trembled, and a loud sound was heard.

It was a first for Su Ping to receive a response after swinging his sword hundreds of times.

He noticed an extremely small crack on the Dragon Prison. Su Ping had sliced the Dragon Prison open with a single attack!

The Haotian guy widened his eyes and looked at the scene in fright. Billions of years had passed without him feeling this shocked.

The other prisoners were also dumbfounded, unable to believe that such a miracle would truly happen.

An Undying State fellow cracked the Sorcerer Ancestor's universe!

The sight of the resulting fissure inspired a delighted smile Su Ping saw the result of his work, while unable to see her smile of delight. He burst into laughter.

"Hurry up, the crack is about to heal!" shouted one of the prisoners, seeing that the crack was narrowing.

The Haotian fellow said, "Let's make a run for it, or it'll be too late!"

They certainly had been exploited, and yet they almost cried tears of joy once they found a chance of escape. The cage that had imprisoned them for countless years had been cut open. Even if Su Ping was the one who did it, they were excited nonetheless.

Su Ping, however, didn't do anything. He watched the crack heal with a smile on his face.

If he could cut it open once, he could do it again.

He did this not because he wanted to escape, but because he wanted to tell the Original Dragons' ancestor that he wasn't in the wrong!

"It's healed..."

The prisoners were at a loss as they saw the crack heal; just like poked balloons. However, they snapped back to reality when they heard Su Ping's laughter, and their eyes were hopeful.

If Su Ping was able to cut it once, there was a high chance he could cut it open again.

“Why didn’t you run?” asked the guy from the Haotian Clan.

Su Ping smiled casually and said, “I can leave anytime I want.”

The prisoners were at a loss, but they were fully convinced.

“You’re the first person in history capable of breaking the Sorcerer Ancestor’s universe,” said one of the prisoners.

“The Original Dragons’ ancestor surely caught wind of the situation; you should go right now, or it’ll surely confine you through other means,” said another prisoner. He didn’t say that because they cared about Su Ping, but because they feared the chance of being killed inside the prison like Su Ping.

“He’s already here.”

Su Ping raised his head with a smile.

The space above the Dragon Prison became turbulent, slowly forming an eye.

The orb was enormous, as dazzling as the sun, which lit up the entire prison. Su Ping and the others were already large enough, but they seemed to be as small as grains of dust when compared to the eye.

“You actually thought of this method. Yes. This is indeed the only way for you people to get close to our level,” said the ancestor with a snort. His voice was utterly oppressive, but Su Ping was in the Undying State anyway. He didn’t feel intimidated.

Su Ping gazed at him and said, “I will surely surpass you if you give me your Chaos Qualification.”

The enormous eye narrowed, then said with a cold smile, “How arrogant! You could have taken this chance to escape; do you still think you can get out of this place alive?”

“I will get out of this place, and I’ll come back,” said Su Ping with a stare. “Next time, I’ll make you see that the Original Dragons can’t represent all the dragons in the world. One day, my partner will surpass you and become the strongest dragon in all of history!”

“Hilarious!”

The ancestor snorted. “You can indeed get closer to our level by using that cultivating method, but that’s a mere approximation. There were people like you in the past, but they’re all dead now.”

“It didn’t work in the past, but that doesn’t mean it won’t work in the future. There’s always hope in the future!” declared Su Ping.

“All dragons are under my command, including your so-called partner. On your knees!”

The Original Dragon ancestor turned cold; he then manifested an ancient and magnificent willpower, instantly descending over Su Ping.

Su Ping, the other prisoners and all his pets were all terrified. They were shivering.

Such a scene was basically a confrontation against a Sorcerer Ancestor!

## Chapter 1513: The Last Upgrade (1)

The guy from the Haotian Clan and the rest of the prisoners shivered and collapsed on the ground.

“On your knees” was the Original Dragons’ ancestor’s thought translated in a way Su Ping could understand. It meant to surrender in the most humble manner.

The prisoners had different body structures and didn’t understand what “on your knees” meant. However, they instinctively assumed the humblest postures they could think of. Some spread out like liquid, while others shrank their heads into their bodies, which were the most humiliating acts as they begged for mercy.

“Howl!”

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon and the other pets screamed and shivered as they fell as they tried to withstand the pressure of a Sorcerer Ancestor, a being two realms higher in cultivation. The latter’s willpower suppressed them like concrete hands. They had to surrender.

Su Ping sent them back to the summoning space the moment they fell on their knees. Only he and the Inferno Dragon were staring at the Sorcerer Ancestor.

Although shaking, Su Ping didn’t give in just like that, but he couldn’t last for long. The ultimate dragon expert was more horrifying than he thought.

He had met the Golden Crow ancestor and Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu before, but neither of them took him as an enemy; he only felt an indirect pressure from them. Now that he was facing the dragon expert, Su Ping knew that the latter could easily wipe him out with a mere thought!



The gap between Undying State experts and Sorcerer Ancestors was even bigger than that between an adult and a baby. They were like dragons against ants.

The Inferno Dragon gritted his teeth and tried to roar. However, an irresistible might was imposed onto it, making it hard for the beast to open its mouth; its body also began to fall down beyond control.

“You can’t control all the dragons in the world. Never!” Su Ping gritted his teeth. His eight universes exploded, turning into a storm that swept towards the Sorcerer Ancestor.

The Original Dragon snorted.

It was nothing more than some air being exhaled, but it was enough to snuff out the violent and scorching power.

Both Su Ping and the Inferno Dragon also vanished along with that power.

“Huh?”

The dragon ancestor narrowed its eyes as it looked at the slowly healing vortex. All its fury and coldness were gone; it became silent.

The entire Dragon Prison became completely solid at that moment. All the creatures on the thousands of floors of the universe stopped moving as if frozen; even their torturing was paused.

Everything was soundless.

...

Inside the store.

Su Ping and the Inferno Dragon stepped out of the vortex.

The power of a supreme law suppressed them and reduced their bodies to normal as they got back inside the store. Su Ping and the Inferno Dragon quickly adjusted their bodies, from planet-sized to a normal scale; the former also recovered his human appearance.

“Phew!”

Su Ping heaved a sigh of relief. Indeed, the system didn’t lie to him; they were easily teleported back, right in the Sorcerer Ancestor’s face.

He felt amused by imagining the frustration on the dragon ancestor's face, but he was soon disappointed and regretful; all this time, he had been wandering the universe while looking for allies victimized by the Heavens.

The Original Dragons would undoubtedly be extremely powerful allies. It was a pity he couldn't ally with them anymore.

*Even under the threat of the Heavens, they're still fighting against each other. How pathetic...*

*Maybe, it's not the Heavens brutalizing all the other clans; they're actually brutalizing each other...*

Su Ping took a deep breath, feeling somewhat desperate.

There was plenty of misery in the world caused by one's own kind.

Like civilians capable of persecuting officials, while also persecuting their neighbors who were also civilians.

4

"System, why do you think living creatures in the world must fight each other? We should fight against the Heavens and nature. However, the experts who have managed to cultivate enormous strength often prefer to show off in front of weaklings and even suppress their own people with that same strength. Why is that?"

After a long time of silence, the system replied, "It's an instinct related to life."

"An instinct? Is it something that not even mythical creatures could get rid of?"

"All living creatures have it," replied the system, "Just take a flower for example. It'll become bigger and stronger after absorbing enough sunlight. However, it will also conquer the territory of its own kind and claim even more energy at the same time.

"One flower blooms, and a hundred blades of grass wither."

1

Su Ping remained silent.

Yes, even flowers and grass had that instinct.

That was the raw wild nature of all living creatures.

“System, do you think the Heavens behave like this, too?” asked Su Ping all of a sudden.

Silence.

The system was silent for a long time, as if not knowing how to answer.

It finally said, “If I say that they don’t, would you think they’re better?”

Su Ping frowned and pondered for a moment, before he shook his head. “No. They’re my nemeses; they destroyed my home. No matter how unified and harmonious they are amongst themselves, it’s pointless to me.”

The system only made a nasal sound in response.

Su Ping didn’t ask further. The stronger he was and the more things he saw, the more helpless he felt.

Perhaps, the loneliness of a real strong guy was partly caused by not having anyone to talk to, and partly because they were unwilling to talk to anyone.

Su Ping pushed the door open and walked out.

The noises in the store instantly made him feel he was back in the mortal world; it was a sense of familiarity. While his eyes wandered to look at Joanna, Green Lady, and Tang Ruyan who was greeting customers at the door, he was reminded of his parents and his naughty sister.

## Chapter 1514: The Last Upgrade (2)

Those were the bonds he could never get rid of.

*The war between the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Heavens has begun. I don’t have much time left. Even if I can’t change the world, I hope I have the power to at least keep myself safe...* Su Ping gradually understood the Golden Crows’ decision: they strove to keep themselves safe until they were strong enough to save the world.

“Boss.”

“Boss Su.”

All the customers greeted him respectfully upon sight, with earnest faces and admiring eyes; they sincerely revered the last leader of humanity.

All the human experts knew they would have died if not for him.

Su Ping gave them a slight nod. He also nodded at Joanna and Green Lady before he stepped out of the store and rose to the sky right under the green glass.

“How is it going?”

Su Ping looked at Elaine.

Elaine was slightly surprised by his appearance out of the blue, but she soon calmed down. She narrowed her eyes, as she felt small differences in that human leader upon his return, especially a certain gravitas that even she found oppressive. She was truly astonished.

“Nothing’s wrong. Everything has been going well,” said Elaine, “We’re on the safest route. Nothing will happen.”

“Don’t be too confident too soon,” said Su Ping.

Elaine: “?”

“Tell me if anything is wrong. I’m going back to my secluded training.” Su Ping didn’t stay for too long; he simply turned around and left.

She looked at the spot where he disappeared, deep in thought. For some reason, she found that human leader very terrifying. He had done his best to conceal his power, but she still had a sense of danger.

However, she was an Undying State expert. *Could Su Ping be a threat to me?*

1

...

Once back in the store, Su Ping simply greeted everyone and then summoned the system.

“I’ve already met the requirements to upgrade the store, right?”

1

“The upgrade will cost a billion energy points. Are you sure you want to upgrade?” replied the system rigidly.

Su Ping secretly rolled his eyes. “Of course.”

“The store will be closed during the upgrade; only the cultivation sites will be accessible,” said the system. Its voice was somehow cold and sad.

The voice made him feel that the system was a real living creature with emotions.

“I hope you can tell me how to resurrect the Little Skeleton after the upgrade,” said Su Ping.

1

“It’s actually very easy to resurrect the Little Skeleton. Don’t worry,” said the system.

1

Su Ping’s heart skipped a few beats. “How?”

“You’ll know when the upgrade takes effect,” said the system, “The time needed for the upgrade is uncertain; it may take months or years. Just wait patiently.”

“That long?”

Su Ping felt dazed.

The usual was for the system to upgrade within 24 or 48 hours.

It had only taken a week to upgrade the store to level eight.

The system didn’t reply. Instead, Su Ping only heard a gloomy sigh.

There seemed to be an infinite jumble of feelings in that sigh; he was taken aback by it.

Once the energy points were deducted, Su Ping soon noticed the changes in the store. He brought up the store panel, only to find that the menu was dim and the system’s store couldn’t be opened.

He selected the cultivation sites’ list. He found that the Remains of High Heavens was dim, while the other cultivation sites were accessible.

*So, I can’t enter the Remains of High Heavens during the system upgrade? Looks like the place is truly dangerous; even the system has to be careful,* thought Su Ping.

“Huh?”

Green Lady, Joanna and the others were looking at Su Ping.

Being official employees who have signed a contract with the system, they received the notification that the store was closed.

This would only happen when the store was being upgraded.

Su Ping glanced at them and nodded in affirmation. He said to them, "The store is being upgraded; you can take a break. Tell me if you want to go to a cultivation site. Or maybe you can just cultivate inside the store."

Joanna said, "I want to take a look at the Archean Divinity."

"Okay."

Green Lady said, "I'll just stay here. Be safe."

Su Ping nodded and asked them to settle the customers' orders.

The latter had no choice but to leave reluctantly. They didn't complain, though, as they saw the upgrade as an excuse; Su Ping surely had something important to do.

The things that were important to him were important to all of humanity. No one would dare to complain; they would simply wait.

Su Ping asked Tang Ruyan to make an announcement, declaring that the store would be closed for months if not years, all to prevent customers from wasting time waiting.

Once it was only Su Ping and his employees, he asked Joanna to pick a few pets that required professional training. Then he set off to the Archean Divinity.

The Remains of High Heavens was closed for the moment; he couldn't go there even if he wanted to. However, he wouldn't go right now, even if the option was available.

He had already found a way to improve; he just had to gather a lot of Great Daos. Going to the Remains of High Heavens would only slow down his cultivation; he would only be caught in a meaningless battle if he met the Heavens again.

*Everything would be pointless until I become a Sorcerer Ancestor!*

Su Ping was going to condense all the Great Daos he had perceived into universes. Although he didn't have a Chaos Qualification, he would also be capable of building thousands of universes with one thought and fight the Sorcerer Ancestors!

Once everything was ready, Su Ping took Joanna to the Archean Divinity.

## **Chapter 1515: The Last Upgrade (3)**

Su Ping returned to the ancient universe and looked at the vast world. He was no longer as shocked as when he first paid a visit. Only mixed feelings remained.

*I wonder if the Chief Elder has prepared for the thing I told him last time,* thought Su Ping.

He took Joanna to the continent where the Heaven Path Institute was located with a single thought.

He looked at the neighboring continent, then remembered the Ancestral God of the Bright Moon Clan. Coldness glinted in his eyes.

However, he didn't look for him right away; he went to the institute first.

Yan Qing and the other elders sensed his arrival and rushed to greet him.

He looked at them and said, "There's no need to make such a fuss."

"Ancestor Su, you are now an Ancestral God, and you deserve such a privilege," said the Chief Elder with a smile.

Su Ping didn't linger on that topic. He said, "Chief Elder, regarding the Heavens, what's the opinion of the other clans?"

The elder's smile disappeared; he said solemnly, "Ancestor Su, we've already informed all the clans. Ancestral God Wen Tian is aware of the matter too, and confirmed it not long ago. However..."

"However, what?" Su Ping narrowed his eyes.

"However, this is a big matter that will influence all clans. The Seven Greatest Clans have the final say. So far, they haven't planned to meet to consider the situation..." The Chief Elder lowered his head.

All the other elders were silent.

In fact, the situation was even more humiliating than what the Chief Elder had let on.

The Heaven Path Institute told all the clans about Su Ping's warning. However, none of them paid much attention to it; they thought it was a move for the Heaven Path Institute to rule over the world of gods leveraging the help of the new Ancestral God.

In any case, the institute was a school, not a clan. It did have three more Ancestral Gods, but their academic position was sensitive, and was supervised by the Seven Greatest Clans.

Even after issuing a warning about the impending threat of the Heavens, not only did the clans dislike it, even the main seven clans accused them of fretting and minding other people's business. They were told not to forget their identity.

The Council of Gods—formed by the Seven Greatest Clans—was in charge of all the important matters. Their rejection had turned the warning into a joke.

"There's no meeting?" Su Ping's eyes turned cold. "They're only going to move until the Heavens arrive? They thought I was bullsh\*\*\*ing when I was an emperor. They still think the same now that I'm an Ancestral God?"

Noticing Su Ping's fury, the Chief Elder quickly said, "Ancestor Su, don't be angry. The Seven Greatest Clans have controlled the world of gods for ages. This takes time; we've been sending elders to communicate with them. The situation will be much better when Ancestral God Wen Tian comes out of seclusion; at least they'll be willing to listen to us. It is my belief that they'll understand."

"So, they were even unwilling to listen in the past?" Coldness flashed in Su Ping's eyes as an intense killing intent burst out.

He remembered the Original Dragons, and his fury was reignited.

*How could they be so arrogant?*

*Why are they so arrogant?*

The Chief Elder quickly said, "Ancestor Su, please don't be angry. You are indeed an honorable Ancestral God, but there are too many Ancestral Gods in the Seven Greatest Clans. If any of them is provoked, the other six families will move to help. I believe they will listen to us when the first president wakes up."

Su Ping knew that by first president he was referring to the very first Ancestral God of the institute.

After talking with Ancestral God Wen Tian, Su Ping learned that the first two Ancestral Gods were away for their own reasons. One of them was asleep, while the other was caught in a dangerous land. That place was so dangerous that even Ancestral God Wen Tian could get caught in it too if he tried to save the fellow. If that came to pass, the Heaven Path Institute would be in danger without an Ancestral God to guard the fort.

"If they're unwilling to listen on their feet, they will listen on their knees!"



Su Ping suddenly turned around and said, "Lead the way!"

## Chapter 1516: Suppressing Ancestral Gods (1)

All the elders were greatly shocked. The Chief Elder quickly said, "Ancestor Su, that won't do!"

"That's right. Forgive us for being blunt; even though you're very strong, the Seven Greatest Clans have existed for countless years. Besides, if any of them is provoked, the other six families will readily take action. You'll be going against the Seven Greatest Clans at the same time!" said another elder in a hurry.

"Yes, Ancestor Su, please think carefully!" said Yan Qing. Her face was solemn and anxious.

"Please think carefully, Ancestor Su!"

All the elders bowed, trying to stop Su Ping.

He understood what they were thinking. However, the Seven Great Clans were nothing in his eyes at the moment. Besides, that was the Archean Divinity; he could bond with the power of the world and would be even stronger than in the Dragon Prison.

"Don't worry; I'm not being reckless. I know what I'm doing!" Su Ping waved a hand and made them stand. "Just lead the way."

The elders didn't expect him to be so determined; their expressions changed. The Chief Elder quickly begged, "Ancestor Su, please give us a little bit more time. We will surely make the great clans understand the severity of the matter."

"It's not your fault. You don't have to be like this," said Su Ping while frowning, "I'll go find them if you're unwilling to lead the way."

He took Joanna and flew away.

All the elders were panicking. Su Ping was going to cause trouble!

The Chief Elder hurriedly said, "Inform Ancestral God Wen Tian right now. You'll go with me... We must stop Ancestor Su!"

Yan Qing turned around and returned to the institute to alert Ancestral God Wen Tian.

As for the other elders, they went and followed the Chief Elder to chase after Su Ping in an attempt to persuade him and buy more time. Wen Tian could still stop him even if the human expert wasn't convinced.

They soon caught up.

They found to their relief that Su Ping had stopped in front of a continent, thinking that the latter had calmed down.

"Ancestor Su!"

The elders quickly approached him.

A domineering aura was manifested before the Chief Elder could say anything. It belonged to the three-eyed young man clad in black, none other than the Ancestral God of the Bright Moon Clan.

"Humph. What are you doing here? I said that you cannot establish a territory here. The Bright Moon Clan will never have human neighbors!" said the angry fellow.

He couldn't do anything to Su Ping. It would be an ongoing annoyance if the latter kept causing trouble.

"You don't deserve to be our neighbors!" Coldness flashed in Su Ping's eyes and he quickly took action. The universe of original chaos appeared, and he quickly expanded to tens of thousands of meters tall, like an ancient giant.

He released the powerful aura of a mythical creature, as if able to pick stars from the sky and break through hell.

"You..." The Bright Moon Clan's Ancestral God changed his expression.

Su Ping snorted coldly and threw a punch; his fist was like a meteorite, affecting a radius of a million kilometers. The ground was rising and the rivers were changing routes; just the fist's momentum had cleared the sky in a range of 100,000 kilometers.

"This is impossible!" roared the black clad god, while feeling a strong sense of doom. *Is this a human being? He's clearly a monster!*

He roared and released his universe. A dazzling light was shot from the third eye on his forehead in an attempt to resist.

But the next moment—his universe exploded, and his original thousand-feet tall body was smashed into the deeper spaces by Su Ping, as if he were a rock.

Su Ping closed his hand, pulling the Bright Moon's expert over and directly snatching him in one hand.

"I can kill you as easily as cutting grass. You don't deserve to be my enemy!" Su Ping looked down at him as if he were a humble worm.

The Bright Moon Clan's Ancestral God was horrified; blood was flowing out of his three eyes. He looked at Su Ping in fear, not once imagining the gap between them would be as massive. He was even more scared than when he confronted the old monsters of the Seven Greatest Clans!

"Chaos monster! You truly are a chaos monster..." Ever since their previous clash, he had investigated all he could about the new Ancestral God, who was said to be the descendant of the Chaos Perception Dragon and a god. Su Ping's body was enough to confirm the theory.

He was nervous and frightened, as if in the clutches of a veritable ferocious beast. It was worth mentioning that the Chaos Perception Dragon was known for eating Ancestral Gods alive.

"From today on, the Bright Moon Clan won't be a high-ranked clan anymore."

Su Ping looked at him coldly. He clenched his fist hard and squeezed the guy.

The guy's reconstituting universe was being suppressed by the chaos universe. His body exploded, and the floating Great Daos were soon absorbed by Su Ping. The ninth universe was about to take shape.

Su Ping kept the soul of the Bright Moon Clan's Ancestral God. Since he no longer had the undying Great Dao, he would need a new body to reincarnate, and his cultivation would surely plummet.

"I'll give you a new body. Be a guard for humanity in the million years to come!"

Su Ping pointed a finger and created a body with a drop of blood and inserted the Bright Moon Clan's expert; he then left a brand, turning the fellow into a guard to protect the human clan. That was the punishment for his offense!

"You... You're so brutal..."

Now in a new body, the Bright Moon's expert fell to the Celestial State. His Dao Heart was broken; he would have to cultivate all over again, and it would take forever to become an Ancestral God again.

## **Chapter 1517: Suppressing Ancestral Gods (2)**

The black clad god could only break free from Su Ping's shackles until he became an Ancestral God.

"You have your pride, and I have mine. Don't act so tough if you're incapable of defending your pride in front of me!" Su Ping spoke as if saying a tongue twister.

The former Ancestral God of the Bright Moon Clan was so angry his face turned purple. He had lost all hope; he wasn't even afraid of death, but he couldn't kill himself. The body provided by Su Ping was at the top of the Dao Heart State; first he would have to cultivate a Dao Heart and become a peak God Emperor to have the option to end his own life.

"Wait here until the humans come over and establish in this territory."

Su Ping ignored him, simply throwing the fellow to the continent. It was also impossible for the latter to escape, since his power was being restrained.

After that, Su Ping led Joanna onward.

Everything was settled in but a few seconds. Not only was she dumbfounded by it; the elders of the Heaven Path Institute were just as shocked.

It wasn't until Su Ping left that they finally looked down at the former Ancestral God on the ground. Everything was real.

*That Ancestral God was stripped of his cultivation and enslaved by Su Ping!*

"A-Ancestor Su..."

"Was he serious?"

The elders looked at each other in bewilderment; everything was awfully surreal. An expert they could only look up to was absolutely vulnerable in front of Su Ping!

He was obviously as strong as the old monsters in the Seven Great Clans!

*No wonder he dares to go against them on his own.* He already had the top strength in the world of gods. Even if he couldn't win, he could at least leave in one piece!

"So, Ancestor Su is truly confident. Looks like we overreacted just now."

"B-But how long has Ancestor Su been an Ancestral God? How is it possible..."

"Don't forget that Ancestor Su hasn't spent much time cultivating in his entire life..."

The elders suddenly remembered that Su Ping's vitality aura was only a thousand years old. All of them gasped.

They soon recovered and quickly caught up with him.

While on the way, Joanna looked at the constantly changing landscape by Su Ping's side. She could no longer tell how fast they were going. She turned around and asked Su Ping, "The one just now was an Ancestral God, right?"

"That's right."

"..."

She was at a loss, noticing how he had answered so casually.

Every god knew how important Ancestral Gods were; they represented a fear etched in the deepest part of their being.

Su Ping had already grown to a point that she couldn't even look up to.

"We're here!" said Su Ping.

The fast-changing landscape stopped and everything became clear.

The two of them stood in the clouds. Before them was a lofty mountain rising to the clouds, and around it were many other high mountains where temples had been built. That was the Feitian Clan's territory, one of the Seven Greatest Clans.

"Who are you? How dare you break into our territory?"

Two figures dashed over upon sensing Su Ping's undisguised aura. They soon showed appalled faces when they saw him.

Su Ping had revealed his mythical body when he took care of the Bright Moon Clan's Ancestral God. The trip didn't take long, so he continued using the body as it was. Now that he was there, he stood in the Feitian Clan's territory like one of the mountains.

"Ancestral God?"

The two God Emperors toned down on their fury, but they weren't as flustered as other God Emperors would in a similar encounter; after all, it was the Feitian Clan. There was nothing in the Archean Divinity that could threaten the Seven Great Clans, not even the Ancestral Gods of other clans!

"Which clan are you from? What's the purpose of your visit?" asked one of the God Emperors.

“Who do you think you are? Are you even worthy to talk to me? Have your Ancestral God come out!” Su Ping roared.

The sound of his voice caused the mountains within a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers to shake. Rocks were falling and ripples appeared on the barrier, which was almost about to explode.

He could have blown up the mountains with a roar, if it wasn't for his unwillingness to hurt the innocent!

The God Emperors' armor exploded and was turned to pieces by the Great Dao, instantly becoming garbage. They were sent flying thousands of meters away, feeling that they could die at any moment.

Both of them were shocked, not expecting that Ancestral God to dare trouble one of the Seven Great Clans.

However, neither of them dared to be angry because of the outburst. They were intimidated by Su Ping, and also feared that he would kill them on a whim if provoked. They would end up dying even if their clan suppressed him eventually.

“Who's being insolent here?” said a magnificent and cold voice before the two God Emperors could reply. Then, the rays of light in the entire world turned green, and a figure stepped out of the void and stood in front of the two emperors.

“Ancestor Han!”

The two emperors hurriedly paid their respects upon seeing their ancestor.

“It is Su Ping, a human being!” Su Ping gave the Ancestral God a cold and aggressive look. “I heard that the elders of the Heaven Path Institute came to discuss with you about the Heavens and you didn't take them seriously. Wasn't it so?”

“A human being?”

The green-robed Ancestral God frowned. He realized Su Ping's identity and coldly replied, “We were duly informed of the matter you mentioned. We have our own plans; are you dissatisfied with that?”

“What exactly are your plans?” Su Ping stared at him.

The Chief Elder and the other people of the institute had just arrived. They were nervous to see how Su Ping was confronting the Feitian Clan's ancestor; after all, the guy was much stronger than the Bright Moon Clan's expert.

## **Chapter 1518: Suppressing Ancestral Gods (3)**

“You’ve just become an Ancestral God, and you’re already acting this arrogant. Did Wen Tian not teach you the rules?” Ancestor Han’s face turned cold.

“Let me ask you again. What are your plans?” Su Ping stared at him.

Ancestor Han’s face turned gloomy. “This matter involves all clans; you don’t get to decide. Don’t forget your identity... Do you think the Heaven Path Institute can decide everything for the gods because you have four Ancestor Gods now?”

There was a swooshing sound, and a figure appeared out of nowhere.

Ancestral God Wen Tian had just arrived, and Elder Yan Qing who went to inform him.

“Ancestor Han, sorry. Ancestor Su just became an Ancestral God and is a little bit reckless. He only lost his composure because he was concerned about the safety of all gods. I hope you can forgive him,” said Wen Tian in a hurry.

Ancestor Han was even colder upon seeing the latter arrive. “You’d better teach him well, since he’s related to the Heaven Path Institute. I can forget what happened today if he apologizes and the institute gives away ten spots for the Mysterious Realm. Don’t let this happen again!”

Wen Tian slightly changed his expression. However, he curbed his anger and managed to give the other a smile. “Ancestor Su was indeed a bit reckless, but he did so considering the welfare of all gods. The Heavens are indeed a problem; you should really think about it.”

“How dare you!” Ancestor Han bellowed, “Since when is the Heaven Path Institute qualified to decide on big matters? Do you honestly think you’re above all other clans because you have four Ancestral Gods? All of us know how your other two ancestors are faring at the moment. Even if they break free, you have to bow before the Feitian Clan. What gave you the gall to boss around?!”

Ancestral God Wen Tian’s face was gloomy, but he knew it was true. Besides, if the Feitian Clan was provoked, the other six clans wouldn’t just stand idle.

They surely could compete amongst themselves for resources, but they always stood together when another force provoked them.

They would never allow an eighth force to appear and compete with them over the cake.

“Ancestor Su, let’s go.” Wen Tian didn’t want to say another word. It was obvious that those people didn’t care for them; staying there would only be insulting.

“Apologize and compensate. Do you think you can leave just like this?” Ancestor Han’s face was cold. He had given them a bit of face, since they represented the Heaven Path Institute. Besides, Su Ping was an Ancestral God. Under different conditions, he would have made sure that the offending clan would pay the price.

Su Ping gradually looked away after staring at Ancestor Han, they looked at the sky in the distance.

After that—

He heaved a sigh.

“The Heaven Path Institute will surely...” Ancestral God Wen Tian was going to reply to Ancestor Han, when Su Ping interrupted him—

“Time for this to come to an end.”

His words stunned all the onlookers.

Once again, he looked at Ancestor Han. “I’m already terrified of faces like yours. Very tired. So, this should be over!”

1

“What are you talking about?” Ancestor Han frowned.

Su Ping smiled and then said to Ancestral God Wen Tian, “Brother Wen Tian, watch over the elders. I don’t want to hurt them by accident.”

Wen Tian narrowed his eyes. “You...”

There was a loud bang!

Su Ping stepped forward, causing an earthquake affecting a radius of tens of thousands of kilometers. He waved his arm, gathering the chaos universe in his hand; the manifestation grew as massive as a meteorite, and imposed a terrifying pressure on everyone.

Bang!

Su Ping waved his hand, and the chaos universe pressed down!

Ancestor Han changed his expression, now showing shock and anger. “How dare you!”



He never thought that the new Ancestral God would be that crazy. There had been other Ancestral Gods over the years who dared to attack the Seven Great Clans, but all of them were killed. That was why nobody else had tried to intrude.

However, after countless years, another reckless fellow had shown up.

## **Chapter 1519: Fighting Alone in the Archean Divinity (1)**

“Stop!”

It was a furious roar that came from a distance.

However, the universe of original chaos still pressed down ruthlessly. A dazzling light exploded, causing the entire continent to tremble!

That whole continent belonged to the Feitian Clan, unlike other continents shared by several high-ranked clans.

A brilliant green light covered a radius of hundreds of thousands of kilometers as the continent shook. It countered the blast, but it dimmed quickly after.

Su Ping took action even before the earthquake ended. He struck with his mountainous fist, raising a raging wind that caused the ground to lift, creating deep ravines.

There was a loud bang!

Su Ping's fist appeared to have hit something. A dark figure flew out, crushing hundreds of mountains and suddenly disappearing into the deeper spaces.

However, two figures simultaneously charged at Su Ping from the void immediately after.

One of them was Ancestor Han, who had just been sent flying. He wielded a divine spear and wore a dark helmet. He changed to a godly thousand feet height, but that was only as large as one of Su Ping's arms.

The other figure was wearing blood colored armor and held a sword. He looked at Su Ping coldly. “Human Ancestral God, do you want humanity to be eliminated from this world?!”

“Eliminated? Do you really think you’re capable of doing that?” Brutality flashed in Su Ping’s eyes, “You pieces of trash dare to stop me? Make all your Ancestral Gods come out. I’ll deal with them once and for all!”

“How arrogant!”

“We will surely capture and suppress you. All human beings will become slaves for eternity!”

Both of the Feitian Ancestral Gods were furious. Never had they been treated with such scorn, in all of the time since the Feitian Clan became one of the Seven Greatest Clans.

“Noisy!!”

Su Ping roared and punched again. His just detonated chaos universe was gathered again; but this time, it turned from a gargantuan sun into a tiny ball in his hand. Like this however, it emitted a terrifying destructive aura that caused the two expert gods to change expressions.

“Hurry up and activate the Feitian Divine Array!” one of the latter hurriedly ordered the God Emperors watching the battle in the distance.

It was impossible for them to partake in such a battle; they would only be taken as cannon fodder.

Noticing Su Ping’s rising momentum, those God Emperors hurriedly activated the array. It was the top protective measure made by the joint effort of all the clan’s Ancestral Gods, and could resist an Ancestral God’s attack.

Both of the ultimate gods felt reassured once the array was activated. They roared and charged at Su Ping.

Both detonated their respective universes and flames covered their bodies.

The chaos universe in Su Ping’s hand, however, suddenly exploded. The blast didn’t spread out; instead, it quickly fused into his arm.

While looking at the pair rushing over, he suddenly stepped forward and waved a hand, and directly grabbed Ancestor Han who was flying over.

This strike would surely hit its target. All causalities had been cut off; as long as he existed in Su Ping’s memory, he could land a strike no matter how far apart they were from each other.

“Break!!”

Ancestor Han roared and made a sweeping motion with his spear, gathering the power of destruction. Such a spear could have caused a hole on the continent. He then aimed to stab the human expert furiously.

It was completely useless!

Su Ping's giant hand was like the mystic iron from chaos. The spear poked and poked, but no wounds were made!

On the other hand, when Su Ping clenched his fist, Ancestor Han's body exploded with a scream. Blood was squeezed out and bones cracked, the spear breaking in the process.

A sharp and pointed coldness attacked Su Ping's back. It was a sword aura that instantly slashed down.

He turned around and punched without looking back.

The sword aura was shattered, and the Ancestral God wielding the sword was sent flying like a worm. The ground shattered on his path and the clouds were cleared.

“Roar!!”

Su Ping bellowed at the skies and raised his arm to throw away the body in his hand.

Ancestor Han's remains smashed heavily into the Feitian Clan's array, causing it to shake and hum.

The Great Dao of Chaos he released had prevented Ancestor Han's universe from regenerating. At the moment he was like a pile of mud with a smidge of vitality left. He could die at any moment!

Su Ping ignored the dying fellow. He suddenly stepped on the Feitian Clan's array on the mountains, and the protection shook violently, the ground collapsing as well.

All the gods inside the array shivered as they looked up at the huge monster. They thought it was the darkest moment of the Feitian Clan!

“Our Ancestral God lost!”

“Who's that senior? Why is he so terrifying?”

All of the clansmen were frightened, as it was the first time ever experiencing such a thing. All the emotions sealed up in their blood crawled up at that moment.

Terror!

“Ancestor Su, he...”

Further away—Ancestral God Wen Tian and the elders he was protecting looked at the scene in shock.

Su Ping was truly like an invincible monster from chaos at the moment; his gigantic body tore everything apart. He single handedly suppressed the Feitian Clan and seemed to be unstoppable!

Ancestral God Wen Tian was shocked. Being in the same cultivation realm, he knew better than anybody else how terrifying Su Ping was.

## Chapter 1520: Fighting Alone in the Archean Divinity (2)

Wen Tian had told Su Ping about the rules of the world, and the reason why the Seven Great Clans couldn't be provoked. However, Su Ping had definitely proven that he was no weaker than those old monsters!

*He's capable of slaying Ancestral Gods. He's on par with the ferocious beasts!*

Ancestral God Wen Tian secretly gasped in his heart.

Not just him; the two Feitian Ancestral Gods who had been sent flying realized how terrifying the man was. They were angry and shocked. *When was such an existence born in an outlier clan?* No wonder Su Ping dared to challenge the Feitian Clan on his own!

“Stop!” said a soft voice.

Three figures rushed out and stood in Su Ping's way as he was about to completely shatter the Feitian Divine Array.

The person in the middle had green long hair and an alluring body figure. It was a breathtakingly beautiful woman.

Flanking her was an old man and middle-aged looking fellow; both seemed to be as strong as Ancestor Han.

Su Ping fixed his gaze on the green-haired woman in the middle and said with a cold tone, “Are you the ones whom the Feitian Clan relies on?”

He could feel that the woman had the deepest aura, which was definitely above the normal Ancestral Gods.

“Stop. This battle is pointless. The Feitian Clan has no grudges against humanity. Why bother?” said the green-haired woman coldly and calmly.

Su Ping looked down at her and said, “It was unnecessary in the past, but it’s very necessary right now.”

The green-haired woman said, “Don’t think there’s nothing we can do about you!”

“Then why don’t you give it a try?”

Su Ping didn’t talk any longer, and simply stomped ruthlessly.

His enormous feet were like mountains crushing down with infinite momentum; they contained the power from the chaos universe’s explosion. The pressure produced had lowered the ground by dozens of meters!

“You’ve made the wrong decision!”

The green-haired woman turned cold. Her body radiated a brilliant green light, which began to spread like countless butterflies, and grew to reveal her original form. She was 100,000 feet tall and resembled an ancient tree. There was a crown above her head.

She wore the crown like a queen. Many tentacle-like vines swung on her arms and the rest of her body.

Her feet were deeply rooted in the continent, not just into the soil, but also dug into the deep spaces of that world.

Su Ping stepped down ruthlessly, and countless vines darted from her arms to form a net that looked like a funnel to stop Su Ping’s feet. Endless vines also shot out from her crown; those were strong and tough, and moved to tie Su Ping up.

However, her expression changed soon after.

The vines blocking Su Ping’s feet were unable to counter his force. Instead, they were actually stretched, hitting the Feitian Divine Array along with his feet.

Boom. The Divine Array shook, and was a lot dimmer than before.

If not for her intervention, Su Ping could have shattered the array!

He noticed the abundant aura of chaos emanated by the woman and her appearance. He remembered having seen people like her in Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu’s battle.

“A mythical creature bloodline? Unfortunately, it’s not one of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors’ bloodlines!”

Back then, the survivors of that clan had followed him to meet the Original Dragons.

“Your bloodline is not pure enough. Even if your ancestors came here, they would still have to kneel before me!!” Su Ping’s eyes were absolutely cold and domineering. He raised his leg again, this time aiming at the woman.

“You!”

She was truly shocked. At first she thought that activating her bloodline and showing her most powerful form would be enough to stop him, but Su Ping was much stronger.

This made her realize why Ancestor Han was nearly beaten to death by Su Ping with a single attack.

Such an outcome was actually him going easy on the fellow!

Of course, she knew that the human would no longer show mercy...

Countless vines rustled and formed several nets the moment Su Ping threw a kick, all to slow him down. The nets covered his feet and removed all momentum. Each vine could handle a force of a billion tons. However, physical force wasn’t really meaningful to beings of that level. The vines were actually removing the Dao power on Su Ping’s feet.

All of this happened in instants, but there were countless movements during their clash. The vines twisted and pulled. If Su Ping weren’t strong enough, he would have been trapped and bound by the vines.

But...

There was a boom, and the vines covering the front exploded!

The blast power swept out, already breaking the giant tree the woman had transformed into. She would have been in a half-dead status if not for her being rooted in the world of gods and absorbed its power to heal herself.

“Ancestor Fei!” the other two Ancestral Gods cried in shock. *Our strongest Ancestral God can’t defeat this human?*

Normal Ancestral Gods would only end up as nutrition when facing Ancestor Fei, after being tied up and drained!

Whoosh! Whoosh!



## **Chapter 1521: Fighting Alone in the Archean Divinity (3)**

The two Ancestral Gods rushed to attack.

Cold electricity darted out of Su Ping's eyes. He steadily landed on the ground, and his chaos universe exploded again the moment those two experts arrived. A torrent of power surged out, then he waved his arms, bashing the two ancestors with his enormous hands. They were both punched deep into the ground.

The full-strength strikes of those two gods couldn't compare to Su Ping's punches.

Back in the Dragon Prison, Su Ping had swallowed Yan Tai's flesh and polished his body to become the best an Ancestral God could attain. He could suppress most of his peers with physical strength alone.

1

"Die!"

Blood and essence was gathered on Su Ping's arm. Divine light was manifested, and he suddenly slashed at Ancestor Fei.

But exactly at that moment—three streams of light darted over and collided with the sword. The sword aura was instantly spread, and the three streams were forced to reveal themselves. They were three Ancestral Gods.

The trio came to a halt in shock. It was really difficult for them to resist Su Ping's attack even while joining forces!

"Ancestor Fei, don't worry. We're already here!"

"He should have known better than to dare provoke the Seven Greatest Clans!"

"The Human Ancestral God? You will be the cause of humanity's doom. Humans will be forever our slaves!"

Many figures stepped out from the void, emitting terrifying Ancestral God auras.



Those Ancestral Gods were all from the other six great clans. One after another, a dozen of them arrived.

Their powerful auras filled the world. Even the wind seemed to have stopped blowing.

Ancestral God Wen Tian and the elders of the Heaven Path Institute showed different. It was true, the Seven Great Clans always teamed up against a common foe.

The gods of the Feitian Clan were all shocked and excited to see that unprecedented scene.

Many of them had never seen an Ancestral God their entire lives. After all, those experts would always live in seclusion. Only their names and stories were mentioned.

However, they now had the privilege of seeing many Ancestral Gods at the same time.

Such a moment would be recorded in the history of the godly world!

1

“That human is done for!”

“He dared to challenge the Seven Great Clans. He doesn’t know what he’s doing!”

“My grandpa wasn’t lying. The Seven Greatest Clans rule this world. Who would dare to disobey?!”

“He will be imprisoned and enslaved by the Feitian Clan because of his arrogance!”

The Feitian gods were so thrilled that they were almost shivering. The other six clans had made an appearance to support them. Although competitors most of the time, they were willing to step up to defend against a common enemy. This was why the Seven Greatest Clans never lost!

“Human Ancestor, I can see that you’re a rare genius. Surrender right now and serve each of the seven clans for 100,000 years, and I will spare you!” said an ancestor of the Chentian Clan stepped out. He looked like a tall young man, but his eyes were deep and dark, showing condescension and indifference. Both his hair and eyebrows were golden.

“Serving us? That’s not bad.” Another Ancestral God nodded, thinking it was a great alternative.

It was even more overbearing than directly killing Su Ping. After all, people would probably forget the battle in 100,000 years, but if Su Ping served them, all clans would remember the authority of the Seven Greatest Clans in the next 700,000 years!

“I gave you an opportunity. Regret is useless right now.”

Ancestor Fei had recovered by then. She coldly stared at Su Ping who was at the moment surrounded by the Ancestral Gods. She had noticed his extraordinary combat ability, and knew she would barely be capable of killing him, so she opted to ask Su Ping to back off. However, he was too stubborn to listen.

“Regret?”

Su Ping stood firmly on the ground, and was a veritable monster tens of thousands of feet tall. He flashed an aggressive stare as he looked down at the Ancestral Gods around him, then said in a cold tone, “Is this all of the power of the Seven Greatest Clans?”

## Chapter 1522: Suppressing An Era! (1)

“Humph. Is it not enough?”

“It’s more than enough to kill you!”

“It seems that you’ve chosen to die!”

All the Ancestral Gods surrounding Su Ping sensed the provocation in his words. Some sneered, others looked gloomy, while a few remained nonchalant, like mighty deities looking down at the ants on the ground.

“Die!”

The previously pummeled pair of Ancestral Gods from the Feitian Clan rushed over. They showed no hesitation after being bolstered by the allied clans ready to kill the human expert.

While the pair of ancestors took action, the ancestors of the other six clans released their universes. The suffocating aura nearly collapsed that time and space.

“Guys, please move the battlefield out of this world,” said Ancestor Fei in a hurry.

She was unwilling to kill Su Ping right there. Considering the latter’s strength, if he attacked desperately during his death throes, he would surely destroy the continent. As things were, a dozen Ancestral Gods were involved in the fight; it wouldn’t be surprising if half the continent sank.

“All right!”

The other gods understood Ancestor Fei's request. The Feitian Clan would suffer a huge loss even if Su Ping was killed.

Boom. An Ancestral God took action and tore an opening in the void, ready to kill Su Ping in the domain beyond.

Su Ping couldn't help but laugh when he saw what they were doing.

"Finishing you off is not that troublesome. Come here and die!!"

He suddenly waved his arms and detonated his chaos universe. A violent power was gathered in his hands, like hundreds of black holes. He pulled two Ancestral Gods nearby and simply squeezed them!

"How audacious!" roared a top Ancestral God, unleashing his universe to cut Su Ping's Great Dao of Chaos to pieces and to block the Dao power stopping the two Ancestral Gods from resurrecting. Soon after, the two ancestors resurrected on the other side.

The revived pair changed their cold smiles to faces of fury. It only took a move for Su Ping to destroy their bodies and almost make it impossible for them to resurrect. They had almost been killed; it was terrifying.

He was one of the strongest, even when considering the experts in the Seven Greatest Clans. *No wonder he dares to be so arrogant!*

"He carries the bloodline of a ferocious beast, and he's even stronger than the beast itself. There's also godly blood in his body, and he's awakened powers of mythical creatures. Everybody, don't be careless. Kill him right now!" said an Ancestral God of the Qinglian Clan. He was always cautious, so he was quick to notice Su Ping's extraordinary traits.

The other ancestors followed the Qinglian Clan expert's cue and took action, charging at Su Ping at the same time.

"He dares to challenge the Seven Greatest Clans. We must suppress him as soon as possible; this way we will make everyone know that our authority cannot be put to question!"

"Suppress him with all your might!"

"Kill him! Show him the fury of the gods!"

All the ancestors of the great clans attacked almost simultaneously; the power from a dozen exploding universes bombarded Su Ping in a crazy manner.

The entire world was shaking. Ancestor Fei looked awful, but she knew it would be hard for them to relocate in a short period of time if Su Ping was unwilling to leave.

She could only ask her companions to reverse time and rebuild the continent after the battle was over.

As for her clansmen, she could recreate them with one thought if they met an unfortunate end. The lives below the Dao Heart State were simply energy for her; she could easily recreate them at the cost of some energy.

That was the power of an Ancestral God. They could create everything!

That was the reason why they were the foundation of a clan!

As long as Ancestral Gods stood, it would be possible to recreate the entire clan, even if it was completely eliminated.

1

If the Celestial experts had Creator-like abilities after condensing a universe, Ancestral Gods were thousands of times better. They could create and destroy everything in an instant.

Boom!

Boom!

The cluster of sword and spear auras launched by the gods were like a sun about to drown and shatter Su Ping's existence.

No one bothered about the possible collateral damage. After all, everything could be rebuilt. As long as Su Ping was killed, it wouldn't matter even if the continent was destroyed. They could build another one!

The world was collapsing and the stars were changing. The gods in the Feitian Divine Array saw doom approaching.

The scene would be forever etched in their souls. They would never forget.

The scenes they witnessed were beyond the limits of their imagination. The Great Daos collapsed, while space and time were in disarray; many shadows crept out of the void; the sky and the ground seemed to have been swapped. Flames and meteors were falling.

The Ancestral Gods' attacks nearly suffocated them.

They were frightened, suddenly realizing that the Feitian Clan could survive with the help of the other six great clans, but they would probably die!

Bang!!

It was the sound of a massive explosion amongst all the destructive attacks. Then, everybody saw a brilliant, gargantuan fist emerging from the explosive energy. It was as if a fiend had awakened in the mist and raised an arm!

The arm—which was more than ten thousand feet long—swung away, splitting up the sky and the ground. The storm was obliterated and the incoming attacks were bounced back.

With a boom, the gargantuan fist punched an Ancestral God brutally, sending him deep into the continent. The entire tectonic plaque was shaking; there were cracks within a radius of a million kilometers. All the beasts in the area fell on their knees in panic.

The overwhelming pressure made it impossible for them to even escape. They were like barbarians begging for the mercy of the Lord!

2

## Chapter 1523: Suppressing An Era! (2)

“Charge!!” an Ancestral God roared. The ancestor who had been punched away was a clansman of his. The fellow had been defeated with a single punch!

“Ancestor Fei, restrain him!” shouted an ancestor from another clan. Ancestral Gods had ample battle experience, and they could tell that Su Ping wasn’t easy to deal with. Furthermore, no one would be his match if they were to duel.

All contempt was shed as they planned to cooperate in killing Su Ping.

Cooperation and attacking together were different. Their high-level cultivation would produce flawless teamwork!

“I’ll try, but I can stop him for only one second at most!” said Ancestor Fei in a hurry.

She felt shocked and anxious upon seeing the human kicking and punching, sending Ancestral Gods flying. *This Human Ancestor is brutal!*

Even if the Chaos Perception Dragon were there, it would have been beaten to death under their joint attack!

“One second...”

Ancestor Fei’s answer gave the other Ancestral Gods a chill. Her forte was restraining; even they found it tricky to deal with her. Even so, she could only restrain Su Ping for one second.

Of course, one second was like ten minutes for them and they could do many things, but it was still too short!

“Guys, we must kill him with one strike!!” said an ancestor in a low voice.

The other ancestors were alarmed, yet they secretly prepared themselves.

Ancestor Fei soon found an opportunity. Su Ping wasn’t paying special attention to her, maybe because he didn’t think she was important. Such an attitude towards her gave her a mixture of delight and anger.

Her, an Ancestral God, had she never been disregarded like that?

Her opponent would pay a price for slighting her!

Vines darted out of her body and stretched into the void to bind the human expert. The vines emitted the green light of life. She burned her universe as she tried to strangle Su Ping. It wasn’t just ensnaring him; even the Great Dao inside his body was sealed!

At the moment he was like a piece of wood that could only be struck!

“Hurry!”

The other Ancestral Gods saw the opportunity, and attacked Su Ping with their ultimate skills.

“Human Ancestor, I will show you the gods’ real power!” roared one of the old Ancestral Gods. He turned into a sun and moved to crash into Su Ping’s chest with a destructive aura, all ready to go through Su Ping’s body.

“Huh?!”

Su Ping saw the vines binding him and the Ancestral Gods as they attacked in a frenzy, quickly realizing the strategy as he also noticed the cold smile on Ancestor Fei’s face.

He couldn’t help but smile back in kind.

“I’ve seen it. You’re just trash that’s not even a millionth as good as me!!” Su Ping roared, causing the world to tremble.

He was almost like a peerless dictator. A terrifying power burst from his limbs, instantly blowing up all the vines. The chaos universe behind him also exploded. Two more universes appeared after that, but they exploded before anyone could see them clearly!

The three universes exploded, and all their power was suffused into Su Ping's body. A terrifying aura was spread out in the world. He then roared and punched.

Bang!

The sun-like Ancestral God met Su Ping's fist and instantly exploded!

The terrifying explosion echoed throughout the place. It was as if ten thousand stars would have shattered at the point of impact. The light was so dazzling and the blast was so powerful that even the trees a million kilometers away were bent out of shape!

The unfortunate ancestor's flesh exploded. Su Ping's fist momentum shattered the surrounding space. It even moved beyond the continent, causing a deep ravine in the vast ocean and reaching the neighboring continent. It didn't stop until a dent 100,000 kilometers long was made.

The power of his fist left all the gods in shock.

Ancestral God Wen Tian—who was watching the battle and protecting the elders—was looking at the blast with wide eyes. His jaw almost hit the ground!

*What kind of power is that? It is absolutely destructive!*

*That attack could have punched through the world of gods ten times over!*

“Is this why the Seven Greatest Clans are so proud?”

Su Ping didn't bother to look. He suddenly leaped and threw a kick, directly blowing up two Ancestral Gods to pieces.

Their universes fell apart and they tried to resurrect, but Su Ping stopped them with an absolutely dominating power.

However, he didn't follow through and killed them. He simply confined their souls.

Then, Su Ping strode towards Ancestor Fei.

“This is the special move of the Seven Greatest Clans?!”

While she fearfully saw him approach, he waved a fist and broke her body, then stomped on her remains.

“Who’s next?!”

His roar echoed in the world. The entire world could hear his furious declaration.

The Ancestral Gods of the other six great clans shivered, especially the one whose top Ancestral God had been pulverized with a punch and had yet to recover. The latter’s undying universe was being suppressed and couldn’t regenerate. It was very likely that he would perish if he wasn’t rescued in time!

However... No one dared to step up.

All the ancestors were swept by an unprecedented fright as they looked at Su Ping’s furious and monstrous face. The Human Ancestor was too terrifying; he wasn’t like any of the Ancestral Gods they knew. He was even more terrifying than a ferocious beast!

1

## Chapter 1524: Suppressing An Era! (3)

“Why have you stopped?” Su Ping looked around at the strongest Ancestral Gods.

The latter changed their expressions. They could assess that he had yet to use his full power as they looked at the fallen Ancestor Fei under his feet. That was the reason they were scared to make another move.

“What exactly do you want?” asked one of the Ancestral Gods.

“On your knees!” Su Ping bellowed.

The Ancestral God changed his expression and looked at Su Ping with shock and fury.

“I gave you a chance to talk on your feet, but you didn’t cherish it. The Seven Greatest Clans will be no more if you make the wrong decision!” said Su Ping.

“Don’t go overboard!” said one of the ancestors, clearly incensed. *Does he want to rule over all gods?*

Phew!

Su Ping suddenly punched him.

The punch was just as powerful as the previous one.



The angry ancestor was then shocked; he hurriedly resisted by exploding his universe and the expert gods nearby helped him.

They knew they couldn't afford any more casualties, or it would be even more impossible to resist the human's actions.

The Ancestral Gods condensed the power of ten universes and turned it into a huge storm that blocked Su Ping's attack.

The targeted ancestor felt a slight relief, seeing that the human's punch was blocked. He immediately said, "Let's just talk nicely..."

However, he was interrupted by Su Ping. "You're not worthy enough!"

Boom!

An explosion burst out as a fourth universe appeared behind Su Ping's back!

The fourth universe exploded and the terrifying power was injected into Su Ping. His fist broke free from the storm and punched brutally again.

Even the colors of the world seemed to be changing. All the Ancestral Gods were appalled. They noticed Su Ping's strange multiple universes earlier, but they never saw them clearly. *Is that the source of Su Ping's terrifying strength?*

A resounding bang!

The Ancestral Gods gathered their strength again, but Su Ping's punch was greater and fiercer than before; the storm they raised was torn apart. The god who was the primary target was instantly blown up. The dozen Ancestral Gods nearby were also sent flying.

In the distance, one of the ancestors yet to take action looked awful. He already knew it would be almost impossible to stop the human. "You're being excessive!"

Besides, even if they stopped him, so what? Could they kill Su Ping? Apparently not.

Su Ping would be an undefeatable existence if they didn't unite. No solution would be found if he chose to look for trouble with any clan in the future.

The balance in the world of gods would surely change. He only hoped to negotiate in a relatively peaceful way.

"Excessive..."

Su Ping glanced at him with eyes as massive as suns.

More dazzling universes appeared behind him. The fifth, the sixth, the seventh...

Each universe carried a glaring and scorching power, along with infinite Dao power momentum. It seemed that they could shatter a whole world if they spun a little bit.

The old Ancestral God was rendered speechless. He gazed at that scene and even forgot breathing.

The ancestors who had just returned from being hurled away by Su Ping's attack were rooted on the spot. Their heads went blank as they saw such an unbelievable sight.

It was an epic moment that would forever be etched in their hearts.

The monster that stood there, with universes floating above his head, was like an ancient fiend that had returned to the world. He was producing so much pressure that nobody could possibly resist him.

"Ancestor Su..."

The elders under the protection of Ancestral God Wen Tian were just as shocked. It was beyond astounding. The Ancestral Gods were like fireflies in front of the sun when compared to Su Ping.

They were like flying worms in the presence of his gargantuan body!

The world was quiet at the moment.

All the Ancestral Gods were so befuddled that none of them dared to move. They trembled like moths, overtaken by the fear of death they had almost forgotten.

That long lost feeling refreshed their memories and reminded them of what they were like when they were weak.

"I'll be in charge from now on. Any objections?" Su Ping looked down at them, and his voice resounded in the world.

After witnessing the deep seated arrogance of the Seven Great Clans, Su Ping was determined to become a dictator.

The greatest advantage of a dictatorship was efficiency. All instructions would be carried out, swiftly, without arguments.

Dictatorships had existed in every era. It was just that some were the acts of individuals while others worked in groups. Just like the great clans had ruled over the godly world together.

Their group effort had rendered all others incapable of resisting.

All the gods answered with silence, while looking at the mythical figure who was surrounded by bead-like universes. The immense pressure made it hard for them to breathe.

Su Ping had easily suppressed them with only the power of four universes. He could instantly kill any of them at the moment.

Such power would make you see them all as ants. You wouldn't even feel sorry for wiping them out!

That was why emperors were ruthless in ancient times.

The tendency was for them to act with indifference when they could decide other people's fate with one word.

This had nothing to do with what was right and what was wrong. It was just an instinct developed in a certain environment.

Su Ping snorted after seeing them bow their heads. It was true that negotiations couldn't be done without fists and blades. The truth would be in his hands when he had absolute power!

"Come here!" Su Ping said indifferently.

The Ancestral Gods looked at each other in bewilderment, and flew towards him in fright.

Su Ping moved his feet to let Ancestor Fei get up. She didn't dare resist his summons, and turned back into her beautiful, green-haired appearance, clearly afraid. She obediently approached.

The sight of the magnificent figure before them was the clear announcement that the age of the Seven Greatest Clans was in the past. That Human Ancestor had exceeded the limits of what Ancestral Gods could achieve. It was possible that he had already reached the end of all cultivation.

While the godly experts' hearts were in turmoil, Su Ping said indifferently, "Inform all the clans. Tell them to be prepared for the war against the Heavenly Dao in the future. This is my command, understand?"

All the Ancestral Gods shivered and said, "Understood."

"Get lost right now!"

Su Ping sneered.

He withdrew his universes and resumed his human appearance.

He didn't bother looting the Seven Greatest Clans' training resources. Although intimidated, none of them suffered any losses. He didn't make a move to collect fortunes for the sake of humankind. Given his status, humankind would surely receive all kinds of gifts after establishing their territory.

They were still too weak, and could choke if they ate too much, too fast.

Su Ping thought it would be enough for humans to be respected in the world of gods. His real enemies were the Heavens. Without settling that matter, the world of gods would only be destroyed, even if he reformed it according to his wishes.

All the Ancestral Gods left in frustration. Some of them anxiously took away the remains of the experts from their clans who died in battle. They were relieved to see that Su Ping didn't fly into a rage.

Su Ping didn't refine the Great Dao fragments he had absorbed just yet. He approached Ancestral God Wen Tian and said, "I have something else to do. I'll leave this place to you, Brother Wen Tian. Tell me if they act arrogantly again."

Wen Tian was rather flattered by this. He had been slightly nervous after having seen Su Ping's unstoppable performance. After all, he could easily kill an Ancestral God.

"I will." Wen Tian accepted the request, while smiling bitterly in his heart. As long as the seven clans weren't stupid, they would probably never challenge Su Ping's authority.

The fellow had single handedly suppressed them. Such power couldn't be resisted by any schemes or tricks. They could only obey him.

The elders of the Heaven Path Institute were surprised and delighted to see Su Ping. Having Ancestor Su's backing, the Heaven Path Institute would certainly become the best school in the godly world, one that everyone would revere.

Su Ping didn't stay for much longer. He took Joanna away from that place.

"Ancestor Su is truly the greatest genius in history. I've never seen anyone cultivate as fast as him."

"Ancestor Su's current level... Is he already beyond the Ancestral God realm?"

“Beyond the Ancestral God realm? Isn’t it the legendary unparalleled state?”

All the elders were shocked. They had to look up to Ancestral Gods, and even those existences had to look up to Su Ping.

Yan Qing and the others had mixed feelings. There was once a time when Su Ping was a little kid who needed their help. He had suddenly grown and become a towering tree.

“Humanity will become the Archean Divinity’s biggest clan in the next hundred thousand years,” remarked an elder.

“Maybe, the world of gods will need a name change...”

1

...

Su Ping’s battle had already become legendary, making everybody wonder.

He wasn’t too bothered with it. He had no feelings about gods anymore, after having seen Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu fight the Heavens with billions of mythical creatures. Gods were only life forms slightly stronger than normal; they could not compare to mythical creatures.

“Have you reached the end of all cultivation?” Joanna looked at Su Ping curiously. She found it hard to imagine what he was capable of at the moment.

## **Chapter 1526: Destroying the Rain Clan (2)**

“I’m not even close.” Su Ping shook his head.

Stunned, Joanna asked, “Not even close?”

“Above the Ancestral Gods are the Chaos Ancestors. I’m only stronger than ordinary Ancestral Gods at the moment. Chaos Ancestors can crush me with one word,” said Su Ping.

He wasn’t exaggerating. The horror of a Sorcerer Ancestor wouldn’t be understood until you saw them.

One of them had built a Dragon Prison with thousands of universes. Even the entire world of gods merely represented a single floor inside that prison.

“They can crush you with one word...”

Joanna was completely shocked. She felt that her head was exploding; it was already a level that she couldn't understand using all her imagination.

The ever-changing view paused again after traveling for a moment.

“And this?”

Joanna came back to her senses.

“I'm just going to finish off an annoying guy,” said Su Ping.

He raised a hand and slapped a continent.

The gigantic hand manifested in the air struck the ground brutally and broke the protective array covering a territory.

That technique was called Natural Manifestation in the age of deities.

“Who's there?!” was a furious roar that followed, and a figure rushed over. It was none other than the Rain Ancestor.

All the formerly calm people of the Rain Clan raised their heads in shock. They were frightened since the protective array had been broken.

Fear transitioned to excitement when they saw the figure in the sky.

For the past hundreds of years, that human being had been the most unforgettable existence for them.

The news of Su Ping becoming the Human Ancestor was disseminated all over the world. After all, the birth of an Ancestral God would be a shocking event for any clan.

And Su Ping finally showed up.

“It's you!” The Rain Ancestor became gloomy, with cold light flashing in his eyes. “You recklessly attacked my clan and violated the rules. Nobody can save you today!”

“That's right. Nobody can save you today, not even the Seven Great Clans,” said Su Ping indifferently.

He then raised a hand and moved to smash down violently.

Shocked and infuriated, the Rain Ancestor said, “The Seven Great Clans will punish you for starting an Ancestral God war!”

“Actually, I just punished them just now,” said Su Ping.

The hand pressed down ruthlessly. The Rain Ancestor detonated his universe and made stabbing moves with his spear, but all of it was easily destroyed by the Great Dao under the palm.

The terrifying power made the Rain Ancestor realize that something wasn't right. It was too late for him to escape, though. His body was shattered by the palm, along with his universe.

The old expert's universe was regenerated, but it was being entangled and suffocated by the aura of chaos.

“This is impossible. How can you be so strong!” roared the Rain Ancestor.

“Ants.”

Su Ping wasn't interested in further talk. He annihilated the guy's soul and absorbed his broken universe. Everything was done in the blink of an eye.

The sky became clear again when he finished, but the fragrance of blood lingered in the air.

“From today on, you won't be a high-ranked clan anymore. The Rain Ancestor is already dead. You may live and die on your own...” Su Ping showed no mercy to the Rain Clan. He didn't destroy the Seven Great Clans because they would be needed in the war against the Heavens. But the Rain Clan... It only had one Ancestral God; Su Ping wasn't interested in them, at all.

Besides, their grudge ran too deep. Too many humans had been killed by the Rain Clan in order to rescue him. They needed justice.

Panic and shock overtook the Rain Clan people after Su Ping's declaration.

Lin Tianzhan, the Rain Emperor and the others shivered. They hoped that the Rain Ancestor would show up and deny those claims. However, they could somehow sense that their ancestor had truly been killed.

*Could an Ancestral God kill another Ancestral God?*

*Has Su Ping already reached the level of the old monsters in the Seven Great Clans?*

They didn't know. They could only grumble as they watched him leave.

The Rain Ancestor didn't return after a long time passed. Fury turned into fright. Their enemies wouldn't let this opportunity go if something had really happened to the Rain Ancestor!

...

Su Ping summoned the Inferno Dragon and said to Joanna, "I'm going to meet some old friends. I'll leave the little dragon to accompany you. Tell him if you want to go anywhere."

She was completely lost for words upon seeing that the Inferno Dragon had evolved into an Ancestral God too. She could only nod in response.

After saying goodbye to her, Su Ping went to the Chaos Perception Dragon's residence.

The great dragon stood up as soon as he arrived. It stared at Su Ping with anxiety in its crimson eyes.

The beast was keenly able to sense the aura of chaos coming off of Su Ping. Unlike before, he had completely evolved and turned into a true member of the Primitive Chaos Clan.

The Chaos Perception Dragon stared at Su Ping and said, "You've gotten even stronger..."

Su Ping smiled. "Isn't it only natural?"

"..."

*Do you even hear what you're saying?*

The Chaos Perception Dragon didn't know what to say. Even after becoming an Ancestral God, the guy was still improving at a fast pace. The great dragon even suspected that Su Ping was the reincarnation of a Chaos Ancestor—

If that wasn't the case, he should have hit the bottleneck after becoming a peak Ancestral God, even with the training of a Chaos Ancestor.

"Are you here to pick him up?"

The Chaos Perception Dragon figured out why Su Ping was there.

Su Ping nodded and looked ahead, then saw a spot of light darting towards him. Once closer, the round and fat figure turned out to be the young Chaos Beast.



It looked no different from its past image, except it was slightly bigger. However, Su Ping could feel the terrifying power inside its body. It had also evolved and turned into an Ancestral God.

“It seems that you do deserve to be its master,” sighed the Chaos Perception Dragon. It had never fought against Su Ping, but being a mythical creature allowed it to feel Su Ping’s strength. A blood-deep fear was felt even by him just standing there.

2

“I was lucky to meet the fellow.” Su Ping smiled.

“Daddy!”

The young Chaos Beast’s body shrank as it moved to hug Su Ping’s leg.

It had always regarded Su Ping as family, ever since he helped its egg hatch.

Su Ping helplessly petted the little one and said, “I’m not your daddy. Call me brother.”

“No, you’re daddy.” The young Chaos Beast was persistent.

“You make me sound too old if you call me Daddy...” Su Ping complained.

Chaos Perception Dragon: “...”

“Thank you very much for all you’ve done,” Su Ping said to the Chaos Perception Dragon, “I’ll ask the gods to stop hunting you.”

After some surprise, the great dragon shook his head and said, “That won’t be necessary. I’m fine being with ferocious beasts. I don’t like those gods anyway, and I want to eat them when I see them. This desolate land for you is actually a home for me; I like the soil and scenery.”

*Well...* Su Ping didn’t pursue the matter. “Fine then.”

“Given your strength, you only need to be careful about the Seven Great Clans in the future,” said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

“They’ve already been taken care of,” said Su Ping, “I’ll be in charge in the world of gods from now on.”

“...”

The giant dragon looked at Su Ping in shock. After a long silence, it said, “Then, it shouldn’t be a problem if I eat a few Ancestral Gods now, right?”

Su Ping was amused by the question. "Better hold that thought, unless they act and offend you. We're bound to fight the Heavens in the future. I hope to unite all the power of the gods and meet with the mythical creatures to fight the Heavens. All the available forces should enter the battlefield."

"The Heavens..." The Chaos Perception Dragon's eyes glittered. It nodded and said, "I'll be there."

1

They exchanged glances; Su Ping couldn't help but smile and pat the beast's shoulder. He sighed like talking to an old friend. "I hope we can have real peace."

"Peace is not a good thing, because it has to be defended by bloody wars," said the Chaos Perception Dragon.

Su Ping found it ironic, too, but that was reality.

Even the most beautiful flowers grew from filthy mud.

Everything could be dependent on its opposite.

## **Chapter 1527: Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Luo (1)**

Su Ping said goodbye and left after chatting with the Chaos Perception Dragon for a while. His instincts told him that everything would be different next time they met again.

Ever since his advance to the Ancestral God realm, his instincts weren't simple illusions. This came as a slight surprise, but he knew that gut feeling was related to fate; he could only let nature take its course.

Su Ping took the young Chaos Beast away with him.

He led both his customers' pets and his own to the desolate lands in the world of gods. He searched for Dao Heart and Ancestral God beasts while training them, so he could loot their Great Daos.

Concurrently, the Dao Power he had obtained from suppressing the Seven Great Clans and killing the Rain Ancestor allowed him to condense six universes in a row. Yet again, he was much stronger than before.

Even with such attainments, he didn't slack off. When compared to the Sorcerer Ancestors, he would probably have to condense all the three thousand core Great Daos

that made up everything in the universe and turn them into his universes so he could resist them.

Su Ping traveled in the world of gods for half a year, killing three Ancestral God beasts and condensing three universes during that time. Given the extreme pressure, the Dark Dragon Hound also became an Ancestral God too, evolving into a silver Chaos Dragon Wolf. Its body was like a mountain and its claws were like pillars. It had a truly ferocious look.

However, the Great Dao it had consolidated was focused on defense and its damage dealing was only reasonably good. It was able to remove the power in everything; only the extremely offensive Great Daos could hurt it a little bit.

Even Su Ping would have to use the power of his chaos universe and three other universes in order to kill it. It was easy to tell that it was truly good at keeping itself alive.

“You’d be one of the best in terms of survival means, even among the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors.”

He couldn’t figure out how the Dark Dragon Hound had managed to attain such a powerful Great Dao, which was on par with those of the Sorcerer Ancestors. Was the fellow inspired by the Great Dao that he taught it?

Unfortunately, even though the Great Dao was powerful, it had reached its limit.

Su Ping had also imparted his multiple universes to them, in order to improve their potential. However, it was truly difficult for them to condense more universes like he did; they didn’t have the time and the corresponding cultivation resources...

Once he summoned the Inferno Dragon, Su Ping found that Joanna was obviously much gloomier than when they parted last time. It seemed that she was bothered by something.

“What’s wrong?” asked Su Ping. “Did someone bully you?”

He didn’t think it was likely, though.

After all, the Inferno Dragon had been protecting her; the former was an Ancestral God already.

“Nope.”

Joanna slightly shook her head and then stared at Su Ping, as if there was something she wanted to say. But eventually, she only replied with, “If we’re gone one day, would you remember us?”

Stunned, Su Ping replied without thinking, "Of course I would. But why would you be gone?"

She looked relieved by his answer. She then put on a charming smile on her beautiful face and said, "I will always remember you, too."

"Are you running a fever?" Su Ping touched her forehead.

Joanna knocked Su Ping's hand away angrily. "Don't you want to go back? Hurry up!"

*What a puzzling woman.* Su Ping asked the Inferno Dragon, "Where did you take her?"

"We just wandered around. Let's just head back," Joanna replied for the Inferno Dragon. She urged Su Ping angrily, as if she found the guy annoying.

Lost for words, he could only communicate with the system and return to the store.

After a long time away, Su Ping telepathically communicated with Elaine up above and asked the estimated time of arrival to the Ancestral God's land. Once he got word that there was still a long time to go, he simply went to other cultivation sites for training.

Time flew.

Su Ping traveled to many high-rank cultivation sites. The ones of middle rank were no longer challenging for him; even the strongest forces in most middle-rank cultivation sites only had Dao Heart State experts.

Some of the top mid-rank sites had Ancestral Gods, but they were the minority.

He condensed more Undying Universes as he looted more Great Daos from the high-ranked sites. There was no more suppression from his chaos universe. It couldn't stop him from condensing more universes anymore.

As for the Purple Python and his other pets, they became stronger and stronger through many battles.

The Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon became his third Ancestral God pet. The Great Dao it attained was called Eternal Tribulation, which was even more destructive than the Heavenly Tribulation itself.

After testing, Su Ping found that it was another Great Dao on par with the Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines.

The result was surprising to Su Ping. He asked them to replay the process of how they consolidated their Great Daos, only to find that they had fused their experiences in all

the cultivation sites and the knowledge that came from the multiple small worlds that Su Ping had condensed and imparted to them.

Those Great Daos accommodated their short yet glorious lives, and contained their experiences and understandings.

Without them realizing it, the Dark Dragon Hound and the other pets—which had always been by Su Ping's side—had almost always entered the cultivation sites every time he went there. They were already the best among their peers, and they had been trained countless times. Although the effects of training would decline with repetition, their potential had been improved to the maximum.

## Chapter 1528: Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Luo (2)

Every living creature had limited potential.

That potential would be the deciding factor for the upper limit. It was like a bloodline.

However, potential could be improved. As a trainer, Su Ping successfully did just that.

An excellent teacher could teach so well that a kid who failed an exam would get a full score in the following test. However, when it came to geniuses, getting a full score was just the beginning; it was normal for them to skip grades. That was the difference in upper limit between geniuses and ordinary people.

There was a huge gap in intelligence.

Even the most distinguished teacher was unable to improve the upper limit of an ordinary person to that of a genius, unless they were gods!

By activating and changing their bloodlines, Su Ping had fundamentally improved the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets to the mythical creature level. He reshaped their bloodlines with the aura of chaos, making them veritable mythical creatures that gathered the essence of power in the world.

...

Time flew.

Su Ping returned from cultivation sites every once in a while, then asked Elaine for updates.

To his delight, the journey was rather smooth and they hadn't encountered the Heavens on the way.

One day—

Su Ping made calculations and returned from a cultivation site. He then went to see Elaine and said, "We're almost there, right?"

"Yes. According to the time system in your place, we'll arrive in one week," she replied.

Su Ping nodded. The time was too short for him to enter another cultivation site. After all, he would probably not be able to react in time in case of a conflict upon arrival.

"Can you tell me which Sorcerer Ancestor we're going to meet?" asked Su Ping.

He only hoped it wouldn't be the Original Dragons' leader. After all, he had just had a conflict with the latter and he would rather not meet him again without the system's protection.

"It's fine to tell you now. It's Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Luo..." Elaine released her Great Dao power and weakened her voice countless times. He wouldn't have heard her if not for his Ancestral God cultivation.

She only did so because she didn't want to be disrespectful. It was all to prevent Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Luo from sensing that his name had been uttered.

*Ti Luo...* Su Ping thought to himself and felt relieved. It was fine as long as they didn't meet the Original Dragons.

"I can make introductions when we get there, but it's best not to talk about it here," said Elaine.

Su Ping nodded.

One week passed fairly quickly.

Su Ping stopped going to cultivation sites; instead he stayed in the store and ran the business with Joanna and the others.

It had been a long time since he devoted himself to working in the store. He once again experienced the joy when he just obtained the system.

Unfortunately, many of his customers from back then were already gone.

For example, the lovely girl named Su Yanying, who was the Lightning Rat's first master.

With his current power, he could resurrect her by calculating the girl's past with causes and consequences and copying her memories.

In other words, the recreated person would be identical, with the same memories and personality. However... They wouldn't be the same person.

2

That was the reason why he never tried doing that. It seemed like a disrespectful thing to do.

The Lightning Rat was also aware of that, so it didn't try doing it, either. It had only been waiting for its real master from the past.

It would rather not create a "toy" to play with.

"Huh?"

Su Ping sensed something. He vanished from the store and reappeared high in the sky.

"We've arrived," Elaine said to Su Ping with excitement. It was as if she had finally seen land after helplessly drifting on the ocean for a long time. She was hopeful again.

Elaine disappeared. She turned into a wisp of smoke and seeped out of the Dao Crystal.

Su Ping also flashed out of the green glass world. He then saw a vast and brilliant continent in the silent darkness further ahead.

There were infinite lights and shadows flashing on the continent, like an ancient and primitive world. He could see gargantuan beasts the size of planets.

"So big..." Su Ping narrowed his eyes and said, "It wouldn't be detected by the Heavens, right?"

"No. We've come here through special coordinates," said Elaine, "Also, I received the calling of the ancestor three days ago. It sensed our presence and realized that we weren't related to the Heavens; that's why it allowed us to approach. Otherwise, we would have never reached this place..."

"That's good." Su Ping nodded.

Very soon, the two Dao Crystals continued their onward movement, one after the other.

They approached the vast continent.

A boiling aura suddenly appeared in the vicinity. It turned out to be an enormous ancient beast with countless tentacles. The end of each appendage had an oval, pink thing that looked like a suction disc. It sent out an ancient voice, "Which race are you? Why are you here?"

That was Su Ping's translation of the guy's transmitted thought.

Before Elaine replied—four Ancestral Gods of the cyborg clan flew out of the Dao Crystal in the rear. Among them was exactly one of the leaders that Su Ping had seen in the past. He said with a mixture of excitement and respect, "We're the cyborgs that derive from the Silicon Creatures. Our universe was attacked by the Heavens, and we're hoping to seek refuge here!"

He simply told the truth. He had obviously learned from their historical records that no tricks would work on the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors.

"There's also the aura of other races here..."

The Ti Luo Clan's Ancestral God rolled its dozens of eyes and gazed at Su Ping.

It was actually more concerned about that inconspicuous figure than about the cyborgs.

"We're human beings; we were also attacked by the Heavens, and we're here to seek protection and to establish an alliance," said Su Ping.

"Alliance..."

Elaine and the others were shocked by the word. They hurriedly looked at Su Ping.

The host ancestor shivered, as if amused by what Su Ping said. However, after its tentacles floated for a while, it said, "You carry the smell of the Primitive Chaos Clan. You're lying."

"I'm not lying. I simply received the power of the Primitive Chaos Clan, but I used to be a human," said Su Ping calmly.

The tentacled ancestor gazed at him for a while, then said, "Whether you're from humankind or the Primitive Chaos Clan, we welcome you. Besides, the Primitive Chaos Clan ancestor made great contributions to the resistance against the Heavens. Come on in!"

After saying that, it slowly dissipated in ripples.

The cyborg Ancestral Gods felt relieved, but they looked at Su Ping in astonishment. They had complete historical records and knew how terrifying the Primitive Chaos Clan was. It had one of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors in the age of chaos!



Su Ping glanced at the cyborg experts. They had obviously lied about the number of top experts they had, making him think that they only had three Ancestral Gods.

However, given his current power, it made no difference even if they had thirty of them.

Led by Ti Luo Clan's Ancestral God, everybody followed and flew into the ripples. They finally arrived on the continent, which seemed to be right in front of their eyes but was actually countless spaces and timelines away.

## Chapter 1529: The Most Difficult Thing In the World (1)

"This is where you'll live."

Everybody looked at the mountains and rivers down below while hovering in the high sky above the continent. The Ti Luo Clan's Ancestral God who had been leading the way summoned an energy-made depiction of the whole continent.

The map directly appeared inside the heads of all those present. However, it was resisted by the brains of Ancestral Gods such as Su Ping, and wasn't displayed inside their minds until they gave their permission.

In short, it was like knocking on the door.

As for those with lesser cultivations, the map was simply stuffed into their heads.

There were zones marked with different colors. A small projection of the tentacled ancestor appeared on the map and pointed at a certain zone, which would be their temporary residence.

"That's the boundary!"

"It's insurmountable!"

The host ancestor pointed at the central area of the map, where a curve separated it from the periphery. "That's the most important place for our people. It's the place where the Sorcerer Ancestor rests. Remember this well!"

"Sorcerer Ancestor..."

The cyborg Ancestral Gods shivered. The better they knew about history, the more terrifying Sorcerer Ancestors were in their eyes. Those were existences who had the power to destroy hundreds of Undying State experts with the blink of an eye.

Su Ping's eyes glittered. He noticed that there were a lot of independent zones beyond the curve marked on the map, which were similar to the zone allocated to them. He asked, "Do all races who join you stay at the periphery?"

The Ti Luo Clan's Ancestral God looked at Su Ping and said, "Yes, but not all of them. You're qualified to stay there because you're in the Undying State. Races without any Undying State experts would be settled in the void at the edge of the continent."

Su Ping nodded. That was the iron rule: the strong preying on the weak.

There was nothing unfair about it. If the weak were treated equally, wouldn't it be unfair to the strong?

*It seems that a lot of powerful races have come here...* Su Ping glanced at the independent zones and counted 1,382 of them. This meant that there were at least 1,382 Undying State beings!

That's right. Ancestral Gods were supreme in the Archean Divinity, but there were a thousand of them in that continent!

It was nothing surprising, though.

After all, there were at least two hundred Undying State experts in the world of gods!

Each of the Seven Great Clans had a couple of them. The rest of the clans had two hundred Ancestral Gods in total.

If all those experts joined forces, they could easily overthrow the Seven Great Clans. However... uniting forces was the most difficult thing in the world.

If the common folk united, they could overthrow the crown. If all the ants united, they could knock over stones thousands of times heavier than themselves!

The Seven Great Clans weren't tyrants. They never forced the other clans to resist them at the risk of being eliminated. After all, those clans weren't made by mortals who never remembered. They knew that they would still have a new ruler in the end, even if they won.

The space atop the pyramid was limited. Allies who once fought together would fight each other over the fruits of victory.

"Are those zones already occupied? What if new races come to join you?" asked Su Ping.

The host ancestor said, "It's easy. You've just arrived; so, we've specifically established a place for you to settle between the two zones."

Su Ping nodded. It wasn't very difficult for an Ancestral God to construct a new zone.

"There are 1,382 powerful races here..."

The cyborg Ancestral Gods were shocked, never expecting that they would only be some among the thousands of refugees. They suddenly felt insignificant.

Was that the appeal of an ancestor?

"Don't go around unless you have to. Don't start conflicts with other races. If you do cause any trouble, deal with it by yourselves; some of the races don't have good tempers," said the Ti Luo ancestor.

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. "We're here to establish an alliance and deal with the Heavenly Dao together. Why would we stir conflicts?"

"Humph!"

The tentacled ancestor merely snorted in response.

1

Su Ping frowned, then looked at the map and the frown deepened.

Soon after, their host led Su Ping and the others to their assigned zone, which was an extremely vast land. When checking the map, it was just one of the thousand tiny pieces at the edge of the continent, but it was actually the size of a solar system, several light years away from the nearest zone.

There were turbulent rivers and vortices in between. Only those above the Celestial State could cross them.

"Just stay here; call us if you need anything. You cyborgs should be more aware of what our Sorcerer Ancestor is capable of. We know everything, so don't try to play any tricks," said the host ancestor.

The cyborg Ancestral Gods quickly nodded.

Su Ping remained silent. Once their host left, he finally said to Elaine, "Is their clan good at perception?"

Scared, Elaine looked around and then smiled bitterly. "That's right. So, you must be careful about anything you say, Ancestor Su. Our conversation is probably being heard by them. They might even know our own thoughts."

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. He knew that it wasn't their host ancestor the one able to sense their thoughts, but the Sorcerer Ancestor that had yet to reveal himself.

## Chapter 1530: The Most Difficult Thing In the World (2)

Only those existences could easily detect their thoughts.

"We're here hoping to strike an alliance with them. Their attitude doesn't seem right," said Su Ping.

He was only being polite. So far it felt like the treatment used when dealing with prisoners.

Elaine's face was green. Su Ping was truly bold to freely speak his mind while being on the territory of the Ti Tuo Clan.

Her only concern was that the cyborgs could be implicated. With a bitter smile, she said, "Ancestor Su, we should be grateful that they're willing to take us in. Don't overthink."

She then winked at him.

Su Ping understood what she meant, so he dropped the subject.

He remembered how arrogant the Original Dragons were back then. The Ti Tuo Clan was indeed not bad in comparison.

He heaved a sigh in his heart, and set about transferring the humans stationed in the green glass planet.

The cyborg Ancestral Gods approached Su Ping. Their leader said, "Ancestor Su, the available space is limited. We might live here for 100,000 years or even longer... The human population is limited. How do you think we should divide the territory...?"

"We'll split it," replied Su Ping, before the other could finish.

Then, he thought for a moment and said, "However, to thank you for leading the way, I'll give you twenty percent more."

"Ancestor Su, all the human population is but a tenth of ours..." said another cyborg Ancestral God with a gloomy face. It was obvious that they wanted to divide it according to the current proportions, 9:1. That was reasonable for them.

After all, they had guided Su Ping to that place.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and looked at them. "We've traveled together for a long time. Do you really want to fight over territory?"

"We don't know anything about companionship. We only know that resources should be allotted in the most reasonable way," said another cyborg expert, emitting pressuring waves. He was cold and impolite to Su Ping.

Su Ping gazed at him and said, "Then, what's the reasonable distribution according to you?"

"The law of the universe dictates that the strong take all. Ancestor Su, I hope that you won't make things difficult for us!" said another cyborg Ancestral God.

Su Ping took a deep breath, once he saw that they had already cornered him with words.

He wanted to laugh, but he couldn't.

The deep breath he took eventually became a heavy sigh.

Even his travel companions were fighting him over territory. No wonder Ancestral God Ti Tuo said that there would be conflicts.

Shouldn't their enemy be the Heavens?

Su Ping only felt bored after such a response. He simply said, "If you're talking about the law of the universe, let's just split it up. As thanks for leading the way, I'll give half of the territory."

"What are you talking..."

The cyborg Ancestral Gods were stunned and turned cold. However—before anyone could take action—a wind was already sweeping about, destroying the Great Dao. None of the Ancestral Gods were able to see any rays of light. Their world was consumed by darkness!

Once they regained their senses, they discovered that the wind had stopped blowing.

Behind them was a bottomless ravine that ran to the edge of that zone.

"This will be the border."

Only Su Ping's voice was heard in the end. He had turned around and left.

The cyborg Ancestral Gods narrowed their eyes and looked at the figure who was moving away. They then looked at the terrifying ravine.

They could have done a similar destructive feat. However, the lingering aura in the ravine terrified them. The pure and abundant Dao power was enough to wipe them out!

“He’s not a human being... He’s a true member of the Primitive Chaos Clan!” said one of the cyborg experts with a shaky voice.

“We shouldn’t have suspected the senses of that Ti Tuo expert...” Another cyborg had a contorted expression, awfully regretful. Having the bloodline from the Primitive Chaos Clan, Su Ping could grow and become a top Undying State existence, one that only those who carried the heritage of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors could defeat.

“We misjudged him.” The cyborg leader was also somber. He didn’t expect such terrifying power to be hidden under Su Ping’s human guise.

Elaine was stunned; she looked at Su Ping’s back as he left. For some reason, she didn’t feel any fury or killing intent exuding from that back, only loneliness.

...

After setting the border, Su Ping summoned his master and the others living in the Nine States.

He informed them of the situation and asked them to settle down. It would be another temporary settlement after a long trip.

However, nobody knew how long they would stay there.

After everyone was properly settled, Su Ping flew to the high sky and called out, “Ti Tuo...”

There was a swooshing sound. Ripples gathered before his eyes as Ancestral God Ti Tuo appeared. He gazed at Su Ping and asked, “Descendant of the Primitive Chaos Clan, what do you want?”

Su Ping gazed at him and said, “I want to know how long we’ll have to wait here. Is the Sorcerer Ancestor waiting for other Sorcerer Ancestors, or for enough races to gather? What’s the plan and strategy to cope with the Heavens?”

“You’re asking too many questions,” said the ancestor host unhappily, “You don’t need to know the Sorcerer Ancestor’s arrangements. You’ll be informed when it’s time for you to know!”

“Fighting the Heavens is an important matter. All you need is to follow orders; there’s no need to think about anything else!”

As he stared at the latter, Su Ping said, “So, we can only wait indefinitely in this place?”

“If you don’t want to wait, you may choose to leave,” said the tentacled ancestor coldly, “The Sorcerer Ancestor was merciful enough to give you a place to stay. You should be grateful.”

Su Ping nodded and said, “Indeed, we are grateful for being given a place to live. It is a great favor. I only want to know how we’re going to deal with the Heavens. I hope that we can make the best use of our power. If there are any plans, we can prepare in advance.”

“As I said, you only need to follow orders. Don’t think too much,” said Ancestral God Ti Tuo impatiently.

Su Ping looked at him but didn’t say anything else. He turned around and returned to the human zone.

...

Led by Shen Huang, Chi Ying and the others, the desolate continent was divided into different territories. Buildings and cities were built; it was easy for them to construct anything.

Once the cities were finished, the Ascendant cultivators came out from the universes of experts Shen Huang and the others. They in turn released the Star Lords and the residents in their small worlds and assigned them to different cities.

The new cities became lively soon after.

It only took a few days to transform the desolate land into prosperous settlements.

Su Ping didn’t travel to other places. He returned to his store and continued training in cultivation sites with the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets.

Already mentalized for an indefinite waiting time, Su Ping planned to seize the time and improve himself to the maximum while he also waited for the system to wake up.

Time moved on.

Su Ping traveled on the cultivation sites. He traversed many high-ranked sites and saw all kinds of species, which had assorted battle skills. Even though their skills were fundamentally based on the Great Dao, he could still learn a lot from them.

*The Chaotic Realm of the Undead. It is said that all the living creatures are bound to reincarnate there after they die...*

Su Ping had checked every corner of the Chaotic Realm of the Undead and killed dozens of Ancestral Gods. However, there was no sign of the Little Skeleton in that place.

He had tried searching the place earlier on. He wasn't an Ancestral God back then, and there were dangerous places he couldn't enter.

At the moment, he had almost turned the whole place upside down.

*The system has never lied to me. Never. So, there's gotta be another way...* Su Ping was standing atop a mountainous beast's body; he looked into the distance for a moment, then chose to return to the store with his pets.

He quickly noticed that his store had changed greatly the moment he got back.

1

## Chapter 1531: Mother of Chaos (1)

The shape of the store had turned from a cube into a sphere.

Joanna was still in one of the rooms; she seemed to be asleep.

Green Lady, Tang Ruyan and the others were cultivating in another room.

"Is that...?"

The lobby in the store became extremely vast. All the items were gone; there wasn't even a counter. There was only emptiness.

There was a hazy glowing figure in the emptiness. It was a beautiful girl with her back against him.

Su Ping looked at her in a daze. He had an extremely familiar feeling from the girl's back, but he found it hard to believe.

"You're back."

The girl turned around and looked at Su Ping calmly.

Her eyes were like lakes reflecting the brilliance of all stars. Her face was the image of unparalleled beauty and tranquility. She was breathtaking.



She gazed at Su Ping.

*This familiar voice...*

Su Ping's head was ringing. He was dumbfounded.

The voice belonged to the system!

This girl was the system!!

The aura was so familiar that Su Ping thought he was dreaming; however, he was already an Ancestral God, and would easily know if he were hallucinating. Everything was real.

Was that the real appearance of the system?

"You..."

Su Ping took a deep breath, then said with a heavy and bitter tone, "Why are you a girl?"

1

"..."

The girl was silent for a long time, before she said softly, "Can't you be serious?"

"I'm very serious," Su Ping said, "This is a very serious question. Please erase everything you've read from my head."

The girl asked back, "Aren't you curious why I look like this?"

"Why?" asked Su Ping.

"Because this is my original appearance," replied the girl.

Su Ping took another deep breath and said, "This answer is truly... surprising."

The girl said softly, "I know you have a lot of questions, and I will answer them for you. Now is the time for you to know."

"How can I resurrect Little Skeleton?" asked Su Ping immediately, while staring at her.

1

The girl pursed her lips, as if expecting he would ask this first. She said, "You searched for the Little Skeleton's soul in the Chaotic Realm of the Undead. Not being able to find it was the only natural outcome, because you didn't go to the real Chaotic Realm of the Undead."

"I didn't go to the real Chaotic Realm of the Undead?"

Su Ping felt dazed.

"The real Chaotic Realm of the Undead was already destroyed. The souls of the living creatures in this world will float for a while and then disappear without a chance to reincarnate, unless they possess other bodies," explained the girl.

"Then..."

"Don't worry," said the girl. "There's a Sorcerer Ancestor who can easily resurrect anyone, except for another Sorcerer Ancestor."

Su Ping asked immediately, "Who?"

"Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang," said the girl. "If you find him, he will help you resurrect the Little Skeleton."

Su Ping silently made note of the name. He then asked, "Would he be willing?"

He was afraid that the guy would be as short-tempered as the Original Dragons' ancestor. If that were the case, it would be useless even if he begged. After all, he wasn't qualified to negotiate or trade with a Sorcerer Ancestor!

"He would," The girl put on a smile and said, "He's always been obedient."

"Obedient?"

Dazed, Su Ping stared at her and said, "Who are you exactly? Can you talk now?"

"Don't you already know?"

"The system? Stop joking. No species can develop such an AI, unless you tell me that there are other worlds beyond this Empyrean space that's already beyond all other universes. But that would be impossible. This is the end of everything," said Su Ping.

Once he became an Ancestral God, it became increasingly clear to him that the system was not simple.

The girl chuckled and said, "It's time to tell you everything. This is indeed where the original point of everything is, and I was the first creature born from the original point. You may call me... Mother of Chaos."

1

"Mother of Chaos?" Su Ping was stunned.

The girl revealed a piece of shocking information. "All twelve Sorcerer Ancestors are my children."

Su Ping was shocked. He looked at her in disbelief, but he soon remembered all the powers that the system possessed and everything clicked. *No wonder the system could go to all worlds, including the Golden Crows' ancestor's hideout without being noticed.* So, she was the Golden Crow ancestor's mother.

"Then who's your husband?" asked Su Ping.

1

"..."

The girl was slightly surprised by the question. She was the all powerful Mother of Chaos, and she had spent a long time with Su Ping, yet she couldn't really keep up with his train of thought.

"You wouldn't think it's the Heavenly Dao, right?" The girl looked at Su Ping suspiciously.

"Is it not?"

Su Ping was slightly surprised. He had truly made that wild guess just then. After all, the Heavenly Dao had slapped the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors in the face. It wasn't hard to believe that it was the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors' father.

The girl shook her head and replied, "I didn't create the world of chaos until after I gave birth to the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; nobody kept track of time until they were born. I had already fallen asleep by then, so nobody knew about my existence. Even the cyborgs merely kept records of some of the Sorcerer Ancestors' deeds."

Su Ping listened carefully and said, "What's the Heavenly Dao, then? If you gave birth to the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, you must be stronger than them, right? Can't you deal with the Heavenly Dao?"

1

## Chapter 1532: Mother of Chaos (2)

The girl shook her head and said, "After I gave birth to the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, it took countless years for them to give birth to their own bloodlines, finally making the age of chaos lively. As for the Heavenly Dao, it was the sum of the non-living creatures born in the most prosperous and glorious moment in the age of chaos."

"Non-living creatures?"

Su Ping narrowed his eyes.

"The Heavenly Dao was something born by the combination of all living creatures' thoughts and emotions, along with the power of the chaos universe. They're objects that transcend the concept of life. They have all the characteristics of living creatures, but they're not alive. So, they're indestructible!"

The girl continued, "They would respawn even if they were erased. They healed and mutated at a very fast pace. They absorbed most of the power in the world of chaos in a very short amount of time and reached a shocking level."

That was the first time for Su Ping to learn about the origin of the Heavenly Dao. He couldn't help but feel surprised and puzzled. "Is there a way to finish off the Heavenly Dao? If they can't be destroyed, aren't they invincible?"

The girl slightly shook her head and said, "They're not invincible. If they're destroyed a billion times and the power of chaos in their bodies is scattered, they will return to their most primitive form. By then, they can easily be erased, imprisoned and sealed. There are countless ways to finish them off."

"So, the real problem is how to destroy them a billion times, right?" Su Ping found the matter tricky the moment he heard the number. "So, you can't take care of the problem either, right?"

"That is correct."

The girl stared at Su Ping and said, "When I woke up, the Heavenly Dao had nearly destroyed the entire world of chaos. My power was deeply connected to the world, so I was heavily wounded too, and I couldn't compete with the Heavenly Dao."

"So, you chose to raise an heir?" asked Su Ping, "Your two previous hosts were the candidates you picked, right?"

The girl nodded. "Yes. You are the third."

Su Ping heaved a sigh and said, "I'm not dead yet. It seems that we're both very lucky."

"I hope we can finish everything once and for all this time." A thoughtful light flashed in the girl's eyes. "We don't have a lot of time, nor chances for this."

"Me neither."

Su Ping sighed softly. He was both shocked and relieved after learning the system's real identity.

He once asked the system if it could finish off the Heavenly Dao. The answer he received was no, and the girl was still saying no.

It made sense. If she could, she would have done so long before.

"You're slightly different from the time you acted like the system," said Su Ping, "I'm not talking about the appearance."

The girl nodded and said, "I had previously sealed part of my power and I recovered while I was sleeping. I would only wake up until you upgraded the store to level 9. This is the bed of chaos where I slept."

"Can money really be converted into the so-called energy points?" Su Ping looked at her in surprise.

"Of course not."

The girl said, "The store was only meant to train you in different phases. After following the instructions all the way to the last upgrade, that would mean that you would have grown up and it would be the time for me to wake up and lead you to deal with the lingering crisis that has existed since the age of chaos."

Su Ping realized that the store was just a greenhouse where he was nurtured.

It didn't matter whether he could make money or not. What mattered was that he had to get stronger.

"So to speak, the store is just a shell where you slept and waited for me to grow, and the system was just a subconscious thought you set up before you fell asleep?" Su Ping speculated.

"More or less," the girl said.

“Earlier you said that the Chaotic Realm of the Undead I saw wasn’t real. What did you mean by that?” Su Ping asked.

The girl gazed at Su Ping and said, “It’s time for you to know everything. None of the cultivation sites you saw were real.”

Su Ping trembled and slightly changed his expression. “What do you mean? They were all fake? Illusions? Impossible...”

He didn’t believe that the people he saw in those cultivation sites, with their furious, earnest or sorrowful eyes, were fake!

Su Ping stared at her and said solemnly, “Even if you’re the Mother of Chaos, I believe that everything I’ve been through is real. It couldn’t be an illusion made by you!”

The girl gazed at Su Ping and replied, “Your experiences were indeed real, but those cultivation sites are not. Or rather, they were real, but they’re already gone now.”

8

“Gone...”

Su Ping was stunned.

The girl heaved a soft sigh. “Back in the age of chaos, some of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors had already died when I woke up, and my power was robbed from me. I couldn’t fight the Heavenly Dao; I could only retreat.

“After that, the world of chaos collapsed into billions of universes.

“Different lives were born in those universes. They were the cultivation sites you visited.

“Some Sorcerer Ancestors established universes of their own. Others reigned over some universes. Some of my children’s corpses were transformed into universes.”

The girl stared at Su Ping and added, “The world of gods and the world of deities followed the ancient age. The age of the Archean Divinity came after the age of chaos, when the cyborgs and many other species coexisted. Once the Archean Divinity was destroyed by the Heavenly Dao, deities were born...

“There were also millions of universes in the age of deities, and different species survived after the age of gods ended. But they were eventually destroyed in the third war.”

Su Ping listened to her in a daze, feeling that everything inside his head was turned upside down. However, he learned many things he was unaware of.

“So... The cultivation sites that I’ve visited... aren’t in the same timeline.” Su Ping was stunned.

3

He had more or less noticed it, but for some reason, he neglected the fact.

“That’s right,” said the girl, “They are the survivors of the great wars. If you go to the Golden Crows’ world and ask them about the Archean Divinity, they wouldn’t know a thing, because the Archean Divinity didn’t exist in their era.

“The Archean Divinity originated from the ancestor of the Primitive Chaos Clan, whose body turned into three pieces. One was the Archean Divinity, the second part was the Chaotic Realm of the Undead, and the last was hidden.

“The Archean Divinity and the Chaotic Realm of the Undead existed in the same age and were destroyed together. I found the last piece and transformed it into the world of deities. I hope that he could be reborn, which could take billions of years, but it never happened.”

There was a hint of sadness in the girl’s eyes as she spoke.

Although she didn’t elaborate on the matter, Su Ping could imagine that countless excellent stories that took place since the age of chaos actually had the Mother of Chaos behind them.

“I saw how chaos fell to pieces. I tried to gather the power once more to resist the Heavenly Dao. So, I found the first candidate and raised him all the way to the Undying State. I gave him Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi’s Chaos Qualification, so he could turn into a new Sorcerer Ancestor.

“That was the first battle against the Heavenly Dao that I prepared...” Light flashed in the girl’s eyes. Countless species seemed to be flashing by as she recalled, but all of them collapsed.

“I failed in the end.”

She whispered, “In that battle, the Original Dragons’ ancestor was suppressed and absorbed by the Heavenly Dao. Hun Yu also surrendered and became their puppet...”

Su Ping was stunned.

*The Original Dragons’ ancestor was suppressed and absorbed?*

He remembered the enormous ancestral dragon, whose eyes were as big as planets. Its pressure was absolutely domineering... And yet, it was suppressed and absorbed by the Heavenly Dao?

To top it off, Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu, the one who chose to cover the retreat... surrendered to the Heavens in the end?

“Then, the things that I’ve experienced...”

“All of it happened before the war; they had already fought the Heavenly Dao before I organized them. Later on, they fought by my side,” said the girl, “Of all the cultivation sites you’ve visited, the chaos cultivation site was the only universe I ever constructed. You may consider it an illusory land, so it requires a lot of energy. This would obviously make the ticket fee much more expensive.”



## Astral Pet Store

### - Chapter 1533 - : Six (1)

“They were only illusions constructed by me, but they truly existed in the past.”

The girl stared at Su Ping and said, “The Remains of High Heavens that you visited once was a place and time before the first war. Back then, Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu and Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long had already forged an alliance along with the first host to fight the Heavenly Dao in the chaos era.

“Naturally, the battle ended with a brutal failure.

“I escaped and fell asleep, awakening until a long time passed. I concluded the reason for the failure, and knew it was impossible to defeat the Heavens with the remaining forces, as we had never truly cooperated...”

As she spoke, the girl’s eyes were filled with regret. “That’s the greatest gap between us and the Heavenly Dao. So, I found the second host and created the combat system with contract pets, hoping that all the species would be gathered and trained through the contract.

“The method was truly effective. Thanks to the popularization of the contract pet system, the power of each universe was quickly doubled!

“Although the total amount was the same, the power they could unleash was ten times greater than before!” Her eyes glittered at the thought.

Su Ping gave her a slight nod. He had traveled to many cultivation sites and witnessed all sorts of combat systems, including runes, magic, combat aura, supernatural powers, sorcery, and several others; however, none of them could compare to the contract system.

The contract system was invincible in any stage when compared to the rest!

The more terrifying fact was its minimal toll on the user. The living creatures with the slightest spirituality in their bodies could quickly master the power of contract and take other species as pets. This multiplication of combat power didn’t require years of training.

For instance, the kids from rich families could easily reach the peak of the Star State and bond with Star Lord Pets as long as enough resources were invested in them.

The Star State was already the superior level in other combat systems. It was even seen as the peak of all combat ability in some universes!

After all, Star State warriors could travel in space and their bodies were indestructible. They could master the power of laws. They were Sage Mages in the magic system.

However, it was much easier to reach the Star State with the contract system than with the magic system; even a retard could do that with enough resources.

*The total amount was the same, but their power was increased.*

Su Ping could understand the one he knew as the system. It was just like the conservation of energy; the total number of experts in the universe was the same. They would be disorganized if they fought individually. But the total amount would drop from 100 to 10 with the contract battle system.

The quality of experts improved and the number of individuals declined. However, the total combat ability was improved to an unreachable level.

For mortals, the universes were boundless and mysterious. In the eyes of the system, the universes were just like military camps.

In order to fight the Heavens, she had to gather all the forces in the military camps, teach them better cultivation techniques, and further consolidate their power!

“Judging from the result, the second war also ended in failure. Why?” asked Su Ping.

The system was still promoting the contract method; either because there wasn't a better option, or because another reason led to defeat.

The girl smiled bitterly and said, “Technically speaking, it was the third time. In the first war, I woke up and fought the Heavenly Dao. In the second war, I raised the first host to fight the Heavenly Dao. In the third war, your predecessor mastered the contract method and introduced it to all the universes.

“He completed the mission I gave him when he advanced to the Undying State.

“During the war, I asked Sorcerer Ancestor Ling Tai to sign a contract with him as a pet. We gathered the power of all the remaining Sorcerer Ancestors and universes, but we still lost.”

There was vague sorrow in the girl's eyes as she added, “The capabilities of the Heavenly Dao were beyond our expectation. They are non-living creatures made by the power of other creatures. The casualties in the first two wars and the enormous grief they caused became nourishment for the Heavenly Dao.

“Therefore, although they suffered heavy losses in the second war, they recovered fully by the time the third war was fought.

“We weren’t fully prepared, and we lost again.”

Then, she fell into silence, as if she couldn’t free herself from those memories.

Su Ping frowned a bit. He knew this wasn’t something that could be explained with “not fully prepared.” After all, that girl was the Mother of Chaos, who had gathered the power of all the Sorcerer Ancestors. They must have taken extreme precautions for that war. That is, unless the Heavenly Dao tricked them with some sort of disguise.

Su Ping knew it was impossible to notice details in such a short amount of time.

He didn’t say anything, simply waiting in silence for the system to continue. He believed that she had learned a lot from the previous two defeats. After all, the losses on her side were colossal, as it could be perceived based on the privileges of the two former hosts.

The first host was given the Chaos Qualification.

The second host had a Sorcerer Ancestor as a pet.

When it came to Su Ping’s turn, he could only travel to cultivation sites.

This wasn’t the system being biased; she had simply lost all her resources.

In other words, they were much weaker than before to face the Heavens. Using the same method would be suicidal. It was pointless.

Therefore, since she had chosen a third host, she certainly had something in mind.

After a long silence, the system raised her head and glanced at Su Ping. “Although we lost the second war, it allowed me to truly understand the nature of the Heavenly Dao. In order to prevent the Heavenly Dao from profiting off the war, I transferred all living creatures that participated in the war to a chaos timeline.

“This makes it impossible for the Heavenly Dao to absorb the power of their minds. After some rest, they can still fight right now.”

“A chaos timeline?”

Su Ping was puzzled. “Time is really not a big deal for the Heavenly Dao, is it?”

Even he could easily reverse time.

The girl stared at Su Ping and said, "The chaos timeline is just a concept so you can understand. As a matter of fact, they are in another universe of chaos; I transformed part of my body into that chaos universe. It blocks the Heavenly Dao and they can never find it."

Su Ping looked at her while in a slight daze.

Although she only talked about it briefly, Su Ping could easily imagine how brutal the battle was.

The system gathered all lives to fight against the Heavenly Dao. However, she saw their true nature and foresaw how they would fail.

She sacrificed part of her body at the end of the bloody war, turning it into a chaos universe to transfer the survivors. The third war ended in total defeat.

"Now, what are the odds of us winning, in your opinion?" asked Su Ping.

The girl looked at him and said, "Fifty percent!"

"Fifty percent?"

Su Ping was surprised, as the number seemed too high in his opinion. He thought that their chances were below the ten percent mark.

"Back in the third war, although we failed, we managed to heavily wound the Original Core of the Heavenly Dao; it should be weaker than back then. We did lose two Sorcerer Ancestors in the third war, but the contract system has been introduced to more universes.

"The contract system is the mainstream choice in almost every surviving universe.

"I believe there's a chance for us to win."

The girl looked at Su Ping and added, "Also, your performance has been surprising. Based on my training experience, there's only a 48% chance of victory. However, your outstanding performance has increased the odds by 2%; I hope that the upcoming battle will be the endgame. If we fail, there won't be enough time for me to raise a fourth host."

Su Ping raised his eyebrows. "You've even planned to raise a fourth host?"

"Of course. After all, this concerns all living creatures in all universes. I cannot place my hopes entirely on you," said the girl as she looked at him calmly, "The comunal Heavenly Dao has been attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos to force me to show up. They have been getting closer and closer over the years!"

“For you, and for all those living, it may seem like countless eons have passed. From the age of chaos, to the primordial times, and to this day... But it’s still the age of chaos actually for me.

“They’re attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos, like burglars, smashing the windows. I seized the moment and found my first helper when they broke the first window. I found the second helper when he broke the second window...”

She looked at him again and continued, “You’ve only cultivated two thousand years in total, which is just a brief moment in the world of chaos. It would count as a single afternoon in your perception.”

Su Ping was speechless.

Based on what the system said, raising a host was probably no different than casually throwing a seed.

“If we lose this war, our odds of winning the next war would be thirty percent or even lower...” The girl sighed. She didn’t hide the fact and spoke openly about it. She had watched Su Ping grow, and knew that he wouldn’t be bothered by such a “confession.”

Su Ping stayed silent. He knew that the system would prepare backup plans in case of failure.

The next war was too significant, and she had taken many things into account. He didn’t think it was inappropriate of her; after all, he wasn’t really confident of ending that protracted war all on his own.

From the age of chaos to the ancient times, all the way to the age of space travel.

Countless species and countless universes had been born.

The death of so many lives were probably just flickering butterflies for an ancient and immortal existence like the system.

It couldn’t be otherwise, as the system had been born ages in the past. She had probably spent more time alone in the chaos universe than the history of all living creatures in all universes combined.

It was just that there was no concept of time back then.

The Great Dao of Time had yet to be born at that time.

From the primordial times to that day, it was a long scroll from the perspective of living creatures; but for the system, it was just a parallel painting.

"I hope this is indeed the last war. A fifty percent chance of winning..." Su Ping looked at the system and asked, "What were the odds of winning in the previous two wars?"

"I didn't calculate carefully in the second war. I think there was a seventy percent chance of winning."

"In the third war, it was sixty percent..."

The girl looked at Su Ping and said, "It may be hard for you to believe, but those two failures were because I underestimated the enemy. Back in the third war I was able to completely figure out everything about the Heavenly Dao. So, there won't be any unexpected factors this time!"

"Are you sure..." Su Ping was at a loss.

"Very sure," said the girl with extreme confidence.

The answer stunned him; after all, the system was much stronger than him. She could probably think of everything he could think of. He sighed and said, "I'm not even a Sorcerer Ancestor. It's pointless for you to train me, isn't it?"

"I gave away the Chaos Qualifications when I created my twelve children. So, even I am unable to create new Sorcerer Ancestors at this moment," said the girl regretfully, "The previous two hosts eventually became stronger than the Sorcerer Ancestors with my help. Not being one is not a fault of yours. It's my problem."

"If you raise a fourth host, would he become as strong as me?" asked Su Ping.

The girl gave a slight nod. "More or less. They'll probably be weaker than you. However, if we can loot a Chaos Qualification during the war, there's a chance for the next host to become a Sorcerer Ancestor, or even stronger."

"Loot it? From the Heavenly Dao?"

"Yes. It cannot be digested and it's ever-permanent. So, there's a chance for us to take it back."

Su Ping asked, "After so many wars, how many Sorcerer Ancestors are left?"

"Six," said the girl softly.

"..."

Su Ping was rendered speechless again. "You weren't able to beat the Heavenly Dao back when you fought alongside the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. Now, only six are left. Do we really have a chance to win?"

The girl heaved a sigh. "That's the problem. I gave birth to twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; however, they developed different personalities, as I offered them different Chaos Qualifications. They couldn't cooperate, and the Heavenly Dao used this to divide and conquer.

"Had they worked together, it should have been fairly easy to defeat the Heavenly Dao!"

Su Ping thought of everything he had seen in the Remains of High Heavens, and was able to understand.

The system had probably intended for him to see that.

"If all six of them are present, our odds of winning would be close to seventy percent!" said the girl, "However, Sorcerer Ancestor Haotian and Sorcerer Ancestor Hei Xiang have both escaped to the border of chaos, and are reluctant to participate in the war; this brings down the odds of winning to only fifty percent."

Su Ping was stunned. So, only four Sorcerer Ancestors would fight the war?

"They're unwilling to fight? Why?" Su Ping found it hard to believe.

"They probably think it's a hopeless case," said the girl after a sigh.

"How will that do?" Su Ping had trouble answering. "We must find all of them. This isn't a kid's game!"

## **Chapter 1535: The War That Spanned Across History (1)**

"They're already beyond my control; they can survive even if chaos falls apart. I can understand that they don't want to get killed," said the girl, "We can't ask them to abide by the morals of humankind."

Su Ping was momentarily lost for words.

Was he standing on the moral high ground?

That was indeed the truth. There was no reason for them to sacrifice themselves for billions of unrelated species.

Humans preached about the strong lending a hand to the weak, but not even humans were able to follow that ideal.

The strong were admired by everyone, while they never pitied the weak.

Some weaklings were fun addicted individuals; they had themselves to blame for their weakness.

Su Ping remembered the gods. Such an arrogant species was also destroyed by the Heavenly Dao. Was it really worth it to avenge such a species?

The two Sorcerer Ancestors probably felt the same. The billions of species were no different from stone and sand in their eyes. Who would feel sad for stepping over grass? Who would feel angry for the cracks on a rock?

However, Su Ping found it emotionally unacceptable that someone would simply stay away from the war that concerned all living creatures.

Still, he knew that he couldn't hold anyone accountable for those emotions.

"There's indeed no reason for them to stand up for us..."

Su Ping whispered, "However... Are they willing to be ruled by the Heavenly Dao? Do they want to spend the rest of their infinite time hiding from the Heavenly Dao?"

The girl stared at Su Ping and said, "I've told them the same. However, they preferred survival over dignity. Don't humans prioritize survival above everything else?"

Su Ping looked at the system and asked, "If they all think this way, will we find any allies?"

"The Heavenly Dao is attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos. If it's eventually controlled by them, chaos will be restarted and all universes will be destroyed. That's why we have to fight. However, the Sorcerer Ancestors are no longer restrained by chaos, so they wouldn't really be hurt by this."

The girl sighed. "We're fighting for our own sake. It would be great if they give us a hand. If they don't, we can't blame them."

Su Ping looked at her and asked, "If the Ancestral Land of Chaos is controlled by the Heavenly Dao, would you be affected?"

"I was born in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. If it falls into the hands of the Heavenly Dao, I will be gone," said the girl in a calm tone.



Su Ping was stunned. She acted as if she were as unaffected as the two Sorcerer Ancestors she was defending, like mere bystanders who wouldn't be blamed even if they were unwilling to help. He didn't know that the system would be the one worse off.

2

The most ancient life form was at the risk of disappearing.

"You gave birth to them; they should know that you're in danger, shouldn't they?" asked Su Ping.

"Are you implying that they should at least return the favor? They've already helped me twice. I can understand their unwillingness to continue fighting. If I truly die, I hope that they can survive."

Showing a peaceful smile on her face, she continued, "A mother would never blame her child. They would certainly not want their children involved in their battles."

Su Ping gradually fell silent upon sensing her calm resolve.

If he lost this war, billions of species would disappear. Not participating in the war would mean to simply watch as things unfolded. Calling the two Sorcerer Ancestors selfish or ruthless was just based on humanity's moral code, which couldn't restrain them.

He could only rely on himself for the upcoming battle.

"I understand."

Su Ping no longer pressed on the subject. He had no reason to complain or blame them.

1

"You said that the Remains of High Heavens was an illusion. What about the other cultivation sites?"

"The other cultivation sites were the universes that once existed until they were destroyed in the previous two wars..." said the girl softly, "So, the people you've seen in those cultivation sites are already dead. I've simply kept their most glorious moments before they died."

"So, the employees you took out of cultivation sites can't leave the store. They're like phantoms. They will consume much more of my energy, or they will disappear."

Su Ping couldn't help but clench his fists.

Even though he already had an answer, he still felt a stinging pain when he heard it from her.

1

He had met too many people in those cultivation sites, Joanna being the one closest to him.

“I see... No wonder there’s no record of the Archean Divinity’s destruction, even though Joanna said so. The timelines weren’t right...”

2

“The Demigod Burial is a piece of the Archean Divinity. Its very existence proves that the Archean Divinity was destroyed at some point; the way it is on the site is just as I saw it before it was destroyed...”

“I should have realized it. How could I have neglected something so obvious?” Su Ping mumbled to himself.

1

“I played some tricks on you, all to influence your way of thinking,” said the girl calmly, “There were some truths that you didn’t need to know; so cruel it would have affected your cultivation. I hoped that you could witness darkness without being consumed by it.”

1

Su Ping was stunned into silence.

He suddenly remembered; he had seen a person with a pair of familiar eyes in a Mysterious Realm found in the Federation.

When he saw Joanna, he felt that their eyes were really similar.

6

*So... That was Joanna.*

She was an Ascendant State goddess in the Demigod Burial. The place was eventually destroyed, and so were she and all the Celestial experts, including Heather.

They didn’t turn into ashes when they died; maybe because they were too weak. Their unconscious bodies remained.

“An energy tide surged when I entered the illusory world and grasped the law of illusion. Someone guided me so I could leave, and someone else blocked the energy tide. Who were they?”

Su Ping looked at the girl.

“It was Anna who guided you so you could escape. The other one was a Celestial expert who died in the war against the Heavenly Dao. They were too weak. Even a plague driven by the Heavenly Dao at the edge of the battlefield was enough to destroy them. However, you met them in cultivation sites...” said the girl.

Su Ping couldn't help but ask, “However, the cultivation sites have timelines from way back in the past; they shouldn't have known me when I met them in real life. Why would they help me?”

“The past, the present and the future are all found in the world of chaos. I extracted them from the projections of the world of chaos, and created many cultivation sites. They're not simple illusions, but more like projections.”

She then added, “What you saw was a version of them from the past. Your encounter would appear in their future memories. The memories of living creatures transcend time; so, they all know you right now, even though they're already dead.”

“Some of their consciousnesses remained, floating in the void.

“The time when you had an epiphany in the world of illusion, that energy surge you mentioned was actually released by the Heavenly Dao who detected an intruder.”

She turned to look at him and say, “However, many souls of the departed fought against the Heavenly Dao to cover for you; you just didn't know that. Anna was the closest to you, so she acted as your guide. The others stayed and fought the Heavenly Dao in the depths of the illusory world.”

Su Ping was stunned.

The souls of the dead who were acquainted with him fought against the Heavenly Dao for his sake? Without him realizing it?

Su Ping recalled how he grasped the law of illusion back then. He was too weak at the time, merely a Star State warrior; so, he was only able to escape because countless people had helped him.

“Then, about them...”

“Some of them were completely annihilated,” said the girl as she gazed at him.

His heart shook. It wasn't hard to imagine how strong the Heavenly Dao suppressing the world of illusions was.

Compelled to know, he said, "Why would they do that for me? I met a lot of people in cultivation sites, but they weren't really close to me. I don't even think the elders of the Heaven Path Institute wouldn't sacrifice themselves for me? Why would they, right?"

"That's how you think... However, from their perspective, they were probably just betting on you."

The girl said softly, "When you appeared in the cultivation sites and met them, their current selves realized that you—who showed up out of nowhere in their heads—were my heir. They had wandered for countless years, and they probably wanted to make the last contribution."

Su Ping felt that all his blood was boiling. He asked, "Is there a way to resurrect them?"

"Yes."

The girl continued, "I've extracted them from the past exactly for this war. I transferred them to the current time and space. They are a sizable force; however, if they die in this war, they will also disappear in the past.

"Their past would be gone in the world of chaos. Nobody would remember them.

"If we fail in this war, I will have one last chance to raise a new host. I can extract them from the future and put them in the present.

"If I fail again... All of them will be gone, and so will I."

Lastly, she said as she held eye contact, "The Heavenly Dao is quickly attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos, and I've run out of capital. Once the Heavenly Dao gains control, all chaos will be restarted. All lives in the past, present and future will be gone. Not a trace of their existence will remain. This place will turn back to what it was at the beginning."

Su Ping had thought that the war would be brutal, but he didn't know it would be to such a degree.

The war between the living and the Heavenly Dao would span all across history.

How many lives had been permanently destroyed in the war?

Su Ping looked at the girl before him. The real players in that game were the system and the supreme leader of the Heavenly Dao.

They were the chess players, and all the living were chess pieces.

Su Ping would move as the queen piece under the system's command. She had lost the game three times. That would be their fourth match!

It was very likely the last one!

If she failed, there wouldn't be much left for the system to stage a comeback.

...

## Chapter 1536: Ten Thousand Years of Cultivation (1)

"You've already woken up and regained your original appearance. When are we going to take action?" asked Su Ping.

"No rush," said the girl, "We'll wait until you reach the limit of the path you found. According to my deduction, you'll be no weaker than a Sorcerer Ancestor if you walk to the end of that path, even without a Chaos Qualification."

"Seriously?"

Su Ping felt thrilled because of the system's approval. It seemed that he had truly made the right choice.

The prospect itself of becoming as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor was amazing.

"Chaos Qualifications can grant Sorcerer Ancestors the ability to dominate chaos. They can create and destroy everything with a thought. Just a thought is needed to condense and blow up thousands of universes!"

The system continued, "There are mainly three thousand Great Daos derived from chaos, and hundreds of thousands of Lesser Daos. You'll be almost as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestors when you condense the three thousand Great Daos into universes. However, it's impossible to transform the hundreds of thousands of Lesser Daos into Undying Universes; there's not enough power in the world.

"We'll set out to fight the Heavenly Dao after you create the universes of the three thousand Great Daos."

Su Ping was stunned. "So, the time set for the war will depend on me?"

“That’s right,” said the girl. “Going by my deductions, you should be able to achieve perfection in 10,000 years. That is when we’re going to the Ancestral Land of Chaos to fight the Heavenly Dao.”

1

Su Ping couldn’t help but ask, “Ten thousand years? Wouldn’t it be too long?”

“It’s a fairly long time for humans, but it’s only a brief moment in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. This is an eternal war; giving you ten thousand years is not a big deal,” said the girl.

Su Ping had never been to the Ancestral Land of Chaos. However, according to the system, it was clearly a place entirely different from the universes he had lived in.

War was still in progress in that place. A lot of things had changed in the outside world over the long time span.

“Also, the other Sorcerer Ancestors will join us while you’re cultivating. I told them to gather here,” said the girl.

Su Ping took a deep breath, understanding sunk in. He would fight alongside the four Sorcerer Ancestors once he was done cultivating. The war would decide his fate as well as that of all living creatures in infinite universes!

Hiding from the war would be pointless.

If the Heavens took hold of the Ancestral Land of Chaos chaos was restarted, all the universes would be destroyed and nobody except the Sorcerer Ancestors would survive.

1

“Can I go to cultivation sites right now?” asked Su Ping.

“Sure.”

The girl added, “Now you know the truth about cultivation sites. Some of the creatures you’ve killed in cultivation sites survived the war, while others died. However, I believe that none of them will hate you after the war ends. Maybe you’ll even get to see them again on the battlefield.”

Su Ping was dazed.

He had killed many beasts and enemies in the cultivation sites.

For instance, he had killed the Rain Ancestor and many Ancestral God beasts in the Archean Divinity.

*I didn't know that they would be my comrades...* Su Ping had mixed feelings about it. Even though they belonged to different timelines, they were fighting for the same goal.

"I'll take you to meet one of the Sorcerer Ancestors," said the girl abruptly.

Su Ping instantly felt that the store's barrier was gone and he could fully sense what was happening outside. He then spread his senses and noticed an aura as terrifying as the abyss, standing right outside the store.

"Sorcerer Ancestor..."

"It's Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo," said the girl.

The store's door opened; a slender and tall young man walked in. Although human shaped at the moment, he emitted a ferocious aura as he stepped in, which spread to every corner of the store, like raging octopuses.

1

The rooms closed by the system were also infiltrated by the aura.

The usually impregnable store was easily infiltrated by that Sorcerer Ancestor.

Everything inside the store was registered by his senses without any impediment.

"Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo, from this place?" Slightly dazed, Su Ping looked at the black-robed young man. He knew that the guy's original appearance was too horrifying and indescribable to understand. He only transformed into a young human, to facilitate communication.

"Is he the third guardian you've found? He seems to be slightly stronger than the previous two." The young man looked at our hero with indifference. There was no emotion in his eyes. Even though he assumed a humanlike appearance, he didn't emulate their feelings, so he came across as overly cold.

"That's right. His performance exceeded my expectations." The girl nodded.

She looked at Su Ping and chuckled. "To make it easier for you to understand my existence, I specifically found a planet named Earth and picked you randomly; that has probably been my best choice.

"You asked me if I was satisfied with you. I can answer you now. I'm very satisfied!"

1

Su Ping glanced at her, not expecting her to remember something from so long before.

So, his transmigration from Earth was also the system's doing.

## Chapter 1537: Ten Thousand Years of Cultivation (2)

*Just as I thought. I was just polishing my wood that night; how could I transmigrate so easily... Besides, real transmigrations only happen in novels. How could it happen in reality? Unless... it was imposed by someone...* Su Ping thought.

2

He asked, "There are many similarities between the history of the Blue Planet and that of Earth. They're almost the same except for the different celebrities throughout history. You didn't create the Blue Planet with a specific purpose, did you?"

The girl shook her head. "Of course not. I could have easily created one, that wasn't necessary. There are countless planets in billions of universes. Let alone similar, it's very simple to find a planet named Earth, even with the exact same history. You may find hundreds of planets named Earth with basically the same history.

"Evolution is basically the same after all, especially when it's related to ordinary lives. They would naturally repeat the process from the primitive age to the industrial revolution."

Su Ping was stunned for a moment.

He knew that the system wasn't wrong, but that also implied that there were too many universes in chaos; so many that it was easy to find another Earth.

The war he had to win concerned all the lives on those planets.

"Did you really pick me as the third host with a random draw? Don't you have any requirements? For example, carrying some ancient bloodline? Or, was I the reincarnation of some Ancestral God?" Su Ping thought that it couldn't have been that arbitrary.

"Ancestral Gods' reincarnations aren't so rare. I can easily create an Ancestral God; however, such creations are nothing special."



The girl added casually, "I picked you randomly, but I knew you would achieve great things under my wing. On the contrary, if I went and specifically picked some genius with extraordinary intelligence, I might not have been able to fully bring out their strong suit.

"At the end of the day, it's not potential but experience that matters in cultivation!

"Whether you're smart or stupid in the beginning, you'll be exactly what I want you to be after I give this experience to you."

Su Ping was stunned. The system was exceptionally proud.

"Everything can be trained. The lives in this world may have thousands of faces, but most of them tend to use the same kind. The only thing that matters is the perspective you choose to understand them," said the girl.

Su Ping sighed. "I thought you were captivated by my handsomeness."

The girl rolled her eyes at Su Ping and said, "Your looks mean nothing to me. We don't share the same aesthetics.

"I do agree that absolute beauty may have appeal across species.

"But you don't have it."

"Hehe."

The girl was aware of Su Ping's personality and left the matter at that. She said, "In the beginning I wanted to ask Ti Tuo to sign a contract with you as your pet. However, it's not easy for him to come and join the war after the previous two failures; you can only count on those little buddies of yours. Fortunately, their performance isn't too bad; at least they won't drag you down."

Su Ping was surprised by the previous plans. He looked at the young man in black, not expecting the system to try to persuade the fellow.

"I remember how Ling Tai was absorbed. It was so stupid; I won't sign a contract with him." Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo snorted and continued, "The contract is used to control subordinates. I don't want to get involved with him in any way, especially regarding a consciousness bond."

The girl heaved a sigh, as if recalling a matter in the past. She said to the now confused Su Ping. "The second host bonded with Sorcerer Ancestor Ling Tai. They practiced together a lot to improve their teamwork; however, they lost the war and the second host died. Ling Tai had a chance to escape..."

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo sneered and said, "However, he had to get himself killed. He said he would take back half the guy's corpse, but only got himself killed in the end.

Su Ping was again surprised by the information, and could easily imagine how things unfolded.

The second host died. Sorcerer Ancestor Ling Tai—an expert that Su Ping had never met—charged to attack the Heavenly Dao to avenge him.

Su Ping understood the bond that was formed through a contract; it was the connection between two souls. Once two parties bonded with a contract, their minds would become engaged and they would inevitably develop feelings for each other, unless it was a pet completely disinterested about their master.

"Emotion is harmful. That's what killed Ling Tai," said Ti Tuo coldly, "It's not just me. The other three won't do something that stupid, either."

Su Ping glanced at the latter; he was obviously scared he would do the same as Sorcerer Ancestor Ling Tai did.

"That's all right. I'll be by your side," said the girl to Su Ping.

He then looked back at the system and her clear eyes, suddenly realizing that the system was the one that had accompanied him for the longest time.

No matter when or where, she was always with him.

Su Ping gazed at the system and said, "The so-called system binding between you and me should be a pet contract, right? It's just that you're the master while I stand in as a pet..."

The girl also stared back as she replied, "That's right. I helped you in the same way you train your pets."

"Then, why can't I feel what's on your mind?" asked Su Ping immediately.

"Because I shielded it," said the girl, "I'm the Mother of Chaos. My mind is too vast and magnificent; you'd only find it unbearable and go crazy if I left it open. You're too weak to bear it even right now. I won't remove the shielding until you get the Chaos Qualification and become a Sorcerer Ancestor."

Su Ping understood, yet the situation gave him mixed feelings.

He felt somewhat angry and weird.

He had trained the Little Skeleton, the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets and considered himself an excellent battle pet warrior. He never expected to actually be someone else's pet.

This particular 'someone else' was the Mother of Chaos, the very first life that ever existed, but he still felt weird.

He didn't feel uncomfortable about it, though, because he never thought that pets were inferior to their masters.

The contract was not about superiority; it was a bond of equals.

However, one party would take the lead due to the difference in strength.

In other words, Su Ping became the pet, now that the system had truly awakened and took hold of her original power. He had been the system's master in the past.

That was why he was called "the host."

"Did you ask this Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo to gather the refugees from all universes to this place?" asked Su Ping.

The girl nodded. "It already began when the third war ended."

"However, the way they are managing things here is rather chaotic," said Su Ping, "Can such an unorganized mob really unite against the Heavenly Dao?"

"That's not for you to worry about. When the time comes, I'll put them in my universe and use their bodies as strength. They must participate in the war, even if they're unwilling!" said Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo coldly.

Su Ping frowned. "What do you mean? Are you saying that you'd use them as fuel?"

"Fuel? Good analogy. That's basically it," said the unemotional Sorcerer Ancestor. "It's what they're born for. I'm making the best use of them."

Su Ping said in a somber tone, "But they're alive! They're living creatures!"

"This is exactly how lives should be used. Or do they have some special meaning to you?" Ti Tuo gave Su Ping an unhappy look. He could sense the latter's fury, but he found it ridiculous. "To put it simply, rocks, metals and lives, each has their own prices; lives are 5, metals are 2, and rocks are 1."

“Only living creatures see themselves as priceless, compared to rocks and metals. However, all of them are objects in our eyes.”

“Not really.” Su Ping looked at him solemnly. “Lives are not priceless, but they shouldn’t be squandered, either. Besides, yours is the most extravagant usage method of all. They could be sharp blades on their own, but you regard them as fuel. Even if you consider them to be pieces of metal, you’re turning them into a mere handle, when they could be used to forge the edge of a blade!”

1

## Chapter 1538: Lives (1)

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo sneered and said, “My method is indeed rather barbaric, but it’s the most effective and efficient. Are you hoping to train them all together? They are from millions of different species with different personalities and interests; some even think that war is sinful.

“There are ways to subdue and unite them; however, the efficiency is too low and it’s unnecessary. After all, we can still make the best use of them my way!”

Su Ping said, “If you can give me ten thousand years to cultivate, you can also adjust time and give them a million years to cultivate and cooperate.”

“A million years is unnecessary if you simply want them to cooperate as a team. I can easily do that, but it’s pointless.”

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo continued, “People like you rule over the bottom level of society through morals, law, doctrines and religion, just to turn them all into handy blades that won’t hurt you.

“When commanders plan to attack, they calculate the army needed and study the terrain; lives are just simple numbers.

“In a similar way, when kings consider whether or not to develop a region, they would also consider economical and environmental factors.

“In any case, when a decision-maker does something, the ‘efficiency’ of the lives at his disposal is his primary concern. They’re just ‘fuel’, like you said. Whether or not they can succeed, how far they can go, and how they can make the best use of them are what rulers think about.”

He looked at Su Ping with a cold smile. "If I want to, I can directly modify their memories, to have them see each other as blood relatives! It's like the changes caused by religion or morals. You people are too weak and can only resort to external factors; however, I can do that with a single thought.

"But that would be pointless."

He continued, "It's no different from directly throwing them into my universe and using them as fuel. If the Ancestral Land of Chaos is destroyed, they will die. If we lose the war, they die. Anyway, they will die in the end. So, their short lives are meaningless.

"They are like bugs in the world of chaos. Ten thousand years is a long time for them, but it's just a nap for us."

He paused to chuckle. "I've studied humans before. I know all of your culture and teachings. Do you think that ants' lives have any meaning?"

"Have you ever thought that an ant has led a meaningful life?"

"If you do think that was the case, do you think the invisible germs on your hand live a special life? Would you cherish, respect and care about them?"

Su Ping fell silent after the ancestor's barrage of questions.

Indeed. In a sense, he couldn't retort.

That was the most ironic thing about life.

Those who advocated love and equality were always the weak.

The rich would never be willing to share their money with the weak. They only wanted to earn more money.

When someone reached a certain height, they would ignore those beneath them.

Lives were indeed priceless.

However, every life had a price in other people's hearts.

Just like Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo. All lives were fuel in his eyes; they were just energy with the ability to move!

"All species and creatures are the same. You're right..." Su Ping heaved a soft sigh.

“Naturally.” Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo laughed, knowing he was right. He didn’t need Su Ping to compliment him. In fact, he even thought that praising a Sorcerer Ancestor was hilarious.

“However...”

Su Ping gazed at him and said, “You may despise and scorn others since you have such a high status, but that’s just you! The meaning of life is not given by anyone else, but by oneself!

“If you think you’re living a meaningful life, it is meaningful. Nobody else can judge you!

“Some people are worthless in the eyes of others, but they themselves think they live terrific lives and they are happy. That is enough.

“You can’t define the meaning found by others. You can only define their meaning in your perspective!”

“Maybe those lives can’t change the world of chaos and they will eventually disappear. They’re like the billions of stars and the dust in the sky; you wouldn’t care about them, but they live a great life. That’s good enough.”

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo dropped his smile and snorted. “Nonsense! You don’t understand at all!”

“I don’t need to understand,” Su Ping said, “All I know is that they should know what they’ll be facing, as they will take part in the war. I believe that many of them are here hoping to avenge their families. They truly want to contribute to this war; they are not simple fuel!

“I believe that they are racking their brains about how to get stronger and how to fight better in the war, and they will work hard until the last moment before the fight starts!

“Maybe not all species would act like this, but there are definitely some among them!

“So, I cannot ignore their determination, and I won’t!

“Maybe we’ll lose this war. Maybe we’ll disappear. Maybe the Ancestral Land of Chaos will be destroyed and chaos will be restarted... But at least we were here. We fought while we were still alive. We felt joy and grief. We loved and we hated. Even if we can only end as ashes, we will still think that our lives are meaningful!”

2

## Chapter 1539: Lives (2)

“You have to bear in mind that the war they’re going to take part in is very meaningful too!” said Su Ping while staring at Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo, “All living beings lose their consciousness upon death. The Ancestral Land of Chaos means nothing to those who have died. Even you, a mighty Sorcerer Ancestor, are also meaningless to those who are no longer among the living!”

“So, it’s enough to feel meaningful when you’re alive.”

Ti Tuo said with a gloomy expression, “You dare argue with me?”

“What do you want?” Su Ping stared back at him.

“I don’t think he is wrong,” said the girl to intervene, suppressing the two parties’ rising auras. She glanced at Su Ping while addressing Ti Tuo, “Maybe we’ve failed time and again exactly because of that way of thinking. All species are the same; every living being is the same. However... Just because living creatures share that common instinct doesn’t mean that it’s right.”

“There’s no right or wrong in this world, just the strong or the weak,” said the ancestor after a snort.

Su Ping stared at him and said to the girl, “I hope that when I’m not cultivating, I can gather and train all species here; I will turn them into a team to maximize their combat abilities.”

“Humph. Why bother? I can just tweak their memories,” said Ti Tuo.

Su Ping said with a ruthless tone, “Sure, you can directly modify memories. However, doing so will only make their lives develop by only following a trajectory that you’ve set. They wouldn’t be any different from walking corpses. Indeed, it would be as efficient as using them as fuel. However, the greatest difference between living creatures and non-living creatures is the miracle of life!

“Such a miracle depends on diversity. It cannot be preset. Some people may remain idle, but others may unleash brilliant and unimaginable power. This isn’t something achievable by just modifying memories!”

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo snorted. “That being said, the efficiency is too low. You’d better focus on strengthening yourself. The Heavenly Dao army is already attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos. War can start at any moment; we’re just waiting for you.”

The girl looked at Su Ping and said, “If you want to do it, just do it. I know you; I won’t stop you. Don’t forget that I’m your system. I will always take your side.”

“You!” Ti Tuo was furious.

Su Ping felt dazed as he looked at the girl’s gentle eyes. For a moment he found it hard to believe that the girl was the same system who sometimes argued with him and peeped at his thoughts.

“I understand.” Su Ping nodded.

“Humph, just spoil him will you!” Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo was rather angry. He glared at the girl and left.

The girl watched him leave. She turned around and smiled at Su Ping, then said, “Although I gave birth to the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors, all three hosts are essentially my children too.”

Su Ping felt helpless over this matter. Speaking of children, he couldn’t get used to being regarded as a child by someone who bickered with him all the time.

“I always thought we were peers...”

“That was just you overthinking.”

“You can be the one on top.”

1

“That’s impossible.”

Su Ping shook his head and said, “I’ll keep cultivating, then. By the way, considering your current strength, it shouldn’t be a problem to suppress Sorcerer Ancestors, is it?”

“It’s not too hard,” said the girl with a smile.

Su Ping nodded and asked again, “What level are you? The Sorcerer Ancestors you mentioned, they can gather thousands of universes with a thought thanks to their Chaos Qualifications. What about you? What are you capable of? I find it hard to understand. The most ultimate power in this world can only destroy thousands of universes at the same time, right?”

“I’m similar to them, except that I’m stronger. How should I put it? Mine is a better quality.” The girl chuckled.

Su Ping nodded. The system did know him well; her explanation was easy to follow.

“All right, I’ll go and cultivate, then.” Su Ping winked. “I don’t need to pay energy points now, do I?”



"It's on me. Just go," said the girl, "Consider it a reward for upgrading the store."

"How generous!"

Su Ping raised his thumb. Then, he noticed that Joanna was standing still, like a statue. There was definitely something wrong with her. After learning everything from the system, he knew that the system had temporarily "paused" her.

"Let's meet again on the battlefield..." Su Ping said to the paralyzed beauty.

He selected a cultivation site and went in with the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets.

There was no way of knowing if the system was lending a hand, but Su Ping realized that he was encountering more Ancestral Gods in the advanced cultivation sites, obtaining a lot of Dao power from each hunt; the number of condensed universes grew.

"System, the power I'm absorbing is yours?" Su Ping asked.

"More or less," said the system, "You don't need to feel guilty..."

"No, I mean, can't you just transfer the power directly to me? Wouldn't it be much faster?" Su Ping made a face like a curious baby.

Her reply was definitely brief. "Get lost!"

"I mean it," said Su Ping.

"I mean it, too," the system said, "You're hunting, absorbing and digesting the power of those Ancestral Gods; new battles come to you all the time. The whole process is simple, which also helps you become acquainted with your new power. It's no different from a direct energy transfer."

Su Ping thought for a moment and realized it was true.

Time went by. Su Ping kept on training in cultivation sites, day after day.

Outside the store, on Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo's continent—

More species arrived and were arranged on the allotted territories.

"I will only try my best in the next war."

High above, two figures were overseeing the continent. They were Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo and the girl.

"I'll run if we encounter danger. I don't want to die; I hope you can understand," said Ti Tuo as he turned to look at the girl. There was more in his eyes than the usual coldness. He seemed to be troubled by the situation. There was gentleness, regret and affection.

She answered with a slight nod, "It's fine as long as you try your best. I don't want to see you perish here, either. I've lost enough children as it is."

Ti Tuo heaved a sigh and spoke softly to the void. "They're probably going to be here soon..."

The girl nodded. "I can feel where they are. They'll be here in three thousand years."

"That's early. We'll get to meet them very soon." He spoke while feeling a jumble of emotions. "I wonder if they're weaker now. They were terribly beaten up in the previous two wars."

"We should get ready too. It's time to have the sealed weapons return," said the girl.

Ti Tuo nodded. "Let's reverse the Yellow Spring and summon them back. We'll have them become familiar with each other sooner."

"I'll help him train them. He's right; those species need to be trained and coordinated," said the girl.

"Do you really support his theory? It's just a bad habit that lingers from his weakling original self, even though he has already reached the Undying State. Besides, he's not a mythical creature begotten by nature." Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo frowned.

"Our theory failed, that's why I'd like to give his idea a try," said the girl, staring at her child. "I also think that what he said and thought wasn't wrong. Those lives don't know anything about you and me. We are also meaningless in their eyes. It would be for the best to let them know that they're going to embrace their doom. Otherwise... Their fate would be just too pitiful."

"You find them pitiful? That's an emotion only felt by the weak," said Ti Tuo.

"Emotion is a power too. There's nothing wrong about it," said the girl.

Inside the store.

In a certain room—Tang Ruyan peered through a window and looked at the figures who were walking in a hurry outside, and the long line in front of the door. She felt quite puzzled by this.

“We don’t have to do business anymore?”

She felt that everything was different ever since the store changed. There was also a strange sense of urgency.

“The store is still operating, although in a different way,” said Green Lady.

She had signed a contract with the store and received a notification from the Mother of Chaos. She also had an inkling of the situation outside, but she didn’t know a lot; after all, she was too weak to understand everything.

“Even so, business seems to have paused for a long time,” said Tang Ruyan, “And Anna is gone, too. Is she in one of the cultivation sites?”

“She’s in the store. She’s just asleep.” Green Lady wore a troubled expression.

“Asleep?”

“Maybe it’ll be a whole different view when she wakes up,” said Green Lady with a gloomy voice. She looked into the distance without fear in her eyes. Instead, she seemed to be missing someone.

Maybe... She would be able to see him very soon.

The Twilight Deity King...

1

...

Somewhere in the human territory—Shen Huang and the other leaders were holding a meeting.

“Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo has ordered all species to train and cooperate to fight the Heavenly Dao!”

“We’re going to fight the Heavenly Dao? We will probably succeed under the lead of the Sorcerer Ancestor!”

“There are myriads of species and forces here. It would be strange not to succeed.”

Chi Ying and the other dominators received news from the Ti Tuo Clan. They were all excited. Sorcerer Ancestors were at the apex of all cultivation in their eyes; the ultimate lives in the world. If they couldn’t defeat the Heavenly Dao, wouldn’t everything be destroyed?

“As long as the Sorcerer Ancestor takes action, the Heavenly Dao will be suppressed in no time,” said one of them, confident in the ancestor’s power.

“That’s right. All that we need to do is offer a helping hand.”

...

Aside from the human clan, the other species also became excited when they learned this.

Some of them had lived there for hundreds of millions of years, even producing ten generations of dominators. As for the ordinary beings, there had been too many generations to count. They already considered that place as their hometown. All kinds of discussions arose upon learning about the war against the Heavenly Dao.

“Heavenly Dao? What is that?”

“The Sorcerer Ancestor is protecting us. Do we really need to do anything?”

“That’s right. Wouldn’t we be causing trouble for the Sorcerer Ancestor if we attacked?”

“I for one will cheer for the Sorcerer Ancestor!”

“The beings of the Heavenly Dao... They seem to be the enemies that our distant ancestors mentioned. According to our records, the original universe we lived in was destroyed by the Heavenly Dao and we had to escape. We were lucky that Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo took us in.”

“They were our ancestors’ enemies? That makes them my enemies, too!”

“All the warriors will march to war under the Sorcerer Ancestor’s command to avenge our ancestors, save for the Priest and the Six Generals!”

“The Priest has also been summoned. The Sorcerer Ancestor has ordered everybody in the clan to participate, except for babies and weaklings. There will be a war ten thousand years from now, and all species will to the death!”

“What?!”

The news quickly spread. The species that had just arrived were excited, never expecting that war would start so soon.

The species that had been sheltered much earlier had already forgotten the hatred. They had been living in peace, and considered that place as their home. They panicked at the mention of a total war, and sent their objections to the Ti Tuo Clan, but they were promptly scolded.

Even though there were obedient and resistant species, drilling practices soon began under the command of Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo.

The species were all reorganized. Those who had disputes over territory were asked to cooperate.

The Mother of Chaos controlled everything in the name of Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo. She taught everyone the Chaos Array of Thousand Souls. It was the most miraculous array that could accommodate an infinite number of beings. That also meant that its potential was unlimited.

All the species were the fireflies providing power for the Chaos Array.

Time flew.

A thousand years later—practicing the use of the grand array had already become a habit that all species were accustomed to.

The array gradually took shape thanks to their continuous practice.

Another two thousand years passed.

In the void beyond Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo's continent—a scorching aura was sweeping over. A brilliant crescent moon appeared in the darkness. The crescent moon grew in size and became full. It was a planet billions times bigger than the sun; it was red and bright, emitting a heat capable of melting everything.

1

That scorching, behemoth of a fireball arrived at the Ti Tuo continent. It didn't lose to the massive terrain in size.

Two figures dashed out from the continent and reached a place in the void.

On the burning planet—there was the soft shriek of a phoenix. Then, the flamed ancestor of all birds appeared out of nowhere.

"Golden Crow, I didn't expect you to be the first to arrive," said Ti Tuo indifferently.

2

It was presenting his original appearance. A frightening vision that seemed to be made of thousands of ears and eyes. It was creepy.

The Golden Crow had also revealed its appearance. It was a golden bird filled with scorching flames. The feathers making its wings turned out to be arms that had tiny and scary mouths spouting flames.

“Mother of Chaos.”

The Golden Crow ignored Ti Tuo, simply focusing on the petite girl, who seemed to be alone in the world.

Although short and small, she seemed to be the center of the universe; everybody could see her clearly, even if she was thousands of kilometers away. It was very strange.

“You’ve been recuperating since the last war. How’s your recovery?” asked the Mother of Chaos in a soft voice, gentleness conveyed by her eyes. The Golden Crow ancestor had been living in seclusion and resting for a really long time just for the fourth war!

It was also the first to arrive in answer to her summons.

After raising three hosts in a row, she had also been influenced by feelings that were unique to ordinary beings.

“I’ve regained 90% of my power. I’m not fully healed yet, but I can fight!” said the bird ancestor coldly. Its voice was the opposite of the heat it released. It was chilling.

“Thank you for your trouble,” said the girl with a sigh.

Dazed, the Golden Crow ancestor stared at her and said, “You’ve changed. It seems that the Heavenly Dao had a huge influence on you in the last war. Your feelings are more intense than before.”

“Emotion is nourishment for the Heavenly Dao; although heartless, they feed on them. It would be for the best if you could heal soon, or it’ll be a weakness in the upcoming war!”

“I’ve warned her, but I couldn’t make her change her mind,” said Ti Tuo, shaking his head.

The Mother of Chaos smiled. “I’ve learned how to use emotions as a strength, just like the Heavenly Dao does. A counterattack with their own methods is a good strategy. Don’t worry. If anything goes wrong in the war, I’ll take my leave immediately.”

The Golden Crow ancestor stared at her and then nodded.

He suddenly turned and looked at a certain place in the depths of space.

Ti Tuo was acting casual. Half the eyes on his body looked in a particular direction. He was the one with the keenest senses among the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors; that was

the reason why the Mother of Chaos had decided that place as a gathering point. Ti Tuo was able to avoid the Heavenly Dao without being exposed. That was also the reason he was able to survive in the previous wars.

All of a sudden, an amazing view was displayed in the void. The usually transparent void suddenly began to fold and spread like ripples. The next moment, a black light flashed before the ones gathered.

It was like teleportation.

However, there was no such thing as teleportation or deep spaces in the world of chaos. The so-called teleportation in other worlds was akin to a slow turtle movement in the world of chaos.

There was only one species that boasted such an unbelievable speed in the world of chaos, one that could almost compete with teleportation.

“Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que, you were slower than the Golden Crow this time,” said Ti Tuo casually.

An enormous bird made an appearance, with a purely dark body. Anyone who looked at it would only see a massive black shape. Only its four eyes were extremely bright. Each eyeball was the size of a planet, brilliant and sharp. It seemed that they wouldn't only consume rays but also thoughts.

There was a sensation of falling into an abyss when gazing at the creature. Wills and souls would be dragged and consumed.

Staring at that being was not possible!

“I came from the edge of chaos. He was closer; is it surprising that he came here faster than me?” said Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que with a pleasant, yet chilling voice that would make people feel instinctively frightened.

“I heard that you've been stopping the Heavenly Dao from attacking the Ancestral Land of Chaos, and you've been hunted because of this.” The Golden Crow ancestor looked at the new arrival with troubled feelings.

“The Mother of Chaos wouldn't have had the time to raise the fourth kid if I hadn't done that. Fortunately, the Heavenly Dao couldn't catch up to me; they tried to ambush me several times, but they were too slow...” said Yin Que casually.

It was the fastest amongst the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. In terms of speed, Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng, ranked second, was far inferior!

“Thank you very much,” said the Mother of Chaos softly.

Slightly dazed, Yin Que looked at her. "What's up with that?"

She answered with silence and a smile.

"I was the last to arrive, huh?" said a hoarse voice. A fuzzy figure slowly moved closer from a place in chaos. It looked like countless shadows flickering, with an oval-shaped body made of countless worms. It was indescribably terrifying.

"I'm surprised that you were willing to show up," said Yin Que casually.

"Since this is going to be the last time, it would be better for me to see the outcome. I won't take part in this again if you fail; I will sleep forever with my Dao of Death and wait for chaos to restart," said the hoarse voice.

"Ha, is it any different from death?" asked the Golden Crow ancestor casually.

Ti Tuo glanced at the latter and said, "Golden Crow, you were struck by the Heavenly Dao and affected by their power. Looks like you haven't fully fixed it."

"That's why I said that I'm only 90% recovered," said the Golden Crow ancestor coldly.

The Mother of Chaos smiled and said to the speaker with a hoarse voice, "Shi Mang, please bring a little thing back to life for me."

"Is it necessary to resurrect those little things?" Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang asked back.

Although it was in control of the Dao of Death and could resurrect all living creatures, it rarely did so. That creature thought that those lives weren't worthy enough to be resurrected; and the resurrection process would only be a waste of energy.

"It's very important to a certain someone," said the girl with a smile.

1

"Will it influence the war?" asked Shi Mang.

"More or less," she said.

1

"In that case, I will find it," said the somber ancestor.

3

## Chapter 1541: Before the Last War (1)



Just after Shi Mang finished talking, a chaos projection appeared in the void near him.

Countless figures from billions of races since the birth of time were flashing by in that projection, leaving fuzzy images that quickly disappeared.

The strong ones among them would stop, giving yearning gazes at the power they sensed from beyond the projection.

Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang ignored those lingering figures. He waved a hand and released a stream of power that pushed them away, making them disappear in the crowd of specters.

“Found it,” Shi Mang said all of a sudden.

One of the gray tentacles on his body passed through the projection and picked up a petite figure from amongst the crowd.

“That’s it.” The Mother of Chaos nodded with a smile. She had already given him a reference of the Little Skeleton’s aura, so that it could be found.

“What a weak creature...” Shi Mang shook his head, quickly sensing that the guy was extremely weak. He could kill that creature a billion times with a single breath.

1

A stream of power surged in, making the petite projection gradually turn from an illusion to a tangible being. It was now emitting the energy of life.

It was an undead creature, yet it still emitted the power of life.

“How much longer do we have to wait for that guy?” Yin Que asked on the other side.

The girl said, “About seven thousand years.”

“All right. We’ll just take a break, then” said the fellow.

The Golden Crow ancestor’s eyes glittered. “I haven’t seen this kid in a long time. I wonder how he’s doing.”

1

“He should be very happy to see you.” The Mother of Chaos smiled with an ancient tranquility, gentle and mysterious.

She slightly waved a hand and the Little Skeleton flew over to her.

Dumbfounded, the small pet raised its head and looked at this indescribably gorgeous woman, able to sense her terrifying power. There seemed to be an infinite amount of strength in her slender body.

However, the small fellow wasn't scared at all. Rather, it had a strong sense of familiarity.

The Mother of Chaos silently disappeared into the void with the Little Skeleton.

The Sorcerer Ancestors exchanged glances and dispersed.

A brilliant and golden figure flew out from the scorching planet floating in the void. Its feathers seemed to be made of fire crystals. "Sorcerer Ancestor, is that Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo's clan?"

"That's right. Your old friend is right there." The Golden Crow ancestor chuckled.

"Old friend... I heard that he's the one who proposed the alliance. He's also the representative of the legendary Mother of Chaos. No wonder he was able to advance so fast that I couldn't even catch up to him..." said the brilliant Golden Crow. Her voice was loud and clear, like a spirit of fire.

"No need to hold yourself back. If you want to see him, just go and meet him," said the Golden Crow ancestor. After that, it gradually disappeared into the enormous planet. That was the only celestial body floating quietly in the void, at a certain distance from the Ti Tuo continent.

Strangely enough, none of the species living on the continent had noticed the scorching planet in the sky. They were fairly close, but they seemed to be in different spaces.

...

In the store—

Su Ping returned from his expeditions to the cultivation sites. The Dark Dragon Hound and all his other pets had become Ancestral Gods, and he had managed to condense a thousand Undying Universes. Ancestral Gods were vulnerable against him; he could crush them with ease.

His combat ability had already surpassed the Undying State, but he wasn't a Sorcerer Ancestor yet.

Thanks to the boost of his thousand universes, Su Ping's senses could easily cover the entire Ti Tuo continent. He could sense the immeasurable power of the host Sorcerer

Ancestor, which was as vast as an ocean. The more clearly Su Ping sensed that power, the more deeply he realized how wide the gap between them was. Even if he condensed three thousand universes and reached the ultimate perfection, he could hardly compare to the twelve ancestors.

*The gap between Sorcerer Ancestors and experts in the Undying State is truly too wide...*

*The chaos mythical creatures spawned by nature are truly peerless when compared to the other creatures that were born afterwards...* Su Ping sighed regretfully, but he wasn't too frustrated. At least he was the strongest person in history, only second to the Sorcerer Ancestors!

"Huh?"

Su Ping's eyes suddenly glittered. Shocked, he looked in a certain direction inside the store.

Two figures were standing there. One was the system, and the other was... the Little Skeleton!

Su Ping's pupils twitched. He dashed forward to the Little Skeleton, his body shaking. He squatted and stared at the little fellow. This feeling was so familiar that his blood felt like it was flowing backwards.

2

"I asked Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang to resurrect it," said the Mother of Chaos with a smile.

Su Ping looked at the system gratefully. "Thanks!"

"You should have already seen through life and death, given your current level; no need to thank me," said the girl.

Su Ping shook his head and said, "No matter what level I am, or whether I've seen the truth about life and death. Even if I can create everything with a thought, I wouldn't destroy everything with a thought!"

The girl glanced at him and sighed, "I picked a human as the third host; I wonder if it was the right decision. Humans were born after the Heavenly Dao age, and you're too badly influenced by it. Feelings and emotions are the Heavenly Dao's sustenance. If your feelings are too strong... the consequences will be dire if you're defeated and absorbed by our ultimate enemy."

1

## Astral Pet Store

### Chapter 1542: Before the Last War (2)

“Considering your wisdom, you must have taken into account the risk of failure and made precautions for it, right?” said Su Ping.

The Mother of Chaos nodded. “That’s right. If you fail, I will immediately cut off all feelings; yours and those of all species.”

Su Ping glanced at her in silence. He simply turned to look at the Little Skeleton, only to discover that its contract aura had already disappeared. Two crimson lights appeared in the small fellow’s eyes, as if it was gazing at him curiously.

The Little Skeleton was currently an unowned pet. Considering its level, it could be seen as a ferocious beast.

Su Ping didn’t feel any killing intent coming from the Little Skeleton, though. The feeling was warm. Even without the contract, the Little Skeleton wouldn’t hurt him.

“Let’s fight side by side again,” said Su Ping softly.

He raised a finger, and the force of a contract appeared on his fingertip. The Little Skeleton looked at the light and retreated a bit, as if scared. However, it didn’t flee; it was only one step back.

Its eyes were glittering, as if the light triggered some of its memories.

Su Ping then laid his finger on the small fellow’s forehead and established a contract.

His mind was then connected to a weak and ignorant consciousness.

It felt like a sting in his heart; that familiar feeling was unforgettable, even to that day. It was like when he established a contract with the Little Skeleton for the first time. Back then, the fellow had just been born and could barely walk. The combat ability gap between them was even greater now.

However, the feeling was still the same.

“I’ve been keeping the memories that you forgot,” said Su Ping softly. He was about to transfer those memories to the little one through their bond.

But the next moment, the Little Skeleton jumped over and clung to his arm.

Dazed, Su Ping raised his hand and touched the Little Skeleton's cold and smooth head. Even without memories, that familiar feeling had never disappeared.

His lips curled and his laughter became louder.

Once he was done laughing, he sent all the memories to the Little Skeleton.

The Little Skeleton grew pensive all of a sudden. After a long time passed, the little one raised its head again; there was a familiar feeling in the fire of its eyes.

Their bond allowed Su Ping to confirm that the Little Skeleton was truly back.

"Welcome home..." Su Ping hugged the fellow.

The Mother of Chaos lowered her head and watched with a vague smile on her face.

...

"Kid, are you in there?" said a pleasant voice all of a sudden.

Slightly dazed, Su Ping spread out his senses and saw a mature and beautiful woman standing outside the store. She looked quite beautiful.

Dazed for a moment, his eyes instantly widened. "It's you?!"

"Looks like you're truly there..." The graceful figure walked in and then noticed the Mother of Chaos next to Su Ping; her casual smile was instantly gone. She became nervous and hesitant, not daring to step up.

The Mother of Chaos smiled casually and said, "Little Golden Crow, you may speak."

She then gradually faded away.

However, Su Ping sensed that her aura was still around. She didn't truly leave. This made him feel more or less weird. After seeing the Mother of Chaos, he had gradually been able to separate her from his image of the system, but it seemed that her peeping habits had never changed.

1

*Who would have thought that the most superior chaos life form is a peeper?* Su Ping secretly complained.

2

He stood up and said to the slender figure before him. “Diqiong, why did you come here?”

He had heard that except for the Remains of High Heavens—which was an illusion—all the cultivation sites were real, but ran in different timelines he couldn’t understand; they were both dead and alive. All in all, they couldn’t be seen without the system.

“I’m not dead. Why can’t I come here?” Diqiong snorted. “The war is drawing near. Our ancestor came out from seclusion and led us here.”

“The Golden Crow ancestor...” Su Ping understood. That mighty being was indeed capable of traveling from the unknown past on its own.

“I didn’t expect that you would already reach the Undying State. You’re indeed something,” said Su Ping with a sigh. He visited the Golden Crows’ world world five hundred years in the past and Diqiong was only in the Dao Heart State back then.

Even though it was a level just before the Undying State, the cultivation required to advance was tens of thousands of years, or even longer. He was the exception, as he had the store’s advantage.

“Humph. That explains why you improved so fast; the Mother of Chaos trained you. No wonder you surpassed me,” said Diqiong angrily. Her confidence had been struck as Su Ping surpassed her time and again. She even suspected the purity of her bloodline.

“It wouldn’t have been difficult to surpass you, even without the Mother of Chaos.” Su Ping chuckled.

“Stop bragging.”

“Do you want to compete?”

“How?” Diqiong was stunned.

Su Ping said, “How about a tongue-twister? We’ll see who’s faster.”

“...” Diqiong rolled her eyes and couldn’t be bothered to argue with the guy. She gazed at Su Ping and said, “I heard that you’re going to fight alongside four of the Sorcerer Ancestors. You’re actually going to shoulder the responsibility as one of them. Can you do that? The Heavenly Dao is unimaginably strong. If nothing else...”

“What else can I do? I have to fight, even if I can’t win. I don’t have a choice,” said Su Ping.

Diqiong gritted her teeth. "If nothing else, I'll talk to the ancestor and ask him to take you away. Considering my ancestor's power, we can just seal the planet and live in seclusion for the rest of our lives."

Slightly dazed, Su Ping stared at her, then shook his head a long time later. He said, "Destruction is no better than eternal imprisonment. I'll do my best in this war to avenge my comrades who were killed by the Heavenly Dao."

"They're dead; you can ask Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang to resurrect them. There's no need for revenge," said Diqiong in a hurry.

Su Ping shook his head and replied, "Escaping is not the life I want."

"But you'll be with me forever!" said Diqiong in a hurry.

Su Ping glanced at her, and saw how she was nervous, timid, and yet determined. He fell silent again. Perhaps it was indeed a good choice; however, if he knew there was such a choice and he didn't try his best, the odds of winning would only be lower.

Also...

As he felt the aura that stood by his side quietly, Su Ping curled his lips and shook his head with a slight motion. "That's not what I want."

Diqiong's eyes became dim after his refusal. She quietly said to herself, "But that's what I want."

3

Su Ping saw her off, then started to train with the Little Skeleton.

The little one was only an Ascendant when it died. Su Ping focused on bringing his pet's combat ability up to speed.

Time moved on.

More and more species arrived to the Ti Tuo continent from various places of chaos. Some were refugees whose universes were destroyed, and some were taken there by Yin Que.

The number of forces gathered was multiplied by several fold in the blink of an eye.

In the passing of the few thousand years prior, their number surpassed the statistics from past eras.

There were no counters nor rooms in the enormous, pebble-shaped store. It was empty, but it seemed to contain an infinite space, which would be enough to swallow an entire universe.

“Are you ready?” said the Mother of Chaos as she quietly watched Su Ping come out from his cultivation sites’ outings.

Ten thousand years had passed. Su Ping was emitting a mature yet discreet aura at the moment. His appearance was the same, but his eyes were deep and bright, as if able to see through everything.

“I’ve already hit the bottleneck,” he said.

Exactly as planned, he had condensed the three thousand Great Daos and turned them into Undying Universes; his combat ability had reached the maximum.

Furthermore, he received the Golden Crow ancestor’s blood and awakened the Golden Crow bloodline, which allowed him to grasp the Ever-Burning Flame of their clan.

The Undying Universe based on that flame was as powerful as the universe of original chaos. The power of those two universes alone was enough for him to dominate the Undying State.

The system asked Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo and Shi Mang for their blood, hoping to further strengthen the human host. However, both refused. Neither she, nor Su Ping insisted.

1

The Mother of Chaos said, “If there’s enough time, you can also condense the Lesser Daos into Undying Universes; however, the improvement is limited and the time it takes would be too long. It’s time to go.”

Su Ping was the leader she had picked, and was more than satisfied with his current status. His growth was beyond her expectations, which was a pleasant surprise.

Su Ping nodded with a slight motion. He still had some room for improvement, but it wouldn’t be significant.

His personal strength wasn’t decisive, as the war spanned all across history. He had to rely on everybody’s strength and the four Sorcerer Ancestors’ support in order to win.

The Mother of Chaos turned around. The store was slowly opened, then turned into a gentle light that fused into her body. That place became an empty ground.

Stunned, Su Ping said, “The store...”



"It's part of my body. I'm now taking it back," said the Mother of Chaos.

He nodded, then looked around. He felt somewhat sad; the ever-present store, always keeping him company, had just disappeared.

Was it a sign?

Suddenly, a crisp voice sounded, "Brother!"

1

Slightly dazed, Su Ping turned around and noticed the approaching group of familiar people.

The one who called out to him was none other than his proud sister, Su Lingyue.

He was surprised to hear her call him brother in public.

Next to her were his parents and other familiar faces from the Blue Planet, including Zhong Lingtong, the student he had recruited back then.

The Qin family was there, including their patriarch, Qin Duhuang.

The earliest legendary warriors on the Blue Planet were there, including Xue Yunzhen and Ye Wuxiu.

The Zhou family was there, whose houses were razed to the ground by him.

The Tang family also made an appearance.

A few people were standing in front of the Tang Family forces. One of them looked very similar to Tang Ruyan, except that she seemed much colder and more decisive.

Su Ping didn't need to ask to know she was Tang Ruyu, Tang Ruyan's sister.

Once the Blue Planet jumped closer to the Federation region of influence, the Tang Family asked Tang Ruyan to be their leader. However, she was in Su Ping's store and had no time for that. The latter learned later that she had entrusted all family affairs to her sister.

The two sisters had become enemies at one point in time, but they returned to being sisters again in the end.

Su Ping didn't ask what happened, but he felt happy for Tang Ruyan; after all, it was always a difficult test to part from one's family.

In addition, he saw some people he had met on the Blue Planet. Some were the top students found there, while others were legendary-level warriors who had fought by his side during the Deep Caves' invasion. They were all Star Lords now.

“Boss Su.”

Qin Duhuang—the old patriarch of the Qin family—looked at Su Ping in fright. The things that transpired back on their planet was but a distant memory to all of them. However, they entered that universe along with Su Ping, and witnessed his growth; they could only admire him whenever they thought of him.

“What are you doing here?” Su Ping rolled his eyes and said to Su Lingyue, “There’s no need to take part in the war. You’re too weak; you can simply stay here and wait for me to return.”

Su Lingyue stuck out her tongue. “Can you not be so blunt? Now that you’ve guessed it, we’ll be blunt as well. We’ve all heard a lot about the upcoming war…”

She stared at Su Ping and added, “Brother, I didn’t have a chance to fight by your side in the past, but this time, we will surely fight together.”

“That’s right, son,” Su Yuanshan said with a comforting smile on his face, “If you fail, we’ll die sooner or later. Being the case, we should stay together as a family.”

“That’s right. I’ve discussed it with your father. Do not stop us,” said his mother.

“Boss Su, we’re also going to participate in the war!” said Qin Duhuang, Ye Wuxiu and the others. They all gave Su Ping determined looks.

The latter’s expression changed a bit, then he looked at them thoughtfully. He didn’t try stopping them anymore. He nodded and said, “In that case, you must try your best to survive.”

“We will survive together.” Relieved, Su Lingyue put on a sunny smile.

Su Ping looked at her, then beckoned.

She felt somewhat puzzled, but she walked over anyway.

Su Ping reached down and rubbed her head, messing up her neatly combed hair. He said, “If you’re that eager to fight, let me see your performance.”

She didn’t move to break free from Su Ping’s grasp as she usually would. Instead, she lowered her head with bloodshot eyes.

Su Ping's hands slid down and he hugged her. It was the first time he had embraced that sister of his, and possibly the last.

The others felt troubled when they saw this, knowing it was very likely that they would die in the war. However, if they didn't fight, they would still die when their side lost.

In that case, fighting was the better option.

"This time I'm also going with you!" said someone...

Su Ping turned around and noticed Tang Ruyan, Green Lady and the others arrive. The cauldron woman was also there.

"She told me everything. The store is gone anyway; it doesn't make sense for the boss to be fighting in the frontlines while his employees only watch. You can't stop me!" Tang Ruyan gritted her teeth.

Su Ping glanced at the Mother of Chaos and them. He nodded and said, "I won't stop you. If you want to come along, just come along."

Relieved, Tang Ruyan discarded her anxiety. She happily jumped closer to where Su Ping was, then said, "I'll show you the results of my cultivation in the past few days!"

"All right."

Green Lady stood at the rear with a gentle smile on her face. She seemed to be thinking about something from a distant past. She would probably see the Deity King...

"Humph. You're just some ordinary lives. Why bother?" said an entity after a light snort. Then, the rays in the void were consumed, and a black-robed young man stepped out with a domineering, and suffocating aura.

Su Ping's eyes were cold. He released an aura to cover all the people present, then looked up to see the black-robed expert. "Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo, the war is drawing near. You'd better not annoy me!"

"Huh?" Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo raised his eyebrows and glanced at Su Ping.

The Mother of Chaos rose and glanced at Ti Tuo casually. "He's right."

## **Chapter 1544: Ancestral Land of Chaos (1)**

"Humph!"

Ti Tuo slightly changed his expression and said dispassionately, "Just keep spoiling him; this is not child's play. It's time to go. Yin Que is already there."

After that, he gave a cursory glance at everyone present and turned around, disappearing into the void.

Su Ping frowned and concealed his aura. He glanced at the system and said, "We should go, too."

The latter nodded and said, "This time, I cannot go with you. The Heavenly Dao forces are already occupying the outskirts of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. We need to split up into six legions to crush them and reclaim the lost territories as soon as possible. We'll meet in the River of Fate, within the Ancestral Land; that's where we'll fight together against the Heavenly Dao."

"Okay."

Su Ping glanced at her and said, "Then be careful."

The system had already told him about the battle plan while he was roaming in the cultivation sites.

The Ancestral Land of Chaos was extremely vast. It was the center of the world of chaos, the place where the Mother of Chaos was born.

That place had already been breached by the Heavenly Dao. The Mother of Chaos's power relied on the Ancestral Land of Chaos; the more land was recovered, the stronger she would be. Neither Su Ping nor the four Sorcerer Ancestors were the protagonists in the last war against the Heavenly Dao... It would be a fight between the Mother of Chaos and the ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Only those two could partake in such a great war.

The mission for all the others was to reclaim territory and restore the Mother of Chaos' power as much as possible.

"You're the one who should be careful. Your legion is the one that I worry about the most. Those four are Sorcerer Ancestors, and they're able to fight with their tribes; they can handle it. You may well be as strong as them, but you're not really one of them..." said the system while staring at Su Ping. The legion he would lead included billions of species; it had the largest number, but happened to be the weakest.

Not even billions of creatures could compare to a single arm from a Sorcerer Ancestor.

"Don't worry. I will accomplish the mission no matter what!" said Su Ping solemnly.

The Mother of Chaos gazed at him thoughtfully and said, "Then, I'll wait for you in the River of Fate."

"Deal!"

"All right."

As if having just made an agreement, the Mother of Chaos stared at Su Ping, then she turned around and disappeared without looking back.

Su Ping took a deep breath and his expression grew solemn. He knew about the high risks related to that war; it would very likely be the most dangerous war he would fight in his entire life.

Besides...

The chance to resurrect was not available this time.

This was completely different from the advantage of cultivation sites, where he could resurrect a million times.

He only had one chance, and the same applied to the billion creatures that followed him. They too, only had one chance!

"Let's go!" Su Ping said.

Su Lingyue, Qin Duhuang and the others took deep breaths, their hearts feeling burdened. However, their blood was somehow flowing fast, too. The upcoming war concerned all living creatures that had ever lived; it was more significant than any war that had ever happened!

It was extremely meaningful just to be a grain of dust on the battlefield!

Some people flew over and stopped in front of Su Ping; they were the human dominators, including his master.

He looked at Su Lingyue, his parents, and many familiar faces he knew from the Blue Planet.

Su Ping said, "Master, they're all yours."

"I'll ensure their safety," said Shen Huang solemnly.

"No, we're going to the battlefield!" said Su Lingyue in a hurry.

Slightly dazed, Shen Huang looked at Su Ping for confirmation.

The latter nodded and said, "They're yours to command; they are my family and friends, but they are also warriors for this battle!"

Shen Huang narrowed his eyes. Nobody would say anything, even if Su Ping kept all those people in the rear, given his authority. However, he was willing to let them fight the war; this would very likely be lethal for them.

His heart was rather heavy. Did Su Ping's choice imply that the odds of winning were questionable?

In any case, he knew there was no turning back. He was also prepared to die!

"I'll make arrangements for them to enter the battlefield!" Shen Huang said to Su Ping.

The latter nodded, not looking back. He took a step, growing ten meters taller instantly. After taking a second step, he grew an extra dozen meters taller. He had already become a magnificent mythical creature after dozens of steps, one that was hundreds of thousands of meters tall, reaching to the sky.

Su Ping's senses covered the entire Ti Tuo continent, even though it was extremely vast.

He could see and hear everything that the billions of species present were doing, including their conversations and cultivations.

Su Ping slowly opened his mouth. "Everyone, listen to my orders!"

His voice rumbled in the sky covering the entire Ti Tuo continent, and in the souls of countless living creatures. The pressure generated left all those beings in awe.

Even though he had grown to such a height, he was still unable to see the edge of the continent.

He manifested a projection of his face with his immense power, which spanned the entire landmass floating in the dark void, illuminating like the sun. His infinite power made all their souls quake.

"I am Su Ping, the Dao Ancestor of humankind!"

"I am also your commander in the war against the Heavenly Dao!"

"All of you, get ready and march with me. We will conquer the chaos and eliminate the Heavenly Dao!"

Su Ping's loud voice echoed throughout the continent, reaching the ears of billions of species.

All those creatures were shocked at the sight of the enormous face looking down at them; it was glowing. They didn't dare look away; there was a soul-stirring power in their eyes that they couldn't resist!

"He's already reached such a level!"

"Is he a Sorcerer Ancestor?!"

Among the cyborg species—Elaine and the others with Undying State cultivation looked up in shock at the face in the void. They still remembered how Su Ping intimidated them with one finger earlier on; they didn't expect him to become even more terrifying.

1

Such pressure frightened them, even considering their high level. It was as if Su Ping could easily obliterate them, regardless if they were considered to be immortal!

*Did someone actually break the iron law that nobody could become as strong as the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors?!*

Apart from the cyborgs, the other Undying State experts from the different species floated in midair and looked at the majestic figure in fear. The human Dao Ancestor was beyond their imagination.

They had been informed that they would be under the command of a human creature in the war against the Heavenly Dao. That decision made them feel unconvinced before, wondering why a human would be qualified to lead them.

But then they understood why.

That Dao Ancestor was not a mythical creature from chaos, but he had already exceeded most of them. He was only second to the Sorcerer Ancestors!

"Looks like he can suppress those arrogant guys. There's no need for us to worry; he knows what he's doing."

In the void—Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo was indifferently looking as things unfolded on his continent. The natives of his territory were already standing behind him, leaving the billions of species under Su Ping's command on the continent.

"In all of history, he's the one closest to you. Unfortunately, he doesn't have a Chaos Qualification..." The Mother of Chaos's eyes glittered. "He will be of great help if we can loot one of the Chaos Qualifications from Yuan Long or the others!"

Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo snorted and said, "Humph, you'd better not place too much hope on him."

1

“Although it’s remarkable that you found this reasonably good guy as a leader in such a short amount of time, we can only rely on ourselves in the war. He and those ants are just the icing on the cake. They will be useless if we are defeated.”

The Mother of Chaos stared at the billions of species and said softly, “I created the twelve of you, you created millions of mythical creatures, and they created billions of species. For me, you’re all my children.”

“Humph, don’t underestimate me!” Ti Tuo snorted.

1

Sorrow flashed in her eyes as she kept her peace. She simply created a channel. “You can go; I will guide his way for the last time. We must finish this war as quickly as possible. Right now, the main forces of the Heavenly Dao are gathered near the River of Fate, trying to cut it apart. Their Ultimate Heavenly Dao is in the depths of the Ancestral Land... We must finish them as quickly as possible!”

“I know. Better tell him to hurry. I’ll go first,” said Ti Tuo.

He waved a hand. All the mythical creatures of his clan roared with surging killing intent.

The next moment, he revealed his original appearance, turning into an enormous shadow that tore the void open. “The channel that Yin Que has built for us turned out to be useful.”

He then stepped in, and his clansmen followed.

The channel leading into the world of chaos gradually disappeared after they left.

## **Chapter 1545: Boarding (1)**

After Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo and his forces disappeared, the Mother of Chaos turned around and looked at the scorching planet in the void.

A shadow appeared next to the planet as if nodding at her. Then, the entire planet shrank and turned into a crimson light that flew into the forged channel.

The Mother of Chaos slowly withdrew her gaze and looked at the continent.



That continent would soon collapse without Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo's power keeping it together. She was going to give Su Ping one last ride to reach the final battlefield. Whether he would live or die would be beyond her control.

On the continent—

“Everyone, listen to my command. Board my warship and march with me!” Su Ping roared.

He already sensed that the auras of the two Sorcerer Ancestors were no longer there. The Golden Crow ancestor and Ti Tuo had very likely set off already.

The six legions were expected to conquer the outskirts of the Ancestral Land of Chaos as fast as possible. Su Ping couldn't waste any time, as leading an attack would be even more difficult if the Heavenly Dao was alerted.

Speed was important in war!

Su Ping roared, and brilliant universes appeared behind him, one after another; they were like suns rising above mountaintops. Their pressure was so immense it could be felt from billions of kilometers away.

Then, those universes quickly transformed into enormous warships floating in the world.

The vessels were immense, able to carry an endless amount of creatures. They floated above the billions of species at the edge of the Ti Tuo continent.

Each warship emanated a terrifying pressure, which shocked and frightened all species. *Is this the power of our commander?*

The still unconvinced experts finally ate their pride and gave in. They were having conflicting feelings.

They could tell that those universe warships had been made by Su Ping, and carried the same aura. It was obvious that the human expert was already as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor, able to condense many universes with a thought!

A deafening sound echoed.

“Everyone, board the warships!!”

All the clans had been trained and were aware of the significance of that war. At Su Ping's command, all the experts soared to the high sky and roared.

“All aboard the warships!!”

“All aboard the warships!!”

Billions of loud voices echoed. All the clans lined up in formations and boarded the warships like ants and locusts.

There was an infinite space on each warship, able to accommodate the living creatures in an entire universe. The three thousand warships could easily pack all the clans residing on the entire Ti Tuo continent.

“Let’s board the warships and get ready for war!”

All the human dominators were standing solemnly on the human clan’s territory as they summoned all their forces. The weak and the slow were simply teleported to where they were supposed to be. They were instantly lined up.

After boarding the warships, they chose one of the exits and flew out.

Billions of creatures soared to the sky. It was the most splendid scene ever.

Each species had billions of members, and the Ti Tuo continent was unimaginably vast. It was more than ten thousand light years long.

Boom~!

Those gargantuan warships were interconnected by chains as thick as planets, which caused the void to shake whenever they moved.

Every chain was made of a powerful Great Dao. Just the momentum of the chains as they moved was enough to make the Dao Heart cultivators of each clan tremble. They felt as if they were looking up at godly existences.

Only empty buildings and traces of life remained on the vast continent after the billions of species boarded the warships. No living being remained; it looked rather desolate.

Su Ping’s enormous projection looked down at the entire Ti Tuo continent, becoming more solemn at the abandoned place. He knew he had to win the war, or everything would be obliterated, including the billions of species he had seen.

“Set sail!!” Su Ping bellowed.

Sails were instantly hoisted to resist the Dao power corrosion in the void. Each warship carried dozens of Undying State members who were acting as their guards. They were the top forces of every vessel.

Su Ping moved the group and left the continent as he moved toward the void.

He saw the Mother of Chaos who was waiting for him. The two of them exchanged glances. There was no need to talk; they already knew what the other was thinking.

Words were no longer important at the moment.

Encouragement? Unnecessary.

Reminders? Everything that should be said had already been said.

After noticing her solemn expression, he suddenly flashed a smile and said, "No need to worry too much. We will definitely win this war!"

Her lips moved, but she only nodded in the end.

She knew that Su Ping was expressing his determination!

"Let's march!"

Su Ping turned around and waved an arm.

Three thousand blue-black warships flew over, each of them hundreds of times the size of the sun and massive chains connecting them. They rushed into the void while radiating terrifying auras.

Su Ping moved towards the channel in the void.

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping's back and said softly, "Stay alive..."

1

Her eyes glittered after saying that, as if surprised. Those two words had a completely different meaning.

At that moment, she was prioritizing Su Ping's survival over winning the war.

Su Ping paused but didn't look back. He simply a fist and waved it before he entered the channel.

1

Boom!

The three thousand warships crossed the void and sailed to enter the channel and follow their human commander.

Billions of species were being carried by the warships; both males and females of each clan were armed and ready. The overall mood was solemn and grave. Some of the women and children looked nervous, but they were armed with marvelous blades forged and given away by the higher-ups.

All the resources of every clan had been exhausted for the war. All the rare materials were used to forge weapons and armor. All the spiritual herbs were used to make pills and different types of medicine.

If they lost the war, they would lose everything!

The channel in the void was like the mouth of a whale, slowly swallowing the three thousand warships. Inside was an accelerated path that allowed them to directly arrive at the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

Su Ping looked solemn as he stood in front of the three thousand warships. Hands behind his back, he stared at the end of the channel.

Ten thousand years seemed to have passed, but it also felt like a short moment. There was light at the end of the pathway, followed by an abundant aura of chaos. The solemnity in Su Ping's eyes was soon replaced by ruthlessness.

He was the first to step out.

Before him was a vast and boundless world.

It seemed like a mix of soil and fog, with countless strange planets. There were mountains akin to black clouds and bottomless gray lakes swirling like smoke. Unknown living creatures could be vaguely seen.

"This is... the Ancestral Land of Chaos."

Su Ping sensed the abundant aura embracing him. Anybody could become a chaos creature if they cultivated in such an environment. However, the chaos aura was so abundant that the weaker ones would be corrupted and lose their bodies and souls; all their essence would be transformed into the aura of chaos.

In simpler terms, they would be absorbed.

Su Ping glanced around and his heart grew heavy, as there were incomplete bodies floating in the void.

Some of those corpses were as big as half a planet; others were like mountains, while some had only left their skulls behind. There were huge skeletons, cracked arms, chopped claws, and some bodies had wings riddled with holes...

The place was like hell.

The previous owners of those bodies had been very strong creatures, the weakest having a Dao Heart cultivation, which prevented their remains from decaying.

Boom~!

The chains shook and the three thousand warships were pulled out of the channel. The billions of clans inside the warships witnessed the gruesome primordial scene. There was nothing but death and bones. *Is this the Ancestral Land of Chaos where countless mythical creatures were born?*

Time was the weakest power of all in such a place; it had been corrupted by the heavy aura of chaos and couldn't be reversed. However, judging from the scene, it wasn't hard to infer the brutal battles that took place!

Su Ping stepped forward with a solemn demeanor, followed by the three thousand warships. The chains shook as they moved.

Surprisingly, the floating bodies automatically moved away when Su Ping passed by them, as if making way for him. Some bodies sank as the three thousand warships passed, and some bodies seemed to adhere to the bottom of the ships, moving along with them.

## **Chapter 1546: Original Dragons' Ancestor (1)**

Su Ping took a deep breath. They were already dead, yet he could still feel their immense willpower after millions of years.

Slay the Heavens!

At the end of the day, their determination didn't fail them, it carried on.

Su Ping stepped forward, eyes as sharp as blades. He could feel a cold and deep aura in the furthest distance of his perception, like a swirling black hole that twisted and swallowed his senses.

It was the familiar feeling produced by the Heavenly Dao!

"Set up the first formation. Unjustified Heavenly Dao, charge!" Su Ping said in a low voice.

The three thousand warships shook, each of them a universe in its own right. Commanded by Su Ping, they were shaped into a sharp arrow with Su Ping at the front.

The billions of species inside the warships—led by the experts of their respective clans—set up the formation!

Their fighting will was unstoppable!

Once the magnificent ancient array was unfolded, Su Ping finally leashed out, transforming into an arrow and dashed forward.

The three thousand warships followed!

It had to be said that Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que had left the perfect position for Su Ping, right next to the edge of the Heavenly Dao' defense. This could allow Su Ping's power as well as that of all his subordinates to reach the peak.

Su Ping noticed that the vague auras of the Heavenly Dao forces were also gathering.

The enemy had discovered him right when he charged toward them.

The war had already begun!

Billions of kilometers had been crossed instantly!

The chaos aura and the ancient Dao power was intense in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Even normal Ascendants were hardly able to fly. Celestials were like ordinary people with a tiny bit of power; only the Dao Heart experts and above could travel freely.

Su Ping's three thousand warships sheltered the weak, preventing them from being pressured by the prevailing environment. This also helped them unleash their power.

Boom!

In the blink of an eye, Su Ping saw the Heavenly Dao beings.

Those dark figures were like a majestic wall blocking his path. It was insurmountable and breathtaking, looking down upon all the other lives, making them feel insignificant.

However, the next moment—a long spear ripped the wind apart and pierced one of the Heavenly Dao creatures.

The being was set ablaze, and was instantly burnt!

Su Ping's body was hundreds of thousands of feet tall, and was just as wild and domineering as the Heavenly Dao. He waved a hand and summoned his long spear to make a sweeping motion.

There was a loud bang!

All the Heavenly Dao creatures before him were cut apart like withered grass. The Great Dao power had fully annihilated them before they could react.

Su Ping was at the moment able to easily kill Undying State experts, let alone Dao Heart fighters.

However, after the Heavenly Dao beings were killed, the light of chaos appeared and more Heavenly Dao minions gathered in the void, seemingly coming from some sort of teleportation channel. They appeared out of thin air, giving Su Ping cold and expressionless gazes, utterly ignoring his shocking killing intent.

Su Ping discovered that all the Heavenly Dao forces were gathering where he was, their numbers endless to a suffocating degree as he pushed the reach of his perception.

"Die!!" Su Ping roared furiously, not giving those creatures an opportunity to delay.

He wielded the spear and jumped towards the Heavenly Dao ranks to make sweeping attacks. None of them was able to resist.

Behind him were the three thousand warships. They attacked the Heavenly Dao forces and instantly caused openings, crushing tens of thousands of humanoids to pieces.

The bodies stuck to the bottom of the warships broke free and kept fighting the Heavenly Dao in their incomplete state!

Some bodies mauled enemies crazily, like deranged monsters. Some of the corpses were already destroyed halfway, but they waved their remaining limbs and fought!

Further into the distance, within Su Ping's range of perception—the seemingly identical forces of the Heavenly Dao surged like a torrent. There were too many of them, filling his view.

Killing intent surged in Su Ping's eyes. The long spear turned into a sword, and his strength quickly soared. An intense sword aura turned dozens of kilometers long, slashing dozens of Heavenly Dao beings.

He discovered that those creatures' actions were coordinated. Furthermore, even if they only had a Dao Heart level, the damage from the Dao attacks was greatly weakened.

The Heavenly Dao seemed to be highly resistant to the power of Dao found in nature. They would usually have the advantage if both sides were in the Undying State.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

All of a sudden, a hundred golden lights of chaos fell towards Su Ping like whips.

He blocked the light with his gigantic arm, which was left with hundreds of cracks. His body had been hurt!

It is important to recall that he had already attained the Primitive Chaos Clan body, which was even enhanced by the Golden Crow bloodline that had also been cultivated to the extreme. His body had been perfected after gathering the bloodlines of both clans; he was no longer able to absorb more bloodlines, even if he wanted to.

Normal Undying State experts were incapable of hurting him.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Su Ping looked up and saw Heavenly Dao fighters descend. They seemed to be slightly different, but they all gave him cold and angry stares.

“We’re fighting for our great cause. How dare you disrupt us!!” roared one of the Heavenly Dao fighters, its voice echoing throughout the battlefield. It released an immense aura of chaos and transformed into a creature as huge as a planet, looking down at the battlefield with eyes like the sun. “Listen to our judgment, and don’t reincarnate anymore!”

A brilliant light was emanated by its body. A hundred Heavenly Dao beings around it released chaos aura to connect to the transformed ally.

Instantly, all those humanoids extended their arms and the Wheels of Judgment appeared. The next moment, those artifacts swirled and gathered into an enormous wheel, even bigger than the warships condensed by Su Ping!

That Wheel of Judgment was big enough to swallow a warship.

The object emitted a scorching light as it moved towards our hero.

1

Su Ping stood on the battlefield like an unparalleled mythical creature, eyes arrogant and cold. The sword in his hand was glittering. As the enormous Wheel of Judgment fell—he suddenly roared and the sword turned billions of kilometers long, piercing through the entire battlefield.



Boom!!

The sword slashed down and the enormous Wheel of Judgment was instantly shattered, resulting in a hundred Heavenly Dao beings shivering. Some were even sent flying, suffering from heavy wounds.

Su Ping's sword made a sweeping motion, instantly drawing a circle on the battlefield and clearing the area within. The hundred Undying State-level Heavenly Dao humanoids were cut apart by the sword aura. Whatever Dao power remained was the only thing keeping them alive.

He stepped forward and simply crushed their bodies, not even bothering to look back.

The Heavenly Dao forces were still flooding over, soon filling the circle that Su Ping had just cleared.

He continued to fight with a gloomy demeanor.

The number of Heavenly Dao fighters was beyond his imagination, and that was only a place in the periphery.

Su Ping didn't know how long he had been fighting, but he saw no decline in the number of his enemies. That long battle was like a dream.

Roar!!

Exactly at that moment, a deafening roar sounded at the end of the horizon.

The roar swept through millions of kilometers, even making Su Ping's soul shiver. The three thousand warships around him also shook!

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and looked into the distance.

There, an unimaginably massive shadow was rising, its eyes alone being already as huge as the sun. Then, there was the enormous and scary dragon head, and a torso as huge as a galaxy!

Su Ping was dazed.

That was... Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long!

He immediately remembered what the system had told him: Yuan Long had been suppressed by the Heavenly Dao in the previous war!

“Indeed, you’re the ant that appeared in my memories. I already knew when my mother trained you in the illusions, and I knew that this war would soon begin. Just as I expected!”

Yuan Long saw Su Ping at the center of the battlefield. There was coldness in its enormous eyes.

“You knew?” Su Ping’s eyes were cold.

Yuan Long sneered, “That’s right. My level is beyond your imagination, and I’m even stronger than before. As long as I appear in your illusion and see you, I will know!”

“My name must not be spoken!”

“My eyes see through everything!”

Its body coiled, occupying half of the enormous battlefield. It stretched forward and crossed millions of kilometers as it moved closer to where Su Ping was.

The enormous dragon head looked down at Su Ping like a deity in the sky looking down at mere mortals on the ground.

## **Chapter 1547: Die Without Regret (1)**

“So what if you know?” said Su Ping as he stared back, “I heard you were subdued by the Heavenly Dao. Are you here to stop me? Are you willing to be at the mercy of someone else despite being a Sorcerer Ancestor?”

“Hilarious!”

Yuan Long sneered. “We are unrestrained. I am merely cooperating with the Heavenly Dao. How can we be affected by the reestablishment of chaos? You are inconsequential ants and dust. A new world will begin once the debris is dealt with. New ants will replace old ants, but we are eternal!”

“Bulls\*it eternity!”

Su Ping was so infuriated that he laughed and said, “Getting to the bottom of it, you’re just afraid of death! Would you be as obedient if the Heavenly Dao hadn’t suppressed you? You’re just deluding yourself. Are you really the oldest dragon? Have you only taught dragons to be domineering in front of others? You’re just tame dogs in front of the Heavenly Dao!”

Yuan Long became gloomy as he said, "Just as sharp-tongued as I remember. However, it's pointless, no matter what you say; everything is fated to happen. You're naive if you think you can clear this level. You will fail again this time; she won't have another opportunity to attack!"

"Then you can go to hell!!" Su Ping roared.

The fury in his heart was like flames in the underworld. It was a Sorcerer Ancestor raised by the system; the guy was a deserter, which infuriated him even more than the Heavenly Dao did.

"Unfortunately, you're just an ant in my eyes without the Chaos Qualification!" said Yuan Long indifferently.

A stream of a twisted fiery power darted out from his gargantuan star-like eyes. The void became scorching hot and all the Great Daos began to melt. Su Ping felt the chaos aura around his body start to ebb. It was no ordinary fire, but an extreme power able to destroy all the Great Daos.

"Come on!!" Su Ping roared furiously and unleashed all his power, gathering a brilliant sword aura and slashing it forth.

Boom. The sword aura exploded; Su Ping was struck and sent flying.

There was a huge hole on his chest, and the surrounding was unable to regenerate. The burning fire would not die out!

"I said that you're an ant. Do you disagree?" Yuan Long looked down at Su Ping with dazzling light in his eyes again. Another pair of power streams darted out.

The power of hundreds of overlapping universes instantly surged, at the behest of the guy's single thought.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and quickly dodged. The ground underneath his feet fell apart, leaving two bottomless holes the moment he jumped away.

He looked up and saw Yuan Long, who was like a cat toying with a mouse. There was no mention in the briefing that one of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors would stand in his way. The strength gap was insurmountable.

Was he going to fail?

His failure would surely affect the system and the other four Sorcerer Ancestors. It might be the decisive factor for the final outcome.

While Su Ping was thinking quickly—roars burst out from the rear."Dao Ancestor!!"

Su Ping turned back and looked, only to see figures rising from the shields on the three thousand warships. They were emitting a powerful light, seemingly as unstoppable as planets.

“Dao Ancestor, there’s no need to protect us. Just dispel the warships!”

“Please block Yuan Long, Dao Ancestor. We will reinforce you the moment we finish off the Heavenly Dao creatures!”

“No need to worry about us, Dao Ancestor!”

Scorching thoughts were being relayed. Su Ping could sense their determination, and felt that his blood was flowing backwards.

However, with everything coming to that point, he had to go all out so he could face Yuan Long.

He had gathered billions of species exactly because he couldn’t win the war on his own; he needed the help of all the others.

“What can we do if the protection is canceled?”

“You can’t remove the shields! All of us will die!”

“A Sorcerer Ancestor is in our way. Let’s run! We can’t possibly win!”

“I can’t let my mother die here!!”

The wails of some people were mixed with the staunch voices of those willing to fight inside three thousand warships. They knew they’d be no match for the Heavenly Dao forces at all if the shields were removed.

Furthermore, just being exposed to the chaotic environment was extremely dangerous.

One had to remember that not only warriors had gone to war, there were also the elderly and the young.

Even the disabled and the heavily wounded were there. That was the ultimate war that would determine their fates, so none of them held back.

However, many of them were having breakdowns once they reached the battlefield.

Death was right before their very eyes. They had been aware of the importance of winning during the ten thousand-year cultivation period, or all species would die.

However... Death was right at their doorstep; many were cowering, hoping to live a while longer.

The number of beings who shared the sentiment was not small, crying out even before the warships disappeared.

“Shut up! You idiots!”

“How can you flinch from this life-and-death battle?!”

“If you learn the truth in the morning, you can die happily at dawn. We’re not fighting for ourselves, but for the future!”

“I’ll be the first to make a move and kill if any of you keeps crying!”

There was a mess inside the three thousand warships. Those determined to sacrifice themselves glared at the ones wailing, feeling indignant and scornful.

Su Ping saw all this. He felt troubled when he looked at those who were holding their heads and crying.

He wasn’t angry, though; he only felt sorry for them.

“Guys, I understand that you’re unwilling to confront death. I am just as unwilling!”

“Who would rather die if they had a chance to live?”

Su Ping’s thoughts were directly conveyed to all the people on the three thousand warships, regardless of their species. Their languages and cultures were different; however, Su Ping’s thoughts were automatically translated in the way they could understand as he sent them telepathically.

“Look at the corpses we’ve brought on our way here.

“They’re still fighting!”

“They are the remnants from the last war. They’ve been floating here for years, waiting for us!”

“If we fail, our lingering determination will also turn into remains that will also float in this place. We would then wait for the next army and follow them to continue our fight!”

“This war is inevitable!”

“If we choose to retreat, we will surely die!”

“There are bound to be casualties. However, none of us will die meaninglessly!

“Don’t forget why we’re here. Don’t forget the grudges burdening our shoulders! Don’t forget the hometown we had to say goodbye to! Don’t forget that we’re burning lives! We should fight!!!”

The people on the three thousand warships stopped weeping upon receiving his message. They looked at the majestic figure standing in front of Yuan Long.

A normal creature like him, daring to confront an ancestor of chaos. How courageous was that?

*He hasn’t given up yet. How can we?!*

Someone in the Undying State roared frantically, “Fight!!!”

“That’s right! We’ll die without regrets!”

Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other humans stepped out with thoughtful light in their eyes, clenching their weapons. They were only in the Dao Heart State and they would be greatly weakened without the warships. However, they were relentless!

“Brother...”

Su Lingyue stood in the crowd like any random person. Nobody paid any special attention to her. She didn’t receive any special treatment for being Su Ping’s blood sister.

Tears made her sight hazy. She had never been prouder of her brother!

She held onto her weapon and gritted her teeth, dismissing all of her tenderness as she stuffed herself deep into her armor. She was going to unleash all her strength. It would probably be insignificant, but she didn’t want to feel any regret!

“Fight!!”

“Fight!!!”

No one knew who was the first to shout, but roars continued to burst from the three thousand warships; their morale was greatly boosted. Some people looked at their children. The sadness and gentleness in their eyes was gradually replaced by fighting will.

Those eyes belonged to the lives at the weaker levels. Maybe their individual contribution wouldn’t affect the outcome. However, when billions of them were gathered, they could give a tiny push!

Su Ping took a deep breath, knowing he couldn't hesitate. He immediately dispelled the warships.

Bang!

The warships transformed, releasing all the passengers on board. Then, they turned into light that quickly flew over to him.

The warships turned into universes that floated behind Su Ping's back like stars.

Many figures appeared next to him. They were the Inferno Dragon, the Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton and his other pets. Su Ping stared at Yuan Long and spoke softly while holding his sword.

"Follow me in this last battle!"

## **Chapter 1548: Bloody Battle (1)**

"Hooooooooooooo!"

The Inferno Dragon roared and gazed at Yuan Long with eyes like flaming torches.

Being the ancestor of all dragons, Yuan Long carried a bloodline that could make any of his kin tremble. The mere pressure of his stare could make all the Undying State dragons lower their heads.

However, neither the Inferno Dragon nor the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon lower their heads. They gazed at him with fury in their eyes.

They resisted the fear with the fury coming from within their bodies.

The Dark Dragon Hound slowly stepped forward. Even though it was only half a step, it was already standing in front of the whole group, given its enormous body. Never had it been more solemn and determined.

Gone were the old weak selves after following Su Ping to fight for such a long time. All of them had grown up.

"You're just a group of ants, and yet you think you can stop me? You don't know what you're doing!" Yuan Long spoke with contempt in his eyes. He was feeling discomfited because of the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon's and the Inferno Dragon's eyes.

He didn't wait any longer, spouting a mouthful of flames all of a sudden.

The flames, which were as dark as chaos, were enough to corrode and destroy any universe a hundred times over, instantly reaching their target as if they were in Su Ping's memories. He wasn't even able to resist, as he already felt the scorching heat all over his body. His bones, flesh and power of chaos were burnt by the flames!

Su Ping widened his eyes and roared.

The three thousand universes behind him instantly gathered and exploded, transforming into an unimaginable burst of power unleashed by Su Ping's sword.

There was a boom, followed by a destructive sound. The dragon flames were blocked, but Su Ping still discovered minor burn marks on his body; he wasn't able to fully drive them away.

"Roar!!"

The Inferno Dragon roared and coiled its long body, with crimson scales covered in flames. It transformed into light that directly fused with Su Ping's body.

They would be instantly wiped out if they were to fight Yuan Long on their own. They could only bring out their potential if they merged with Su Ping.

Nearby, the Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton and the others moved to fuse with Su Ping's body.

All of a sudden, his body—which was hundreds of thousands of feet tall—grew yet again. He was like an ancient giant. The shape of his body also underwent terrifying changes: he was covered in white bones, and dragon scales grew from those bones; a dragon head and a wolf head grew from his shoulders. There was also an enormous skull closely stuck to its body.

A long tail was protruding from his body, and there was white fur below his neck. His appearance was beyond frightening.

He became almost as indescribably terrifying as the ancestor after the transformation. Nobody dared to look at him.

"Break!" Su Ping roared and swung his sword again, completely extinguishing the flames that had reached him. His sword passed through all eternity and directly slashed Yuan Long's head.

The trace of this sword, if not deliberately erased, would be seen even billions of years into the future!

Anger flashed in Yuan Long's eyes. Su Ping was much stronger than expected. Even he was unable to erase that ant!



He was incredibly strong, even without a Chaos Qualification. *No wonder Mother picked him.*

*No. It's all Mother's merit. She raised another terrifying figure!*

*Unfortunately, she failed last time, and she'll fail again!*

He let out a roar and the entire world shook, as if weeping. The next moment, Yuan Long completely revealed his body, spinning a billion kilometers away. He then made a sweeping move with his body, dark light flashing in his eyes.

Boom. All the Heavenly Dao forces nearby were pushed away, and a horrifying blast swept over towards Su Ping.

The latter looked up, only to see a gargantuan tail about to slap him.

He had already sensed the agony of having shattered bones, even before the attack connected. Not only had he been struck in the present, but also in his heart and his memories. He would also be hit in the future.

Unavoidable!

That was an ancestor's attack that could only be resisted head-on. Normal Undying State fighters would be unable to block it, making death the sole outcome.

"Ughhhhhhhh!"

Su Ping's eyes were bloodshot. He didn't know whether or not he could block that move, but he had to!

He wasn't hoping to defeat Yuan Long; his sole aim was to buy enough time for reinforcements to arrive. It was impossible for him to beat a Sorcerer Ancestor on his own, as the strength gap was too wide.

Boom. Su Ping's muscles surged and he waved the giant sword with both arms. The three thousand universes behind him exploded again, pushing his arms to slash furiously.

The sword aura was like a toothpick compared to the dragon tail. Extremely brilliant, but it was still completely drowned.

Su Ping's body smashed heavily onto the ground. The agony was such that he felt as if torn to pieces. The most terrifying fact was to find that some of his power had dispersed, and he couldn't condense it just yet.

“You actually survived my attack! Your body is indeed sturdy after combining the bloodlines of two clans.” Yuan Long’s eyes were cold. The compliment was genuine, but he simply whipped his tail a second time.

Su Ping heard an exclamation. “Master!!”

There were two crimson lights in the eye sockets of the skull on his back, as if about to come to life.

Upon sensing the Little Skeleton’s thoughts, he hurriedly roared, “No!”

He would never let the little fellow block that kind of fatal attack for him again. It would be impossible for the pet to survive!

“I can block it!”

Su Ping raised his head and gritted his teeth. His blood was flowing backwards as his Dao Heart was spread and he instantly sensed a consciousness of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. However, the consciousness had somehow sealed itself, as if inside a shell; he couldn’t communicate with it in the slightest.

This made it impossible to make use of its power.

*The Ancestral Land of Chaos’s consciousness sealed itself. Is it because of the Heavenly Dao?* Su Ping slightly changed his expression. He stopped thinking about it given the urgency, and simply detonated his three thousand universes to dash forward.

Whoosh!

His body was like a phantom. He was actually able to evade the massive dragon tail moving at the fastest speed possible.

“Thank you.”

Su Ping felt he had survived a disaster as he could sense the power of the attack right behind him. That was the Dao Heart secret technique grasped by the Lightning Rat; it could transform all his cells and strength into particles that could penetrate laws and even Great Daos!

“Huh?”

Yuan Long’s expression changed a bit. Su Ping’s speed was beyond his expectations, as it was almost on par with his.

It would have been impossible for the ancient dragon to keep up with Su Ping if it weren’t for Su Ping’s lack of strength. Only Yin Que could outrun him.

Su Ping turned around and looked at Yuan Long. He then glanced at the Heavenly Dao forces nearby and found that they were already fighting with the people who were inside the warships.

The number of their enemies was flabbergasting, and even the weakest among them had a level comparable to the Dao Heart State. There weren't any Celestial-level humanoids.

There were Undying State humanoids commanding them; all of them acted like well-trained legions.

Su Ping gloomily charged into the place with the highest concentration of humanoids.

"Don't run!"

Yuan Long was rather angry. The ant-like Su Ping had escaped from him again and again. His Heavenly Dao allies could think that he was going easy on the human.

He quickly moved towards Su Ping.

He spouted another stream of flames. Su Ping dashed into the cluster of Heavenly Dao forces before him, instantly noticing that a lot of them were affected by the flames, just like he was. Some of them were set ablaze and cried miserably. They quickly vaporized into ashes until there was nothing left.

"Roar!!"

Yuan Long let out a furious roar. Su Ping noticed that half of the tens of billions of warriors fighting against the Heavenly Dao were directly turned into blood mist, all in an instant.

The instant death caused infinite blood to splash out. The region was dyed red and black.

Su Ping's eyes were bloodshot. He gritted his teeth and charged onward without looking back.

He planned to take Yuan Long away from the battlefield to prevent more casualties.

"Humph, brat, I'll finish them off before I get to you. Just keep running!" Yuan Long realized Su Ping's plan and sneered. He turned around and charged at the most heated part of the battlefield.

Su Ping quickly changed his expression and stopped.

"Stop!!" Su Ping roared.

“Ha!”

Yuan Long smiled coldly, suddenly turning around and abruptly whipping his tail. Su Ping tried to move away using the Lightning Rat’s secret technique, but there was no time.

He narrowed his eyes and roared. The sword in his hand was gone. He clenched his fists and punched crazily.

Countless fist auras pushed forth like a golden wall. The billions of golden fists somehow slowed the tail’s momentum.

The next moment, he quickly dashed forward and avoided the slower-moving dragon tail.

“Humph!”

Yuan Long’s eyes were cold. He ignored the fleeing Su Ping and charged into the battlefield.

He realized that the ants fighting could be used to threaten that human.

Roar!

With a roar, a beam of light darted forth and traversed the battlefield, instantly creating a massive ravine that ran through the whole battlefield.

Countless species perished in a mere instant, even the ones with Undying State cultivation. They didn’t survive beyond half a second.

Su Ping’s eyes were bloodshot. He only had two choices at the moment: one was to charge toward the Heavenly Dao; however, Yuan Long would definitely slaughter others faster than him as he hunted the Heavenly Dao’s forces.

The other was to hold Yuan Long back.

“You’re the dragons’ ancestor. Do you only know how to show your back to your enemy? Bastard!” Su Ping roared and glared at the creature with ruthless eyes.

Yuan Long’s enormous body paused. He turned around and looked at Su Ping coldly. “Why? Are you done running?”

“Come and fight me!”

Killing intent surged from Su Ping's eyes. He said, "You're the dragons' ancestor and carry the Chaos Qualification. Let's find out whether or not you deserve to be called the strongest dragon in all of existence!"

"As you wish!"

Yuan Long instantly turned around and charged, simply unleashing an overpowering aura. His enormous claws tore the void open and instantly reached the spot where Su Ping was.

The latter didn't dodge; he instantly drew his sword. All his blood was burning. The illusion of the Golden Crow was vaguely manifesting in his back. He sacrificed his Golden Crow bloodline for more power.

"Three thousand universes, slash!!"

The thousands of universes behind Su Ping's back exploded instantly, transforming into a terrifying power that was unleashed by his sword.

After a massive bang!

Yuan Long's sharp claws—enhanced by the power of hundreds of universes—managed to block Su Ping's attack. The edge of the sword produced dazzling sparks as it made contact with the scales.

Infuriated, Yuan Long roared. His aura turned into a concrete golden blast that pressed down on his enemy.

Su Ping's hair was dangling under the pressure. All his muscles were trembling. He found it hard to endure the pressure, as if bearing the weight of millions of planets.

However, his three thousand universes recovered in a moment. He detonated them again, letting the violent power surge to slash furiously once again.

The golden dragon aura was torn apart after the opening was made, which was like the puncture of a sharp needle in a golden ocean.

Bang!

A stream of power surged from within and struck back, sending Su Ping flying.

The latter jumped. Dozens of universes exploded in his palm, then he swung a fist.

The fist tore the dragon aura to pieces and struck Yuan Long in the head.

Roar!!

Yuan Long burst into fury. Su Ping was just an ant in his eyes; however, the lad would somehow survive again and again.

The massive beast rotated and golden light was suddenly gathered in the void into, which then turned into Undying State-level Original Dragons. There were at least ten thousand of them!

Su Ping slightly changed his expression. They weren't real Original Dragons, but mere condensations produced with his universes.

"Dragon Enchantment!" Yuan Long roared. The ten thousand Undying State dragons also roared. Their bellowing was condensed into an ancient array, but that was more of an aggressive force field than an array. Normal lives would be obliterated once entering, even if they were in the Undying State.

Su Ping could sense that his flesh was being torn apart. Even the power of contract in his body was falling apart.

He gritted his teeth with bloodshot eyes, then detonated the three thousand universes and charged in one direction.

Whoosh!

He instantly approached the edge like a Golden Crow, instantly cutting apart dozens of Undying State Original Dragons as he slashed on furiously, creating an opening on the array for him to escape.

Hardly had he escaped the lethal array when a sharp claw descended from the sky and pressed Su Ping heavily, pushing him away.

He felt as if hit by a rushing universe, and found it impossible to control himself. Many things on his path broke, and then he was swallowed by excruciating pain.

Su Ping turned around and then saw Yuan Long's sharp claw pushing him all the way to the depths of the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

He wanted to resist it and stabilize himself. However, his opponent had infinite strength and he couldn't stop himself.

It felt like being pushed a light year away. He only stopped until something fiercely struck his chest, which made him vomit a mouthful of blood. He felt that something tough was on his chest.

He instantly noticed that it was an extremely thick and solid plate; made of rock, except it was unbelievably hard.

Phew!

Yuan Long's sharp claw kept on suppressing him, then the great dragon spurted a mouthful of flames all of a sudden. Su Ping was incapable of breaking free, as the claws contained infinite Dao power that restrained all his transformation methods. If not for this, he would have turned into particles to gather once again later.

There were a lot of flame-based Great Daos. Rotting, burning, imprisonment, sealing, destruction, and so on. The traits of thousands of overlapping Great Daos were able to destroy any Undying State expert; even their souls would be gone. They would be completely annihilated from time and from memory.

However, golden ripples appeared and surrounded Su Ping.

Those ripples kept spreading—

They somehow blocked the flames.

Those ripples were in fact the power of exploding universes.

Su Ping was detonating the three thousand universes, one by one. Each second, dozens of universes were exploding and regenerating in cycles. The result was their power to flow nonstop like ripples, blocking the dragon flames.

The dragon flames contained too many Great Daos; they seemed to be sweeping as a whole, but they actually consisted of many frequencies. In simpler terms, it wasn't a simple, fierce attack, but one of a continuous nature.

The ripples made by Su Ping's exploding universes happened to suppress the ongoing attacks. He seemed to be affected by the flames, but the golden ripples protected him like water; he wasn't hurt in the slightest.

“Asshole!”

Yuan Long was infuriated. He was almost using his full strength, and Su Ping was still alive?

Su Ping's eyes were cold. Although suppressed by the claws and incapable of breaking free, he hoped that this would continue, all to buy himself more time.

However... He wasn't sure if the other species would be able to take care of the Heavenly Dao forces without his command.

Su Ping's heart was heavy, but the only thing he could do was hold Yuan Long back. It was impossible for him to kill it as he was.

The Dark Dragon Hound's voice sounded in Su Ping's head, "Boss, if the guy is condensing thousands of Great Daos to attack simultaneously, I have another method!"

That golden ripple defensive technique was developed by the former. The pet had been informed of the war in advance, so the fellow designed the technique based on Su Ping's condition, spending thousands of years perfecting it.

"Okay," Su Ping responded in his heart.

Yuan Long stopped his flame attacks at the moment, then suddenly opened its mouth to manifest a vortex that looked like a black hole, which darted towards Su Ping.

The latter's expression changed, as he could feel the infinite destructive power of that move. The golden ripples covering his body instantly turned into a golden cloak!

The garment was as soft as the fabric of a dress, seemingly gentle and soft, but using the power of three thousand universes.

The cloak floated to meet the enormous black vortex.

The latter was like a basketball scoring, except it was caught in the net. The cloak didn't rip open; it wrapped and blocked the black vortex.

However, the terrifying momentum of the black vortex struck Su Ping in the back, along with the golden cloak. He felt that his spine was broken, as if a planet made of lead had smashed into him. Such momentum could have killed lots of people in the Undying State.

Su Ping gritted his teeth after his back blocked the vortex's momentum, then summoned his strength, transforming the golden cloak into a giant hand that grabbed the black phenomenon and threw it back at Yuan Long..

Yuan Long slightly changed his expression, as he was shocked and infuriated. Su Ping's defense was too powerful; those two attacks should have been enough to kill him, yet he survived both of them.

Whoosh!

He moved his head a bit to dodge the black vortex. He kept pressing Su Ping down while saying, "Did Mother teach you all this?"

"Did your mother teach you all this?" Su Ping sneered and said, "Oh, a bastard like you probably doesn't have a mother. Not even animals would betray their mothers!"

"You're asking to be killed!"



Exasperated, Yuan Long suddenly clenched Su Ping and picked him up from the particularly hard rock. He rose higher and said, "I will rip you apart in front of those ants and show them your humble face!"

Su Ping's expression changed, quickly turning around to slash with his sword. However, his sharp weapon only left shallow marks on the scales, unable to cut them apart.

Whoosh!

Yuan Long soared and carried Su Ping to the sky above the battlefield. It then roared, spreading his voice billions of kilometers into the distance. All the creatures on the battlefield could hear the loud bellowing.

The billions of species were utterly frightened, as if a demon were whispering directly into their ears. The overwhelming pressure made them want to kneel.

"Look, that's... the Human Dao Ancestor!"

"How is it possible..."

"The Dao Ancestor can't beat the Original Dragons' ancestor anyway. That's a Sorcerer Ancestor..."

The Undying State experts saw how Su Ping was ensnared by the dragon claw. They all looked awful and desperate.

Su Ping was already strong enough. He had condensed three thousand universes into three thousand warships and was definitely the strongest, except for the Sorcerer Ancestors. However, was he still too weak compared to those existences begotten by chaos?

"Not even the Dao Ancestor can persist for much longer. Are we going to lose?"

"Father, mother..."

Someone lost their composure and cried. That roar had shattered countless lives. Millions of families were instantly destroyed!

There were oceans of blood all over that vast world.

"Brother!"

In the crowd—Su Lingyue saw the gargantuan figure and Su Ping in the sky, her face immediately turning pale. The next moment, she moved in a frenzy as she left the crowd and flew with the Moonfrost Dragon, the one his brother had trained, swiftly heading towards him.

Shen Huang noticed Su Lingyue's movement and said in a hurry, "Come back. It's dangerous!"

Su Ping had indeed said that it was unnecessary to pay special attention to his family, Shen Huang was his master; he couldn't bear to see him making such sacrifices.

"Is Boss Su losing too..."

"We're screwed. A Sorcerer Ancestor is defending this place. It's impossible for us to win..."

"Bulls\*it! Stop being so pessimistic. Boss Su has been caught, so we'll try to rescue him. Is there another way out for us in today's battle? We'll die, either fighting or slaughtered by staying idle. I would rather die after shedding the last drop of my blood!"

"That's right. Follow me. Let's rescue Boss Su as soon as possible!"

"Boss Su needs us too. He's held the Sorcerer Ancestor back all this time. Now it's our turn!"

"Charge!!"

Many human figures soared to the sky, forming giants made by military formations, and quickly flying towards Su Ping instead of fighting the Heavenly Dao forces.

Many Undying State experts of the other clans had also realized that Su Ping was the key to victory. It would be impossible for them to stop Yuan Long if Su Ping did die in battle.

Despair?

There was nothing left for them to abandon!

"Wolf Eagles, follow me!!"

"The Sky Ocean Clan is willing to die with you!!"

"Charge! There's no way back! We can only move forward!"

"Save the Human Dao Ancestor! Hurry up!!"

The previously chaotic battlefield became even more turbulent. From the midst of billions of species, some military formations were formed and charged towards Su Ping, leaving the Heavenly Dao beings alone.

Some species covered each other neatly. Some were responsible for holding the humanoids back while the rest moved to offer Su Ping a hand.

Many figures emerged from the billions of species and moved in all directions on the vast territory.

Su Ping was flying in the high sky, still caught by Yuan Long's sharp claws. He saw the whole situation at ground level. He also noticed the figures going all out, bloodied.

He was stunned. His eyes were bloodshot despite his composure.

He didn't know those species well. Even their names and appearances were strange to him, even though they were comrades on the same battlefield. However, billions of species were moving to help him at that moment.

He also saw that some of the experts of the weaker clans were rushing over with the strongest people. The weaklings were left on the battlefield, who became a thin wall to block the Heavenly Dao. They were soon destroyed by the humanoids as they were left without the command of their Undying State experts.

Those clans abandoned their own people, all for him.

Su Ping gritted his teeth. He looked at the blossoming red petals on the ground. Each petal was an ocean of blood that stretched for millions of kilometers!

The remains of billions of species were soaked in an ocean of blood!

"Ha. Looks like those little ones are aware of your importance. They'll be loose sand if I kill you. In that case, let's just end this folly!"

Yuan Long sneered, then soared to the center of the battlefield and raised Su Ping to a high spot. It was even crueler as the torrents flooded towards him in all directions.

"Rot in hell!"

The ancient dragon exerted strength with indifference; thousands of universes exploded in his palm. Although mere illusions, those universes still released a terrifying power.

That power was released by the Chaos Qualification. It was fairly easy for Yuan Long.

But the next moment, Su Ping didn't burst to pieces while caught in the claw; he remained intact.

White bones were emanating dazzling light on Su Ping's body, like crystals. A brilliant, ancient array was etched on each bone, from which there was an emergence of strange patterns. Underneath those bones were golden ripples and slithering lightning bolts.

“Boss, we can do this!!” The Dark Dragon Hound’s roar echoed in Su Ping’s ears.

Red light glittered on the skull located on Su Ping’s back, like bloody blades. The Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and all the other pets were achieving perfect cooperation, releasing their skills with Su Ping’s strength, and establishing the ultimate defense!

Su Ping was overwhelmed by troubling feelings. He remained silent.

He had opened his body to the Little Skeleton and the others, and could also draw from his power. Such trust allowed him to perfectly fuse with his pets. All their power was gathered, blocking Yuan Long’s full-strength attack!

Su Ping instantly saw hope.

As it turned out, he was strong enough to compete with Yuan Long, as long as he made the best use of his strength!

“Huh?!”

Yuan Long widened his eyes, with shock and fury. He sensed that his power was constantly diminishing. The white bones on Su Ping’s body actually contained the bloodlines of the Primitive Chaos Clan and the Golden Crows. The power of both clans strengthened those bones, while the golden ripples worked as a buffer to reduce the impact. He actually survived the attack!

“You’re asking to be killed!”

Yuan Long was rather infuriated since he was having trouble killing an ant!

He roared and released scales that were like sharp daggers towards Su Ping.

The latter didn’t wait to get killed, suddenly releasing the bones protecting him, which instantly turned into swords that were like the spines on a hedgehog, pushing the dragon claws away. He stomped and broke out of the claw prison.

“Dao Ancestor!”

“Boss Su!”

“Our Dao Ancestor is free!”

The billions of species were thrilled to see this happen. Some of the reinforcements had already died on the way over. At first, there were ten thousand of them, but only a few dozens of people with Dao Heart and Undying State cultivation remained. They had

been desperate, but they were now overjoyed since they saw that Su Ping had broken free on his own.

“Dao Ancestor, we’ll fight by your side!”

“We will raise our swords and fight, even if we’re facing a Sorcerer Ancestor!” said the reinforcements with loud voices. They gathered behind Su Ping’s back, waiting for his orders. All of them were ready to die.

It was unlikely for them to survive the war, which made him become ruthless.

“Everyone…”

Su Ping didn’t turn, yet he was able to see their faces. Based on human standards, many of those beings looked bizarre; they were more like monsters and beasts. However, their auras were deeply interconnected at the moment; the resonance of their souls could be detected.

Underneath those bizarre bodies were scorching and dazzling souls.

“Since we’ve already paid such an enormous price, please die with me!” Su Ping’s voice was particularly dry and cold.

Chapter 1551: Slaying the Dragon (1)

“We were already determined to die before we came. Please give us your orders, Dao Ancestor!” said an Undying State expert with a loud voice.

“Just say the word, Dao Ancestor. We will definitely comply!”

“Our clan was destroyed and our home was taken… We’ve got nothing to lose. Dao Ancestor, please lead us to a new life!”

Many more of the Undying State experts voiced their stance, all of them beaming with killing intent. They disliked war; however, they were deeply involved because of circumstance. Given their high cultivation, they had already realized they would die, whether they retreated or evaded. So, it would be better to fight for a chance to survive!

“All right!”

Su Ping nodded. He took a deep breath. He didn’t gather the Undying State experts sooner because he was concerned for their clans if they were relocated, to inevitably become cannon fodder due to lack of leadership. However, enough sacrifices had been made.

Su Ping said slowly, “Everyone, please lend me your strength!”

Three thousand universes appeared behind him, each forming a warship. His thoughts were transmitted to the others. "Everybody, please board the warships and fight with me!"

The experts were puzzled, but there was no time to ask questions, so they quickly complied.

Once entering the vessels, the effect of Su Ping's Contract Dao Heart was spread throughout the warships, connecting to all their minds.

The experts instantly realized his purpose upon sensing the bonding will. The interaction of their souls was utterly smooth and perfect. The most genuine feelings were fused at the moment. All of them could feel Su Ping's enormous anger and grief!

"Disciple..."

Amongst the crowd—Shen Huang and the other human experts had broken free and boarded the warships.

Even if the Dao Heart State beings weren't the strongest, they were still pillars on the battlefield.

All the fighters felt shocked upon sensing Su Ping's vast and enormous willpower, as well as his intense emotions. They never knew that their leader would have such an emotional heart, even after spending such a long time with him.

There was no hesitation; they chose to accept the bond at the fastest speed possible. They opened themselves without reserve, allowing Su Ping to use their power.

That power was at a level they had never dreamed of. As long as Su Ping was willing, he could deprive them of all their power with a thought, yet none of them hesitated.

More and more Undying State experts from all species arrived, and the three thousand warships were once more filled with people. The Contract Dao Heart power was spread in all the warships, and Su Ping could feel that many more scorching spots of light were connected to his soul, each belonging to an expert who had accepted the contract.

The surging power flowed and gathered like rivers. The power was so immense it was like the scorching sun. Su Ping's body was shaking; the power filled his limbs and internal organs.

Although unable to bond with the Ancestral Land of Chaos, his aura was rising at an unimaginable speed because of the external surge of strength.

"Huh?"

Yuan Long instantly noticed Su Ping's change. Being one of the masters of the Great Dao, he was easily able to reason out what was happening; there was disdain in his eyes. "Ants will always be ants. You think you can resist me just by working together?"

He dove and charged at Su Ping again, ready to tear him apart in front of everyone.

There was more power gathered in Su Ping's body than ever before. He roared loudly and slashed with his sword.

An infinite amount of power was extracted from the three thousand warships. The sword aura seemed to be powerful enough to cut chaos itself apart. There was a boom; Su Ping's sword left a cut in Yuan Long's head and forced his enormous body to a stop!

Yuan Long roared furiously. Su Ping's sword was as small as a toothpick in his eyes. However, he now felt that he had struck an iron plate, which shocked and infuriated him. Su Ping's strength was actually threatening to him at the moment.

"You're just ants. What can you possibly do, even if there are many of you?!" Yuan Long roared. A flattened, black vortex suddenly appeared next to his chest; the time and space within seemed twisted. An unknown aura suddenly wrapped Su Ping and the three thousand warships, isolating them from the battlefield. It was Yuan Long's Dragon Prison!

Su Ping felt somewhat dazed. Back at the site, he had been trapped in the Dragon Prison by the system. Everything was an illusion controlled by the system, as if deliberately showing him all those things in the Remains of High Heavens.

He was now in the real Dragon Prison.

However, it felt no different from the one he had seen in the cultivation site.

If anything, it was even weaker.

"This thing cannot stop me!"

Su Ping coldly swung his sword. The dazzling sword aura immediately slashed open a million prison floors. None of the Great Daos which made them were able to resist.

His sword went high into the sky and deep down into the bottom of the Dragon Prison. The auras of the imprisoned mythical creatures were revealed as the deepest part of the prison was cut open. There were actually Undying State creatures from the other Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines.

"What's going on?"

"The Dragon Prison... has been broken?"

Some of the mythical creatures had been sleeping, while others were merely thinking. However, all were woken up by the loud noises. The brilliant sword aura was like the first ray of light cutting chaos open, illuminating their long and lonely lives.

## Chapter 1552: Slaying the Dragon (2)

“We were already determined to die before we came. Please give us your orders, Dao Ancestor!” said an Undying State expert with a loud voice.

“Just say the word, Dao Ancestor. We will definitely comply!”

“Our clan was destroyed and our home was taken... We’ve got nothing to lose. Dao Ancestor, please lead us to a new life!”

Many more of the Undying State experts voiced their stance, all of them beaming with killing intent. They disliked war; however, they were deeply involved because of circumstance. Given their high cultivation, they had already realized they would die, whether they retreated or evaded. So, it would be better to fight for a chance to survive!

“All right!”

Su Ping nodded. He took a deep breath. He didn’t gather the Undying State experts sooner because he was concerned for their clans if they were relocated, to inevitably become cannon fodder due to lack of leadership. However, enough sacrifices had been made.

Su Ping said slowly, “Everyone, please lend me your strength!”

Three thousand universes appeared behind him, each forming a warship. His thoughts were transmitted to the others. “Everybody, please board the warships and fight with me!”

The experts were puzzled, but there was no time to ask questions, so they quickly complied.

Once entering the vessels, the effect of Su Ping’s Contract Dao Heart was spread throughout the warships, connecting to all their minds.

The experts instantly realized his purpose upon sensing the bonding will. The interaction of their souls was utterly smooth and perfect. The most genuine feelings were fused at the moment. All of them could feel Su Ping’s enormous anger and grief!

“Disciple...”

Amongst the crowd—Shen Huang and the other human experts had broken free and boarded the warships.



Even if the Dao Heart State beings weren't the strongest, they were still pillars on the battlefield.

All the fighters felt shocked upon sensing Su Ping's vast and enormous willpower, as well as his intense emotions. They never knew that their leader would have such an emotional heart, even after spending such a long time with him.

There was no hesitation; they chose to accept the bond at the fastest speed possible. They opened themselves without reserve, allowing Su Ping to use their power.

That power was at a level they had never dreamed of. As long as Su Ping was willing, he could deprive them of all their power with a thought, yet none of them hesitated.

More and more Undying State experts from all species arrived, and the three thousand warships were once more filled with people. The Contract Dao Heart power was spread in all the warships, and Su Ping could feel that many more scorching spots of light were connected to his soul, each belonging to an expert who had accepted the contract.

The surging power flowed and gathered like rivers. The power was so immense it was like the scorching sun. Su Ping's body was shaking; the power filled his limbs and internal organs.

Although unable to bond with the Ancestral Land of Chaos, his aura was rising at an unimaginable speed because of the external surge of strength.

"Huh?"

Yuan Long instantly noticed Su Ping's change. Being one of the masters of the Great Dao, he was easily able to reason out what was happening; there was disdain in his eyes. "Ants will always be ants. You think you can resist me just by working together?"

He dove and charged at Su Ping again, ready to tear him apart in front of everyone.

There was more power gathered in Su Ping's body than ever before. He roared loudly and slashed with his sword.

An infinite amount of power was extracted from the three thousand warships. The sword aura seemed to be powerful enough to cut chaos itself apart. There was a boom; Su Ping's sword left a cut in Yuan Long's head and forced his enormous body to a stop!

Yuan Long roared furiously. Su Ping's sword was as small as a toothpick in his eyes. However, he now felt that he had struck an iron plate, which shocked and infuriated him. Su Ping's strength was actually threatening to him at the moment.

"You're just ants. What can you possibly do, even if there are many of you?!" Yuan Long roared. A flattened, black vortex suddenly appeared next to his chest; the time and

space within seemed twisted. An unknown aura suddenly wrapped Su Ping and the three thousand warships, isolating them from the battlefield. It was Yuan Long's Dragon Prison!

Su Ping felt somewhat dazed. Back at the site, he had been trapped in the Dragon Prison by the system. Everything was an illusion controlled by the system, as if deliberately showing him all those things in the Remains of High Heavens.

He was now in the real Dragon Prison.

However, it felt no different from the one he had seen in the cultivation site.

If anything, it was even weaker.

"This thing cannot stop me!"

Su Ping coldly swung his sword. The dazzling sword aura immediately slashed open a million prison floors. None of the Great Daos which made them were able to resist.

His sword went high into the sky and deep down into the bottom of the Dragon Prison. The auras of the imprisoned mythical creatures were revealed as the deepest part of the prison was cut open. There were actually Undying State creatures from the other Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines.

"What's going on?"

"The Dragon Prison... has been broken?"

Some of the mythical creatures had been sleeping, while others were merely thinking. However, all were woken up by the loud noises. The brilliant sword aura was like the first ray of light cutting chaos open, illuminating their long and lonely lives.

Chapter 1553: Everything Can Be Tamed (1)

Su Ping's eyes were like sharp blades. He didn't make a move to retreat, as he never intended to. He had to fight!

Bang!

Su Ping suddenly took action. The violent power in his body burst out like a nuclear explosion. The joint force of the universes of experts from billions of species was condensed into one point. It was so dazzling it was impossible to look straight at it.

The two dazzling lights clashed. It was like chaos reopening once more. All sounds were gone.

The destructive power was imposed on Su Ping, cutting him to pieces. All his flesh was collapsing and leaving his bones. His body had drawn the power of all those experts; he had to endure the blast.

He felt that death was near, as he was losing control of his body. However, exactly at that moment, his body began to move on its own. It was the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets controlling his body.

“Boss, hang in there!” the Dark Dragon Hound said anxiously.

The Inferno Dragon’s voice spread out. “The boss blocked the attack on his own to protect us. Is that the Chaos Qualification? It’s truly powerful. Should we snatch it?”

“Did you notice that the old dragon was weak for a moment? The best chance to kill it is when it uses the Chaos Qualification!” said the Lightning Rat with an intense killing intent.

“We must lure it to attack again, then we will snatch it from the place beyond time!” said the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon.

“I will control Master!” said the Little Skeleton with a young and firm voice.

Their communication was brief. Had Yuan Long overheard the conversation, he would probably be furious enough to vomit blood. Not only was Su Ping unafraid, even his normal Undying State kids actually wanted to kill him too. Was a Sorcerer Ancestor no longer intimidating?

Boom!

Su Ping’s body acted again and sent out powerful thoughts, borrowing power from all the experts and the mythical creatures that bonded with Su Ping. This time, even more power was borrowed, and the Little Skeleton was controlling the body; it didn’t know the billions of species nor the Heavenly Dao. It only cared about Su Ping. So, it moved while ignoring the lives and deaths of others.

Due to the violent absorption, both the experts and the mythical creatures felt they were about to be sucked dry!

However, they also saw the outcome of Su Ping’s clash with the Sorcerer Ancestor. He didn’t win, yet he didn’t die, either!

It was already unbelievable to see he could survive after one of that overlord’s attacks.

All of them became excited, noticing how Su Ping was seriously borrowing their power. There was hope if their power could really enable him to fight the Sorcerer Ancestor!

“A\*\*\*ole!!”

Yuan Long was seething because Su Ping was still alive. Using the Chaos Qualification to kill an ant was already humiliating, and yet it wasn't enough!

He completely lost his cool as he roared and charged at the human. The Chaos Qualification was emitting infinite light on his forehead, seemingly about to collapse the entire world.

“Billions of souls will condense on the edge of my sword. Slash!!”

The Little Skeleton was controlling Su Ping's body. The bones covering his master's head were turning red, and his eyes were bloodshot, too. He was emanating the intense aura of death. All the dead souls on the battlefield gathered around him to form a dark sword, containing the power of both the living and the dead. The attack would eclipse the sun.

Boom!!

The brilliant sword aura slashed out, seemingly ready to cut the whole world apart. Not even the Ancestral Land of Chaos could block the shining of that sword.

There was a deafening explosion. The terrifying blast razed the land within a range of a billion kilometers. Fortunately, all the experts in the area had been absorbed into Su Ping's three thousand warships, except for the Heavenly Dao forces and were unaffected. Otherwise, even Undying State beings would have been obliterated by such bombardment!

A furious roar resounded. The experts on the warships witnessed the most unbelievable scene. The legendary ancestor they could only look up to was wounded!

There was a long black gash on Yuan Long's head. Dark flames were still burning over it, making it look hideous and scary.

The agony nearly made the ancient dragon go on a rampage. The twelve Sorcerer Ancestors were good at different things. For instance, Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que was the fastest, the Golden Crow ancestor was able to burn everything, while Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu had the hardest universe. As for Yuan Long, he was the most ferocious. His combat ability would double when infuriated. Even the other Sorcerer Ancestors would have to hide.

Su Ping had made him completely furious.

Being the strongest dragon of all and the ancestor of all beasts, not only did it have the power and methods of all beasts; it also had a ferocity and wild nature no other beast had!

Roar!

Yuan Long's scales were so red they were almost black. The wound and the flames on his body were instantly suppressed. He moved and roared, diving to attack once again.

This time, he was twice as fast!

"Oh no!"

"Damn it, this bastard is angry!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound.

Crimson light was glittering in the Little Skeleton's eyes. None of the pets were as young and ignorant as they used to be. They had fought many battles with Su Ping, and were brave warriors!

They were all the best in terms of combat ability, skills, experience and reaction abilities!

Also, they were much more mature than before, having shed most of their naive selves.

That was exactly why the Little Skeleton knew that no matter how relentless and angry it was, it wasn't able to block the old dragon's strike. The gap between them was too wide!

Chapter 1554: Everything Can Be Tamed (2)

The little one wasn't just fighting instinctively like before. There was more rationality.

Its rational mind was telling to run away, right then!

There was no turning back.

Because there was only a mob of billions supporting them.

However, the Little Skeleton didn't care about that. It only had to ensure Su Ping's safety!

Just as when the small fellow was about to control Su Ping's body to retreat, a thought was suddenly relayed. Su Ping's gentle voice echoed in the Little Skeleton's head. "You did a good job. Now, let's do this together!"

The little one was dazed. Even though it was at the moment transformed into protective bones to cover Su Ping, it had the feeling of being embraced by its master.

While fused in a body filled with power, Su Ping's will was surrounding and protecting it.

"Everyone, are you willing to sacrifice yourselves for me!"

Su Ping's voice resounded, echoing throughout the three thousand warships.

Inside the vessels, the experts from billions of species and the mythical creatures bonded with him saw Yuan Long's terrifying appearance once it was angered. The pressure was so overwhelming that they were suffocating, despite the protection offered by the ships.

Su Ping's body was standing before them, as tiny as a bug compared to Yuan Long!

Even so, he was determined to shake the giant!

All of a sudden, a thought was transmitted with infinite indignity and fury."Yes!"

"We're willing to serve you!"

"We're willing to die for you!!"

Without words, they understood Su Ping's thoughts and determination through their bond.

Aside from his astonishing combat ability, they had also sensed his sadness. They knew; not only would Su Ping die if they backed off, they would all be killed by the furious Yuan Long.

"We will give you the last bit of our power in our scalding blood!"

"I'm the only one left of my clan, but I will die without regret!!"

"I will make another contribution to the Dao Ancestor with this weak body of mine!!"

"Dao Ancestor, you must win! Ughhhhhhhh!!"

Inside the three thousand warships—the experts of billions of species burned their lives. Their immortality was instantly burnt to the maximum, releasing a power that surpassed the explosion of universes!

When seen from a distance, the massive ships were enshrouded in abundant flames of vitality!

The mythical creatures riding on the warships that hadn't established a contract were dumbfounded by the behavior of billions of inferior creatures. They actually had the ambition to fight a Sorcerer Ancestor with everything they had!

Many Dao Heart experts burned all their power and vitality, turning into a blazing stream of light. Their bodies were utterly deformed, leaving only spheres with power. Their

sentience was quickly extinguished as Su Ping borrowed their power. Only their last wishes lingered!

“You have to win!!” roars were echoing throughout the world.

Su Ping’s eyes were wet, but he didn’t look back. He clenched his fists and absorbed all of their power. His body was almost about to explode. He looked at Yuan Long who was charging furiously, and then dashed forward like a madman.

Roar!!

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and all his other pets charged alongside him.

Black lightning tore the world apart. Su Ping’s body reached the ancient dragon in an instant. The moment when their furious and resentful eyes clashed seemed eternal.

Then, both parties unleashed their fiercest and most brutal attacks.

“Ahhhhhhhh!!”

Su Ping swung his sword with reckless abandon. His sword auras contained the power of all the Great Daos.

Yuan Long roared furiously, also attacking in a frenzied state. They clashed, both receiving numerous wounds.

Dense sword marks appeared on Yuan Long’s body, and Su Ping was already covered in blood!

“Go to hell!!”

Su Ping jumped to Yuan Long’s head and sat on top. He brutally stabbed it with his sword. Then, a few arms that looked like sharp claws emerged from both sides of his body; they slashed crazily, ripping scales.

“Hooooooooooooo!”

Yuan Long roared with anger, struggling, yet unable to get rid of Su Ping for the moment.

Su Ping kept on slashing, and the dragon was finally unable to hold back. The Chaos Qualification on its forehead flew towards Su Ping like an illusion.

However, there was a crazy glint on Su Ping's scary face at the moment. He simply ignored the Chaos Qualification attacking him and condensed a gigantic sword to slash at Yuan Long's head!

"Have you lost your mind?"

Yuan Long was truly shocked at the moment, sweating, even. That was a feeling he had only experienced when he fought against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. He couldn't even feel anger anymore.

Su Ping was actually unafraid of death, and simply wanted to go down with him!

However, there was no time for him to summon the Chaos Qualification.

The sword passed by, severing the enormous dragon head; his chaos blood was sprayed in a million kilometers.

The scene seemed eternal!

The experts in the three thousand warships along with the mythical creatures were too shocked to speak.

Su Ping... actually did it!

He beheaded the enemy!

Even though the strike wasn't enough to kill Yuan Long, it was already an unbelievable miracle!

Since the dawn of time, the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors had been above all other creatures. The gap in between was simply insurmountable. However, just then, Su Ping had managed to cut Yuan Long's head with everyone's help!

Chapter 1555: Everything Can Be Tamed (3)

"Dao Ancestor!!"

"There's a chance! There really is a chance!!"

Inside the three thousand warships—the experts of all species had hot tears running down their faces. Even though they had cultivated for hundreds of thousands of years and were exceptionally calm all the time, they couldn't contain themselves at that moment.

"Go to hell!!!"



Su Ping didn't stop; he turned around and grabbed the dragon head. He could feel Yuan Long's powerful soul inside, as well as the Chaos Qualification aura.

An idea suddenly occurred to him. Is it possible to bond with the Chaos Qualification?!

Everything could be trained. Everything was alive. In that case, everything could be bound by a contract!

A dazzling light emanated from Su Ping's eyes as he considered the idea, thinking it was worth a shot to try. There was an extreme risk, because the Chaos Qualification belonged to Yuan Long. Making the attempt was tantamount with clashing head-on with Yuan Long at the soul level!

There was just a moment of hesitation; Su Ping made up his mind and his consciousness simply invaded the dragon head.

He was soon able to sense the chaotic bestowal inside.

His bonding power was spread out within, quickly detecting a ripple of resistance in the depths of that terrifying power.

Su Ping knew it was the consciousness of the Chaos Qualification itself.

However, that consciousness was unlike that of any ordinary life; it was more of a specific signal frequency.

Su Ping had traveled to many worlds and seen all kinds of faces, though, and was ready to accept everything.

He sent out his thoughts and touched the Chaos Qualification with the power of contract.

"What are you doing? Get the hell out of here!!" Yuan Long's thoughts roared in his mind.

Su Ping felt that his mind was trembling and his body was falling apart.

He gritted his teeth and said, "I want you to die!"

"You think you deserve to lay claim to the Chaos Qualification?!" roared Yuan Long. Su Ping sensed that countless dragons were invading his mind, and biting him in a frenzy.

However, roars echoed just then.

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and all the other pets jumped into his mind and charged at those dragons ferociously.

“You think you deserve to be the ancestor of all dragons? You should just be the lamb you are and let my boss ride you. That would be the best outcome for you!” shouted the Dark Dragon Hound.

“Wanna hurt my master? Over my dead body!” bellowed the Inferno Dragon.

Without a word, the Little Skeleton summoned ghosts of thousands of warriors to fight the dragons.

Yuan Long was angered to such a degree that he almost broke his neck. This was happening inside his mind, and could directly understand what the pets were saying, which made him even angrier.

“Die! Die!”

Yuan Long attacked crazily. The illusory dragons roared and shattered the silhouettes of the Dark Dragon Hound and the others. However, they were reconstituted swiftly; they could be reborn in Su Ping’s mind as long as they weren’t completely destroyed.

Su Ping resisted the attacks with a gloomy attitude. Alas, he discovered that Yuan Long’s mind was horrifyingly strong, even without the Chaos Qualification. The ghostly soul power was like a heavy planet, while he only had a shovel; it would take forever for him to dig through the planet.

“Guys, I need you to help me block it!” Su Ping relayed with a thought. He couldn’t act on his own at the moment, and could only rely on the power of others.

Upon perceiving the request, the experts of the billions of species acted without hesitation. They simply entered Su Ping’s mind through their bond and fought the illusory dragons.

“Dao Ancestor, leave this task to us!”

“Dao Ancestor, just give us a command!”

Billions of experts flooded the mindspace. Gathered by the power of contract, they almost shared each other’s minds, knowing what everybody was thinking without saying a word.

Su Ping didn’t speak. He could feel their determination, which contained too many things.

He seized the chance to extend the power of contract to the Chaos Qualification, and was soon able to tap into it.

Upon contact, he also sensed the actual will of the Chaos Qualification. Ferocity, wildness, madness, bloodthirst... All kinds of negative emotions consumed him.

That Chaos Qualification was like a maddened dragon; even more short-tempered than Yuan Long.

Su Ping felt that his contract power was like a thin web trying to catch an enormous crocodile struggling hard.

“Be still! Now!!”

Su Ping gritted his teeth. His mind also went a little crazy, as the Chaos Qualification also aimed to seep into him. If this continued, he would become a slave and lose himself.

His eyes were bloodshot as he released the power of contract with full strength. He tried to communicate with the Chaos Qualification and borrow its power, but all that he got was anger and agitation.

The gap in willpower is too great. I can't subdue it... Su Ping felt sad, and the mood turned into fury, influenced by the Chaos Qualification. He knew he would have to kill Yuan Long first if the power couldn't be subdued. However, the latter still had the power of the Chaos Qualification and couldn't be killed; he could barely be defeated.

As such, the quick attack strategy would fail.

I cannot fail... Su Ping was so exasperated he was on the verge of losing control.

At that moment, Su Ping suddenly heard the Little Skeleton's voice.

“Master!

“Master, calm down. You can do this!” said the Little Skeleton.

“That's right. Boss, you can do this. You once defeated a Celestial beast when you were only an Ascendant!”

“Master, I believe in you! You can do this!” said the Inferno Dragon.

“Master...”

“Master...”

The voices of the Purple Python and the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon were heard, and with them came their faith.

It was like having your head doused with cold water. Su Ping was instantly woken up, although he felt dazed for a moment. He didn't know how they managed to break Yuan Long's shackles, but they reminded him of many, many things.

Compared to other Undying State beings, he had only cultivated for 10,000 years.

However, he had experienced many things during that time span. He met a lot of people and tamed lots of pets.

Some of the pets he tamed were ill-tempered; others were timid, vigilant, and some of them were cunning.

Aside from being a warrior, he was also the best pet trainer there was!

Su Ping took a deep breath and calmed down, dispelling the killing intent and agitation in his heart. He transmitted his will and the contract power with a relaxed attitude.

The system never told me how the Chaos Qualification came to be, I suppose it used to be part of the system... Su Ping's eyes glittered. His aura and appearance quickly changed.

Very soon, while harnessing the will of the contract bond, he transformed to resemble the Mother of Chaos.

He had spent a long time interacting with the system. Besides, Su Ping was still the system's host and could precisely simulate the system's aura.

"You..."

Yuan Long trembled. Deep inside his skull—he could feel an aura he couldn't be more familiar with.

However, he soon realized that the aura wasn't real and the Mother of Chaos wasn't truly there.

He would have no choice but to escape if that were true.

Chapter 1556: The Strongest Dragon Ever (1)

Upon realizing Su Ping's plan to rob the Chaos Qualification, Yuan Long became so angry he roared, "Don't even think about it..."

The fellow was actually trying to rob the Chaos Qualification while he was alive. It was crazy!

However, there was a strong feeling of crisis.

The dragon let out a long sounding roar, the violent power turning into countless illusory dragons and tried to tear Su Ping's mind to pieces.

However, the consciousnesses of the experts were fighting the illusory dragons in Su Ping's mind. More and more experts joined the fight. Even though it was impossible to eliminate the invading dragons, they managed to resist them!

At the same time, while in front of the Chaos Qualification—

Su Ping, who had transformed into the system, released his aura and willpower through the contract.

"I too believe that you crave to return to your mother's arms.

"If not for the familial bond, to gather is still in the nature of every living creature!

"Come home!"

Su Ping reached out and touched the Chaos Qualification; the violent and bloodthirsty willpower didn't affect him. His motion was determined as he laid a hand on that ancestor power.

Instantly, the killing intent surged tenfold and was about to consume him.

This time, he didn't resist. He accepted this ominous power.

A violent aura rose from his body, as his eyes gradually turned bloodshot and brutal. Very soon, the Chaos Qualification seeped into Su Ping's hand, gradually fusing with his body.

"No!" Yuan Long roared furiously.

The dragon's willpower turned into a wild chaos dragon as he tried to fight for the Chaos Qualification. However, an amazing scene happened. A mighty torrent was manifested, shattering his willpower.

"This is impossible!!" Yuan Long was shocked.

He was actually rejected by the Chaos Qualification, one that had been with him for ages?

It was also the first time he had sensed the violent and brutal power from the Chaos Qualification against him!

The Chaos Qualification seemed to be alive!

The dragon had never regarded the Chaos Qualification as an equal, only thinking of it as a treasure, or some sort of bestowal. That was exactly why he was dumbfounded once he sensed the Chaos Qualification's thought.

All the illusory dragons invading Su Ping's mind started to fall apart as the fusion progressed!

At the same time—the experts from the billions of species also felt the enormous pressure and an indescribable fear, as if heralding the arrival of something horrid.

The next moment, they were all evicted from Su Ping's mind by an unknown force.

“A\*\*\*ole!!” Yuan Long roared furiously.

He stared at Su Ping who was emitting an overwhelming killing intent at the moment. The latter's terrifying aura made him shiver and even angrier than before.

Even the Heavenly Dao had failed to rob him of his Chaos Qualification. And yet, Su Ping somehow did it!

Soon after, he noticed that the human's aura became strange and unpredictable.

Before him, there were countless Great Daos, circling and displaying the world in its original appearance. Su Ping was neither in the shape of a human, nor of a mythical being; rather, he was an object with an indescribable look.

That was Su Ping's real appearance at the moment, without an outer image.

However, in the deepest part of said appearance was a glittering Chaos Qualification!

Yuan Long immediately understood.

Su Ping hadn't really robbed the Chaos Qualification; the latter had voluntarily fused with Su Ping, as it considered him as the perfect container.

That was the reason why the Chaos Qualification had voluntarily chosen him!

Therefore, it was no longer Su Ping the one standing there, but the Chaos Qualification!

That was the Chaos Qualification's real purpose!

It would gain real independence through Su Ping, and become the strongest existence, completely unrestrained!

“Damn you, bastard, you should die!”

Yuan Long was furious. Su Ping was already dead, possessed by the nascent entity. It was fine that Su Ping died, but he had freed the Chaos Qualification.

Boom!

Exactly at that moment, Su Ping suddenly dashed over with a terrifying sword condensed in his hand. He then attacked with a slash.

The edge of the sword was so brilliant that it looked like the gathering of a billion lightning bolts, arriving in an instant.

Yuan Long had already been cut apart the moment he saw the edge!

Boom. His enormous body turned into billions of pieces!

It was a simple glitter of the sword, and his body collapsed into pieces the size of dust particles.

His mind and soul was torn apart along with his body.

“No, you cannot do this!” Yuan Long roared in shock and fury. However, he now sensed that he could no longer enter a berserk state again, to double his combat power and improve his resistance to damage. He then realized he had been defeated; fury was replaced with fear!

That was the second time he had known what fear was!

The first time was when he faced the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

This time, he was even more frightened than before.

He then received the second sword slash.

The edge of the sword passed through, shattering the Great Dao and striking the origin of matter. Yuan Long's body was torn to pieces again.

This time, it was total obliteration!

All the dust particles disappeared as the sword passed. It was absolute nothingness. Not even dirt remained.

Yuan Long, who had existed for countless years, was permanently wiped out from the world.

“I think something disappeared just now.”

“Yes, it’s something utterly terrifying.”

“Was it the enemy?”

On the battlefield—the experts from the billions of species and the mythical creatures were shocked and suspicious. They looked at the void but couldn’t see a thing. They couldn’t even recall what used to be there, either.

Yuan Long’s appearance had been erased from their memories. Not even the Undying State experts could retain the memory.

In the void—

Su Ping, with sword in hand, slowly turned around. The next moment, he raised it and swung again.

The Heavenly Dao humanoids on the battlefield suddenly raised their heads and looked at Su Ping.

Then, an indescribable power swept across the battlefield.

In the blink of an eye, countless members of the Heavenly Dao exploded.

The sword aura stretched for billions of kilometers into the Ancestral Land of Chaos. All the Heavenly Dao fighters on its way were destroyed!

The experts of all species were shocked by this. Is this the power of the Human Dao Ancestor?!

The sword was gone, but the bloodthirst didn’t leave Su Ping’s eyes. He whispered, “I can give you the freedom you want, but you must help me win this war first!”

Su Ping’s expression changed to that of a gloomy and angry mood, and said, “Bastard, you’d better keep your promise!”

“I’m always a man of my word!” replied Su Ping, his expression changing once again, now calm and cold.

“All right!” he said with a sullen tone, “If you dare to trick me, you will end up exactly like he did!”

There was no other reply, and the red light in his eyes was gone. He took a deep breath and gathered a ball of light in his palm.

With a thought, he summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets.



“Boss!”

“Master!”

All the pets were relieved and delighted to see that Su Ping was fine. “That old dragon is finally dead!”

Yuan Long had been wiped out from the memories of the experts of the allied species. However, they shared Su Ping’s memories through their contract, so they didn’t forget his grand feat in the terrifying battle just then.

Su Ping gave them a slight nod. He then summoned the Inferno Dragon.

“This is the Chaos Qualification. You can keep it for now,” said Su Ping, staring at the latter, “I promised that I would make you the strongest dragon in the world. It was an arrogant declaration back then, but I’ve fulfilled it.”

All the pets shivered at the sight of the brilliant Chaos Qualification, then looked at Su Ping in disbelief.

Shocked, the Inferno Dragon asked, “M-Master, are you giving it to me?”

It was no longer the naive pet of the past. Having fought by Su Ping’s side for ten thousand years, it was fully aware of that power’s significance.

The dragon would transcend chaos with such an item. Even if the Heavenly Dao won and restarted all chaos, it would still live an eternal life.

“There’s no need to be so uptight. What’s mine is yours, and what’s yours is mine,” said Su Ping with a smile.

The dragon pet sensed Su Ping’s determination and shivered. It had perceived Su Ping’s feelings before, yet it was still touched by its master’s behavior. That was a Chaos Qualification!

Su Ping clapped his hands and simply pushed the Chaos Qualification into the dragon’s body. From that day forth, the Inferno Dragon would replace Yuan Long as the new Sorcerer Ancestor.

As for the Chaos Qualification’s request after the war, it was a matter that could be talked over in the future.

After all, it was still unknown whether they could win the war or not.

Su Ping looked into the distance with worry in his eyes as he thought about this. The battle had taken too long; he didn't know the situation where the system and the other Sorcerer Ancestors were.

"We must get this over with and meet with them!" said Su Ping.

The Little Skeleton, the Dark Dragon Hound and the other pets nodded. Then, they gave the Inferno Dragon envious looks. It wasn't jealousy, just pure envy.

The Inferno Dragon was already unable to say a word. It was being suffused by the power of the Chaos Qualification and its body was undergoing unprecedented changes.

Very soon, a vast and abundant aura emanated from its body.

Its body was as boundless as a galaxy. The dragon looked down at the world with eyes that looked like stars; the terrifying pressure radiated made all creatures bend.

"Master, I..." The Inferno Dragon was still having trouble believing that all that was real.

It had just sensed that Su Ping's contract could be reversed using its newfound powers!

The pet was unaware if Su Ping knew this. This meant that Su Ping had completely entrusted his life into its hands. If it wanted to, it could easily control Su Ping's life!

"No need to talk. Just keep fighting with me!" Su Ping chuckled and jumped onto its head.

"That's right. If Boss is giving it to you, just accept it. It's just a mere Chaos Qualification. We'll get more!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound excitedly. It also jumped to the Inferno Dragon's head; the former's gargantuan body was only the size of one of the Inferno Dragon's scales.

The Inferno Dragon no longer spoke, already knowing its master's thoughts through their bond. There was no need to talk.

Coiling on the Inferno Dragon's head, the Purple Python asked curiously, "Master, how did you get the Chaos Qualification? It shouldn't be so easy, right?"

It was more difficult to rob a living Sorcerer Ancestor of its Chaos Qualification than to kill them!

Su Ping smiled but didn't offer an answer.

The Chaos Qualification was quite cunning. It had intended to use his body as a container and turn him into a puppet.

However, the item didn't know that his body didn't completely belong to himself.

That's right. The bond between him and the system had never changed.

He was still the system's host at the moment.

In a sense, the system was also his master.

There was also a contract between him and the system!

If the Chaos Qualification wanted to occupy his body, it was essentially the same as destroying the contract and stealing him from the system.

Su Ping didn't think that the system would lose to the Chaos Qualification; that was why he dared to take a chance. As a result, the Chaos Qualification failed, and could only choose to stay in his body or somewhere else.

It was obviously a smart entity, realizing that it would surely be imprisoned by the Heavenly Dao if the Ancestral Land of Chaos was taken over.

Perhaps it was better to just stay with evidently weaker Su Ping as things stood.

Yuan Long had been killed. The Heavenly Dao garrison was destroyed, and Su Ping was going to meet with his allies.

Before setting off, he looked at the billions of species and noticed a lot of vacant spots on the three thousand warships. There had been myriads of beings who had taken those spots and fought by his side.

Those beings had burned their lives and were completely gone after fighting in the previous battle.

He then looked at the billions of kilometers up ahead, only seeing red, green, golden, purple and other colors blossoming everywhere in the vast Ancestral Land of Chaos.

Those were the colors of blood from the billions of species.

Even though their bloodlines were different and their blood color wasn't the same, they had been buried in the same battlefield.

The experts who left their clan members and moved as reinforcements resulted in heavy losses among their clansmen. There was an infinite number of corpses that was no less scary than the darkest Chaotic Realm of the Undead.

Su Ping took a deep breath. He activated the warships and said to the remaining experts, "Everyone, get ready to meet with our allies!"

“Yes, sir!”

The experts on the warships were excited, especially when they saw the Inferno Dragon below. They didn't know why Su Ping's pet had suddenly become so terrifying, but it was a good thing for them anyway.

Inside the warships—many experts simply sat down and took a good rest to heal their wounds. They didn't have any fellow clansmen left and they had nothing to prepare. They only needed to adjust themselves for the next battle!

Su Ping dropped a hint at the Inferno Dragon.

The Inferno Dragon instantly understood. While working with Su Ping's three thousand warships, it instantly attracted all the remnants of the billions of species to Su Ping's universes.

Those people's wounds were quickly healed the moment they boarded the warships.

The heavily wounded and close to dying had even recuperated to their prime status; only their armor remained bloodstained.

Su Ping paid special attention to the human tribe and saw that his parents and Su Lingyue were still alive, which gave him great relief. He knew that they were ready to sacrifice themselves and he was prepared to endure their deaths, he still felt happy to see them alive and well.

However, he noticed that many familiar faces were gone from the human crowd.

For example, Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other pillars of humanity.

The same went for Qin Duhuang and other members of the Qin family that he knew from the Blue Planet.

Su Ping's eyes glittered in silence. Once everyone was relocated to his three thousand universes, he turned around and asked the Inferno Dragon to fly onward.

The latter leaped across the battlefield at lightning speed. Only the sound of the three thousand warships trailing behind could be heard.

The images at ground level became vague, mottled pieces as they moved forward. Even though the dragon pet wasn't as fast as Yin Que, it had become a Sorcerer Ancestor and could fly at ten times the speed of sound, even in the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

That was a power that could barely be understood with the original concepts of physics. Su Ping sensed that the aura of chaos was increasingly abundant as he pressed deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

What puzzled him was that he saw no signs of the Heavenly Dao on the rest of the journey.

Considering normal defense tactics, a garrison was usually set at certain distances to make sure no one could go in.

Was the Heavenly Dao so confident that nobody could pass the first line of defense? Or were there other reasons?

Very soon, Su Ping was able to sense a few powerful auras gathered further ahead. He narrowed his eyes and focused, instantly making those auras clearer. It was the system, Yin Que and other Sorcerer Ancestors.

“That’s... Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification?”

Next to a magnificent river, the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos were waiting for Su Ping. All of them had arrived, except for him.

They would have thought that Su Ping had already been killed in battle, were it not for the Mother of Chaos saying that he was still alive.

After all, he wasn’t a Sorcerer Ancestor; he was just an ant. Even though he was leading billions of species, it was impossible for him to quickly annihilate the Heavenly Dao garrison.

“Mother, is it the Chaos Qualification that you sensed just now? Yuan Long indeed surrendered. He did exactly what Ling Tai did in the past!” The Golden Crow ancestor’s eyes were cold. There was a brilliant star on its forehead, which was the Golden Crow home it was protecting.

All of the Golden Crows were nestled inside that dazzling brilliance. They were providing power and receiving protection at the same time.

“He obtained Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification. In other words, he defeated... and killed Yuan Long?” Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo found it hard to believe. Is it really something that Su Ping could do?

“That’s right. Yuan Long is dead. Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long is no more,” said the Mother of Chaos softly. There was regret in her eyes, but it was soon replaced by calmness.

“Was Yuan Long weakened after being suppressed by the Heavenly Dao? How could he kill Yuan Long?” asked Yin Que suspiciously. The latter was also doubting that Su Ping could be capable of slaying their brother. Wouldn’t that ant have the power to threaten all Sorcerer Ancestors if that was the case?

None of the previous candidates raised by the Mother of Chaos had been capable of such a feat.

“Yuan Long was indeed weakened, and also overestimated himself. However, his death was still beyond my expectations,” said the Mother of Chaos with a smile.

She had basically been aware of the entire battle through the contract she had with Su Ping. She was also present, watching from the side while Su Ping tricked the Chaos Qualification, although she couldn’t do anything to help.

“Beyond your expectations?” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang was dazed for a moment.

The Mother of Chaos’s candidates had always been under her control. How could they act beyond her expectations?

It had to be noted that all things and every universe functioned under the Mother of Chaos’ control. Su Ping—having been subject to her training—should be absolutely under her control. This made his thoughts and whatever happened to him easy to infer... And yet, she claimed that Su Ping was performing beyond her expectations.

The Inferno Dragon had already approached them while they spoke.

“Everyone, sorry I’m late.”

While still on top of the dragon’s head, Su Ping said to the group, “I hope nothing was delayed because of me.”

“Something would have been delayed had you taken longer to get here.” Yin Que stared at Su Ping and then at the Inferno Dragon with anger in his eyes. “He’s absorbed Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification, so he’s the new Sorcerer Ancestor. Why are you standing on a Sorcerer Ancestor’s head?”

Su Ping frowned a bit and replied, “I am indeed standing on top of its head, but we are equal. It could do the same to me, if we weren’t in such a hurry.”

“That’s right. I’m willing to serve my master for as long as I live!” said the Inferno Dragon with a stern tone as it glared at Yin Que. Both had equally strong at the moment; so naturally, there was nothing to fear.

“This is... hilarious!”

Ti Tuo and Yin Que were both furious. That guy acted like a Sorcerer Ancestor without having the pressure that went with it. It was embarrassing for them.

The Mother of Chaos said, "All right, we're not here to talk about this. In any case, Su Ping has brought another Sorcerer Ancestor to us, which has increased our odds of winning by ten percent! You should know why we lost in the past. We will only lose again if we keep bickering!"

Shi Mang nodded. "That's right. Had all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors joined hands sooner, the Heavenly Dao wouldn't have grown as strong, forcing us to move so far away."

"Our target is the Heavenly Dao, in case you've forgotten," said the Golden Crow ancestor coldly.

Ti Tuo was still unhappy, but the matter was dropped.

Yin Que snorted and said, "Let's take action now that he's already here. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao must already know we're here."

"If we summon them back, our odds of success will increase by another five percent. The Void Wall has to be filled up by them!" said Shi Mang.

"Let's begin," said the Mother of Chaos succinctly. She simply raised a hand, which emitted a hazy light of chaos that contained the Original Dao. The magnificent river next to her became real and more brilliant.

Countless stars seemed to be surfacing and glittering in the river.

The Mother of Chaos said to Su Ping, "This is the River of Fate that decides everyone's destiny. It is also known as the Yellow Spring. When people die, they return to this place and wait for a new journey!"

Su Ping realized what was going to happen. He held his breath nervously.

Soon after, the river surged before his eyes, and the infinite brilliance swam and gathered.

The long river flowed backwards. Time was spinning. The Great Dao power that could change the world began to congregate.

In response to the pulling force from the Mother of Chaos, the dazzling light suddenly jumped out of the river and quickly gathered as fuzzy figures.

Fate was reversed. The people who were struggling in the river were fished out.

Many familiar faces appeared before Su Ping's eyes.

“Boss!”

The calling made Su Ping’s body tremble.

The person had long golden hair and the most alluring body figure. She was also holding the ancient spear of the Titans. It was none other than Joanna!

She gazed at him with a smile; Su Ping felt as if he was dreaming.

Next to Joanna were other familiar figures, including Heather and the other Superior Gods from the Demigod Burial.

“Human Ancestor!”

On the other hand, another golden circle of light appeared, and the people of the Heaven Path Institute showed up, including the president, Elder Yan Qing, Ancestral God Wen Tian, and others.

There were also many students of the institute, who looked up at Su Ping with respect and excitement.

A slightly chilly voice sounded. “Human Ancestor, it’s been a long time!” Su Ping turned, only to discover that it was the Rain Ancestor.

Next to him were the people of the Rain Clan, including their leader and the prince he had killed.

“Human Ancestor, our world was invaded and destroyed by the Heavenly Dao because of our ignorance. Our clan died in the battle. Our glory is no more... I hope we can follow you and make up for what we did!” said the Rain Ancestor with a soft voice. His eyes were sincere; he looked different from the last time he saw him in the cultivation site.

The cultivation site had captured a moment from their past, back when the Rain Clan was arrogant. Conflicts were inevitable and would escalate when they encountered a tough man like Su Ping.

However, whatever happened there wasn’t real, so there was no real hatred between them.

The Rain Clan had never encountered Su Ping in real life. They had always been arrogant, until the Heavenly Dao arrived one day and wreaked havoc on their world. All of them died while trying to resist.



The other high-ranked clans also showed up, all of them with solemn expressions. "Human Ancestor, we're willing to go all out to claim back what we had, now that we've returned!"

All the things that happened in the cultivation site had become part of their memories. Nothing had been real, yet they were no strangers to Su Ping.

Su Ping defeated the Seven Greatest Clans on his own. He was now the commander selected by the Mother of Chaos. Naturally, they wouldn't disobey.

"Brother Su!"

"Senior Brother Su."

Besides the people from the world of gods, there were also people from other cultivation sites in the crowd.

There were people from the Realm of Deities, the Chaotic Realm of the Undead, and many others.

There was Ming, the Asura that Su Ping befriended long before. He was the first person who had ever taught him sword techniques.

He had asked Su Ping to help him find the goddess named Shen Cangyue, but Su Ping had never found her. It had been further postponed due to being too busy cultivating, and now felt guilty about it.

However, Su Ping's willpower surged and soon discovered the aura among the resurrected lives as the River of Fate was reversed.

She was a beautiful girl, like a lotus flower on a snowy mountain. There was now a young and handsome man next to her, holding her waist. The pair seemed quite intimate, happy for being reunited after such a long time.

Su Ping was silent for a moment. He glanced at Ming, but thought it was inappropriate to inform him.

"No need to feel sorry for me, Brother Su. I already know," said Ming via telepathy with a smile.

Su Ping felt dazed.

"I have no more regrets now that she's already found someone. I've waited a hundred thousand years for a result. I can fight at peace now that I know!" said Ming with a smile.

Su Ping answered with a slight nod.

Ming looked at the countless people in the crowd. He seemed to have already seen the girl whom he had waited for a hundred thousand years, and whom he turned from a demigod to an Asura for. He said to himself, "Being able to die on the same battlefield is not the worst ending..."

"Brother Su!"

"Young friend, I was right about you."

An old deity was smiling in the crowd; he had once given Su Ping the power harnessed by ancient deities. However, it had been the Mother of Chaos who offered it to Su Ping through his hands in the cultivation site, the whole experience based on his personality. If there was another peculiar trait, it would've been someone else who would offer the power of the ancient deities to Su Ping.

Su Ping nodded. He had met all of those people before; they had either helped him, or had been killed by him.

Those whom he helped remembered the favor, and the ones killed didn't hold grudges against him. They had been killed by the Heavenly Dao in real life, not by him.

Furthermore, there were many cultivation sites that Su Ping never got to visit. The people from those places weren't acquainted with Su Ping. However, they all knew where they were going via telepathic messages sent by the Mother of Chaos.

"Finally, I can leave the system and fight by your side," said Joanna with a soft voice as she approached.

Su Ping discarded his bottled up sadness upon seeing her beautiful face. He nodded and said, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for eternal peace!"

Joanna nodded back and said to herself, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for your eternal safety!"

Su Ping looked at the figures gathering in front of him. The number of Undying State existences grew, exceeding the ones already with him, members from the billions of species. He recalled the list of cultivation sites he had seen before. It had been so long he almost ran short of patience to scroll down to the bottom.

The figures that had disappeared throughout history had been summoned by the system to fight by his side.

They were many times more of them than the people from the billions of species behind him!

“The Heavenly Dao is intent on destroying the Ancestral Land directly. They never cut off the River of Fate, which is also a trick we used in the previous two wars. Unfortunately, the trick can only be used once. If we lose this time, we’ll have fewer trump cards for the next try...” Yin Que heaved a sigh.

“Our odds of winning lower with each attempt. I hope we can get this over with this time; I won’t come back again,” said Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo coldly.

After all the dazzling lights from the River of Fate jumped out, the Golden Crow ancestor urged, “Let’s go. The Heavenly Dao has already noticed us. Let’s get this over with as soon as possible!”

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping and said, “This time, we will fight side by side.”

Su Ping smiled. “As we always have, right?”

She nodded with glittering eyes. “That’s right.”

He then looked at the familiar faces that had gathered around him. Once the war ended, many of them would be permanently gone. The pain caused by war was excruciating even before it even started.

“Let’s go!” Su Ping said.

Clang!

The chains shook, and the three thousand warships sailed forth, carrying all of those people.

Joanna stared at Su Ping for a moment. She then turned around and boarded one of the warships. This time, she was going to fight by Su Ping’s side!

The people from the Heaven Path Institute glanced at Su Ping and also boarded the ships.

“The Heavenly Dao forces are deep inside the Ancestral Land. Let’s just go over there!” Yin Que suggested.

The Mother of Chaos nodded with a solemn face, then she pointed in a certain direction. The aura of chaos around her was suddenly gathered, forming a hazy channel that extended for billions of kilometers, going deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

“Let’s go!”

Su Ping had already accommodated all the beings rescued from the River of Fate inside his warships, then gathered the latter to make a move. Yin Que was the first to step into

the vortex; the Golden Crow ancestor was second; Ti Tuo was third; Shi Mang was the fourth. The Mother of Chaos—who had been waiting at the entrance of the channel—glanced at Su Ping and moved to his side.

Su Ping gave her a slight nod, and the two of them entered together.

The three thousand warships followed close and went into the vortex.

A stream of chaos power was working around him. They seemed to be flying and still at the same time. Very soon, the vortex disappeared and a bleak view received them.

There was a vast accumulation of debris before their eyes. The abundant aura of chaos was like smoke limiting Su Ping's senses. Some lonely mountains could be seen through the gray smoke, like trees rising from the ground, with strange branches stretching out, making them look like twisted bodies.

There was no time nor space in the origin of everything; they were insignificant variables incapable of creating any power.

Origin, Cycle, Creation and the other Great Daos were wandering around the place.

Everything was like the still water of a lake.

Su Ping could feel the powerful binding force of the region. Only Dao Heart experts and above would be able to move in such an environment. Normal Celestials would barely have the power to walk, let alone beings with lesser cultivation levels; they would be as powerless as the corpses found there.

Without the power of time, every moment there was eternal.

"You're finally here," said an indifferent and majestic voice right above them, dripping with the condescension to look down upon everything. Figures were stepping out from the hazy smoke. They were all Undying State Heavenly Dao beings, with identical looks and expressions.

At the center of the humanoid forces, there was a silver guy who wore an ancient robe, giving him a graceful and righteous look. With a dispassionate voice he said, "Still unwilling to give up?"

He looked slightly different from the other clone-like beings, seemingly... More alive.

"Humph. You're not nearly enough to stop us. Get out of the way!" The Golden Crow ancestor's eyes were cold. The scorching flames on its body burned the gray smoke and made it a lot thinner.

“You were born in chaos, but you failed to manage chaos well. You should die with them,” said the silver member of the Heavenly Dao.

“No need to talk. Just kill them!” said Shi Mang, releasing the overwhelming energy of death, as he was the first to charge forward, not wasting time talking.

Whoosh!

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que was the best when it came to attacking. It transformed into a dark shadow that darted towards the robed humanoid. Terrifying explosions instantly began to sound; the violent impacts shattered the dozens of Undying State humanoids nearby.

“Ultimate Hallucination!”

It was Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que’s ultimate technique, a terrifying Dao power capable of destroying everything. A grand universe appeared, created by the combination of millions of universes; it was bigger than any universe known, the most powerful universe of chaos. Not even Undying State beings could break free from it.

The black light appeared faster than Su Ping could perceive it. He then saw Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que fighting the silver-colored Heaven being. The power of time was circulating around them. In just one moment, they had fought from the past to the future, spanning through more than a hundred thousand years.

The special nature of such a battle was beyond the boundaries of common sense. Su Ping was secretly alarmed as he watched. He would have probably been incapable of fighting back if Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que were the one blocking him before. The experts from the billions of species would have been killed, too.

Yin Que was the fastest Sorcerer Ancestor. No wonder it was able to survive the previous three wars!

“Let’s get this over with. They’ve only left one Chaos Heaven in this place; they don’t know what they’re doing!” said the Golden Crow ancestor when joining the battle, followed closely by Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang.

Ti Tuo produced a lot of clones that charged at the other Undying State humanoids. Each clone was powerful enough to slaughter the Heavenly Dao forces with ease, practically being invincible.

“That silver Heaven seems to be as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor,” said Su Ping to the system who had yet to take action, “How many of those silver-level Heavenly Dao fighters are out there?”

“They are called Chaos Heavenly Daos, born after absorbing the power of mythical creatures. They are reincarnations of the Heavenly Dao’s power from the age of chaos,” said the system, “At first, there were thirty-two of them. I killed many of their kind in the previous wars. Right now, only eight remain.”

“They are as strong as the ultimate Heavenly Dao, but technically speaking, they’re slightly weaker. After all, Sorcerer Ancestors have the Chaos Qualifications. In any case, it’ll take a long time for Yin Que and the others to kill the Chaos Heaven being.”

She added, “There’s no concept of time in the Ancestral Land of Chaos; there are only Chaos Years. It’s like the petals of a flower; the fall of a petal is an indicator that some time has passed!”

“Chaos Years?”

“That’s right. It differs from the normal time, given that time is linear and has an order: past, present and future. Existences like us can easily manipulate this vulnerable Dao power. Besides, time is too weak to change anything in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everything you see here is immortal.

“However, Chaos Years are different. If you regress from a hundred years to fifty, there will be no turning back!

“We all have Chaos Years; this place has its own Chaos Years, too. Once they run out, it’ll be the time we die.”

“Die?”

Su Ping felt dazed. Although he had yet to understand what a Chaos Year was, it seemed to be a combination of power and time. Their lives would end when it was over.

“Yin Que won’t need a lot of years to kill the fellow while counting with the Golden Crow’s help,” said the system, “We are still in the periphery of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. The Heavenly Dao forces have marched deep enough, so we must hurry. Follow me.”

“Okay,” said Su Ping.

All of a sudden—there was a violent attack moving towards them.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and hurriedly raised his defenses to resist with all his strength.

In all the group, the Inferno Dragon was the fastest to respond, instantly roaring and denting the scale on its forehead. All of its other scales were instantly stacked, protecting Su Ping and the pets.

The dragon blocked the attack with its body. Su Ping and the others felt the immense energy blast. Fortunately, Su Ping was now able to deal with the power that leaked in, all thanks to the Inferno Dragon's selfless blocking.

Once the power was disposed of, Su Ping quickly looked and then saw the most astounding scene.

The system's body had been pierced through by sharp stings. The attacker was actually Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo who was moving at the front!

Explosions echoing in the battlefield further ahead at the same time. Then, there was a long roar. The Golden Crow ancestor and the other Sorcerer Ancestors attacking the Chaos Heaven fellow were forced to retreat.

One silver figure after another appeared next to the Chaos Heaven they were confronting.

Four more showed up. There were five Chaos Heaven in total!

Next to the five Chaos Heavens were three scary, gargantuan figures!

Three Sorcerer Ancestors!

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. All of this happened too fast for him to react.

The situation had been instantly reversed, bringing them utter despair!

"Ti Tuo, what are you doing?!"

The Golden Crow ancestor looked back and roared, with furious flames burning in its eye sockets.

"Bloody bastard!" Yin Que shrieked in fury. They realized that something was wrong with Ti Tuo, right when they saw the three Sorcerer Ancestors and the extra four Chaos Heavens. Of the twelve overlords, Ti Tuo was the best at observation. Even though Yin Que was the fastest, it could not hide from Ti Tuo's perception; all actions would be observed.

Ti Tuo's keen observation had helped them see through the Heavenly Dao's ambushes and made great contributions in the previous wars!

Those Chaos Heavens had most likely been hiding for a long time and Ti Tuo should have noticed them since the very beginning. However, no alert was raised.

Betrayal!

“Mother!” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang roared and turned around, charging to face Ti Tuo.

But the next moment, the latter chuckled and disappeared from Shi Mang’s attack range. His original body was swapped with a clone that had been sent to attack the Heavenly Dao expert at the beginning. He then stepped forth and joined the opposite side.

“Sorry, but I don’t want to be an idiot again.” Ti Tuo chuckled. “I never forgot how we lost the previous two wars, and I don’t want to end like a dog working for the Heavenly Dao.”

“But you’re acting like their dog right now!” the Golden Crow ancestor roared furiously.

“No, no. The Heavenly Dao has given me the Chaos Origin Stone. Once chaos is restarted, I will be acknowledged by the Ancestral Land of Chaos to control the world along with the Heavenly Dao!” Ti Tuo chuckled.

“Hey, hey, Ti Tuo, are you saying that we’re dogs working for the Heavenly Dao?” The three Sorcerer Ancestors approached Ti Tuo, and their words didn’t sound very amiable.

Ti Tuo chuckled and said, “I didn’t mean it. Don’t misunderstand me; we are comrades right now. My previous attack has probably wounded Mother badly. This is a great opportunity; we shouldn’t be wasting time anymore.”

“No, we should not waste any more time,” said the biggest Sorcerer Ancestor with indifference. However, the next moment—it suddenly opened its bloody mouth and swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Kun Peng!”

Both the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que changed their expressions, witnessing the act in shock and fury.

“Sorry. The Heavenly Dao asked me to hand both him and the Origin Stone. I’ll be taking my leave now,” said Kun Peng in a casual tone, then flapped its wings and soared away.

The other two Sorcerer Ancestors were Hun Yu and Xuan Qi.

Su Ping had once met Hun Yu in the Remains of High Heavens that the system had recreated. Although an illusion, the majestic figure that covered the retreat of billions of mythical creatures had left a deep impression on Su Ping.

Alas, that Sorcerer Ancestor was a cold enemy at the moment.



“Mother, drop the act; the Heavenly Dao is already aware of your plan. This matter should end now. You don’t have a lot of capital left right now, do you? Hei Xiang and Hao Tian were smart enough to stay away from this mess,” said the Sorcerer Ancestor coldly.

“Yes, I’m done acting.”

The wounds on the Mother of Chaos healed quickly. She said with indifference, “Ti Tuo’s mission was to lure all of you here, so that I could kill you all at once so you won’t cause more trouble!”

Su Ping had just approached the system to check her wounds. He was briefly dazed, not expecting the betrayal to be an act. No wonder the Golden Crow and the others’ reactions were so strange when Kun Peng swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Humph!”

Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi snorted, “You are no longer at the peak. It won’t be so easy for you to finish us off. By the way, he’s about to reach the Chaos Core in the Ancestral Land; once it’s broken, chaos will be dissolved and everything will restart!”

“You can die now, then!” roared the Golden Crow ancestor, suddenly charging towards Xuan Qi like the wind.

Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu said indifferently, “Why bother struggling? There are indeed too many ants roaming in chaos; they would be erased if everything is restarted and a brand-new world of chaos will be created. That will be a good thing.”

“I’ve been sleeping in the Dao of Death all the time, but what do you even think life is?!” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang suddenly charged forward and turned into a dark blade to attack Hun Yu furiously.

Bang!

Hun Yu released its universe, the biggest and hardest compared to those of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. Shi Mang’s full-strength strike didn’t break it.

“You were created by me. I truly don’t want to be the one to act and erase you.” The Mother of Chaos stared at Hun Yu and Xuan Qi. She raised her hand; even though she said those things, there wasn’t a speck of indecision at that moment. Besides, the bond between a mother and a child was unique to some species; there were other kinds whose children would feed on their mother upon birth.

Some would even eat the children they had just given birth to, seeing it as a natural option.

The Mother of Chaos didn't harbor much of the expected special feelings. She only felt regretful, as one would feel by needing to destroy fine, personally crafted pieces of art.

Whoosh!

The Mother of Chaos waved a hand, and the chaos energy floating in the void was suddenly destroyed. Two terrifying forces akin to huge axes slashed out, making Hun Yu and Xuan Qi change expressions.

Hun Yu hurriedly moved his universe to block the attack aimed at Xuan Qi.

The former's universe trembled and almost fell apart.

Exactly at this moment, the five Chaos Heavens also took action—

“Judgment!”

They released the same light of chaos. Wheels of Judgment flew out of their bodies and spun in the sky, moving towards the Mother of Chaos like sharp blades.

The latter narrowed her eyes, she pointed her finger at the incoming attacks, shooting a black beam that destroyed the balance of one of the wheels.

She then rushed towards the five Chaos Heavens.

“I'll leave the other Heavenly Dao forces to you,” said the Mother of Chaos.

Su Ping nodded. “Be careful. I'll lend you a hand in case you need it.”

“There's no need to worry.”

The system's voice was extremely calm.

She was so fast that Su Ping's senses couldn't even follow. She was even faster than Yin Que!

“What is going on?!”

Xuan Qi was rather shocked by the sight. It dawned on him. “Damn it, Ti Tuo must've given the Origin Stone to Mother!”

“You can die knowing the truth now!” bellowed the Golden Crow ancestor. The ever-burning flames released by the latter covered millions of square kilometers and pulled Xuan Qi into its universe.

“You think you can kill me?!”

“I survived the previous three wars, while you didn’t,” said the great crow proudly.

The taunt worked, as Xuan Qi was furious. Among all Sorcerer Ancestors, its forte was attacking. However, its attack was deflected by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. On the other hand, it was the weakest when it came to defense and escape. That was why it was eventually suppressed.

Elsewhere—Ancestors Shi Mang and Yin Que moved towards Hun Yu and attacked the latter’s universe.

Hun Yu was definitely one of the top three Sorcerer Ancestors, and had never lost a duel. It was suppressed by the Heavenly Dao, not because it was weaker than Yin Que and the others, but because it chose to endure all of the Heavenly Dao’s attacks for everyone. As a result, it was heavily wounded and captured.

“Hun Yu, you can still turn around!” shouted Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang.

“My clan is being controlled by the Heavenly Dao. I cannot turn around anymore!” said Hun Yu in a low voice and released its universe, covering Yin Que and Shi Mang, trying to imprison them.

However, Yin Que was quick to react and dodged the attack. However, Shi Mang was slower and was enshrouded in it.

“You helped me block the Heavenly Dao’s attack back then. I owe you a favor. I hope you won’t die before I am able to pay you back!” said Yin Que to Hun Yu.

“If you want to return the favor, just stay away from this war,” said Hun Yu.

“That’s impossible!” declared the former, “The Heavenly Dao is blatant and lawless. I will never let this go. I’m not here for Mother, but for myself!”

“Let’s fight then! The loser will have nothing to say!” said Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu.

Yin Que answered with action, quickly moving to attack and trying to rescue Shi Mang.

At the same time—

The Mother of Chaos had already attacked the five Chaos Heavens.

She was even faster than Yin Que. Nobody was able to capture her trace.

Her attacks were so powerful that only one move had left a Chaos Heaven heavily wounded one, nearly killing them.

While clearing the other Heavenly Dao forces, Su Ping noticed that the system seemed to have combined the power of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. She was the best in terms of offense, speed and defense!

The five Chaos Heavens were forced to retreat due to the system's attacks. They were completely incapable of defending!

The power shown by the system not only surprised Su Ping, but also infuriated the five Chaos Heavens. They realized that their enemy had made sufficient preparations and Ti Tuo's betrayal was a trap. They weren't there to surround those remnant nemeses; the remnants were surrounding them!

Once the remnant forces passed that defense line, the big plan would be ruined.

"Die!!" bellowed one of the Chaos Heavens, as a terrifying aura of chaos was burning all over its body, mixed with some sort of special fire. The fury on its face turned blurry because of the flames. The humanoid also seemed to be calming down, eventually turning into a dazzling ball.

Whoosh!

He dashed to another Chaos Heaven and merged with it.

"They're yours."

The other three Chaos Heavens acted with solemnity. "Even if it's not possible to stop them, you have to stall them."

The next moment, those three Chaos Heavens were ablaze. Their faces became numb, and they turned into dazzling light, which surged into the body of the Chaos Heaven at the center.

The latter's body was undergoing changes. An aura far more powerful was perceived, and its body was even more gigantic, with limbs that were destructive to a terrifying degree. It threw a punch at the Mother of Chaos and actually blocked the sharp blade formed with her Great Dao power.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression and said ruthlessly, "I knew you would use this method; you were the inspiration for the contract system I developed."

Su Ping—who at the time had been dealing with the rest of the enemy forces with the Inferno Dragon—was also keeping an eye on the system. Her answer left him in a daze for a moment; he then looked at the fused Chaos Heavens and understood.

The contract and the fusion were created based on inspirations from the Heavenly Dao's tactics in the previous wars.

The Heavenly Dao members can fuse together; if all of them merge... The idea crossed Su Ping's mind.

He also noticed at the moment that the humanoids being hunted by the Inferno Dragon were gathering in one place, actually giving birth to a Chaos Heaven emitting silver light.

So this is how Chaos Heavens are created...

The other Heavenly Dao beings can fuse, too. Is it possible that all of them are actually the same thing?!

His expression involuntarily reflected the shock upon thinking about this. If all the Heavenly Dao humanoids were the same thing, and were just clones of the original body, how terrifying would the original body be?

It would even be a hundred times stronger than a Sorcerer Ancestor!

There must be some sort of restriction preventing all of them from fusing. Otherwise, why would they split up their power? It would be easy to kill all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors with such power, just like squeezing ants to death. This entire world of chaos should have been cleared already! Su Ping thought. He believed that was the reason.

The Inferno Dragon was already fighting against the newly condensed Chaos Heaven.

Su Ping chose to let his dragon pet battle it out with the humanoid, seeing that their battle was too shocking. He led the Dark Dragon Hound, the experts from the billions of species, and the just resurrected people to attack the other Heavenly Dao beings, trying to clear the area as quickly as possible; that way they would not condense into another Chaos Heaven.

To some relief, Su Ping noticed that there seemed to be some sort of requirement set for Heavenly Dao fusions to take place; they couldn't fuse at will. The other humanoids were only jumping and dodging, trying to buy more time. They didn't just merge to fight back.

"Die!"

The experts of all species inside the three thousand warships set up military formations and transmitted their power to Su Ping. The latter asked the Inferno Dragon to stall the fused Chaos Heaven while he charged at the other Heavenly Dao creatures with the others.

Elsewhere, the Mother of Chaos and five fused-Chaos Heavens were fighting intensely. It was hard to tell who would win.

However, she gradually gained the upper hand as the fight progressed, thanks to her fast and powerful attacks; her offense was better than Xuan Qi's and her defense was better than Ling Tai's. She was as quick as a shadow. Time and space was changing quickly around them. She had killed her enemy hundreds of times, from the past to the future.

However, the Chaos Heavenly Dao still jumped out of the void from her memories and the battle marks in the world.

The Mother of Chaos cut herself off from the environment, forcing her opponent into a corner soon after.

"You're not here to kill us; you're here just to hold me back, aren't you?" she asked with a cold tone, "Has he already stepped into the Ancestral Land of Chaos' forbidden area? To think he's willing to abandon you so you can stall for time."

"Yes. Even if you know, so what? You don't stand a chance!"

The fused Chaos Heaven was extremely calm. Although hit by the system hundreds of times at every moment, he didn't show any anger, acting indifferent as if detached from the world. He wouldn't show anger even in the face of death.

"I didn't realize he would be faster than I thought." The Mother of Chaos narrowed her eyes.

"Just give up. Your era has passed. The chaos you once established and reigned over is already sick. It must be made anew. You lost, and you must accept your fate!" declared the Chaos Heavenly Dao.

"Fate? The River of Fate contains billions of creatures, and was created by me." The Mother of Chaos sneered. Fate itself was her creation, and yet she was being asked to accept her fate?

"Disorder will be no more after we lay claim on the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everybody will live together in peace and order!" said the Chaos Heavenly Dao coldly.

"Peace? How boring would the world be without any fights? War, sickness and disaster are part of life. It is also the most efficient way to naturally reduce the amount of lives."

She added after a snort, "Without death and disorder, how could chaos accommodate all living creatures? That would be a recipe for complete destruction!"

"That's right. War and disaster are required for the gathering of resources and for the new to replace the old. It's the way you control chaos. It's a splendid era with newborns always emerging. However, the seniors who have fought for countless years have to willingly step back. Isn't it ridiculous?"

The humanoid sneered and said, "This world doesn't need replacements. Permanence is the best!"

"What's the meaning of this?"

The Mother of Chaos pierced his chest with her sword. However, she suddenly turned around and saw the Chaos Heaven walking out of a resurrection channel. She said coldly, "The world I've built reflects my will, everywhere. Mountains and rivers are also my will. I described them to countless living creatures, so that they know what I think.

"If water doesn't flow, it dies. Without circulation, the world will rot and smell sooner or later!"

"That's why there's so much sadness in the world you built, and the reason why we came to be. You must know that we were born because of the wishes of all living creatures!"

The Chaos Heavenly Dao added with indifference, "We are regarded as the Heavenly Dao, supreme beings that control billions of lives. How could we ignore their grief?"

"So, you want to erase them just because you can't bear to see them fall into tragic cycles of reincarnation?" she bellowed angrily.

The humanoid replied with a cold voice, "They live in your world and follow your orders. They are already sick, beyond cure, unless your rules are broken and we establish a new order. We won't feel regret even if we're no longer needed after the new world is built. This is what we do for all living creatures!"

"Hilarious!"

The Mother of Chaos was past the point of being angry. "Look at the people you're fighting. They're the living creatures you mentioned, who've come here to fight and eliminate you. You think you're fulfilling their wishes?!"

"Living creatures are stupid. That's why they linger in your world while in pain. We're trying to save them; even if they loathe us, so what?" said the Chaos Heaven.

"Go to hell!"

The Mother of Chaos stopped the conversation, as she felt she was wasting her time. The other party had a different faith. Just like in the beginning of time, losers would have nothing to say; even the firmest truth had to be defended with strength!

Bang!

Violent attacks echoed above the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

In the distance—Su Ping sensed the immense quakes and couldn't help but glance with worry. However, he knew he was far from being qualified to worry about the system; he could only do his part to clear the battlefield as soon as possible and free his hands so he could find a chance to help.

"It's useless. Your failure is destined," said the Chaos Heaven calmly.

"Do you really think you can take away the Ancestral Land of Chaos?" There was no fury on the Mother of Chaos's face, only a cold killing intent. She wasn't slow as she acted. With a frosty tone, she said, "You should feel honored that you've managed to stall me for this long!"

Boom! The sword she held dazzled as she made a slashing motion.

Instantly, countless sword auras rushed over from all directions in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Each sword aura was extremely terrifying; they moved swiftly, instantly piercing through the Chaos Heaven fusion.

The sword auras exploded, ripping apart the humanoid's body.

The Mother of Chaos flew out, not bothering to look at the extinguished Chaos Heaven, and rushed towards Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors.

"Mother, just give up. It's too late!" said Hun Yu, noticing how she was approaching and that the five Heavenly Dao experts had been killed.

"Hun Yu, don't be stupid. I know you want me to abandon the ancestral land and leave. However, I was born along with the ancestral land. This is my destiny and my shell!" said the Mother of Chaos coldly, "I will be destroyed if the Ancestral Land of Chaos is gone. If you truly want to fight for me, go after the Heavenly Dao with me and don't stand in my way!"

Hun Yu changed his expression. While wearing a troubled expression, he heaved a deep sigh and said in frustration, "Mother, I'm sorry; please kill me. I can't turn back, or else they will kill both me and my clan."

"Good. A Sorcerer Ancestor deciding to sacrifice himself for your clan. You deserve to be my child!" said the Mother of Chaos, quickly taking decisive action.

On the other hand, Xuan Qi—discovering that Hun Yu was no longer resisting—shouted in shock and fury, "We will enjoy ourselves forever after the Heavenly Dao restarts chaos; why are you giving up?!"

"Shut up!" the Golden Crow Ancestor roared, drowning him in scorching flames.

Hun Yu sighed. "Eternity... is so exhausting."



The Mother of Chaos stared at him, but didn't stop. Her sword passed by and ripped the most powerful universe of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors to pieces, along with Hun Yu himself.

A Chaos Qualification flew out after he died.

The Mother of Chaos made a waving motion, then saw Su Ping fighting somewhere else. She threw the Chaos Qualification in his direction.

"Absorb the Chaos Qualification and defeat them as soon as possible," said the system.

Slightly stunned yet delighted, Su Ping saw the brilliant Chaos Qualification and immediately grabbed a hold of it.

A Sorcerer Ancestor died? Su Ping looked at the battlefield, only to find that Hun Yu's aura was gone. His gesture changed; the Sorcerer Ancestor who had once covered the retreat on his own, back in the cultivation site, was now dead. Just like that.

It was a Sorcerer Ancestor who was supposed to live forever!

He took a deep breath, and decidedly fused with the Chaos Qualification.

All his power seemed to be concentrated on the Chaos Qualification and amplified. A stream of terrifying power erupted from his body.

His three thousand undying universes became even more terrifying due to the Chaos Qualification's enhancement.

"Great. Our boss is a Sorcerer Ancestor too!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound excitedly.

"Even if chaos is destroyed, Boss will still survive." The Purple Python, the Little Skeleton and the other pets were thrilled. All of them were fighting so that Su Ping could live on.

Su Ping had just attained the qualification to live.

As for their world and the people, they couldn't care less.

Elsewhere—the Mother of Chaos turned around and charged at Xuan Qi.

The latter was shocked and furious upon seeing her actions. "Mother, I wasn't wrong. It's useless, even if you kill me!"

"No, it isn't," she said.

Wasting no time, she quickly suppressed and killed Xuan Qi with the help of the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que, then taking out the black Chaos Qualification inside his body.

The Chaos Qualification was full of brutality and killing intent, like a sharp edge able to make your eyes bleed by merely laying eyes upon it.

The Mother of Chaos glanced at Su Ping and passed it over to him, too.

Considering his personality, she knew he would definitely give it to one of his pets.

This was in line with her wishes. There would be an explosive rise in power when a Sorcerer Ancestor bonded with another Sorcerer Ancestor. She needed Su Ping's power in the following battle!

"Considering that being's personality, it shouldn't have just sent those helpers to their deaths so easily; even though they were only tools in its eyes, they have died all too quickly." The Mother of Chaos looked gloomy. She had already recovered two Chaos Qualifications, but it didn't give her any sense of accomplishment; she thought that her old opponent was much smarter than this.

That is, unless they thought that the main goal set for Hun Yu and the others was to hold her back.

Yin Que flew close and said quickly, "Mother, let's go to the core of the ancestral land as soon as possible."

The Golden Crow ancestor also looked at her. Their guesses depicted some dreadful outcomes, and weren't happy about their recent victory.

"All right," said the Mother of Chaos while nodding.

Su Ping had already handed over Xuan Qi's Chaos Qualification to the Little Skeleton while the pair spoke.

The little one's attacks were powerful, and was the most fitting to receive the item.

"Let's go!"

Su Ping was also hearing their conversation, and knew that such an easy victory could be a trap. It would be impossible for the Heavenly Dao's leader to be unaware that the system was strong enough to quickly finish off the forces sent.

That quick victory wasn't something to be happy about. Rather, it was worrisome!

The Mother of Chaos slightly narrowed her eyes and communicated telepathically, "He has his plans, and I have my countermeasures. Does he really think that I don't know anything?"

Out of nowhere, a channel appeared in the void.

"It's the channel to enter Kun Peng's inner universe!" said Shi Mang, feeling relieved, "It seems that he didn't betray us."

Kun Peng—the one who swallowed Ti Tuo—was actually the Mother of Chaos's spy.

This scheme had been set up ever since the beginning of the first war!

"I may be fast, but I can't establish a speed channel inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Only Kun Peng can send us straight into the depths of chaos using his innards as a bridge!" said Yin Que.

The channel to the inner universe they saw was exactly made with Kun Peng's organs.

"Let's go!" said the Mother of Chaos.

She was the first to step out and enter the channel.

Yin Que was the hasty sort; he followed closely behind.

Su Ping gathered the experts of all species and the revived generals from the cultivation sites before following the two.

Su Ping had grabbed a hold of one of the Chaos Qualifications and was now equal to the other ancestors. The world he saw had some sort of strange changes. The mountains, the fog, the aura of chaos and the Great Dao were akin to illusions about to disperse at any moment. However, they held on like wriggling worms.

That was the original look of the world.

Su Ping had once seen such a world when he took the Golden Crow ancestor's blood, but that was the first time seeing it with his own power. Furthermore, he would never be able to dwell on the illusion once he saw reality.

So, the world before his eyes would remain that way, unless he deliberately ignored it and fooled himself.

"This is what the chaos world is really like. Just get used to it," said the Golden Crow ancestor in a soft voice, who seemed to have noticed the astonishment in Su Ping's eyes. "It was exactly the ugliness of this chaos world that made Mother give birth to us. We created billions of mythical creatures that perished after fighting the Heavenly Dao,

their bloodlines transforming into all the worlds. Your human race is the extension of one of the bloodlines, just like how gods came to be.

“Different species may have different definitions of beauty. However, every living creature has the instinct to change the environment until it is fit for them. Worms and beasts have nests that other creatures despise, but they live comfortably there. Even ants are the same...”

Su Ping looked at the system moving further ahead in the channel, eyes glittering. “Are all the prosperous eternal worlds what she wished for?”

“The eternity that you know is but a fleeting moment in the world of chaos. You never saw how prosperous it was when billions of mythical creatures emerged. It was much more brilliant than the world you know; that was what she truly wished for...” said the crow softly.

Su Ping fell silent. His long time following the system made him aware of her proud nature; even the best pets weren't worth mentioning. Her standards were also monstrously high.

Getting to the bottom of all, it was because the world she had established was too brilliant.

The moon wouldn't be deemed as dazzling after witnessing the brilliance of the sun.

“I see...”

They reached the end of the channel just then.

Everybody reached the core zone of the chaos land through the internal organs of Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng.

Hardly had they arrived when they saw countless Heavenly Dao humanoids standing densely in the distance. It was terrifying to see their numbers, like grains of dust.

Those humanoids stared with ruthless eyes at those who had just walked out of the channel.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression as she peered further ahead. She saw Kun Peng standing among the Heavenly Dao beings with four Chaos Heavens next to him. In addition, there was a purely white figure, with thousands of eyes and ears and countless organs hanging from his body. The hideous figure evoked chills, and yet he carried a gentle light.

He clearly had the resemblance of a terrifying monster, and yet his presence was surprisingly reassuring.

“You were in such a hurry to meet me. Now, we finally meet.”

The terrifying monster sent out peaceful thoughts; they could almost soothe everyone’s killing intent and stubbornness.

The Mother of Chaos showed a slightly different expression as she stared at him. “Don’t fool me with a fake product. Let your real self come out!”

“As expected of the previous custodian of chaos. Even though you’ve been wounded a few times in a row, you still have your eyesight,” said the peaceful will softly, “Unfortunately, you’ve long become rotten too, and should be reforged.”

“Kun Peng, how dare you betray us!” said Yin Que furiously, while glaring at Kun Peng, “Where’s Ti Tuo?”

“He’s not dead. You wouldn’t have come if he were,” said Kun Peng calmly, “Mother asked me to sneak in, so I did. Mother asked me to return to his side, and I did as told. Mother asked me to create an inner universe to bring you here, and I complied. What did I do wrong?”

“Shut up!” The Golden Crows’ ancestor’s eyes were surging with flames. “We thought you were spying for us, but you’re just a traitor. You, a Sorcerer Ancestor, have been subdued. How shameful!”

Kun Peng said indifferently, “He’s not wrong. Mother is already infected, and so are you. Don’t forget how the Heavenly Dao was born. Given the world that Mother created, it was only a matter of time for the Heavenly Dao to be born. The Heavenly Dao is determined to overthrow Mother; she’s like a glutton enjoying herself for a moment, but she’s sick inside and the gorging will kill her. So, Mother is sick and the world she built is sick, too!”

“Do you honestly believe that they will build an eternal world?”

Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang narrowed his eyes. “Don’t forget that life and death are codependent; the world is eternal if they are considered together! ‘Living’ is just the prelude of a creature. Why do you have to separate the two?”

“This kind of change is the source of all evil!”

Kun Peng said coldly, “Life to death, and death to life. The cycle seems to be spinning all the time, but it actually produces a lot of hatred, resentment and grief! Those things are like the barely noticeable dust; however, once it accumulates, it’ll give birth to the Heavenly Dao!”

“The Heavenly Dao was born because of everyone’s wishes. It is everyone’s wish to build an eternal world!”

“It’s hilarious to see you attack the Heavenly Dao with billions of creatures. Little do you know that this is what everybody wants the most. It is only because they’re too stupid and act based on their urges that there’s infinite hate in the world!”

Yin Que yelled, “Do you think that the world of ice you want to build would be beautiful? That kind of beauty is eternal, but dead!”

“The most splendid beauty in this world is liveliness. The liveliness of sadness, and the liveliness of delight, unlike the numbness of peace, indifference and despair. Even if they’re burned, they may jump in billions of shapes like flames!” said the Golden Crow ancestor, keeping fury in check.

Kun Peng slightly shook his head and said, “You’re all wrong. The eternity we want to build is not frozen. All resources will be concentrated and distributed evenly. Lives will no longer decline; they will receive the same treatment. Hate is not caused by loss, it is the unfairness of it all!

“If you lose an arm, you will feel pain; but it would stop being painful if everyone loses an arm. Just like when everyone loses an extraordinary power, nobody will feel pain or anger because of the lack of this power.”

The Golden Crow ancestor stared at the demonic figure and asked, “What about them? Won’t they still be controlling chaos? Does your fairness include them?”

The monstrous Heavenly Dao smiled and replied peacefully, “We’ll be gone once that kind of world is built. You may not believe us, but we know what we’ll do.”

“So, the loser has to admit defeat in the end. Strength is what matters, right?” Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que sneered.

“I guess you could say that,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao with a smile.

Su Ping suddenly intervened, “It’s not an eternal world you want to build. You’re only turning your own vision into a concrete existence; you’re the one who’s really infected. That is no longer the wish of the people. You have your own desires... This is just your own selfish thought!”

The smile on the peaceful Heavenly Dao’s face fell somewhat. He gazed at Su Ping and said, “He’s the third challenger leading all the people to attack me, right? He looks much younger than the previous two.”

The Mother of Chaos said coldly, “He’s here bearing the will of the people, and he’s going to end your illusion with me!”

“That is correct,” Su Ping stepped forward and said in a cold tone, “You want fairness for everyone. But how can everyone get everything equally? You say that everyone will

receive the same things you get. However, the most precious things in the world—except for the rare cultivation resources, money, wealth and power—are the scenes you witness and the people you interact with every day!

“By your logic, when I see the sunset, others have to see the sunset, too. When I look down from a high building, others have to do the same. It would be unfair otherwise! There are 976 particles whenever I take a breath of chaos aura, and all the others have to absorb 976 particles too, or it would be unfair!

“When I turn to one side and look at things, the others have to do the same, or it would be unfair!”

Su Ping stared at the peaceful Heavenly Dao with blade-like eyes. “There won’t be any living creatures in the world you want to build, only one kind of life. To be more precise, there will only be a single living creature! That’s the only way to ensure absolute balance. If all creatures aim to achieve absolute balance, they must stay unified!

“Without thousands of faces, only having thousands of people living the same life, it would just be one person, no matter how many they are!

“This is just the manifestation of your own wish, not the wish of the people. You have violated the will of the people. You don’t deserve to be called Heavenly Dao. You are an Evil Dao!”

“Well said!”

The Golden Crow ancestor couldn’t help but shout, “Kun Peng, did you hear? The world he’s heralding doesn’t exist. There are no lives in that world, and you don’t have a place in it, either!”

Kun Peng’s expression changed a bit as he looked at the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

Before he could ask—his body trembled all of a sudden. Many sharp blades protruded from the peaceful Heavenly Dao and pierced through his body. Then, those sharp blades moved as arms and pulled him toward the peaceful-looking being.

Kun Peng was shocked and furious. He revealed his true appearance and shrieked at the peaceful creature, “What are you doing?!”

“It was just a matter of time. Since you have doubts, I’ll just remove those doubts for you,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao, “You can’t understand the eternity that I pursue, and you don’t need to; since you’re already sick, that is. You only need to disappear and leave a clean world of chaos behind.”

“Do it!”

The Mother of Chaos quickly attacked the peaceful Heavenly Dao while the latter was absorbing Kun Peng.

Both Yin Que and the Golden Crow ancestor shrieked and followed her, killing the Chaos Heavens that tried to stop them.

“No need to bother with me. His original self is destroying the Chaos Core deep inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. He’s purposely delaying you here...” roared Kun Peng.

The Mother of Chaos changed her expression. Everything would collapse once the Chaos Core was destroyed; all law and order would crumble, and they would lose all their power. They would all turn to dust once chaos perished.

“System, you go first. I’ll stop him!” said Su Ping.

He rushed over, his body transforming into a magnificent mythical creature, as massive as the peaceful Heavenly Dao. Behind him were the experts of all species and the people from the cultivation sites.

The Mother of Chaos had a contorted face. She could feel Su Ping’s honest feelings, she knew he wouldn’t be able to stop the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Even if it was just a clone.

“You think you can stop me? I’ll show you how your predecessors ended!” The peaceful Heavenly Dao was cold. Part of his body turned into sticky fluid, completely covering Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng. There seemed to be countless strange mouths wriggling and biting. Kun Peng’s furious roars could be heard.

Another part of his body moved and attacked Su Ping.

The latter instantly felt that his Chaos Qualification was somehow shivering in fear.

“Die!” Su Ping roared.

The experts of all species set up military formations in his warships. The people from the cultivation sites also charged at the other Heavenly Dao beings.

It was impossible for them to participate in the clash against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, or they would only turn to dust, dying as soon as they got any closer. They could only stop the lesser humanoids.

The war that spanned through eternity was resumed yet again.

Various species fought against the humanoids.



The people from the Heaven Path Institute—led by Wen Tian and the other Ancestral Gods—formed arrays and killed several enemies in a row.

The other high-ranked clans also fought the Heavenly Dao forces under the lead of their respective Ancestral Gods.

The war stretched to infinity, battling and bloodshed everywhere. However, the gory images gradually turned into the background. It was the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos who would play a critical role in that fight.

They charged on the battlefield. Chaos collapsed wherever they passed and the void became even more desolate. Their true appearances and their universes were quickly displayed, exploding and turning into an unimaginable blast.

Bang!

A brilliant sword aura passed by. Su Ping merged with the Little Skeleton and the Inferno Dragon. Su Ping felt the power of three Chaos Qualifications inside his body. They were connected, bringing forth a terrifying power.

His sword was much more powerful than before, seemingly ready to cut the entire Ancestral Land of Chaos apart. Its sharpness could be felt from light years away.

The weapon contained so much Dao Power that it could invade memories and erase the target at a primary level.

Anyone hostile to Su Ping would have a sword aura grow inside their heart and would eventually die!

When the sword rose, it was unstoppable!

The peaceful Heavenly Dao's body transformed into a cavity of sorts, moving towards the sword like a sheath and instantly swallowing it. The power on the blade was quickly shattered and dispelled.

Su Ping changed his expression, not expecting such a powerful strike to be incapable of hurting the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

This attack was so powerful it could have instantly wounded another Sorcerer Ancestor!

A clone of the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was already terrifying!

“The power of three Chaos Qualifications is truly interesting,” said the peaceful-looking being with a smile. “However, they are just products from an old age. They will be gone when the Chaos Core is broken. Everything will be over soon.”



## Astral Pet Store

# Chapter 1549: Protracted Battle

“Come and fight me!”

Killing intent surged from Su Ping’s eyes. He said, “You’re the dragons’ ancestor and carry the Chaos Qualification. Let’s find out whether or not you deserve to be called the strongest dragon in all of existence!”

“As you wish!”

Yuan Long instantly turned around and charged, simply unleashing an overpowering aura. His enormous claws tore the void open and instantly reached the spot where Su Ping was.

The latter didn’t dodge; he instantly drew his sword. All his blood was burning. The illusion of the Golden Crow was vaguely manifesting in his back. He sacrificed his Golden Crow bloodline for more power.

“Three thousand universes, slash!!”

The thousands of universes behind Su Ping’s back exploded instantly, transforming into a terrifying power that was unleashed by his sword.

After a massive bang!

Yuan Long’s sharp claws—enhanced by the power of hundreds of universes—managed to block Su Ping’s attack. The edge of the sword produced dazzling sparks as it made contact with the scales.

Infuriated, Yuan Long roared. His aura turned into a concrete golden blast that pressed down on his enemy.

Su Ping’s hair was dangling under the pressure. All his muscles were trembling. He found it hard to endure the pressure, as if bearing the weight of millions of planets.

However, his three thousand universes recovered in a moment. He detonated them again, letting the violent power surge to slash furiously once again.

The golden dragon aura was torn apart after the opening was made, which was like the puncture of a sharp needle in a golden ocean.

Bang!

A stream of power surged from within and struck back, sending Su Ping flying.

The latter jumped. Dozens of universes exploded in his palm, then he swung a fist.

The fist tore the dragon aura to pieces and struck Yuan Long in the head.

Roar!!

Yuan Long burst into fury. Su Ping was just an ant in his eyes; however, the lad would somehow survive again and again.

The massive beast rotated and golden light was suddenly gathered in the void into, which then turned into Undying State-level Original Dragons. There were at least ten thousand of them!

Su Ping slightly changed his expression. They weren't real Original Dragons, but mere condensations produced with his universes.

"Dragon Enchantment!" Yuan Long roared. The ten thousand Undying State dragons also roared. Their bellowing was condensed into an ancient array, but that was more of an aggressive force field than an array. Normal lives would be obliterated once entering, even if they were in the Undying State.

Su Ping could sense that his flesh was being torn apart. Even the power of contract in his body was falling apart.

He gritted his teeth with bloodshot eyes, then detonated the three thousand universes and charged in one direction.

Whoosh!

He instantly approached the edge like a Golden Crow, instantly cutting apart dozens of Undying State Original Dragons as he slashed on furiously, creating an opening on the array for him to escape.

Hardly had he escaped the lethal array when a sharp claw descended from the sky and pressed Su Ping heavily, pushing him away.

He felt as if hit by a rushing universe, and found it impossible to control himself. Many things on his path broke, and then he was swallowed by excruciating pain.

Su Ping turned around and then saw Yuan Long's sharp claw pushing him all the way to the depths of the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

He wanted to resist it and stabilize himself. However, his opponent had infinite strength and he couldn't stop himself.

It felt like being pushed a light year away. He only stopped until something fiercely struck his chest, which made him vomit a mouthful of blood. He felt that something tough was on his chest.

He instantly noticed that it was an extremely thick and solid plate; made of rock, except it was unbelievably hard.

Phew!

Yuan Long's sharp claw kept on suppressing him, then the great dragon spurted a mouthful of flames all of a sudden. Su Ping was incapable of breaking free, as the claws contained infinite Dao power that restrained all his transformation methods. If not for this, he would have turned into particles to gather once again later.

There were a lot of flame-based Great Daos. Rotting, burning, imprisonment, sealing, destruction, and so on. The traits of thousands of

overlapping Great Daos were able to destroy any Undying State expert; even their souls would be gone. They would be completely annihilated from time and from memory.

However, golden ripples appeared and surrounded Su Ping.

Those ripples kept spreading—

They somehow blocked the flames.

Those ripples were in fact the power of exploding universes.

Su Ping was detonating the three thousand universes, one by one. Each second, dozens of universes were exploding and regenerating in cycles. The result was their power to flow nonstop like ripples, blocking the dragon flames.

The dragon flames contained too many Great Daos; they seemed to be sweeping as a whole, but they actually consisted of many frequencies. In simpler terms, it wasn't a simple, fierce attack, but one of a continuous nature.

The ripples made by Su Ping's exploding universes happened to suppress the ongoing attacks. He seemed to be affected by the flames, but the golden ripples protected him like water; he wasn't hurt in the slightest.

“Asshole!”

Yuan Long was infuriated. He was almost using his full strength, and Su Ping was still alive?

Su Ping's eyes were cold. Although suppressed by the claws and incapable of breaking free, he hoped that this would continue, all to buy himself more time.

However... He wasn't sure if the other species would be able to take care of the Heavenly Dao forces without his command.

Su Ping's heart was heavy, but the only thing he could do was hold Yuan Long back. It was impossible for him to kill it as he was.

The Dark Dragon Hound's voice sounded in Su Ping's head, "Boss, if the guy is condensing thousands of Great Daos to attack simultaneously, I have another method!"

That golden ripple defensive technique was developed by the former. The pet had been informed of the war in advance, so the fellow designed the technique based on Su Ping's condition, spending thousands of years perfecting it.

"Okay," Su Ping responded in his heart.

Yuan Long stopped his flame attacks at the moment, then suddenly opened its mouth to manifest a vortex that looked like a black hole, which darted towards Su Ping.

The latter's expression changed, as he could feel the infinite destructive power of that move. The golden ripples covering his body instantly turned into a golden cloak!

The garment was as soft as the fabric of a dress, seemingly gentle and soft, but using the power of three thousand universes.

The cloak floated to meet the enormous black vortex.

The latter was like a basketball scoring, except it was caught in the net. The cloak didn't rip open; it wrapped and blocked the black vortex.

However, the terrifying momentum of the black vortex struck Su Ping in the back, along with the golden cloak. He felt that his spine was broken, as if a planet made of lead had smashed into him. Such momentum could have killed lots of people in the Undying State.

Su Ping gritted his teeth after his back blocked the vortex's momentum, then summoned his strength, transforming the golden cloak into a giant hand that grabbed the black phenomenon and threw it back at Yuan Long..

Yuan Long slightly changed his expression, as he was shocked and infuriated. Su Ping's defense was too powerful; those two attacks should have been enough to kill him, yet he survived both of them.

Whoosh!

He moved his head a bit to dodge the black vortex. He kept pressing Su Ping down while saying, "Did Mother teach you all this?"

"Did your mother teach you all this?" Su Ping sneered and said, "Oh, a bastard like you probably doesn't have a mother. Not even animals would betray their mothers!"

"You're asking to be killed!"

Exasperated, Yuan Long suddenly clenched Su Ping and picked him up from the particularly hard rock. He rose higher and said, "I will rip you apart in front of those ants and show them your humble face!"

Su Ping's expression changed, quickly turning around to slash with his sword. However, his sharp weapon only left shallow marks on the scales, unable to cut them apart.

Chapter 1550: Reinforcement of Billions of Species (1)

Whoosh!

Yuan Long soared and carried Su Ping to the sky above the battlefield. It then roared, spreading his voice billions of kilometers into the distance. All the creatures on the battlefield could hear the loud bellowing.

The billions of species were utterly frightened, as if a demon were whispering directly into their ears. The overwhelming pressure made them want to kneel.

"Look, that's... the Human Dao Ancestor!"

"How is it possible..."



“The Dao Ancestor can’t beat the Original Dragons’ ancestor anyway. That’s a Sorcerer Ancestor...”

The Undying State experts saw how Su Ping was ensnared by the dragon claw. They all looked awful and desperate.

Su Ping was already strong enough. He had condensed three thousand universes into three thousand warships and was definitely the strongest, except for the Sorcerer Ancestors. However, was he still too weak compared to those existences begotten by chaos?

“Not even the Dao Ancestor can persist for much longer. Are we going to lose?”

“Father, mother...”

Someone lost their composure and cried. That roar had shattered countless lives. Millions of families were instantly destroyed!

There were oceans of blood all over that vast world.

“Brother!”

In the crowd—Su Lingyue saw the gargantuan figure and Su Ping in the sky, her face immediately turning pale. The next moment, she moved in a frenzy as she left the crowd and flew with the Moonfrost Dragon, the one his brother had trained, swiftly heading towards him.

Shen Huang noticed Su Lingyue’s movement and said in a hurry, “Come back. It’s dangerous!”

Su Ping had indeed said that it was unnecessary to pay special attention to his family, Shen Huang was his master; he couldn’t bear to see him making such sacrifices.

“Is Boss Su losing too...”

“We’re screwed. A Sorcerer Ancestor is defending this place. It’s impossible for us to win...”

“Bulls\*it! Stop being so pessimistic. Boss Su has been caught, so we’ll try to rescue him. Is there another way out for us in today’s battle? We’ll die, either fighting or slaughtered by staying idle. I would rather die after shedding the last drop of my blood!”

“That’s right. Follow me. Let’s rescue Boss Su as soon as possible!”

“Boss Su needs us too. He’s held the Sorcerer Ancestor back all this time. Now it’s our turn!”

“Charge!!”

Many human figures soared to the sky, forming giants made by military formations, and quickly flying towards Su Ping instead of fighting the Heavenly Dao forces.

Many Undying State experts of the other clans had also realized that Su Ping was the key to victory. It would be impossible for them to stop Yuan Long if Su Ping did die in battle.

Despair?

There was nothing left for them to abandon!

“Wolf Eagles, follow me!!”

“The Sky Ocean Clan is willing to die with you!!”

“Charge! There’s no way back! We can only move forward!”

“Save the Human Dao Ancestor! Hurry up!!”

The previously chaotic battlefield became even more turbulent. From the midst of billions of species, some military formations were formed and charged towards Su Ping, leaving the Heavenly Dao beings alone.

Some species covered each other neatly. Some were responsible for holding the humanoids back while the rest moved to offer Su Ping a hand.

Many figures emerged from the billions of species and moved in all directions on the vast territory.

Su Ping was flying in the high sky, still caught by Yuan Long's sharp claws. He saw the whole situation at ground level. He also noticed the figures going all out, bloodied.

He was stunned. His eyes were bloodshot despite his composure.

He didn't know those species well. Even their names and appearances were strange to him, even though they were comrades on the same battlefield. However, billions of species were moving to help him at that moment.

He also saw that some of the experts of the weaker clans were rushing over with the strongest people. The weaklings were left on the battlefield, who became a thin wall to block the Heavenly Dao. They were soon destroyed by the humanoids as they were left without the command of their Undying State experts.

Those clans abandoned their own people, all for him.

Su Ping gritted his teeth. He looked at the blossoming red petals on the ground. Each petal was an ocean of blood that stretched for millions of kilometers!

The remains of billions of species were soaked in an ocean of blood!

"Ha. Looks like those little ones are aware of your importance. They'll be loose sand if I kill you. In that case, let's just end this folly!"

Yuan Long sneered, then soared to the center of the battlefield and raised Su Ping to a high spot. It was even crueler as the torrents flooded towards him in all directions.

"Rot in hell!"

The ancient dragon exerted strength with indifference; thousands of universes exploded in his palm. Although mere illusions, those universes still released a terrifying power.

That power was released by the Chaos Qualification. It was fairly easy for Yuan Long.

But the next moment, Su Ping didn't burst to pieces while caught in the claw; he remained intact.

White bones were emanating dazzling light on Su Ping's body, like crystals. A brilliant, ancient array was etched on each bone, from which there was an emergence of strange patterns. Underneath those bones were golden ripples and slithering lightning bolts.

"Boss, we can do this!!" The Dark Dragon Hound's roar echoed in Su Ping's ears.

Red light glittered on the skull located on Su Ping's back, like bloody blades. The Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and all the other pets were achieving perfect cooperation, releasing their skills with Su Ping's strength, and establishing the ultimate defense!

Su Ping was overwhelmed by troubling feelings. He remained silent.

He had opened his body to the Little Skeleton and the others, and could also draw from his power. Such trust allowed him to perfectly fuse with his pets. All their power was gathered, blocking Yuan Long's full-strength attack!

Su Ping instantly saw hope.

As it turned out, he was strong enough to compete with Yuan Long, as long as he made the best use of his strength!

"Huh?!"

Yuan Long widened his eyes, with shock and fury. He sensed that his power was constantly diminishing. The white bones on Su Ping's body

actually contained the bloodlines of the Primitive Chaos Clan and the Golden Crows. The power of both clans strengthened those bones, while the golden ripples worked as a buffer to reduce the impact. He actually survived the attack!

“You’re asking to be killed!”

Yuan Long was rather infuriated since he was having trouble killing an ant!

He roared and released scales that were like sharp daggers towards Su Ping.

The latter didn’t wait to get killed, suddenly releasing the bones protecting him, which instantly turned into swords that were like the spines on a hedgehog, pushing the dragon claws away. He stomped and broke out of the claw prison.

“Dao Ancestor!”

“Boss Su!”

“Our Dao Ancestor is free!”

The billions of species were thrilled to see this happen. Some of the reinforcements had already died on the way over. At first, there were ten thousand of them, but only a few dozens of people with Dao Heart and Undying State cultivation remained. They had been desperate, but they were now overjoyed since they saw that Su Ping had broken free on his own.

“Dao Ancestor, we’ll fight by your side!”

“We will raise our swords and fight, even if we’re facing a Sorcerer Ancestor!” said the reinforcements with loud voices. They gathered behind Su Ping’s back, waiting for his orders. All of them were ready to die.

It was unlikely for them to survive the war, which made him become ruthless.

“Everyone...”

Su Ping didn't turn, yet he was able to see their faces. Based on human standards, many of those beings looked bizarre; they were more like monsters and beasts. However, their auras were deeply interconnected at the moment; the resonance of their souls could be detected.

Underneath those bizarre bodies were scorching and dazzling souls.

“Since we've already paid such an enormous price, please die with me!”  
Su Ping's voice was particularly dry and cold.



## Astral Pet Store –

### Chapter 1551 - Slaying the Dragon (1) -

Chapter 1551: Slaying the Dragon (1)

“We were already determined to die before we came. Please give us your orders, Dao Ancestor!” said an Undying State expert with a loud voice.

“Just say the word, Dao Ancestor. We will definitely comply!”

“Our clan was destroyed and our home was taken... We’ve got nothing to lose. Dao Ancestor, please lead us to a new life!”

Many more of the Undying State experts voiced their stance, all of them beaming with killing intent. They disliked war; however, they were deeply involved because of circumstance. Given their high cultivation, they had already realized they would die, whether they retreated or evaded. So, it would be better to fight for a chance to survive!

“All right!”

Su Ping nodded. He took a deep breath. He didn’t gather the Undying State experts sooner because he was concerned for their clans if they were relocated, to inevitably become cannon fodder due to lack of leadership. However, enough sacrifices had been made.

Su Ping said slowly, “Everyone, please lend me your strength!”

Three thousand universes appeared behind him, each forming a warship. His thoughts were transmitted to the others. “Everybody, please board the warships and fight with me!”

The experts were puzzled, but there was no time to ask questions, so they quickly complied.

Once entering the vessels, the effect of Su Ping’s Contract Dao Heart was spread throughout the warships, connecting to all their minds.

The experts instantly realized his purpose upon sensing the bonding will. The interaction of their souls was utterly smooth and perfect. The most genuine feelings were fused at the moment. All of them could feel Su Ping’s enormous anger and grief!

“Disciple...”

Amongst the crowd—Shen Huang and the other human experts had broken free and boarded the warships.

Even if the Dao Heart State beings weren't the strongest, they were still pillars on the battlefield.

All the fighters felt shocked upon sensing Su Ping's vast and enormous willpower, as well as his intense emotions. They never knew that their leader would have such an emotional heart, even after spending such a long time with him.

There was no hesitation; they chose to accept the bond at the fastest speed possible. They opened themselves without reserve, allowing Su Ping to use their power.

That power was at a level they had never dreamed of. As long as Su Ping was willing, he could deprive them of all their power with a thought, yet none of them hesitated.

More and more Undying State experts from all species arrived, and the three thousand warships were once more filled with people. The Contract Dao Heart power was spread in all the warships, and Su Ping could feel that many more scorching spots of light were connected to his soul, each belonging to an expert who had accepted the contract.

The surging power flowed and gathered like rivers. The power was so immense it was like the scorching sun. Su Ping's body was shaking; the power filled his limbs and internal organs.

Although unable to bond with the Ancestral Land of Chaos, his aura was rising at an unimaginable speed because of the external surge of strength.

“Huh?”

Yuan Long instantly noticed Su Ping's change. Being one of the masters of the Great Dao, he was easily able to reason out what was happening; there was disdain in his eyes. “Ants will always be ants. You think you can resist me just by working together?”

He dove and charged at Su Ping again, ready to tear him apart in front of everyone.

There was more power gathered in Su Ping's body than ever before. He roared loudly and slashed with his sword.

An infinite amount of power was extracted from the three thousand warships. The sword aura seemed to be powerful enough to cut chaos itself apart. There was a boom; Su Ping's sword left a cut in Yuan Long's head and forced his enormous body to a stop!

Yuan Long roared furiously. Su Ping's sword was as small as a toothpick in his eyes. However, he now felt that he had struck an iron plate, which shocked and infuriated him. Su Ping's strength was actually threatening to him at the moment.



“You’re just ants. What can you possibly do, even if there are many of you?!” Yuan Long roared. A flattened, black vortex suddenly appeared next to his chest; the time and space within seemed twisted. An unknown aura suddenly wrapped Su Ping and the three thousand warships, isolating them from the battlefield. It was Yuan Long’s Dragon Prison!

Su Ping felt somewhat dazed. Back at the site, he had been trapped in the Dragon Prison by the system. Everything was an illusion controlled by the system, as if deliberately showing him all those things in the Remains of High Heavens.

He was now in the real Dragon Prison.

However, it felt no different from the one he had seen in the cultivation site.

If anything, it was even weaker.

“This thing cannot stop me!”

Su Ping coldly swung his sword. The dazzling sword aura immediately slashed open a million prison floors. None of the Great Daos which made them were able to resist.

His sword went high into the sky and deep down into the bottom of the Dragon Prison. The auras of the imprisoned mythical creatures were revealed as the deepest part of the prison was cut open. There were actually Undying State creatures from the other Sorcerer Ancestors’ bloodlines.

“What’s going on?”

“The Dragon Prison... has been broken?”

Some of the mythical creatures had been sleeping, while others were merely thinking. However, all were woken up by the loud noises. The brilliant sword aura was like the first ray of light cutting chaos open, illuminating their long and lonely lives.

Chapter 1552: Slaying the Dragon (2)

“We were already determined to die before we came. Please give us your orders, Dao Ancestor!” said an Undying State expert with a loud voice.

“Just say the word, Dao Ancestor. We will definitely comply!”

“Our clan was destroyed and our home was taken... We’ve got nothing to lose. Dao Ancestor, please lead us to a new life!”

Many more of the Undying State experts voiced their stance, all of them beaming with killing intent. They disliked war; however, they were deeply involved because of

circumstance. Given their high cultivation, they had already realized they would die, whether they retreated or evaded. So, it would be better to fight for a chance to survive!

“All right!”

Su Ping nodded. He took a deep breath. He didn't gather the Undying State experts sooner because he was concerned for their clans if they were relocated, to inevitably become cannon fodder due to lack of leadership. However, enough sacrifices had been made.

Su Ping said slowly, “Everyone, please lend me your strength!”

Three thousand universes appeared behind him, each forming a warship. His thoughts were transmitted to the others. “Everybody, please board the warships and fight with me!”

The experts were puzzled, but there was no time to ask questions, so they quickly complied.

Once entering the vessels, the effect of Su Ping's Contract Dao Heart was spread throughout the warships, connecting to all their minds.

The experts instantly realized his purpose upon sensing the bonding will. The interaction of their souls was utterly smooth and perfect. The most genuine feelings were fused at the moment. All of them could feel Su Ping's enormous anger and grief!

“Disciple...”

Amongst the crowd—Shen Huang and the other human experts had broken free and boarded the warships.

Even if the Dao Heart State beings weren't the strongest, they were still pillars on the battlefield.

All the fighters felt shocked upon sensing Su Ping's vast and enormous willpower, as well as his intense emotions. They never knew that their leader would have such an emotional heart, even after spending such a long time with him.

There was no hesitation; they chose to accept the bond at the fastest speed possible. They opened themselves without reserve, allowing Su Ping to use their power.

That power was at a level they had never dreamed of. As long as Su Ping was willing, he could deprive them of all their power with a thought, yet none of them hesitated.

More and more Undying State experts from all species arrived, and the three thousand warships were once more filled with people. The Contract Dao Heart power was spread

in all the warships, and Su Ping could feel that many more scorching spots of light were connected to his soul, each belonging to an expert who had accepted the contract.

The surging power flowed and gathered like rivers. The power was so immense it was like the scorching sun. Su Ping's body was shaking; the power filled his limbs and internal organs.

Although unable to bond with the Ancestral Land of Chaos, his aura was rising at an unimaginable speed because of the external surge of strength.

"Huh?"

Yuan Long instantly noticed Su Ping's change. Being one of the masters of the Great Dao, he was easily able to reason out what was happening; there was disdain in his eyes. "Ants will always be ants. You think you can resist me just by working together?"

He dove and charged at Su Ping again, ready to tear him apart in front of everyone.

There was more power gathered in Su Ping's body than ever before. He roared loudly and slashed with his sword.

An infinite amount of power was extracted from the three thousand warships. The sword aura seemed to be powerful enough to cut chaos itself apart. There was a boom; Su Ping's sword left a cut in Yuan Long's head and forced his enormous body to a stop!

Yuan Long roared furiously. Su Ping's sword was as small as a toothpick in his eyes. However, he now felt that he had struck an iron plate, which shocked and infuriated him. Su Ping's strength was actually threatening to him at the moment.

"You're just ants. What can you possibly do, even if there are many of you?!" Yuan Long roared. A flattened, black vortex suddenly appeared next to his chest; the time and space within seemed twisted. An unknown aura suddenly wrapped Su Ping and the three thousand warships, isolating them from the battlefield. It was Yuan Long's Dragon Prison!

Su Ping felt somewhat dazed. Back at the site, he had been trapped in the Dragon Prison by the system. Everything was an illusion controlled by the system, as if deliberately showing him all those things in the Remains of High Heavens.

He was now in the real Dragon Prison.

However, it felt no different from the one he had seen in the cultivation site.

If anything, it was even weaker.

"This thing cannot stop me!"

Su Ping coldly swung his sword. The dazzling sword aura immediately slashed open a million prison floors. None of the Great Daos which made them were able to resist.

His sword went high into the sky and deep down into the bottom of the Dragon Prison. The auras of the imprisoned mythical creatures were revealed as the deepest part of the prison was cut open. There were actually Undying State creatures from the other Sorcerer Ancestors' bloodlines.

"What's going on?"

"The Dragon Prison... has been broken?"

Some of the mythical creatures had been sleeping, while others were merely thinking. However, all were woken up by the loud noises. The brilliant sword aura was like the first ray of light cutting chaos open, illuminating their long and lonely lives.

#### Chapter 1553: Everything Can Be Tamed (1)

Su Ping's eyes were like sharp blades. He didn't make a move to retreat, as he never intended to. He had to fight!

Bang!

Su Ping suddenly took action. The violent power in his body burst out like a nuclear explosion. The joint force of the universes of experts from billions of species was condensed into one point. It was so dazzling it was impossible to look straight at it.

The two dazzling lights clashed. It was like chaos reopening once more. All sounds were gone.

The destructive power was imposed on Su Ping, cutting him to pieces. All his flesh was collapsing and leaving his bones. His body had drawn the power of all those experts; he had to endure the blast.

He felt that death was near, as he was losing control of his body. However, exactly at that moment, his body began to move on its own. It was the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets controlling his body.

"Boss, hang in there!" the Dark Dragon Hound said anxiously.

The Inferno Dragon's voice spread out. "The boss blocked the attack on his own to protect us. Is that the Chaos Qualification? It's truly powerful. Should we snatch it?"

"Did you notice that the old dragon was weak for a moment? The best chance to kill it is when it uses the Chaos Qualification!" said the Lightning Rat with an intense killing intent.

“We must lure it to attack again, then we will snatch it from the place beyond time!” said the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon.

“I will control Master!” said the Little Skeleton with a young and firm voice.

Their communication was brief. Had Yuan Long overheard the conversation, he would probably be furious enough to vomit blood. Not only was Su Ping unafraid, even his normal Undying State kids actually wanted to kill him too. Was a Sorcerer Ancestor no longer intimidating?

Boom!

Su Ping’s body acted again and sent out powerful thoughts, borrowing power from all the experts and the mythical creatures that bonded with Su Ping. This time, even more power was borrowed, and the Little Skeleton was controlling the body; it didn’t know the billions of species nor the Heavenly Dao. It only cared about Su Ping. So, it moved while ignoring the lives and deaths of others.

Due to the violent absorption, both the experts and the mythical creatures felt they were about to be sucked dry!

However, they also saw the outcome of Su Ping’s clash with the Sorcerer Ancestor. He didn’t win, yet he didn’t die, either!

It was already unbelievable to see he could survive after one of that overlord’s attacks.

All of them became excited, noticing how Su Ping was seriously borrowing their power. There was hope if their power could really enable him to fight the Sorcerer Ancestor!

“A\*\*\*ole!!”

Yuan Long was seething because Su Ping was still alive. Using the Chaos Qualification to kill an ant was already humiliating, and yet it wasn’t enough!

He completely lost his cool as he roared and charged at the human. The Chaos Qualification was emitting infinite light on his forehead, seemingly about to collapse the entire world.

“Billions of souls will condense on the edge of my sword. Slash!!”

The Little Skeleton was controlling Su Ping’s body. The bones covering his master’s head were turning red, and his eyes were bloodshot, too. He was emanating the intense aura of death. All the dead souls on the battlefield gathered around him to form a dark sword, containing the power of both the living and the dead. The attack would eclipse the sun.

Boom!!

The brilliant sword aura slashed out, seemingly ready to cut the whole world apart. Not even the Ancestral Land of Chaos could block the shining of that sword.

There was a deafening explosion. The terrifying blast razed the land within a range of a billion kilometers. Fortunately, all the experts in the area had been absorbed into Su Ping's three thousand warships, except for the Heavenly Dao forces and were unaffected. Otherwise, even Undying State beings would have been obliterated by such bombardment!

A furious roar resounded. The experts on the warships witnessed the most unbelievable scene. The legendary ancestor they could only look up to was wounded!

There was a long black gash on Yuan Long's head. Dark flames were still burning over it, making it look hideous and scary.

The agony nearly made the ancient dragon go on a rampage. The twelve Sorcerer Ancestors were good at different things. For instance, Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que was the fastest, the Golden Crow ancestor was able to burn everything, while Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu had the hardest universe. As for Yuan Long, he was the most ferocious. His combat ability would double when infuriated. Even the other Sorcerer Ancestors would have to hide.

Su Ping had made him completely furious.

Being the strongest dragon of all and the ancestor of all beasts, not only did it have the power and methods of all beasts; it also had a ferocity and wild nature no other beast had!

Roar!

Yuan Long's scales were so red they were almost black. The wound and the flames on his body were instantly suppressed. He moved and roared, diving to attack once again.

This time, he was twice as fast!

"Oh no!"

"Damn it, this bastard is angry!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound.

Crimson light was glittering in the Little Skeleton's eyes. None of the pets were as young and ignorant as they used to be. They had fought many battles with Su Ping, and were brave warriors!

They were all the best in terms of combat ability, skills, experience and reaction abilities!

Also, they were much more mature than before, having shed most of their naive selves.

That was exactly why the Little Skeleton knew that no matter how relentless and angry it was, it wasn't able to block the old dragon's strike. The gap between them was too wide!

Chapter 1554: Everything Can Be Tamed (2)

The little one wasn't just fighting instinctively like before. There was more rationality.

Its rational mind was telling to run away, right then!

There was no turning back.

Because there was only a mob of billions supporting them.

However, the Little Skeleton didn't care about that. It only had to ensure Su Ping's safety!

Just as when the small fellow was about to control Su Ping's body to retreat, a thought was suddenly relayed. Su Ping's gentle voice echoed in the Little Skeleton's head. "You did a good job. Now, let's do this together!"

The little one was dazed. Even though it was at the moment transformed into protective bones to cover Su Ping, it had the feeling of being embraced by its master.

While fused in a body filled with power, Su Ping's will was surrounding and protecting it.

"Everyone, are you willing to sacrifice yourselves for me!"

Su Ping's voice resounded, echoing throughout the three thousand warships.

Inside the vessels, the experts from billions of species and the mythical creatures bonded with him saw Yuan Long's terrifying appearance once it was angered. The pressure was so overwhelming that they were suffocating, despite the protection offered by the ships.

Su Ping's body was standing before them, as tiny as a bug compared to Yuan Long!

Even so, he was determined to shake the giant!

All of a sudden, a thought was transmitted with infinite indignity and fury. "Yes!"

"We're willing to serve you!"

"We're willing to die for you!!"

Without words, they understood Su Ping's thoughts and determination through their bond.

Aside from his astonishing combat ability, they had also sensed his sadness. They knew; not only would Su Ping die if they backed off, they would all be killed by the furious Yuan Long.

"We will give you the last bit of our power in our scalding blood!"

"I'm the only one left of my clan, but I will die without regret!!"

"I will make another contribution to the Dao Ancestor with this weak body of mine!!"

"Dao Ancestor, you must win! Ughhhhhhhh!!"

Inside the three thousand warships—the experts of billions of species burned their lives. Their immortality was instantly burnt to the maximum, releasing a power that surpassed the explosion of universes!

When seen from a distance, the massive ships were enshrouded in abundant flames of vitality!

The mythical creatures riding on the warships that hadn't established a contract were dumbfounded by the behavior of billions of inferior creatures. They actually had the ambition to fight a Sorcerer Ancestor with everything they had!

Many Dao Heart experts burned all their power and vitality, turning into a blazing stream of light. Their bodies were utterly deformed, leaving only spheres with power. Their sentience was quickly extinguished as Su Ping borrowed their power. Only their last wishes lingered!

"You have to win!!" roars were echoing throughout the world.

Su Ping's eyes were wet, but he didn't look back. He clenched his fists and absorbed all of their power. His body was almost about to explode. He looked at Yuan Long who was charging furiously, and then dashed forward like a madman.

Roar!!

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and all his other pets charged alongside him.

Black lightning tore the world apart. Su Ping's body reached the ancient dragon in an instant. The moment when their furious and resentful eyes clashed seemed eternal.

Then, both parties unleashed their fiercest and most brutal attacks.



“Ahhhhhhhh!!”

Su Ping swung his sword with reckless abandon. His sword auras contained the power of all the Great Daos.

Yuan Long roared furiously, also attacking in a frenzied state. They clashed, both receiving numerous wounds.

Dense sword marks appeared on Yuan Long's body, and Su Ping was already covered in blood!

“Go to hell!!”

Su Ping jumped to Yuan Long's head and sat on top. He brutally stabbed it with his sword. Then, a few arms that looked like sharp claws emerged from both sides of his body; they slashed crazily, ripping scales.

“Hooooooooooooo!”

Yuan Long roared with anger, struggling, yet unable to get rid of Su Ping for the moment.

Su Ping kept on slashing, and the dragon was finally unable to hold back. The Chaos Qualification on its forehead flew towards Su Ping like an illusion.

However, there was a crazy glint on Su Ping's scary face at the moment. He simply ignored the Chaos Qualification attacking him and condensed a gigantic sword to slash at Yuan Long's head!

“Have you lost your mind?”

Yuan Long was truly shocked at the moment, sweating, even. That was a feeling he had only experienced when he fought against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. He couldn't even feel anger anymore.

Su Ping was actually unafraid of death, and simply wanted to go down with him!

However, there was no time for him to summon the Chaos Qualification.

The sword passed by, severing the enormous dragon head; his chaos blood was sprayed in a million kilometers.

The scene seemed eternal!

The experts in the three thousand warships along with the mythical creatures were too shocked to speak.

Su Ping... actually did it!

He beheaded the enemy!

Even though the strike wasn't enough to kill Yuan Long, it was already an unbelievable miracle!

Since the dawn of time, the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors had been above all other creatures. The gap in between was simply insurmountable. However, just then, Su Ping had managed to cut Yuan Long's head with everyone's help!

Chapter 1555: Everything Can Be Tamed (3)

“Dao Ancestor!!”

“There's a chance! There really is a chance!!”

Inside the three thousand warships—the experts of all species had hot tears running down their faces. Even though they had cultivated for hundreds of thousands of years and were exceptionally calm all the time, they couldn't contain themselves at that moment.

“Go to hell!!!”

Su Ping didn't stop; he turned around and grabbed the dragon head. He could feel Yuan Long's powerful soul inside, as well as the Chaos Qualification aura.

An idea suddenly occurred to him. Is it possible to bond with the Chaos Qualification?!

Everything could be trained. Everything was alive. In that case, everything could be bound by a contract!

A dazzling light emanated from Su Ping's eyes as he considered the idea, thinking it was worth a shot to try. There was an extreme risk, because the Chaos Qualification belonged to Yuan Long. Making the attempt was tantamount with clashing head-on with Yuan Long at the soul level!

There was just a moment of hesitation; Su Ping made up his mind and his consciousness simply invaded the dragon head.

He was soon able to sense the chaotic bestowal inside.

His bonding power was spread out within, quickly detecting a ripple of resistance in the depths of that terrifying power.

Su Ping knew it was the consciousness of the Chaos Qualification itself.

However, that consciousness was unlike that of any ordinary life; it was more of a specific signal frequency.

Su Ping had traveled to many worlds and seen all kinds of faces, though, and was ready to accept everything.

He sent out his thoughts and touched the Chaos Qualification with the power of contract.

“What are you doing? Get the hell out of here!!” Yuan Long’s thoughts roared in his mind.

Su Ping felt that his mind was trembling and his body was falling apart.

He gritted his teeth and said, “I want you to die!”

“You think you deserve to lay claim to the Chaos Qualification?!” roared Yuan Long. Su Ping sensed that countless dragons were invading his mind, and biting him in a frenzy.

However, roars echoed just then.

The Dark Dragon Hound, the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and all the other pets jumped into his mind and charged at those dragons ferociously.

“You think you deserve to be the ancestor of all dragons? You should just be the lamb you are and let my boss ride you. That would be the best outcome for you!” shouted the Dark Dragon Hound.

“Wanna hurt my master? Over my dead body!” bellowed the Inferno Dragon.

Without a word, the Little Skeleton summoned ghosts of thousands of warriors to fight the dragons.

Yuan Long was angered to such a degree that he almost broke his neck. This was happening inside his mind, and could directly understand what the pets were saying, which made him even angrier.

“Die! Die!”

Yuan Long attacked crazily. The illusory dragons roared and shattered the silhouettes of the Dark Dragon Hound and the others. However, they were reconstituted swiftly; they could be reborn in Su Ping’s mind as long as they weren’t completely destroyed.

Su Ping resisted the attacks with a gloomy attitude. Alas, he discovered that Yuan Long’s mind was horrifyingly strong, even without the Chaos Qualification. The ghostly

soul power was like a heavy planet, while he only had a shovel; it would take forever for him to dig through the planet.

“Guys, I need you to help me block it!” Su Ping relayed with a thought. He couldn’t act on his own at the moment, and could only rely on the power of others.

Upon perceiving the request, the experts of the billions of species acted without hesitation. They simply entered Su Ping’s mind through their bond and fought the illusory dragons.

“Dao Ancestor, leave this task to us!”

“Dao Ancestor, just give us a command!”

Billions of experts flooded the mindspace. Gathered by the power of contract, they almost shared each other’s minds, knowing what everybody was thinking without saying a word.

Su Ping didn’t speak. He could feel their determination, which contained too many things.

He seized the chance to extend the power of contract to the Chaos Qualification, and was soon able to tap into it.

Upon contact, he also sensed the actual will of the Chaos Qualification. Ferocity, wildness, madness, bloodthirst... All kinds of negative emotions consumed him.

That Chaos Qualification was like a maddened dragon; even more short-tempered than Yuan Long.

Su Ping felt that his contract power was like a thin web trying to catch an enormous crocodile struggling hard.

“Be still! Now!!”

Su Ping gritted his teeth. His mind also went a little crazy, as the Chaos Qualification also aimed to seep into him. If this continued, he would become a slave and lose himself.

His eyes were bloodshot as he released the power of contract with full strength. He tried to communicate with the Chaos Qualification and borrow its power, but all that he got was anger and agitation.

The gap in willpower is too great. I can’t subdue it... Su Ping felt sad, and the mood turned into fury, influenced by the Chaos Qualification. He knew he would have to kill

Yuan Long first if the power couldn't be subdued. However, the latter still had the power of the Chaos Qualification and couldn't be killed; he could barely be defeated.

As such, the quick attack strategy would fail.

I cannot fail... Su Ping was so exasperated he was on the verge of losing control.

At that moment, Su Ping suddenly heard the Little Skeleton's voice.

"Master!

"Master, calm down. You can do this!" said the Little Skeleton.

"That's right. Boss, you can do this. You once defeated a Celestial beast when you were only an Ascendant!"

"Master, I believe in you! You can do this!" said the Inferno Dragon.

"Master..."

"Master..."

The voices of the Purple Python and the Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon were heard, and with them came their faith.

It was like having your head doused with cold water. Su Ping was instantly woken up, although he felt dazed for a moment. He didn't know how they managed to break Yuan Long's shackles, but they reminded him of many, many things.

Compared to other Undying State beings, he had only cultivated for 10,000 years.

However, he had experienced many things during that time span. He met a lot of people and tamed lots of pets.

Some of the pets he tamed were ill-tempered; others were timid, vigilant, and some of them were cunning.

Aside from being a warrior, he was also the best pet trainer there was!

Su Ping took a deep breath and calmed down, dispelling the killing intent and agitation in his heart. He transmitted his will and the contract power with a relaxed attitude.

The system never told me how the Chaos Qualification came to be, I suppose it used to be part of the system... Su Ping's eyes glittered. His aura and appearance quickly changed.

Very soon, while harnessing the will of the contract bond, he transformed to resemble the Mother of Chaos.

He had spent a long time interacting with the system. Besides, Su Ping was still the system's host and could precisely simulate the system's aura.

"You..."

Yuan Long trembled. Deep inside his skull—he could feel an aura he couldn't be more familiar with.

However, he soon realized that the aura wasn't real and the Mother of Chaos wasn't truly there.

He would have no choice but to escape if that were true.

Chapter 1556: The Strongest Dragon Ever (1)

Upon realizing Su Ping's plan to rob the Chaos Qualification, Yuan Long became so angry he roared, "Don't even think about it..."

The fellow was actually trying to rob the Chaos Qualification while he was alive. It was crazy!

However, there was a strong feeling of crisis.

The dragon let out a long sounding roar, the violent power turning into countless illusory dragons and tried to tear Su Ping's mind to pieces.

However, the consciousnesses of the experts were fighting the illusory dragons in Su Ping's mind. More and more experts joined the fight. Even though it was impossible to eliminate the invading dragons, they managed to resist them!

At the same time, while in front of the Chaos Qualification—

Su Ping, who had transformed into the system, released his aura and willpower through the contract.

"I too believe that you crave to return to your mother's arms.

"If not for the familial bond, to gather is still in the nature of every living creature!

"Come home!"

Su Ping reached out and touched the Chaos Qualification; the violent and bloodthirsty willpower didn't affect him. His motion was determined as he laid a hand on that ancestor power.

Instantly, the killing intent surged tenfold and was about to consume him.

This time, he didn't resist. He accepted this ominous power.

A violent aura rose from his body, as his eyes gradually turned bloodshot and brutal. Very soon, the Chaos Qualification seeped into Su Ping's hand, gradually fusing with his body.

"No!" Yuan Long roared furiously.

The dragon's willpower turned into a wild chaos dragon as he tried to fight for the Chaos Qualification. However, an amazing scene happened. A mighty torrent was manifested, shattering his willpower.

"This is impossible!!" Yuan Long was shocked.

He was actually rejected by the Chaos Qualification, one that had been with him for ages?

It was also the first time he had sensed the violent and brutal power from the Chaos Qualification against him!

The Chaos Qualification seemed to be alive!

The dragon had never regarded the Chaos Qualification as an equal, only thinking of it as a treasure, or some sort of bestowal. That was exactly why he was dumbfounded once he sensed the Chaos Qualification's thought.

All the illusory dragons invading Su Ping's mind started to fall apart as the fusion progressed!

At the same time—the experts from the billions of species also felt the enormous pressure and an indescribable fear, as if heralding the arrival of something horrid.

The next moment, they were all evicted from Su Ping's mind by an unknown force.

"A\*\*\*ole!!" Yuan Long roared furiously.

He stared at Su Ping who was emitting an overwhelming killing intent at the moment. The latter's terrifying aura made him shiver and even angrier than before.

Even the Heavenly Dao had failed to rob him of his Chaos Qualification. And yet, Su Ping somehow did it!

Soon after, he noticed that the human's aura became strange and unpredictable.

Before him, there were countless Great Daos, circling and displaying the world in its original appearance. Su Ping was neither in the shape of a human, nor of a mythical being; rather, he was an object with an indescribable look.

That was Su Ping's real appearance at the moment, without an outer image.

However, in the deepest part of said appearance was a glittering Chaos Qualification!

Yuan Long immediately understood.

Su Ping hadn't really robbed the Chaos Qualification; the latter had voluntarily fused with Su Ping, as it considered him as the perfect container.

That was the reason why the Chaos Qualification had voluntarily chosen him!

Therefore, it was no longer Su Ping the one standing there, but the Chaos Qualification!

That was the Chaos Qualification's real purpose!

It would gain real independence through Su Ping, and become the strongest existence, completely unrestrained!

"Damn you, bastard, you should die!"

Yuan Long was furious. Su Ping was already dead, possessed by the nascent entity. It was fine that Su Ping died, but he had freed the Chaos Qualification.

Boom!

Exactly at that moment, Su Ping suddenly dashed over with a terrifying sword condensed in his hand. He then attacked with a slash.

The edge of the sword was so brilliant that it looked like the gathering of a billion lightning bolts, arriving in an instant.

Yuan Long had already been cut apart the moment he saw the edge!

Boom. His enormous body turned into billions of pieces!

It was a simple glitter of the sword, and his body collapsed into pieces the size of dust particles.



His mind and soul was torn apart along with his body.

“No, you cannot do this!” Yuan Long roared in shock and fury. However, he now sensed that he could no longer enter a berserk state again, to double his combat power and improve his resistance to damage. He then realized he had been defeated; fury was replaced with fear!

That was the second time he had known what fear was!

The first time was when he faced the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

This time, he was even more frightened than before.

He then received the second sword slash.

The edge of the sword passed through, shattering the Great Dao and striking the origin of matter. Yuan Long’s body was torn to pieces again.

This time, it was total obliteration!

All the dust particles disappeared as the sword passed. It was absolute nothingness. Not even dirt remained.

Yuan Long, who had existed for countless years, was permanently wiped out from the world.

“I think something disappeared just now.”

“Yes, it’s something utterly terrifying.”

“Was it the enemy?”

On the battlefield—the experts from the billions of species and the mythical creatures were shocked and suspicious. They looked at the void but couldn’t see a thing. They couldn’t even recall what used to be there, either.

Yuan Long’s appearance had been erased from their memories. Not even the Undying State experts could retain the memory.

In the void—

Su Ping, with sword in hand, slowly turned around. The next moment, he raised it and swung again.

The Heavenly Dao humanoids on the battlefield suddenly raised their heads and looked at Su Ping.

Then, an indescribable power swept across the battlefield.

In the blink of an eye, countless members of the Heavenly Dao exploded.

The sword aura stretched for billions of kilometers into the Ancestral Land of Chaos. All the Heavenly Dao fighters on its way were destroyed!

The experts of all species were shocked by this. Is this the power of the Human Dao Ancestor?!

The sword was gone, but the bloodthirst didn't leave Su Ping's eyes. He whispered, "I can give you the freedom you want, but you must help me win this war first!"

Su Ping's expression changed to that of a gloomy and angry mood, and said, "Bastard, you'd better keep your promise!"

"I'm always a man of my word!" replied Su Ping, his expression changing once again, now calm and cold.

"All right!" he said with a sullen tone, "If you dare to trick me, you will end up exactly like he did!"

There was no other reply, and the red light in his eyes was gone. He took a deep breath and gathered a ball of light in his palm.

With a thought, he summoned the Dark Dragon Hound and his other pets.

"Boss!"

"Master!"

All the pets were relieved and delighted to see that Su Ping was fine. "That old dragon is finally dead!"

Yuan Long had been wiped out from the memories of the experts of the allied species. However, they shared Su Ping's memories through their contract, so they didn't forget his grand feat in the terrifying battle just then.

Su Ping gave them a slight nod. He then summoned the Inferno Dragon.

"This is the Chaos Qualification. You can keep it for now," said Su Ping, staring at the latter, "I promised that I would make you the strongest dragon in the world. It was an arrogant declaration back then, but I've fulfilled it."

All the pets shivered at the sight of the brilliant Chaos Qualification, then looked at Su Ping in disbelief.

Shocked, the Inferno Dragon asked, "M-Master, are you giving it to me?"

It was no longer the naive pet of the past. Having fought by Su Ping's side for ten thousand years, it was fully aware of that power's significance.

The dragon would transcend chaos with such an item. Even if the Heavenly Dao won and restarted all chaos, it would still live an eternal life.

"There's no need to be so uptight. What's mine is yours, and what's yours is mine," said Su Ping with a smile.

The dragon pet sensed Su Ping's determination and shivered. It had perceived Su Ping's feelings before, yet it was still touched by its master's behavior. That was a Chaos Qualification!

Su Ping clapped his hands and simply pushed the Chaos Qualification into the dragon's body. From that day forth, the Inferno Dragon would replace Yuan Long as the new Sorcerer Ancestor.

As for the Chaos Qualification's request after the war, it was a matter that could be talked over in the future.

After all, it was still unknown whether they could win the war or not.

Su Ping looked into the distance with worry in his eyes as he thought about this. The battle had taken too long; he didn't know the situation where the system and the other Sorcerer Ancestors were.

"We must get this over with and meet with them!" said Su Ping.

The Little Skeleton, the Dark Dragon Hound and the other pets nodded. Then, they gave the Inferno Dragon envious looks. It wasn't jealousy, just pure envy.

The Inferno Dragon was already unable to say a word. It was being suffused by the power of the Chaos Qualification and its body was undergoing unprecedented changes.

Very soon, a vast and abundant aura emanated from its body.

Its body was as boundless as a galaxy. The dragon looked down at the world with eyes that looked like stars; the terrifying pressure radiated made all creatures bend.

"Master, I..." The Inferno Dragon was still having trouble believing that all that was real.

It had just sensed that Su Ping's contract could be reversed using its newfound powers!

The pet was unaware if Su Ping knew this. This meant that Su Ping had completely entrusted his life into its hands. If it wanted to, it could easily control Su Ping's life!

"No need to talk. Just keep fighting with me!" Su Ping chuckled and jumped onto its head.

"That's right. If Boss is giving it to you, just accept it. It's just a mere Chaos Qualification. We'll get more!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound excitedly. It also jumped to the Inferno Dragon's head; the former's gargantuan body was only the size of one of the Inferno Dragon's scales.

The Inferno Dragon no longer spoke, already knowing its master's thoughts through their bond. There was no need to talk.

Coiling on the Inferno Dragon's head, the Purple Python asked curiously, "Master, how did you get the Chaos Qualification? It shouldn't be so easy, right?"

It was more difficult to rob a living Sorcerer Ancestor of its Chaos Qualification than to kill them!

Su Ping smiled but didn't offer an answer.

The Chaos Qualification was quite cunning. It had intended to use his body as a container and turn him into a puppet.

However, the item didn't know that his body didn't completely belong to himself.

That's right. The bond between him and the system had never changed.

He was still the system's host at the moment.

In a sense, the system was also his master.

There was also a contract between him and the system!

If the Chaos Qualification wanted to occupy his body, it was essentially the same as destroying the contract and stealing him from the system.

Su Ping didn't think that the system would lose to the Chaos Qualification; that was why he dared to take a chance. As a result, the Chaos Qualification failed, and could only choose to stay in his body or somewhere else.

It was obviously a smart entity, realizing that it would surely be imprisoned by the Heavenly Dao if the Ancestral Land of Chaos was taken over.

Perhaps it was better to just stay with evidently weaker Su Ping as things stood.

Yuan Long had been killed. The Heavenly Dao garrison was destroyed, and Su Ping was going to meet with his allies.

Before setting off, he looked at the billions of species and noticed a lot of vacant spots on the three thousand warships. There had been myriads of beings who had taken those spots and fought by his side.

Those beings had burned their lives and were completely gone after fighting in the previous battle.

He then looked at the billions of kilometers up ahead, only seeing red, green, golden, purple and other colors blossoming everywhere in the vast Ancestral Land of Chaos.

Those were the colors of blood from the billions of species.

Even though their bloodlines were different and their blood color wasn't the same, they had been buried in the same battlefield.

The experts who left their clan members and moved as reinforcements resulted in heavy losses among their clansmen. There was an infinite number of corpses that was no less scary than the darkest Chaotic Realm of the Undead.

Su Ping took a deep breath. He activated the warships and said to the remaining experts, "Everyone, get ready to meet with our allies!"

"Yes, sir!"

The experts on the warships were excited, especially when they saw the Inferno Dragon below. They didn't know why Su Ping's pet had suddenly become so terrifying, but it was a good thing for them anyway.

Inside the warships—many experts simply sat down and took a good rest to heal their wounds. They didn't have any fellow clansmen left and they had nothing to prepare. They only needed to adjust themselves for the next battle!

Su Ping dropped a hint at the Inferno Dragon.

The Inferno Dragon instantly understood. While working with Su Ping's three thousand warships, it instantly attracted all the remnants of the billions of species to Su Ping's universes.

Those people's wounds were quickly healed the moment they boarded the warships.

The heavily wounded and close to dying had even recuperated to their prime status; only their armor remained bloodstained.

Su Ping paid special attention to the human tribe and saw that his parents and Su Lingyue were still alive, which gave him great relief. He knew that they were ready to sacrifice themselves and he was prepared to endure their deaths, he still felt happy to see them alive and well.

However, he noticed that many familiar faces were gone from the human crowd.

For example, Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other pillars of humanity.

The same went for Qin Duhuang and other members of the Qin family that he knew from the Blue Planet.

Su Ping's eyes glittered in silence. Once everyone was relocated to his three thousand universes, he turned around and asked the Inferno Dragon to fly onward.

The latter leaped across the battlefield at lightning speed. Only the sound of the three thousand warships trailing behind could be heard.

The images at ground level became vague, mottled pieces as they moved forward. Even though the dragon pet wasn't as fast as Yin Que, it had become a Sorcerer Ancestor and could fly at ten times the speed of sound, even in the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

That was a power that could barely be understood with the original concepts of physics. Su Ping sensed that the aura of chaos was increasingly abundant as he pressed deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

What puzzled him was that he saw no signs of the Heavenly Dao on the rest of the journey.

Considering normal defense tactics, a garrison was usually set at certain distances to make sure no one could go in.

Was the Heavenly Dao so confident that nobody could pass the first line of defense? Or were there other reasons?

Very soon, Su Ping was able to sense a few powerful auras gathered further ahead. He narrowed his eyes and focused, instantly making those auras clearer. It was the system, Yin Que and other Sorcerer Ancestors.

"That's... Yuan Long's Chaos Qualification?"

Next to a magnificent river, the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos were waiting for Su Ping. All of them had arrived, except for him.

They would have thought that Su Ping had already been killed in battle, were it not for the Mother of Chaos saying that he was still alive.

After all, he wasn't a Sorcerer Ancestor; he was just an ant. Even though he was leading billions of species, it was impossible for him to quickly annihilate the Heavenly Dao garrison.

"Mother, is it the Chaos Qualification that you sensed just now? Yuan Long indeed surrendered. He did exactly what Ling Tai did in the past!" The Golden Crow ancestor's eyes were cold. There was a brilliant star on its forehead, which was the Golden Crow home it was protecting.

All of the Golden Crows were nestled inside that dazzling brilliance. They were providing power and receiving protection at the same time.

"He obtained Yuan Long's Chaos Qualification. In other words, he defeated... and killed Yuan Long?" Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo found it hard to believe. Is it really something that Su Ping could do?

"That's right. Yuan Long is dead. Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long is no more," said the Mother of Chaos softly. There was regret in her eyes, but it was soon replaced by calmness.

"Was Yuan Long weakened after being suppressed by the Heavenly Dao? How could he kill Yuan Long?" asked Yin Que suspiciously. The latter was also doubting that Su Ping could be capable of slaying their brother. Wouldn't that ant have the power to threaten all Sorcerer Ancestors if that was the case?

None of the previous candidates raised by the Mother of Chaos had been capable of such a feat.

"Yuan Long was indeed weakened, and also overestimated himself. However, his death was still beyond my expectations," said the Mother of Chaos with a smile.

She had basically been aware of the entire battle through the contract she had with Su Ping. She was also present, watching from the side while Su Ping tricked the Chaos Qualification, although she couldn't do anything to help.

"Beyond your expectations?" Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang was dazed for a moment.

The Mother of Chaos's candidates had always been under her control. How could they act beyond her expectations?

It had to be noted that all things and every universe functioned under the Mother of Chaos' control. Su Ping—having been subject to her training—should be absolutely

under her control. This made his thoughts and whatever happened to him easy to infer... And yet, she claimed that Su Ping was performing beyond her expectations.

The Inferno Dragon had already approached them while they spoke.

“Everyone, sorry I’m late.”

While still on top of the dragon’s head, Su Ping said to the group, “I hope nothing was delayed because of me.”

“Something would have been delayed had you taken longer to get here.” Yin Que stared at Su Ping and then at the Inferno Dragon with anger in his eyes. “He’s absorbed Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification, so he’s the new Sorcerer Ancestor. Why are you standing on a Sorcerer Ancestor’s head?”

Su Ping frowned a bit and replied, “I am indeed standing on top of its head, but we are equal. It could do the same to me, if we weren’t in such a hurry.”

“That’s right. I’m willing to serve my master for as long as I live!” said the Inferno Dragon with a stern tone as it glared at Yin Que. Both had equally strong at the moment; so naturally, there was nothing to fear.

“This is.... hilarious!”

Ti Tuo and Yin Que were both furious. That guy acted like a Sorcerer Ancestor without having the pressure that went with it. It was embarrassing for them.

The Mother of Chaos said, “All right, we’re not here to talk about this. In any case, Su Ping has brought another Sorcerer Ancestor to us, which has increased our odds of winning by ten percent! You should know why we lost in the past. We will only lose again if we keep bickering!”

Shi Mang nodded. “That’s right. Had all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors joined hands sooner, the Heavenly Dao wouldn’t have grown as strong, forcing us to move so far away.”

“Our target is the Heavenly Dao, in case you’ve forgotten,” said the Golden Crow ancestor coldly.

Ti Tuo was still unhappy, but the matter was dropped.

Yin Que snorted and said, “Let’s take action now that he’s already here. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao must already know we’re here.”

“If we summon them back, our odds of success will increase by another five percent. The Void Wall has to be filled up by them!” said Shi Mang.



“Let’s begin,” said the Mother of Chaos succinctly. She simply raised a hand, which emitted a hazy light of chaos that contained the Original Dao. The magnificent river next to her became real and more brilliant.

Countless stars seemed to be surfacing and glittering in the river.

The Mother of Chaos said to Su Ping, “This is the River of Fate that decides everyone’s destiny. It is also known as the Yellow Spring. When people die, they return to this place and wait for a new journey!”

Su Ping realized what was going to happen. He held his breath nervously.

Soon after, the river surged before his eyes, and the infinite brilliance swam and gathered.

The long river flowed backwards. Time was spinning. The Great Dao power that could change the world began to congregate.

In response to the pulling force from the Mother of Chaos, the dazzling light suddenly jumped out of the river and quickly gathered as fuzzy figures.

Fate was reversed. The people who were struggling in the river were fished out.

Many familiar faces appeared before Su Ping’s eyes.

“Boss!”

The calling made Su Ping’s body tremble.

The person had long golden hair and the most alluring body figure. She was also holding the ancient spear of the Titans. It was none other than Joanna!

She gazed at him with a smile; Su Ping felt as if he was dreaming.

Next to Joanna were other familiar figures, including Heather and the other Superior Gods from the Demigod Burial.

“Human Ancestor!”

On the other hand, another golden circle of light appeared, and the people of the Heaven Path Institute showed up, including the president, Elder Yan Qing, Ancestral God Wen Tian, and others.

There were also many students of the institute, who looked up at Su Ping with respect and excitement.

A slightly chilly voice sounded. "Human Ancestor, it's been a long time!" Su Ping turned, only to discover that it was the Rain Ancestor.

Next to him were the people of the Rain Clan, including their leader and the prince he had killed.

"Human Ancestor, our world was invaded and destroyed by the Heavenly Dao because of our ignorance. Our clan died in the battle. Our glory is no more... I hope we can follow you and make up for what we did!" said the Rain Ancestor with a soft voice. His eyes were sincere; he looked different from the last time he saw him in the cultivation site.

The cultivation site had captured a moment from their past, back when the Rain Clan was arrogant. Conflicts were inevitable and would escalate when they encountered a tough man like Su Ping.

However, whatever happened there wasn't real, so there was no real hatred between them.

The Rain Clan had never encountered Su Ping in real life. They had always been arrogant, until the Heavenly Dao arrived one day and wreaked havoc on their world. All of them died while trying to resist.

The other high-ranked clans also showed up, all of them with solemn expressions. "Human Ancestor, we're willing to go all out to claim back what we had, now that we've returned!"

All the things that happened in the cultivation site had become part of their memories. Nothing had been real, yet they were no strangers to Su Ping.

Su Ping defeated the Seven Greatest Clans on his own. He was now the commander selected by the Mother of Chaos. Naturally, they wouldn't disobey.

"Brother Su!"

"Senior Brother Su."

Besides the people from the world of gods, there were also people from other cultivation sites in the crowd.

There were people from the Realm of Deities, the Chaotic Realm of the Undead, and many others.

There was Ming, the Asura that Su Ping befriended long before. He was the first person who had ever taught him sword techniques.

He had asked Su Ping to help him find the goddess named Shen Cangyue, but Su Ping had never found her. It had been further postponed due to being too busy cultivating, and now felt guilty about it.

However, Su Ping's willpower surged and soon discovered the aura among the resurrected lives as the River of Fate was reversed.

She was a beautiful girl, like a lotus flower on a snowy mountain. There was now a young and handsome man next to her, holding her waist. The pair seemed quite intimate, happy for being reunited after such a long time.

Su Ping was silent for a moment. He glanced at Ming, but thought it was inappropriate to inform him.

"No need to feel sorry for me, Brother Su. I already know," said Ming via telepathy with a smile.

Su Ping felt dazed.

"I have no more regrets now that she's already found someone. I've waited a hundred thousand years for a result. I can fight at peace now that I know!" said Ming with a smile.

Su Ping answered with a slight nod.

Ming looked at the countless people in the crowd. He seemed to have already seen the girl whom he had waited for a hundred thousand years, and whom he turned from a demigod to an Asura for. He said to himself, "Being able to die on the same battlefield is not the worst ending..."

"Brother Su!"

"Young friend, I was right about you."

An old deity was smiling in the crowd; he had once given Su Ping the power harnessed by ancient deities. However, it had been the Mother of Chaos who offered it to Su Ping through his hands in the cultivation site, the whole experience based on his personality. If there was another peculiar trait, it would've been someone else who would offer the power of the ancient deities to Su Ping.

Su Ping nodded. He had met all of those people before; they had either helped him, or had been killed by him.

Those whom he helped remembered the favor, and the ones killed didn't hold grudges against him. They had been killed by the Heavenly Dao in real life, not by him.

Furthermore, there were many cultivation sites that Su Ping never got to visit. The people from those places weren't acquainted with Su Ping. However, they all knew where they were going via telepathic messages sent by the Mother of Chaos.

"Finally, I can leave the system and fight by your side," said Joanna with a soft voice as she approached.

Su Ping discarded his bottled up sadness upon seeing her beautiful face. He nodded and said, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for eternal peace!"

Joanna nodded back and said to herself, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for your eternal safety!"

Su Ping looked at the figures gathering in front of him. The number of Undying State existences grew, exceeding the ones already with him, members from the billions of species. He recalled the list of cultivation sites he had seen before. It had been so long he almost ran short of patience to scroll down to the bottom.

The figures that had disappeared throughout history had been summoned by the system to fight by his side.

They were many times more of them than the people from the billions of species behind him!

"The Heavenly Dao is intent on destroying the Ancestral Land directly. They never cut off the River of Fate, which is also a trick we used in the previous two wars. Unfortunately, the trick can only be used once. If we lose this time, we'll have fewer trump cards for the next try..." Yin Que heaved a sigh.

"Our odds of winning lower with each attempt. I hope we can get this over with this time; I won't come back again," said Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo coldly.

After all the dazzling lights from the River of Fate jumped out, the Golden Crow ancestor urged, "Let's go. The Heavenly Dao has already noticed us. Let's get this over with as soon as possible!"

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping and said, "This time, we will fight side by side."

Su Ping smiled. "As we always have, right?"

She nodded with glittering eyes. "That's right."

He then looked at the familiar faces that had gathered around him. Once the war ended, many of them would be permanently gone. The pain caused by war was excruciating even before it even started.

“Let’s go!” Su Ping said.

Clang!

The chains shook, and the three thousand warships sailed forth, carrying all of those people.

Joanna stared at Su Ping for a moment. She then turned around and boarded one of the warships. This time, she was going to fight by Su Ping’s side!

The people from the Heaven Path Institute glanced at Su Ping and also boarded the ships.

“The Heavenly Dao forces are deep inside the Ancestral Land. Let’s just go over there!” Yin Que suggested.

The Mother of Chaos nodded with a solemn face, then she pointed in a certain direction. The aura of chaos around her was suddenly gathered, forming a hazy channel that extended for billions of kilometers, going deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

“Let’s go!”

Su Ping had already accommodated all the beings rescued from the River of Fate inside his warships, then gathered the latter to make a move. Yin Que was the first to step into the vortex; the Golden Crow ancestor was second; Ti Tuo was third; Shi Mang was the fourth. The Mother of Chaos—who had been waiting at the entrance of the channel—glanced at Su Ping and moved to his side.

Su Ping gave her a slight nod, and the two of them entered together.

The three thousand warships followed close and went into the vortex.

A stream of chaos power was working around him. They seemed to be flying and still at the same time. Very soon, the vortex disappeared and a bleak view received them.

There was a vast accumulation of debris before their eyes. The abundant aura of chaos was like smoke limiting Su Ping’s senses. Some lonely mountains could be seen through the gray smore, like trees rising from the ground, with strange branches stretching out, making them look like twisted bodies.

There was no time nor space in the origin of everything; they were insignificant variables incapable of creating any power.

Origin, Cycle, Creation and the other Great Daos were wandering around the place.

Everything was like the still water of a lake.

Su Ping could feel the powerful binding force of the region. Only Dao Heart experts and above would be able to move in such an environment. Normal Celestials would barely have the power to walk, let alone beings with lesser cultivation levels; they would be as powerless as the corpses found there.

Without the power of time, every moment there was eternal.

“You’re finally here,” said an indifferent and majestic voice right above them, dripping with the condescension to look down upon everything. Figures were stepping out from the hazy smoke. They were all Undying State Heavenly Dao beings, with identical looks and expressions.

At the center of the humanoid forces, there was a silver guy who wore an ancient robe, giving him a graceful and righteous look. With a dispassionate voice he said, “Still unwilling to give up?”

He looked slightly different from the other clone-like beings, seemingly... More alive.

“Humph. You’re not nearly enough to stop us. Get out of the way!” The Golden Crow ancestor’s eyes were cold. The scorching flames on its body burned the gray smoke and made it a lot thinner.

“You were born in chaos, but you failed to manage chaos well. You should die with them,” said the silver member of the Heavenly Dao.

“No need to talk. Just kill them!” said Shi Mang, releasing the overwhelming energy of death, as he was the first to charge forward, not wasting time talking.

Whoosh!

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que was the best when it came to attacking. It transformed into a dark shadow that darted towards the robed humanoid. Terrifying explosions instantly began to sound; the violent impacts shattered the dozens of Undying State humanoids nearby.

“Ultimate Hallucination!”

It was Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que’s ultimate technique, a terrifying Dao power capable of destroying everything. A grand universe appeared, created by the combination of millions of universes; it was bigger than any universe known, the most powerful universe of chaos. Not even Undying State beings could break free from it.

The black light appeared faster than Su Ping could perceive it. He then saw Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que fighting the silver-colored Heaven being. The power of time was circulating around them. In just one moment, they had fought from the past to the future, spanning through more than a hundred thousand years.

The special nature of such a battle was beyond the boundaries of common sense. Su Ping was secretly alarmed as he watched. He would have probably been incapable of fighting back if Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que were the one blocking him before. The experts from the billions of species would have been killed, too.

Yin Que was the fastest Sorcerer Ancestor. No wonder it was able to survive the previous three wars!

“Let’s get this over with. They’ve only left one Chaos Heaven in this place; they don’t know what they’re doing!” said the Golden Crow ancestor when joining the battle, followed closely by Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang.

Ti Tuo produced a lot of clones that charged at the other Undying State humanoids. Each clone was powerful enough to slaughter the Heavenly Dao forces with ease, practically being invincible.

“That silver Heaven seems to be as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor,” said Su Ping to the system who had yet to take action, “How many of those silver-level Heavenly Dao fighters are out there?”

“They are called Chaos Heavenly Daos, born after absorbing the power of mythical creatures. They are reincarnations of the Heavenly Dao’s power from the age of chaos,” said the system, “At first, there were thirty-two of them. I killed many of their kind in the previous wars. Right now, only eight remain.

“They are as strong as the ultimate Heavenly Dao, but technically speaking, they’re slightly weaker. After all, Sorcerer Ancestors have the Chaos Qualifications. In any case, it’ll take a long time for Yin Que and the others to kill the Chaos Heaven being.”

She added, “There’s no concept of time in the Ancestral Land of Chaos; there are only Chaos Years. It’s like the petals of a flower; the fall of a petal is an indicator that some time has passed!”

“Chaos Years?”

“That’s right. It differs from the normal time, given that time is linear and has an order: past, present and future. Existences like us can easily manipulate this vulnerable Dao power. Besides, time is too weak to change anything in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everything you see here is immortal.

“However, Chaos Years are different. If you regress from a hundred years to fifty, there will be no turning back!

“We all have Chaos Years; this place has its own Chaos Years, too. Once they run out, it’ll be the time we die.”

“Die?”

Su Ping felt dazed. Although he had yet to understand what a Chaos Year was, it seemed to be a combination of power and time. Their lives would end when it was over.

“Yin Que won’t need a lot of years to kill the fellow while counting with the Golden Crow’s help,” said the system, “We are still in the periphery of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. The Heavenly Dao forces have marched deep enough, so we must hurry. Follow me.”

“Okay,” said Su Ping.

All of a sudden—there was a violent attack moving towards them.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and hurriedly raised his defenses to resist with all his strength.

In all the group, the Inferno Dragon was the fastest to respond, instantly roaring and denting the scale on its forehead. All of its other scales were instantly stacked, protecting Su Ping and the pets.

The dragon blocked the attack with its body. Su Ping and the others felt the immense energy blast. Fortunately, Su Ping was now able to deal with the power that leaked in, all thanks to the Inferno Dragon’s selfless blocking.

Once the power was disposed of, Su Ping quickly looked and then saw the most astounding scene.

The system’s body had been pierced through by sharp stings. The attacker was actually Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo who was moving at the front!

Explosions echoing in the battlefield further ahead at the same time. Then, there was a long roar. The Golden Crow ancestor and the other Sorcerer Ancestors attacking the Chaos Heaven fellow were forced to retreat.

One silver figure after another appeared next to the Chaos Heaven they were confronting.

Four more showed up. There were five Chaos Heaven in total!

Next to the five Chaos Heavens were three scary, gargantuan figures!

Three Sorcerer Ancestors!

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. All of this happened too fast for him to react.



The situation had been instantly reversed, bringing them utter despair!

“Ti Tuo, what are you doing?!”

The Golden Crow ancestor looked back and roared, with furious flames burning in its eye sockets.

“Bloody bastard!” Yin Que shrieked in fury. They realized that something was wrong with Ti Tuo, right when they saw the three Sorcerer Ancestors and the extra four Chaos Heavens. Of the twelve overlords, Ti Tuo was the best at observation. Even though Yin Que was the fastest, it could not hide from Ti Tuo’s perception; all actions would be observed.

Ti Tuo’s keen observation had helped them see through the Heavenly Dao’s ambushes and made great contributions in the previous wars!

Those Chaos Heavens had most likely been hiding for a long time and Ti Tuo should have noticed them since the very beginning. However, no alert was raised.

Betrayal!

“Mother!” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang roared and turned around, charging to face Ti Tuo.

But the next moment, the latter chuckled and disappeared from Shi Mang’s attack range. His original body was swapped with a clone that had been sent to attack the Heavenly Dao expert at the beginning. He then stepped forth and joined the opposite side.

“Sorry, but I don’t want to be an idiot again.” Ti Tuo chuckled. “I never forgot how we lost the previous two wars, and I don’t want to end like a dog working for the Heavenly Dao.”

“But you’re acting like their dog right now!” the Golden Crow ancestor roared furiously.

“No, no. The Heavenly Dao has given me the Chaos Origin Stone. Once chaos is restarted, I will be acknowledged by the Ancestral Land of Chaos to control the world along with the Heavenly Dao!” Ti Tuo chuckled.

“Hey, hey, Ti Tuo, are you saying that we’re dogs working for the Heavenly Dao?” The three Sorcerer Ancestors approached Ti Tuo, and their words didn’t sound very amiable.

Ti Tuo chuckled and said, “I didn’t mean it. Don’t misunderstand me; we are comrades right now. My previous attack has probably wounded Mother badly. This is a great opportunity; we shouldn’t be wasting time anymore.”

“No, we should not waste any more time,” said the biggest Sorcerer Ancestor with indifference. However, the next moment—it suddenly opened its bloody mouth and swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Kun Peng!”

Both the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que changed their expressions, witnessing the act in shock and fury.

“Sorry. The Heavenly Dao asked me to hand both him and the Origin Stone. I’ll be taking my leave now,” said Kun Peng in a casual tone, then flapped its wings and soared away.

The other two Sorcerer Ancestors were Hun Yu and Xuan Qi.

Su Ping had once met Hun Yu in the Remains of High Heavens that the system had recreated. Although an illusion, the majestic figure that covered the retreat of billions of mythical creatures had left a deep impression on Su Ping.

Alas, that Sorcerer Ancestor was a cold enemy at the moment.

“Mother, drop the act; the Heavenly Dao is already aware of your plan. This matter should end now. You don’t have a lot of capital left right now, do you? Hei Xiang and Hao Tian were smart enough to stay away from this mess,” said the Sorcerer Ancestor coldly.

“Yes, I’m done acting.”

The wounds on the Mother of Chaos healed quickly. She said with indifference, “Ti Tuo’s mission was to lure all of you here, so that I could kill you all at once so you won’t cause more trouble!”

Su Ping had just approached the system to check her wounds. He was briefly dazed, not expecting the betrayal to be an act. No wonder the Golden Crow and the others’ reactions were so strange when Kun Peng swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Humph!”

Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi snorted, “You are no longer at the peak. It won’t be so easy for you to finish us off. By the way, he’s about to reach the Chaos Core in the Ancestral Land; once it’s broken, chaos will be dissolved and everything will restart!”

“You can die now, then!” roared the Golden Crow ancestor, suddenly charging towards Xuan Qi like the wind.

Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu said indifferently, "Why bother struggling? There are indeed too many ants roaming in chaos; they would be erased if everything is restarted and a brand-new world of chaos will be created. That will be a good thing."

"I've been sleeping in the Dao of Death all the time, but what do you even think life is?!" Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang suddenly charged forward and turned into a dark blade to attack Hun Yu furiously.

Bang!

Hun Yu released its universe, the biggest and hardest compared to those of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. Shi Mang's full-strength strike didn't break it.

"You were created by me. I truly don't want to be the one to act and erase you." The Mother of Chaos stared at Hun Yu and Xuan Qi. She raised her hand; even though she said those things, there wasn't a speck of indecision at that moment. Besides, the bond between a mother and a child was unique to some species; there were other kinds whose children would feed on their mother upon birth.

Some would even eat the children they had just given birth to, seeing it as a natural option.

The Mother of Chaos didn't harbor much of the expected special feelings. She only felt regretful, as one would feel by needing to destroy fine, personally crafted pieces of art.

Whoosh!

The Mother of Chaos waved a hand, and the chaos energy floating in the void was suddenly destroyed. Two terrifying forces akin to huge axes slashed out, making Hun Yu and Xuan Qi change expressions.

Hun Yu hurriedly moved his universe to block the attack aimed at Xuan Qi.

The former's universe trembled and almost fell apart.

Exactly at this moment, the five Chaos Heavens also took action—

"Judgment!"

They released the same light of chaos. Wheels of Judgment flew out of their bodies and spun in the sky, moving towards the Mother of Chaos like sharp blades.

The latter narrowed her eyes, she pointed her finger at the incoming attacks, shooting a black beam that destroyed the balance of one of the wheels.

She then rushed towards the five Chaos Heavens.

“I’ll leave the other Heavenly Dao forces to you,” said the Mother of Chaos.

Su Ping nodded. “Be careful. I’ll lend you a hand in case you need it.”

“There’s no need to worry.”

The system’s voice was extremely calm.

She was so fast that Su Ping’s senses couldn’t even follow. She was even faster than Yin Que!

“What is going on?!”

Xuan Qi was rather shocked by the sight. It dawned on him. “Damn it, Ti Tuo must’ve given the Origin Stone to Mother!”

“You can die knowing the truth now!” bellowed the Golden Crow ancestor. The ever-burning flames released by the latter covered millions of square kilometers and pulled Xuan Qi into its universe.

“You think you can kill me?!”

“I survived the previous three wars, while you didn’t,” said the great crow proudly.

The taunt worked, as Xuan Qi was furious. Among all Sorcerer Ancestors, its forte was attacking. However, its attack was deflected by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. On the other hand, it was the weakest when it came to defense and escape. That was why it was eventually suppressed.

Elsewhere—Ancestors Shi Mang and Yin Que moved towards Hun Yu and attacked the latter’s universe.

Hun Yu was definitely one of the top three Sorcerer Ancestors, and had never lost a duel. It was suppressed by the Heavenly Dao, not because it was weaker than Yin Que and the others, but because it chose to endure all of the Heavenly Dao’s attacks for everyone. As a result, it was heavily wounded and captured.

“Hun Yu, you can still turn around!” shouted Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang.

“My clan is being controlled by the Heavenly Dao. I cannot turn around anymore!” said Hun Yu in a low voice and released its universe, covering Yin Que and Shi Mang, trying to imprison them.

However, Yin Que was quick to react and dodged the attack. However, Shi Mang was slower and was enshrouded in it.

“You helped me block the Heavenly Dao’s attack back then. I owe you a favor. I hope you won’t die before I am able to pay you back!” said Yin Que to Hun Yu.

“If you want to return the favor, just stay away from this war,” said Hun Yu.

“That’s impossible!” declared the former, “The Heavenly Dao is blatant and lawless. I will never let this go. I’m not here for Mother, but for myself!”

“Let’s fight then! The loser will have nothing to say!” said Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu.

Yin Que answered with action, quickly moving to attack and trying to rescue Shi Mang.

At the same time—

The Mother of Chaos had already attacked the five Chaos Heavens.

She was even faster than Yin Que. Nobody was able to capture her trace.

Her attacks were so powerful that only one move had left a Chaos Heaven heavily wounded one, nearly killing them.

While clearing the other Heavenly Dao forces, Su Ping noticed that the system seemed to have combined the power of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. She was the best in terms of offense, speed and defense!

The five Chaos Heavens were forced to retreat due to the system’s attacks. They were completely incapable of defending!

The power shown by the system not only surprised Su Ping, but also infuriated the five Chaos Heavens. They realized that their enemy had made sufficient preparations and Ti Tuo’s betrayal was a trap. They weren’t there to surround those remnant nemeses; the remnants were surrounding them!

Once the remnant forces passed that defense line, the big plan would be ruined.

“Die!!” bellowed one of the Chaos Heavens, as a terrifying aura of chaos was burning all over its body, mixed with some sort of special fire. The fury on its face turned blurry because of the flames. The humanoid also seemed to be calming down, eventually turning into a dazzling ball.

Whoosh!

He dashed to another Chaos Heaven and merged with it.

“They’re yours.”

The other three Chaos Heavens acted with solemnity. “Even if it’s not possible to stop them, you have to stall them.”

The next moment, those three Chaos Heavens were ablaze. Their faces became numb, and they turned into dazzling light, which surged into the body of the Chaos Heaven at the center.

The latter’s body was undergoing changes. An aura far more powerful was perceived, and its body was even more gigantic, with limbs that were destructive to a terrifying degree. It threw a punch at the Mother of Chaos and actually blocked the sharp blade formed with her Great Dao power.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression and said ruthlessly, “I knew you would use this method; you were the inspiration for the contract system I developed.”

Su Ping—who at the time had been dealing with the rest of the enemy forces with the Inferno Dragon—was also keeping an eye on the system. Her answer left him in a daze for a moment; he then looked at the fused Chaos Heavens and understood.

The contract and the fusion were created based on inspirations from the Heavenly Dao’s tactics in the previous wars.

The Heavenly Dao members can fuse together; if all of them merge... The idea crossed Su Ping’s mind.

He also noticed at the moment that the humanoids being hunted by the Inferno Dragon were gathering in one place, actually giving birth to a Chaos Heaven emitting silver light.

So this is how Chaos Heavens are created...

The other Heavenly Dao beings can fuse, too. Is it possible that all of them are actually the same thing?!

His expression involuntarily reflected the shock upon thinking about this. If all the Heavenly Dao humanoids were the same thing, and were just clones of the original body, how terrifying would the original body be?

It would even be a hundred times stronger than a Sorcerer Ancestor!

There must be some sort of restriction preventing all of them from fusing. Otherwise, why would they split up their power? It would be easy to kill all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors with such power, just like squeezing ants to death. This entire world of chaos should have been cleared already! Su Ping thought. He believed that was the reason.

The Inferno Dragon was already fighting against the newly condensed Chaos Heaven.

Su Ping chose to let his dragon pet battle it out with the humanoid, seeing that their battle was too shocking. He led the Dark Dragon Hound, the experts from the billions of species, and the just resurrected people to attack the other Heavenly Dao beings, trying to clear the area as quickly as possible; that way they would not condense into another Chaos Heaven.

To some relief, Su Ping noticed that there seemed to be some sort of requirement set for Heavenly Dao fusions to take place; they couldn't fuse at will. The other humanoids were only jumping and dodging, trying to buy more time. They didn't just merge to fight back.

"Die!"

The experts of all species inside the three thousand warships set up military formations and transmitted their power to Su Ping. The latter asked the Inferno Dragon to stall the fused Chaos Heaven while he charged at the other Heavenly Dao creatures with the others.

Elsewhere, the Mother of Chaos and five fused-Chaos Heavens were fighting intensely. It was hard to tell who would win.

However, she gradually gained the upper hand as the fight progressed, thanks to her fast and powerful attacks; her offense was better than Xuan Qi's and her defense was better than Ling Tai's. She was as quick as a shadow. Time and space was changing quickly around them. She had killed her enemy hundreds of times, from the past to the future.

However, the Chaos Heavenly Dao still jumped out of the void from her memories and the battle marks in the world.

The Mother of Chaos cut herself off from the environment, forcing her opponent into a corner soon after.

"You're not here to kill us; you're here just to hold me back, aren't you?" she asked with a cold tone, "Has he already stepped into the Ancestral Land of Chaos' forbidden area? To think he's willing to abandon you so you can stall for time."

"Yes. Even if you know, so what? You don't stand a chance!"

The fused Chaos Heaven was extremely calm. Although hit by the system hundreds of times at every moment, he didn't show any anger, acting indifferent as if detached from the world. He wouldn't show anger even in the face of death.

"I didn't realize he would be faster than I thought." The Mother of Chaos narrowed her eyes.

“Just give up. Your era has passed. The chaos you once established and reigned over is already sick. It must be made anew. You lost, and you must accept your fate!” declared the Chaos Heavenly Dao.

“Fate? The River of Fate contains billions of creatures, and was created by me.” The Mother of Chaos sneered. Fate itself was her creation, and yet she was being asked to accept her fate?

“Disorder will be no more after we lay claim on the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everybody will live together in peace and order!” said the Chaos Heavenly Dao coldly.

“Peace? How boring would the world be without any fights? War, sickness and disaster are part of life. It is also the most efficient way to naturally reduce the amount of lives.”

She added after a snort, “Without death and disorder, how could chaos accommodate all living creatures? That would be a recipe for complete destruction!”

“That’s right. War and disaster are required for the gathering of resources and for the new to replace the old. It’s the way you control chaos. It’s a splendid era with newborns always emerging. However, the seniors who have fought for countless years have to willingly step back. Isn’t it ridiculous?”

The humanoid sneered and said, “This world doesn’t need replacements. Permanence is the best!”

“What’s the meaning of this?”

The Mother of Chaos pierced his chest with her sword. However, she suddenly turned around and saw the Chaos Heaven walking out of a resurrection channel. She said coldly, “The world I’ve built reflects my will, everywhere. Mountains and rivers are also my will. I described them to countless living creatures, so that they know what I think.

“If water doesn’t flow, it dies. Without circulation, the world will rot and smell sooner or later!”

“That’s why there’s so much sadness in the world you built, and the reason why we came to be. You must know that we were born because of the wishes of all living creatures!”

The Chaos Heavenly Dao added with indifference, “We are regarded as the Heavenly Dao, supreme beings that control billions of lives. How could we ignore their grief?”

“So, you want to erase them just because you can’t bear to see them fall into tragic cycles of reincarnation?” she bellowed angrily.



The humanoid replied with a cold voice, "They live in your world and follow your orders. They are already sick, beyond cure, unless your rules are broken and we establish a new order. We won't feel regret even if we're no longer needed after the new world is built. This is what we do for all living creatures!"

"Hilarious!"

The Mother of Chaos was past the point of being angry. "Look at the people you're fighting. They're the living creatures you mentioned, who've come here to fight and eliminate you. You think you're fulfilling their wishes?!"

"Living creatures are stupid. That's why they linger in your world while in pain. We're trying to save them; even if they loathe us, so what?" said the Chaos Heaven.

"Go to hell!"

The Mother of Chaos stopped the conversation, as she felt she was wasting her time. The other party had a different faith. Just like in the beginning of time, losers would have nothing to say; even the firmest truth had to be defended with strength!

Bang!

Violent attacks echoed above the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

In the distance—Su Ping sensed the immense quakes and couldn't help but glance with worry. However, he knew he was far from being qualified to worry about the system; he could only do his part to clear the battlefield as soon as possible and free his hands so he could find a chance to help.

"It's useless. Your failure is destined," said the Chaos Heaven calmly.

"Do you really think you can take away the Ancestral Land of Chaos?" There was no fury on the Mother of Chaos's face, only a cold killing intent. She wasn't slow as she acted. With a frosty tone, she said, "You should feel honored that you've managed to stall me for this long!"

Boom! The sword she held dazzled as she made a slashing motion.

Instantly, countless sword auras rushed over from all directions in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Each sword aura was extremely terrifying; they moved swiftly, instantly piercing through the Chaos Heaven fusion.

The sword auras exploded, ripping apart the humanoid's body.

The Mother of Chaos flew out, not bothering to look at the extinguished Chaos Heaven, and rushed towards Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors.

“Mother, just give up. It’s too late!” said Hun Yu, noticing how she was approaching and that the five Heavenly Dao experts had been killed.

“Hun Yu, don’t be stupid. I know you want me to abandon the ancestral land and leave. However, I was born along with the ancestral land. This is my destiny and my shell!” said the Mother of Chaos coldly, “I will be destroyed if the Ancestral Land of Chaos is gone. If you truly want to fight for me, go after the Heavenly Dao with me and don’t stand in my way!”

Hun Yu changed his expression. While wearing a troubled expression, he heaved a deep sigh and said in frustration, “Mother, I’m sorry; please kill me. I can’t turn back, or else they will kill both me and my clan.”

“Good. A Sorcerer Ancestor deciding to sacrifice himself for your clan. You deserve to be my child!” said the Mother of Chaos, quickly taking decisive action.

On the other hand, Xuan Qi—discovering that Hun Yu was no longer resisting—shouted in shock and fury, “We will enjoy ourselves forever after the Heavenly Dao restarts chaos; why are you giving up?!”

“Shut up!” the Golden Crow Ancestor roared, drowning him in scorching flames.

Hun Yu sighed. “Eternity... is so exhausting.”

The Mother of Chaos stared at him, but didn’t stop. Her sword passed by and ripped the most powerful universe of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors to pieces, along with Hun Yu himself.

A Chaos Qualification flew out after he died.

The Mother of Chaos made a waving motion, then saw Su Ping fighting somewhere else. She threw the Chaos Qualification in his direction.

“Absorb the Chaos Qualification and defeat them as soon as possible,” said the system.

Slightly stunned yet delighted, Su Ping saw the brilliant Chaos Qualification and immediately grabbed a hold of it.

A Sorcerer Ancestor died? Su Ping looked at the battlefield, only to find that Hun Yu’s aura was gone. His gesture changed; the Sorcerer Ancestor who had once covered the retreat on his own, back in the cultivation site, was now dead. Just like that.

It was a Sorcerer Ancestor who was supposed to live forever!

He took a deep breath, and decidedly fused with the Chaos Qualification.

All his power seemed to be concentrated on the Chaos Qualification and amplified. A stream of terrifying power erupted from his body.

His three thousand undying universes became even more terrifying due to the Chaos Qualification's enhancement.

"Great. Our boss is a Sorcerer Ancestor too!" shouted the Dark Dragon Hound excitedly.

"Even if chaos is destroyed, Boss will still survive." The Purple Python, the Little Skeleton and the other pets were thrilled. All of them were fighting so that Su Ping could live on.

Su Ping had just attained the qualification to live.

As for their world and the people, they couldn't care less.

Elsewhere—the Mother of Chaos turned around and charged at Xuan Qi.

The latter was shocked and furious upon seeing her actions. "Mother, I wasn't wrong. It's useless, even if you kill me!"

"No, it isn't," she said.

Wasting no time, she quickly suppressed and killed Xuan Qi with the help of the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que, then taking out the black Chaos Qualification inside his body.

The Chaos Qualification was full of brutality and killing intent, like a sharp edge able to make your eyes bleed by merely laying eyes upon it.

The Mother of Chaos glanced at Su Ping and passed it over to him, too.

Considering his personality, she knew he would definitely give it to one of his pets.

This was in line with her wishes. There would be an explosive rise in power when a Sorcerer Ancestor bonded with another Sorcerer Ancestor. She needed Su Ping's power in the following battle!

"Considering that being's personality, it shouldn't have just sent those helpers to their deaths so easily; even though they were only tools in its eyes, they have died all too quickly." The Mother of Chaos looked gloomy. She had already recovered two Chaos Qualifications, but it didn't give her any sense of accomplishment; she thought that her old opponent was much smarter than this.

That is, unless they thought that the main goal set for Hun Yu and the others was to hold her back.

Yin Que flew close and said quickly, "Mother, let's go to the core of the ancestral land as soon as possible."

The Golden Crow ancestor also looked at her. Their guesses depicted some dreadful outcomes, and weren't happy about their recent victory.

"All right," said the Mother of Chaos while nodding.

Su Ping had already handed over Xuan Qi's Chaos Qualification to the Little Skeleton while the pair spoke.

The little one's attacks were powerful, and was the most fitting to receive the item.

"Let's go!"

Su Ping was also hearing their conversation, and knew that such an easy victory could be a trap. It would be impossible for the Heavenly Dao's leader to be unaware that the system was strong enough to quickly finish off the forces sent.

That quick victory wasn't something to be happy about. Rather, it was worrisome!

The Mother of Chaos slightly narrowed her eyes and communicated telepathically, "He has his plans, and I have my countermeasures. Does he really think that I don't know anything?"

Out of nowhere, a channel appeared in the void.

"It's the channel to enter Kun Peng's inner universe!" said Shi Mang, feeling relieved, "It seems that he didn't betray us."

Kun Peng—the one who swallowed Ti Tuo—was actually the Mother of Chaos's spy.

This scheme had been set up ever since the beginning of the first war!

"I may be fast, but I can't establish a speed channel inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Only Kun Peng can send us straight into the depths of chaos using his innards as a bridge!" said Yin Que.

The channel to the inner universe they saw was exactly made with Kun Peng's organs.

"Let's go!" said the Mother of Chaos.

She was the first to step out and enter the channel.

Yin Que was the hasty sort; he followed closely behind.

Su Ping gathered the experts of all species and the revived generals from the cultivation sites before following the two.

Su Ping had grabbed a hold of one of the Chaos Qualifications and was now equal to the other ancestors. The world he saw had some sort of strange changes. The mountains, the fog, the aura of chaos and the Great Dao were akin to illusions about to disperse at any moment. However, they held on like wriggling worms.

That was the original look of the world.

Su Ping had once seen such a world when he took the Golden Crow ancestor's blood, but that was the first time seeing it with his own power. Furthermore, he would never be able to dwell on the illusion once he saw reality.

So, the world before his eyes would remain that way, unless he deliberately ignored it and fooled himself.

"This is what the chaos world is really like. Just get used to it," said the Golden Crow ancestor in a soft voice, who seemed to have noticed the astonishment in Su Ping's eyes. "It was exactly the ugliness of this chaos world that made Mother give birth to us. We created billions of mythical creatures that perished after fighting the Heavenly Dao, their bloodlines transforming into all the worlds. Your human race is the extension of one of the bloodlines, just like how gods came to be.

"Different species may have different definitions of beauty. However, every living creature has the instinct to change the environment until it is fit for them. Worms and beasts have nests that other creatures despise, but they live comfortably there. Even ants are the same..."

Su Ping looked at the system moving further ahead in the channel, eyes glittering. "Are all the prosperous eternal worlds what she wished for?"

"The eternity that you know is but a fleeting moment in the world of chaos. You never saw how prosperous it was when billions of mythical creatures emerged. It was much more brilliant than the world you know; that was what she truly wished for..." said the crow softly.

Su Ping fell silent. His long time following the system made him aware of her proud nature; even the best pets weren't worth mentioning. Her standards were also monstrously high.

Getting to the bottom of all, it was because the world she had established was too brilliant.

The moon wouldn't be deemed as dazzling after witnessing the brilliance of the sun.

"I see..."

They reached the end of the channel just then.

Everybody reached the core zone of the chaos land through the internal organs of Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng.

Hardly had they arrived when they saw countless Heavenly Dao humanoids standing densely in the distance. It was terrifying to see their numbers, like grains of dust.

Those humanoids stared with ruthless eyes at those who had just walked out of the channel.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression as she peered further ahead. She saw Kun Peng standing among the Heavenly Dao beings with four Chaos Heavens next to him. In addition, there was a purely white figure, with thousands of eyes and ears and countless organs hanging from his body. The hideous figure evoked chills, and yet he carried a gentle light.

He clearly had the resemblance of a terrifying monster, and yet his presence was surprisingly reassuring.

"You were in such a hurry to meet me. Now, we finally meet."

The terrifying monster sent out peaceful thoughts; they could almost soothe everyone's killing intent and stubbornness.

The Mother of Chaos showed a slightly different expression as she stared at him. "Don't fool me with a fake product. Let your real self come out!"

"As expected of the previous custodian of chaos. Even though you've been wounded a few times in a row, you still have your eyesight," said the peaceful will softly,

"Unfortunately, you've long become rotten too, and should be reforged."

"Kun Peng, how dare you betray us!" said Yin Que furiously, while glaring at Kun Peng, "Where's Ti Tuo?"

"He's not dead. You wouldn't have come if he were," said Kun Peng calmly, "Mother asked me to sneak in, so I did. Mother asked me to return to his side, and I did as told. Mother asked me to create an inner universe to bring you here, and I complied. What did I do wrong?"

“Shut up!” The Golden Crows’ ancestor’s eyes were surging with flames. “We thought you were spying for us, but you’re just a traitor. You, a Sorcerer Ancestor, have been subdued. How shameful!”

Kun Peng said indifferently, “He’s not wrong. Mother is already infected, and so are you. Don’t forget how the Heavenly Dao was born. Given the world that Mother created, it was only a matter of time for the Heavenly Dao to be born. The Heavenly Dao is determined to overthrow Mother; she’s like a glutton enjoying herself for a moment, but she’s sick inside and the gorging will kill her. So, Mother is sick and the world she built is sick, too!”

“Do you honestly believe that they will build an eternal world?”

Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang narrowed his eyes. “Don’t forget that life and death are codependent; the world is eternal if they are considered together! ‘Living’ is just the prelude of a creature. Why do you have to separate the two?”

“This kind of change is the source of all evil!”

Kun Peng said coldly, “Life to death, and death to life. The cycle seems to be spinning all the time, but it actually produces a lot of hatred, resentment and grief! Those things are like the barely noticeable dust; however, once it accumulates, it’ll give birth to the Heavenly Dao!”

“The Heavenly Dao was born because of everyone’s wishes. It is everyone’s wish to build an eternal world!”

“It’s hilarious to see you attack the Heavenly Dao with billions of creatures. Little do you know that this is what everybody wants the most. It is only because they’re too stupid and act based on their urges that there’s infinite hate in the world!”

Yin Que yelled, “Do you think that the world of ice you want to build would be beautiful? That kind of beauty is eternal, but dead!”

“The most splendid beauty in this world is liveliness. The liveliness of sadness, and the liveliness of delight, unlike the numbness of peace, indifference and despair. Even if they’re burned, they may jump in billions of shapes like flames!” said the Golden Crow ancestor, keeping fury in check.

Kun Peng slightly shook his head and said, “You’re all wrong. The eternity we want to build is not frozen. All resources will be concentrated and distributed evenly. Lives will no longer decline; they will receive the same treatment. Hate is not caused by loss, it is the unfairness of it all!”

“If you lose an arm, you will feel pain; but it would stop being painful if everyone loses an arm. Just like when everyone loses an extraordinary power, nobody will feel pain or anger because of the lack of this power.”

The Golden Crow ancestor stared at the demonic figure and asked, “What about them? Won’t they still be controlling chaos? Does your fairness include them?”

The monstrous Heavenly Dao smiled and replied peacefully, “We’ll be gone once that kind of world is built. You may not believe us, but we know what we’ll do.”

“So, the loser has to admit defeat in the end. Strength is what matters, right?” Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que sneered.

“I guess you could say that,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao with a smile.

Su Ping suddenly intervened, “It’s not an eternal world you want to build. You’re only turning your own vision into a concrete existence; you’re the one who’s really infected. That is no longer the wish of the people. You have your own desires... This is just your own selfish thought!”

The smile on the peaceful Heavenly Dao’s face fell somewhat. He gazed at Su Ping and said, “He’s the third challenger leading all the people to attack me, right? He looks much younger than the previous two.”

The Mother of Chaos said coldly, “He’s here bearing the will of the people, and he’s going to end your illusion with me!”

“That is correct,” Su Ping stepped forward and said in a cold tone, “You want fairness for everyone. But how can everyone get everything equally? You say that everyone will receive the same things you get. However, the most precious things in the world—except for the rare cultivation resources, money, wealth and power—are the scenes you witness and the people you interact with every day!

“By your logic, when I see the sunset, others have to see the sunset, too. When I look down from a high building, others have to do the same. It would be unfair otherwise! There are 976 particles whenever I take a breath of chaos aura, and all the others have to absorb 976 particles too, or it would be unfair!

“When I turn to one side and look at things, the others have to do the same, or it would be unfair!”

Su Ping stared at the peaceful Heavenly Dao with blade-like eyes. “There won’t be any living creatures in the world you want to build, only one kind of life. To be more precise, there will only be a single living creature! That’s the only way to ensure absolute balance. If all creatures aim to achieve absolute balance, they must stay unified!



“Without thousands of faces, only having thousands of people living the same life, it would just be one person, no matter how many they are!

“This is just the manifestation of your own wish, not the wish of the people. You have violated the will of the people. You don’t deserve to be called Heavenly Dao. You are an Evil Dao!”

“Well said!”

The Golden Crow ancestor couldn’t help but shout, “Kun Peng, did you hear? The world he’s heralding doesn’t exist. There are no lives in that world, and you don’t have a place in it, either!”

Kun Peng’s expression changed a bit as he looked at the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

Before he could ask—his body trembled all of a sudden. Many sharp blades protruded from the peaceful Heavenly Dao and pierced through his body. Then, those sharp blades moved as arms and pulled him toward the peaceful-looking being.

Kun Peng was shocked and furious. He revealed his true appearance and shrieked at the peaceful creature, “What are you doing?!”

“It was just a matter of time. Since you have doubts, I’ll just remove those doubts for you,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao, “You can’t understand the eternity that I pursue, and you don’t need to; since you’re already sick, that is. You only need to disappear and leave a clean world of chaos behind.”

“Do it!”

The Mother of Chaos quickly attacked the peaceful Heavenly Dao while the latter was absorbing Kun Peng.

Both Yin Que and the Golden Crow ancestor shrieked and followed her, killing the Chaos Heavens that tried to stop them.

“No need to bother with me. His original self is destroying the Chaos Core deep inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. He’s purposely delaying you here...” roared Kun Peng.

The Mother of Chaos changed her expression. Everything would collapse once the Chaos Core was destroyed; all law and order would crumble, and they would lose all their power. They would all turn to dust once chaos perished.

“System, you go first. I’ll stop him!” said Su Ping.

He rushed over, his body transforming into a magnificent mythical creature, as massive as the peaceful Heavenly Dao. Behind him were the experts of all species and the people from the cultivation sites.

The Mother of Chaos had a contorted face. She could feel Su Ping's honest feelings, she knew he wouldn't be able to stop the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Even if it was just a clone.

"You think you can stop me? I'll show you how your predecessors ended!" The peaceful Heavenly Dao was cold. Part of his body turned into sticky fluid, completely covering Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng. There seemed to be countless strange mouths wriggling and biting. Kun Peng's furious roars could be heard.

Another part of his body moved and attacked Su Ping.

The latter instantly felt that his Chaos Qualification was somehow shivering in fear.

"Die!" Su Ping roared.

The experts of all species set up military formations in his warships. The people from the cultivation sites also charged at the other Heavenly Dao beings.

It was impossible for them to participate in the clash against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, or they would only turn to dust, dying as soon as they got any closer. They could only stop the lesser humanoids.

The war that spanned through eternity was resumed yet again.

Various species fought against the humanoids.

The people from the Heaven Path Institute—led by Wen Tian and the other Ancestral Gods—formed arrays and killed several enemies in a row.

The other high-ranked clans also fought the Heavenly Dao forces under the lead of their respective Ancestral Gods.

The war stretched to infinity, battling and bloodshed everywhere. However, the gory images gradually turned into the background. It was the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos who would play a critical role in that fight.

They charged on the battlefield. Chaos collapsed wherever they passed and the void became even more desolate. Their true appearances and their universes were quickly displayed, exploding and turning into an unimaginable blast.

Bang!

A brilliant sword aura passed by. Su Ping merged with the Little Skeleton and the Inferno Dragon. Su Ping felt the power of three Chaos Qualifications inside his body. They were connected, bringing forth a terrifying power.

His sword was much more powerful than before, seemingly ready to cut the entire Ancestral Land of Chaos apart. Its sharpness could be felt from light years away.

The weapon contained so much Dao Power that it could invade memories and erase the target at a primary level.

Anyone hostile to Su Ping would have a sword aura grow inside their heart and would eventually die!

When the sword rose, it was unstoppable!

The peaceful Heavenly Dao's body transformed into a cavity of sorts, moving towards the sword like a sheath and instantly swallowing it. The power on the blade was quickly shattered and dispelled.

Su Ping changed his expression, not expecting such a powerful strike to be incapable of hurting the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

This attack was so powerful it could have instantly wounded another Sorcerer Ancestor!

A clone of the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was already terrifying!

"The power of three Chaos Qualifications is truly interesting," said the peaceful-looking being with a smile. "However, they are just products from an old age. They will be gone when the Chaos Core is broken. Everything will be over soon."

"Come with me," said the Mother of Chaos all of a sudden.

Stunned, Su Ping looked at the system, and immediately understood her intentions from the look in her eyes.

Work together to kill the enemy quickly!

Su Ping and the system had been cooperating and keeping close company in the cultivation sites. However, the system had only provided guidance most of the time, at times letting Su Ping solve problems on his own.

However, they were now truly fighting hand in hand!

"Got it!"

Merge!

Su Ping's body transformed into brilliant light. The Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and the others in his body merged into the cluster of light and fused into the Mother of Chaos's body.

There had always been a bond between Su Ping and the system. He was the host, but the system could decide his fate. The contract depended on the strength difference between the two parties; she could act as the master if she wanted to.

Su Ping willingly turned into a pet as part of the system's power.

He also realized why the system had been nurturing him, and why she had granted him three Chaos Qualifications.

Upon merging, those powers would be at her disposal.

Now in a fused status, Su Ping stepped into a vast and peaceful universe. The space was boundless, but the system's aura was everywhere.

It was the first time for him to merge as a pet.

"So, this is the world you see when you merge with me..."

Su Ping saw the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets next to him. They stayed close to him while also merging with the system through him.

Su Ping looked ahead. There was an outer vision that seemed to project what the system was seeing.

The Ancestral Land of Chaos had a different scenery in her eyes.

The power of chaos was spreading to all directions like a spider web. Countless Great Daos had been constructed, but there were cracks and holes everywhere.

The Heavenly Dao before them wasn't the hideous ghost he had seen; it was a flickering ball of light. That was how the Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked through the system's eyes.

Maybe that was the Great Dao's original appearance.

However, Su Ping was still too weak to see its true form.

"So, this is the truly original world of chaos..." Su Ping didn't expect that the environment seen in the Source Worlds was still not the true thing; it had only been something created by the system. Only the system knew what the real chaos was like.

He also understood why the Little Skeleton and the others had been improving so quickly with him. They shared his vision and understanding when they merged with him, speeding their growth.

For instance, his heart had changed significantly when using the Golden Crow ancestor's blood, even though he only peeped into that world once.

Bang!

The Mother of Chaos made a sudden attack. Instantly, Su Ping felt he was connected to a magnificent power. The strength in his body, which was like a poked balloon at the moment, was unleashed with crazy abandon. That one strike almost exhausted all his power.

Based on what he saw, the strike performed by the system exceeded any sword light he had ever seen before.

There was no dazzling light. Rather, it was like a black line in the world.

To be more precise, there wasn't even a black line, which was just an illusion when the chaos fell to pieces.

The sword aura was invisible, and yet it covered the world, containing the explosive power of thousands of universes. An infinite amount of Great Daos were cut off like the soft leaves of a tree.

The strange wheel launched by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was instantly ripped apart.

The terrifying sword aura pressed forward and directly tore the heavenly being to shreds!

"Is this the method you've prepared since the last few wars? You want to regain control of the twelve Chaos Qualifications through me!" said a furious voice coming from the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's torn body.

"This is the best solution to finish you off!" said the Mother of Chaos coldly.

"That explains a lot. No wonder you appeared so vulnerable in our first encounter. So, back then you were already planning to reestablish chaos and remove the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors through me!" the ultimate humanoid gnashed his teeth. He had taken everything into consideration, but he didn't expect to be actually used as a pawn by the Mother of Chaos from the beginning.

Although it didn't affect his plan, he still felt angry.

“You can understand it that way.” The Mother of Chaos didn’t bother explaining. She instantly slashed a second time.

Su Ping then felt that his strength had been sucked dry, and the sentiment was mutual for the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and the others.

Boom. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s clone was cut to pieces. The second strike was even more powerful than the first one. It seemed to be reducing everything in its path to nothing.

The Mother of Chaos didn’t linger. She glanced at the battlefield and turned around, slashing once again.

The battlefield was instantly separated, cut apart. Countless Heavenly Daos were obliterated.

Her absolute power was prevalent. Countless species were too shocked to speak.

“You stay here. The rest of you, come with me,” said the Mother of Chaos requesting for the other Sorcerer Ancestors to stay there to finish off the remaining Chaos Heavens. She then extended a hand, creating thousands of universes and retrieving all the deployed species.

Then, she dashed forward and directly left the battlefield.

Su Ping remembered the system’s original estimate about the odds of winning, which was 55%. She said that he represented 5% of it; as for the remaining 50%, at least 40% was based on the system’s own strength.

Although the previous two strikes had exhausted Su Ping and his pets’ strength, he knew that the system had also spent a lot of her strength. Otherwise, it would have been impossible to extinguish the Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s clone, no matter how skillfully their strength was used.

How much strength was proportional to the original Heavenly Dao remained a mystery.

Su Ping looked at the Ancestral Land of Chaos passing quickly before his eyes. It was absolutely desolate, without mountains or bodies of water; just a gray chaos was present, part of it as fog, while other parts were cubes or crystals.

The system rushed forward. Su Ping was soon able to see the Heavenly Dao.

There was also a green light, right behind that being. A certain object was emitting an intimidating aura and illuminating the place.

Su Ping felt his heart tremble. It was the Chaos Qualification inside him, which seemed to be shivering in fear.

“We’ve arrived,” said the system via telepathy.

He was instantly alarmed.

The wall of Heavenly Dao standing in their way was instantly destroyed by the sword aura, and couldn’t be resurrected.

As the system landed, Su Ping noticed that the green light originated from an enormous stone plate.

Just as the light emitted, the stone plate was of green color, with a spot that seemed like a drop of water on top. There was a light ball hovering in front of the stone plate, constantly releasing power aimed at the stone plate.

1566 Failure

“Stop!”

The Mother of Chaos immediately rushed forward. The currents of chaos were instantly stirred and followed her. She seemed to be hauling the whole world with her.

“You’re late.”

Right in front of the stone plate—the light dimmed a little. It turned out to be a magnificent figure, both a mountain and an abyss at the same time, quietly glancing at the Mother of Chaos with unparalleled condescension.

Su Ping knew it was the Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s original self, which appeared as a perfect great god. However, it was just a vision based on his own understanding. Every species would see an image they most revered.

Perhaps only the system knew its true appearance.

Bang!

The intimidating sword aura passed by and split the chaos, tearing time apart like a cannon able to destroy stars. However, the astounding sword aura was suddenly turned to particles when about to reach the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

A shining green light covered his body.

The radiance seemed gentle; however, it was a terrifying protective shield.

The Mother of Chaos's expression changed greatly upon witnessing such a result. She shouted in shock, "Impossible!"

The ultimate being gave her a light smile and said, "I have to thank you for attacking me with so many people twice. Wars are always painful, especially the lost ones. The grief and agony they can produce are beyond your imagination!"

The Mother of Chaos stared at the green light covering the latter. All her aggressiveness was gone at that moment, temporarily losing her cool.

Su Ping noticed that the system was acting oddly and quickly shouted, "System, what's wrong? That is the Chaos Core, right? Why did you stop?"

The system was stunned for a long time, frustration and bitterness showing in her beautiful eyes. "A miscalculation on my part. I didn't expect that he would already be fused with the Chaos Core. Destroying him will destroy chaos..."

"Fused..."

Su Ping's mind was blown.

He looked at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao in disbelief. So, chaos would restart no matter how the battle ended?

"Why?"

Su Ping found it hard to understand. The system had planned for such a long time, and even had someone like Kun Peng infiltrate the enemy. No doubt she had other arrangements he didn't know about. But now... the enemy is occupying her vitals?

"The Core of Chaos acknowledged him as master?" asked Su Ping quickly, "Isn't the Chaos Core what gave birth to you? How can it be owned by someone else so easily?"

The system said, gloomy and frustrated, "I was detached from the Chaos Core since birth. This Ancestral Land of Chaos needs its own support and power. Technically speaking, the Chaos Core gave birth to me, and I created the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors... Right now, he's already fused with the Chaos Core. We don't stand a chance."

She looked frustrated, already giving up.

That's right. She had made countless plans and arrangements, but she knew she had lost.

The stronger someone was, the clearer the situation was to them. So, she knew it was pointless to struggle when there was no chance of turning the tables.



Weaklings would often be incapable of reading the situation clearly. Even if it was hopeless, they would still try their best. They would only end up drained in the end, facing defeat in utter despair.

A miracle?

Someone the likes of the Mother of Chaos knew there weren't any. Everything was inevitable, following the Great Dao trajectories.

Su Ping and the others found her words hard to believe.

They had traveled a long way, some resurrected from the river of fate and gathered from countless universes. However, the battle was already over as things stood.

"Mother!"

Among the lives from cultivation sites—several streams of energy gathered and formed a figure emitting a Sorcerer Ancestor's powerful aura. He asked with a contorted expression, "Is it over?"

Su Ping looked at the newcomer. He didn't know him; however, judging by the aura, he instantly realized it was Yuan Shi who had long died in battle.

The latter carried the chaos bloodline, making him easily recognizable to the former.

It came as a surprise, as Su Ping didn't expect the allegedly dead guy to have been in hiding, his being split among different people from the cultivation sites.

"We lost." The Mother of Chaos was gloomy. Her doom was approaching. Chaos would be dominated by the Heavenly Dao in the future; all her preparations had been for naught.

"Kun Peng betrayed me and gave me wrong information. The Chaos Core betrayed me too..." Kun Peng's betrayal was within her expectations and she wasn't too surprised by it. However, the Chaos Core betrayal pierced deep into her heart.

The core that nurtured her had actually sided with the enemy.

Could it be that the Chaos Core also felt that the world she created was too terrible?

"Mother..." Yuan Shi wore an awful expression. He had been hiding for a long time, and never expected such an outcome.

He also understood the current situation, knowing that turning things around was impossible.

The odds of winning were more than fifty percent in the beginning, but they had just turned to zero.

“Your era is over. Now comes the perfect paradise I will build.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao smiled. “There will be no slaughter, no fights, only eternal peace. I will no longer feel the misery of the people. When they’re miserable, I am miserable. I won’t feel their despair anymore, only happiness!”

The Mother of Chaos gave up fighting, and made no effort to refute.

Being forsaken by the Chaos Core made her doubt herself, despite persisting for such a long time.

“I know you saved a lot of methods for the next war. You didn’t use all your trump cards, fearing that you wouldn’t stand a chance if you failed this time.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao smiled again and added, “Unfortunately, there won’t be a next time. Sorcerer Ancestors Yuan Long, Ling Tai and Kun Peng have fallen into my hands. They have the power of creation. They have weathered through countless eras of pain and misery in this world. My power comes from the origin of pain. I’m not like you, who got everything from chaos.”

“Shut up!” Yuan Shi roared, “You call yourself Heavenly Dao, and yet you’re building an inferno of pain. You’re no longer the pure Heavenly Dao. Quoting you, you are already infected; you just haven’t realized it yet!”

“I was born from the prayers of the people. They only pray in their most miserable moments, beseeching joy and happiness.”

The foul being continued after a smile. “Everything I do, I do to fulfill their prayers! I’m going to build the eternal and perfect world that everybody longs for! You say that I’m infected, but my determination has never changed. It’s just that some sacrifices are needed to fulfill this wish.”

“Hilarious!”

Yuan Shi was going to continue, but the Mother of Chaos stopped him.

“Yuan Shi, no need to argue with him. Those who fail are always in the wrong. We lost; it’s useless to talk. You should run right now. He’s already fused with the Chaos Core and cannot be parted from it. You’ll live even if chaos restarts,” said the Mother of Chaos.

Stunned, Yuan Shi gritted his teeth. “Mother, I haven’t been laying low just to stay alive!”

“I know!” she interrupted and stared back at him. “But you should know that unnecessary sacrifices are meaningless.”

Yuan Shi saw the ruthlessness in her eyes and felt sad. He also knew that they had completely lost, now that their opponent was fused with the Chaos Core.

But... He was unwilling to surrender.

“Ask Yin Que and the others to leave. Quickly.”

The Mother of Chaos turned around and looked. She was ablaze with power; more so than ever before. There was no chance of winning, so she wasn't saving her strength anymore. She released her pressure, and everybody experienced the territorial power of the person who had dominated chaos for countless years.

Bang.

The sword auras raged. Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors were fighting the Heavenly Dao humanoids; their opponents suddenly fell apart.

The sword auras ignored distance, simply mincing and killing them.

“Mother.”

The Sorcerer Ancestors were shocked upon sensing their mother's aura. The Golden Crow ancestor quickly said, “Mother, no need to worry about us; we can take care of them. Please save your strength!”

“That won't be necessary. We've already lost; you should leave now,” she replied.

All the Sorcerer Ancestors were stunned, finding it hard to believe. We lost?

They had already fought twice, but they had never lost as fast. It was even their first time seeing the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

The Golden Crow ancestor reacted and quickly asked, “We lost? Why? Is our enemy too strong for you? Or were we too late to help you?”

“The Ultimate Heavenly Dao has fused with the Chaos Core; there's no chance of winning. You should leave!” said the Mother of Chaos.

Her children were stunned, as if struck by lightning.

They were filled with doubt and shock, understanding the gravity of the situation. Their enemy had actually ended their battle, once and for all!

Shi Mang couldn't help but say, "He fused with the Chaos Core... How is it possible? You would have sensed his intrusion as it happened..."

She stayed silent; that was the main source of her grief.

Her reliance on the Chaos Core was the cause of such a failure.

The Heavenly Dao invaded the core and fused with it, but she didn't feel a thing. That could only mean that the Chaos Core had voluntarily isolated her, choosing the Heavenly Dao.

Otherwise, the latter would have been incapable of severing their connection.

"You should also leave."

The Mother of Chaos's body changed. She expelled Su Ping, the Inferno Dragon and the other pets out of her body and canceled the merging state. She even injected her own power into Su Ping and the rest as they detached, all to restore their power to peak status.

"Leave? That's impossible."

Su Ping drifted away from her body and gazed at her. "Have you given up so easily?"

The Mother of Chaos looked back at him and said, "You don't understand. With everything coming to this point, there's no chance of winning, at all. It's useless even if we kill him; he's already fused with chaos."

"So what?" Su Ping said, "If he fused with it, we'll just have him part with it. If he's unwilling, we'll beat him until he changes his mind! Why give up so easily? Did I ever give up when I was a nobody and I encountered lots of formidable monsters in the cultivation sites?"

He then pointed at the corpses that had tagged along with the experts of all species; some were stuck to the warships and partook in the battle. Once the fight ended, Su Ping took them with him.

"They have been waiting for this moment for so long. Have they ever given up?"

"There's also them..."

Su Ping pointed at the people from the cultivation sites and the countless universes. "Compared to you and me, they're more than weak. However, they've never had a real glimpse of hope, exactly because of their puny strength, have they? Do they know the specific arrangements of this war? No! They are simply sailing on a dark ocean and might fall into an abyss at any moment!

“But have they ever given up?”

“You said that I don’t understand. Indeed, I don’t. So what if it’s hopeless? So what if we’re at a dead end? Should we just give up and surrender? If you’ll die whether you fight or not, why not die fighting?”

Su Ping said, giving weight to each word, “You’ve prepared for such a long time and fought many times over. Was it all for this moment of relaxation right now? Are you tired from fighting?!”

The Mother of Chaos was stunned, at a loss for words as she looked at Su Ping’s red eyes.

Nobody knew how much suffering he had gone through better than her.

However, it was true; this seemingly casual and humorous man had never given up in front of a real test!

Even though he could resurrect, no matter how dangerous the monsters encountered were in the cultivation sites, some despair and fright couldn’t be dismissed just like that.

“If you’re tired from fighting, I’ll fight for you!”

Su Ping looked deeply at the system. He then turned around and faced the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, with a burning fight intent rising in his body.

“Humph. Stupid lives deserve to be destroyed,” said the ultimate nemesis with a chuckle.

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping with flickering eyes. She said softly, “Don’t be reckless. You can still survive with the power you have now, even if chaos is restarted. There are no borders inside the great chaos. Even if he dominates this place, he won’t be able to find you, just like he can’t find Hao Tian and Hei Xiang.

“You don’t have to die for nothing.”

“This isn’t dying for nothing. Our deaths are significant!” declared Su Ping, word for word.

“I just want you to live...” she whispered. Her voice was somewhat dejected. That was why she had chosen to end things.

Continuing the fight was hopeless. It was better to let the ones capable of surviving to live on.

Su Ping's heart shook upon sensing the system's emotions. He knew it was her truest desire.

But...

"Don't you enjoy prying into my heart?" Su Ping's tone softened.

Slightly dazed, she shook her head and said, "I've no longer peeped into your heart, ever since you reached the Undying State. I promised."

Su Ping lowered his head and smiled. "Everything I've been doing is because I hope you can survive..."

The Mother of Chaos was stunned.

"You know my personality; I will never become a stupid savior. However, I only want to help those who have helped me, and save those who have saved me."

Su Ping raised his eyes and said, one word after the other, "As I said, I will never let my partners die before my eyes, unless I die first!"

"System... I prefer calling you that way. Speaking of partners, you have been the one who has kept me company the longest and helped me the most. Don't forget I'm still your host and master!"

The Mother of Chaos stared at Su Ping, unable to utter a word.

She was familiar with Su Ping's personality, so she knew he was telling the truth.

He had been fighting all this time to get there, risking his own life just because he wanted her to survive...

The Little Skeleton looked at the Mother of Chaos and said briefly, "Don't give up so easily!"

Inferno Dragon chimed in, with a heavy and deafening tone, imbued with dragon might, "Come on, let's fight together. Boss said that the meaning of life is that you get to enjoy it, not what others may say!"

"We will fight for you until the last moment!" said the Dark Dragon Hound with a slight grin.

"Mother, please don't give up so easily!" said Yuan Shi in a hurry.

The Golden Crow ancestor moved closer and said in a loud voice, "That's right. Mother, let's fight together!"

Yin Que and Shi Mang had also arrived. They looked intently; troubled, yet in silence. They knew that the Heavenly Dao had fused with chaos, making their fight a lost cause. Continuing the struggle was just asking for death.

But...

The third leader of all species—the host that their mother had painstakingly trained—was willing to stay and die with her, even though he had obtained a Chaos Qualification and became an everlasting Sorcerer Ancestor.

Could they simply turn around and leave?

Su Ping didn't turn around. He simply said in a low voice, "Everybody, please finish the last part of this journey with me!"

The experts of all species on the three thousand warships discarded all their despair and grief. They knew that Su Ping could escape while they couldn't; they weren't Sorcerer Ancestors. If chaos collapsed, all of them would cease to exist.

Su Ping was willing to stay and fight by their side. How could they retreat?

"Fight!"

"We're willing to fight by your side, Dao Ancestor!"

"Dao Ancestor, feel free to take whatever strength I have. I'm willing to serve!"

"I'm willing to serve you!!"

The experts of all species roared in approval.

"Ancestor Su, we swore to follow you until death. Don't worry."

"Brother Su, feel free to go all out. Whether we live or die, we won't complain!"

All those great figures from the cultivation sites expressed their readiness to fight.

"All right!"

Su Ping took a deep breath and said, "Thank you, everybody. Let's fight until he willingly separates from chaos!"

"Fight!!"

Battle roars echoed throughout the world.

Billions of species cheered at the same time.

Su Ping immediately merged with the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and his other pets. Then, he activated his Contract Dao, which spread to connect with all species and the people from the cultivation sites. The number of contracts he could establish would completely depend on the capacity of his body. Having become a Sorcerer Ancestor, he could make thousands of universes with a single thought. It wasn't a problem for him to accommodate all the people present.

"I will establish a contract with all of you!"

Su Ping's power was spread further out. His Contract Dao was extended to billions of species. From the strongest Undying State expert to the weakest mortals, including the old, the weak, the women and children, all of them were able to feel Su Ping's great and strong willpower.

Kill them!!

His willpower influenced billions of species and countless lives. Birds, beasts; all people could feel his bravery and killing intent!

Su Ping gathered their power in his body to fight the Heavenly Dao with ruthless abandon!

The Mother of Chaos was stunned by the shouting of so many living creatures, and seeing the power gathered.

Dazed, she stared at the seemingly eternal figure before her eyes. The scene was beyond her wildest expectations. She had prepared lots of plans and schemes. She had considered Su Ping as just a leader, or a chess piece she had picked from amongst all lives!

She had been training him so he could fight for her and block the Heavenly Dao.

Had they developed a mutual bond after all this time?

The ten thousand years she had spent with Su Ping was but a brief moment in her long life.

It wasn't until everything was settled and her failure was inevitable that she finally cut off all her thoughts.

Therefore, while giving up all resistance, the sympathy in her heart prompted her to free Su Ping and the other Sorcerer Ancestors, so that they wouldn't die for nothing.

If they kept on fighting, their deaths would have no meaning.



But...

Su Ping had chosen to stay.

He chose to fight!

That was exactly what she had been training Su Ping for. But why did she feel so sad and grieved at that moment?

“Kill them all!”

Su Ping clenched his fists. His roar echoed throughout the world, scaring everyone!

Streams of power coming from the people on the warships were drawn into Su Ping’s body. His body was already as huge as a universe by then; stars and moons were just dust on his palm!

Boom!

Su Ping punched furiously. His fist roared, causing turbulence throughout the entire Land of Chaos; it moved like a spear, followed by the Great Dao. The strike was so powerful that even the ultimate existences such as Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que displayed shock on their faces!

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao—at the moment holding the stone plate—also showed a slightly different expression. After a snort, an enormous body emerged from the light. The body seemed as powerful as Su Ping’s, and answered with a heavy punch of its own.

The two streams of terrifying power collided, producing an instant explosion. The blast reached billions of light years into the distance, all the way to the edge of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. If there were any grand universes floating around, they would’ve instantly collapsed due to the force of the blast!

It was already a battle beyond the level of any normal existence.

“Idiotic!” The Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked down at Su Ping, cold-eyed. “I am the one who has truly gathered the power of the people! You’ve only gathered a lousy crowd who are terminally ill. Besides, how many lives have been born in chaos? Most of them are already gone and forgotten like passing clouds!

“But I will never forget them!”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao pointed at his body. “All of them are inside my body. I’ve come here in answer to their prayers and their last wish to restart chaos and build a perfect world!”

“Shut up!”

## **Astral Pet Store –**

1557 The Yellow Spring Flows in Reverse, Old Friend Returns (1)

Yuan Long had been killed. The Heavenly Dao garrison was destroyed, and Su Ping was going to meet with his allies.

Before setting off, he looked at the billions of species and noticed a lot of vacant spots on the three thousand warships. There had been myriads of beings who had taken those spots and fought by his side.

Those beings had burned their lives and were completely gone after fighting in the previous battle.

He then looked at the billions of kilometers up ahead, only seeing red, green, golden, purple and other colors blossoming everywhere in the vast Ancestral Land of Chaos.

Those were the colors of blood from the billions of species.

Even though their bloodlines were different and their blood color wasn't the same, they had been buried in the same battlefield.

The experts who left their clan members and moved as reinforcements resulted in heavy losses among their clansmen. There was an infinite number of corpses that was no less scary than the darkest Chaotic Realm of the Undead.

Su Ping took a deep breath. He activated the warships and said to the remaining experts, "Everyone, get ready to meet with our allies!"

"Yes, sir!"

The experts on the warships were excited, especially when they saw the Inferno Dragon below. They didn't know why Su Ping's pet had suddenly become so terrifying, but it was a good thing for them anyway.

Inside the warships—many experts simply sat down and took a good rest to heal their wounds. They didn't have any fellow clansmen left and

they had nothing to prepare. They only needed to adjust themselves for the next battle!

Su Ping dropped a hint at the Inferno Dragon.

The Inferno Dragon instantly understood. While working with Su Ping's three thousand warships, it instantly attracted all the remnants of the billions of species to Su Ping's universes.

Those people's wounds were quickly healed the moment they boarded the warships.

The heavily wounded and close to dying had even recuperated to their prime status; only their armor remained bloodstained.

Su Ping paid special attention to the human tribe and saw that his parents and Su Lingyue were still alive, which gave him great relief. He knew that they were ready to sacrifice themselves and he was prepared to endure their deaths, he still felt happy to see them alive and well.

However, he noticed that many familiar faces were gone from the human crowd.

For example, Chi Ying, Xu Kong and the other pillars of humanity.

The same went for Qin Duhuang and other members of the Qin family that he knew from the Blue Planet.

Su Ping's eyes glittered in silence. Once everyone was relocated to his three thousand universes, he turned around and asked the Inferno Dragon to fly onward.

The latter leaped across the battlefield at lightning speed. Only the sound of the three thousand warships trailing behind could be heard.

The images at ground level became vague, mottled pieces as they moved forward. Even though the dragon pet wasn't as fast as Yin Que, it had become a Sorcerer Ancestor and could fly at ten times the speed of sound, even in the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

That was a power that could barely be understood with the original concepts of physics. Su Ping sensed that the aura of chaos was increasingly abundant as he pressed deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

What puzzled him was that he saw no signs of the Heavenly Dao on the rest of the journey.

Considering normal defense tactics, a garrison was usually set at certain distances to make sure no one could go in.

Was the Heavenly Dao so confident that nobody could pass the first line of defense? Or were there other reasons?

Very soon, Su Ping was able to sense a few powerful auras gathered further ahead. He narrowed his eyes and focused, instantly making those auras clearer. It was the system, Yin Que and other Sorcerer Ancestors.

“That’s... Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification?”

Next to a magnificent river, the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos were waiting for Su Ping. All of them had arrived, except for him.

They would have thought that Su Ping had already been killed in battle, were it not for the Mother of Chaos saying that he was still alive.

After all, he wasn’t a Sorcerer Ancestor; he was just an ant. Even though he was leading billions of species, it was impossible for him to quickly annihilate the Heavenly Dao garrison.

“Mother, is it the Chaos Qualification that you sensed just now? Yuan Long indeed surrendered. He did exactly what Ling Tai did in the past!” The Golden Crow ancestor’s eyes were cold. There was a brilliant star on its forehead, which was the Golden Crow home it was protecting.

All of the Golden Crows were nestled inside that dazzling brilliance. They were providing power and receiving protection at the same time.

“He obtained Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification. In other words, he defeated... and killed Yuan Long?” Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo found it hard to believe. Is it really something that Su Ping could do?

“That’s right. Yuan Long is dead. Sorcerer Ancestor Yuan Long is no more,” said the Mother of Chaos softly. There was regret in her eyes, but it was soon replaced by calmness.

“Was Yuan Long weakened after being suppressed by the Heavenly Dao? How could he kill Yuan Long?” asked Yin Que suspiciously. The latter was also doubting that Su Ping could be capable of slaying their brother. Wouldn’t that ant have the power to threaten all Sorcerer Ancestors if that was the case?

None of the previous candidates raised by the Mother of Chaos had been capable of such a feat.

“Yuan Long was indeed weakened, and also overestimated himself. However, his death was still beyond my expectations,” said the Mother of Chaos with a smile.

She had basically been aware of the entire battle through the contract she had with Su Ping. She was also present, watching from the side while Su Ping tricked the Chaos Qualification, although she couldn’t do anything to help.

1558 The Yellow Spring Flows in Reverse, Old Friend Returns (2)

“Beyond your expectations?” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang was dazed for a moment.

The Mother of Chaos’s candidates had always been under her control. How could they act beyond her expectations?

It had to be noted that all things and every universe functioned under the Mother of Chaos’ control. Su Ping—having been subject to her training—should be absolutely under her control. This made his thoughts and whatever happened to him easy to infer... And yet, she claimed that Su Ping was performing beyond her expectations.

The Inferno Dragon had already approached them while they spoke.

“Everyone, sorry I’m late.”

While still on top of the dragon’s head, Su Ping said to the group, “I hope nothing was delayed because of me.”

“Something would have been delayed had you taken longer to get here.” Yin Que stared at Su Ping and then at the Inferno Dragon with anger in his eyes. “He’s absorbed Yuan Long’s Chaos Qualification, so he’s the new Sorcerer Ancestor. Why are you standing on a Sorcerer Ancestor’s head?”

Su Ping frowned a bit and replied, “I am indeed standing on top of its head, but we are equal. It could do the same to me, if we weren’t in such a hurry.”

“That’s right. I’m willing to serve my master for as long as I live!” said the Inferno Dragon with a stern tone as it glared at Yin Que. Both had equally strong at the moment; so naturally, there was nothing to fear.

“This is.... hilarious!”

Ti Tuo and Yin Que were both furious. That guy acted like a Sorcerer Ancestor without having the pressure that went with it. It was embarrassing for them.

The Mother of Chaos said, “All right, we’re not here to talk about this. In any case, Su Ping has brought another Sorcerer Ancestor to us, which has increased our odds of winning by ten percent! You should know why we lost in the past. We will only lose again if we keep bickering!”

Shi Mang nodded. “That’s right. Had all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors joined hands sooner, the Heavenly Dao wouldn’t have grown as strong, forcing us to move so far away.”

“Our target is the Heavenly Dao, in case you’ve forgotten,” said the Golden Crow ancestor coldly.

Ti Tuo was still unhappy, but the matter was dropped.

Yin Que snorted and said, "Let's take action now that he's already here. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao must already know we're here."

"If we summon them back, our odds of success will increase by another five percent. The Void Wall has to be filled up by them!" said Shi Mang.

"Let's begin," said the Mother of Chaos succinctly. She simply raised a hand, which emitted a hazy light of chaos that contained the Original Dao. The magnificent river next to her became real and more brilliant.

Countless stars seemed to be surfacing and glittering in the river.

The Mother of Chaos said to Su Ping, "This is the River of Fate that decides everyone's destiny. It is also known as the Yellow Spring. When people die, they return to this place and wait for a new journey!"

Su Ping realized what was going to happen. He held his breath nervously.

Soon after, the river surged before his eyes, and the infinite brilliance swam and gathered.

The long river flowed backwards. Time was spinning. The Great Dao power that could change the world began to congregate.

In response to the pulling force from the Mother of Chaos, the dazzling light suddenly jumped out of the river and quickly gathered as fuzzy figures.

Fate was reversed. The people who were struggling in the river were fished out.

Many familiar faces appeared before Su Ping's eyes.

"Boss!"

The calling made Su Ping's body tremble.



The person had long golden hair and the most alluring body figure. She was also holding the ancient spear of the Titans. It was none other than Joanna!

She gazed at him with a smile; Su Ping felt as if he was dreaming.

Next to Joanna were other familiar figures, including Heather and the other Superior Gods from the Demigod Burial.

“Human Ancestor!”

On the other hand, another golden circle of light appeared, and the people of the Heaven Path Institute showed up, including the president, Elder Yan Qing, Ancestral God Wen Tian, and others.

There were also many students of the institute, who looked up at Su Ping with respect and excitement.

A slightly chilly voice sounded. “Human Ancestor, it’s been a long time!” Su Ping turned, only to discover that it was the Rain Ancestor.

Next to him were the people of the Rain Clan, including their leader and the prince he had killed.

“Human Ancestor, our world was invaded and destroyed by the Heavenly Dao because of our ignorance. Our clan died in the battle. Our glory is no more... I hope we can follow you and make up for what we did!” said the Rain Ancestor with a soft voice. His eyes were sincere; he looked different from the last time he saw him in the cultivation site.

The cultivation site had captured a moment from their past, back when the Rain Clan was arrogant. Conflicts were inevitable and would escalate when they encountered a tough man like Su Ping.

However, whatever happened there wasn’t real, so there was no real hatred between them.

The Rain Clan had never encountered Su Ping in real life. They had always been arrogant, until the Heavenly Dao arrived one day and wreaked havoc on their world. All of them died while trying to resist.

The other high-ranked clans also showed up, all of them with solemn expressions. “Human Ancestor, we’re willing to go all out to claim back what we had, now that we’ve returned!”

All the things that happened in the cultivation site had become part of their memories. Nothing had been real, yet they were no strangers to Su Ping.

1559 The Yellow Spring Flows in Reverse, Old Friend Returns (3)

Su Ping defeated the Seven Greatest Clans on his own. He was now the commander selected by the Mother of Chaos. Naturally, they wouldn’t disobey.

“Brother Su!”

“Senior Brother Su.”

Besides the people from the world of gods, there were also people from other cultivation sites in the crowd.

There were people from the Realm of Deities, the Chaotic Realm of the Undead, and many others.

There was Ming, the Asura that Su Ping befriended long before. He was the first person who had ever taught him sword techniques.

He had asked Su Ping to help him find the goddess named Shen Cangyue, but Su Ping had never found her. It had been further postponed due to being too busy cultivating, and now felt guilty about it.

However, Su Ping’s willpower surged and soon discovered the aura among the resurrected lives as the River of Fate was reversed.

She was a beautiful girl, like a lotus flower on a snowy mountain. There was now a young and handsome man next to her, holding her waist. The

pair seemed quite intimate, happy for being reunited after such a long time.

Su Ping was silent for a moment. He glanced at Ming, but thought it was inappropriate to inform him.

“No need to feel sorry for me, Brother Su. I already know,” said Ming via telepathy with a smile.

Su Ping felt dazed.

“I have no more regrets now that she’s already found someone. I’ve waited a hundred thousand years for a result. I can fight at peace now that I know!” said Ming with a smile.

Su Ping answered with a slight nod.

Ming looked at the countless people in the crowd. He seemed to have already seen the girl whom he had waited for a hundred thousand years, and whom he turned from a demigod to an Asura for. He said to himself, “Being able to die on the same battlefield is not the worst ending...”

“Brother Su!”

“Young friend, I was right about you.”

An old deity was smiling in the crowd; he had once given Su Ping the power harnessed by ancient deities. However, it had been the Mother of Chaos who offered it to Su Ping through his hands in the cultivation site, the whole experience based on his personality. If there was another peculiar trait, it would’ve been someone else who would offer the power of the ancient deities to Su Ping.

Su Ping nodded. He had met all of those people before; they had either helped him, or had been killed by him.

Those whom he helped remembered the favor, and the ones killed didn’t hold grudges against him. They had been killed by the Heavenly Dao in real life, not by him.

Furthermore, there were many cultivation sites that Su Ping never got to visit. The people from those places weren't acquainted with Su Ping. However, they all knew where they were going via telepathic messages sent by the Mother of Chaos.

"Finally, I can leave the system and fight by your side," said Joanna with a soft voice as she approached.

Su Ping discarded his bottled up sadness upon seeing her beautiful face. He nodded and said, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for eternal peace!"

Joanna nodded back and said to herself, "I'm willing to sacrifice my life for your eternal safety!"

Su Ping looked at the figures gathering in front of him. The number of Undying State existences grew, exceeding the ones already with him, members from the billions of species. He recalled the list of cultivation sites he had seen before. It had been so long he almost ran short of patience to scroll down to the bottom.

The figures that had disappeared throughout history had been summoned by the system to fight by his side.

They were many times more of them than the people from the billions of species behind him!

"The Heavenly Dao is intent on destroying the Ancestral Land directly. They never cut off the River of Fate, which is also a trick we used in the previous two wars. Unfortunately, the trick can only be used once. If we lose this time, we'll have fewer trump cards for the next try..." Yin Que heaved a sigh.

"Our odds of winning lower with each attempt. I hope we can get this over with this time; I won't come back again," said Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo coldly.

After all the dazzling lights from the River of Fate jumped out, the Golden Crow ancestor urged, "Let's go. The Heavenly Dao has already noticed us. Let's get this over with as soon as possible!"

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping and said, "This time, we will fight side by side."

Su Ping smiled. "As we always have, right?"

She nodded with glittering eyes. "That's right."

He then looked at the familiar faces that had gathered around him. Once the war ended, many of them would be permanently gone. The pain caused by war was excruciating even before it even started.

"Let's go!" Su Ping said.

Clang!

The chains shook, and the three thousand warships sailed forth, carrying all of those people.

Joanna stared at Su Ping for a moment. She then turned around and boarded one of the warships. This time, she was going to fight by Su Ping's side!

The people from the Heaven Path Institute glanced at Su Ping and also boarded the ships.

“The Heavenly Dao forces are deep inside the Ancestral Land. Let's just go over there!” Yin Que suggested.

The Mother of Chaos nodded with a solemn face, then she pointed in a certain direction. The aura of chaos around her was suddenly gathered, forming a hazy channel that extended for billions of kilometers, going deep into the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

“Let's go!”

Su Ping had already accommodated all the beings rescued from the River of Fate inside his warships, then gathered the latter to make a move. Yin Que was the first to step into the vortex; the Golden Crow ancestor was second; Ti Tuo was third; Shi Mang was the fourth. The

Mother of Chaos—who had been waiting at the entrance of the channel—glanced at Su Ping and moved to his side.

Su Ping gave her a slight nod, and the two of them entered together.

The three thousand warships followed close and went into the vortex.

A stream of chaos power was working around him. They seemed to be flying and still at the same time. Very soon, the vortex disappeared and a bleak view received them.

There was a vast accumulation of debris before their eyes. The abundant aura of chaos was like smoke limiting Su Ping's senses. Some lonely mountains could be seen through the gray smore, like trees rising from the ground, with strange branches stretching out, making them look like twisted bodies.

There was no time nor space in the origin of everything; they were insignificant variables incapable of creating any power.

Origin, Cycle, Creation and the other Great Daos were wandering around the place.

Everything was like the still water of a lake.

Su Ping could feel the powerful binding force of the region. Only Dao Heart experts and above would be able to move in such an environment. Normal Celestials would barely have the power to walk, let alone beings with lesser cultivation levels; they would be as powerless as the corpses found there.

Without the power of time, every moment there was eternal.

“You’re finally here,” said an indifferent and majestic voice right above them, dripping with the condescension to look down upon everything. Figures were stepping out from the hazy smoke. They were all Undying State Heavenly Dao beings, with identical looks and expressions.

At the center of the humanoid forces, there was a silver guy who wore an ancient robe, giving him a graceful and righteous look. With a dispassionate voice he said, “Still unwilling to give up?”

He looked slightly different from the other clone-like beings, seemingly...  
More alive.



“Humph. You’re not nearly enough to stop us. Get out of the way!” The Golden Crow ancestor’s eyes were cold. The scorching flames on its body burned the gray smoke and made it a lot thinner.

“You were born in chaos, but you failed to manage chaos well. You should die with them,” said the silver member of the Heavenly Dao.

“No need to talk. Just kill them!” said Shi Mang, releasing the overwhelming energy of death, as he was the first to charge forward, not wasting time talking.

Whoosh!

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que was the best when it came to attacking. It transformed into a dark shadow that darted towards the robed humanoid. Terrifying explosions instantly began to sound; the violent impacts shattered the dozens of Undying State humanoids nearby.

“Ultimate Hallucination!”

It was Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que’s ultimate technique, a terrifying Dao power capable of destroying everything. A grand universe appeared, created by the combination of millions of universes; it was bigger than

any universe known, the most powerful universe of chaos. Not even

Undying State beings could break free from it.

The black light appeared faster than Su Ping could perceive it. He then saw Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que fighting the silver-colored Heaven being.

The power of time was circulating around them. In just one moment, they

had fought from the past to the future, spanning through more than a

hundred thousand years.

The special nature of such a battle was beyond the boundaries of common sense. Su Ping was secretly alarmed as he watched. He would

have probably been incapable of fighting back if Sorcerer Ancestor Yin

Que were the one blocking him before. The experts from the billions of

species would have been killed, too.

Yin Que was the fastest Sorcerer Ancestor. No wonder it was able to

survive the previous three wars!

“Let’s get this over with. They’ve only left one Chaos Heaven in this

place; they don’t know what they’re doing!” said the Golden Crow

ancestor when joining the battle, followed closely by Sorcerer Ancestor

Shi Mang.

Ti Tuo produced a lot of clones that charged at the other Undying State humanoids. Each clone was powerful enough to slaughter the Heavenly Dao forces with ease, practically being invincible.

“That silver Heaven seems to be as strong as a Sorcerer Ancestor,” said Su Ping to the system who had yet to take action, “How many of those silver-level Heavenly Dao fighters are out there?”

“They are called Chaos Heavenly Daos, born after absorbing the power of mythical creatures. They are reincarnations of the Heavenly Dao’s power from the age of chaos,” said the system, “At first, there were thirty-two of them. I killed many of their kind in the previous wars. Right now, only eight remain.

“They are as strong as the ultimate Heavenly Dao, but technically speaking, they’re slightly weaker. After all, Sorcerer Ancestors have the Chaos Qualifications. In any case, it’ll take a long time for Yin Que and the others to kill the Chaos Heaven being.”

She added, “There’s no concept of time in the Ancestral Land of Chaos; there are only Chaos Years. It’s like the petals of a flower; the fall of a petal is an indicator that some time has passed!”

“Chaos Years?”

“That’s right. It differs from the normal time, given that time is linear and has an order: past, present and future. Existences like us can easily manipulate this vulnerable Dao power. Besides, time is too weak to change anything in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everything you see here is immortal.

“However, Chaos Years are different. If you regress from a hundred years to fifty, there will be no turning back!

“We all have Chaos Years; this place has its own Chaos Years, too. Once they run out, it’ll be the time we die.”

“Die?”

Su Ping felt dazed. Although he had yet to understand what a Chaos Year was, it seemed to be a combination of power and time. Their lives would end when it was over.

“Yin Que won’t need a lot of years to kill the fellow while counting with the Golden Crow’s help,” said the system, “We are still in the periphery

of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. The Heavenly Dao forces have marched deep enough, so we must hurry. Follow me.”

“Okay,” said Su Ping.

All of a sudden—there was a violent attack moving towards them.

Su Ping narrowed his eyes and hurriedly raised his defenses to resist with all his strength.

In all the group, the Inferno Dragon was the fastest to respond, instantly roaring and denting the scale on its forehead. All of its other scales were instantly stacked, protecting Su Ping and the pets.

The dragon blocked the attack with its body. Su Ping and the others felt the immense energy blast. Fortunately, Su Ping was now able to deal with the power that leaked in, all thanks to the Inferno Dragon’s selfless blocking.

Once the power was disposed of, Su Ping quickly looked and then saw the most astounding scene.

The system's body had been pierced through by sharp stings. The attacker was actually Sorcerer Ancestor Ti Tuo who was moving at the front!

Explosions echoing in the battlefield further ahead at the same time. Then, there was a long roar. The Golden Crow ancestor and the other Sorcerer Ancestors attacking the Chaos Heaven fellow were forced to retreat.

One silver figure after another appeared next to the Chaos Heaven they were confronting.

Four more showed up. There were five Chaos Heaven in total!

Next to the five Chaos Heavens were three scary, gargantuan figures!

Three Sorcerer Ancestors!

Su Ping narrowed his eyes. All of this happened too fast for him to react.

The situation had been instantly reversed, bringing them utter despair!

“Ti Tuo, what are you doing?!”

The Golden Crow ancestor looked back and roared, with furious flames  
burning in its eye sockets.

“Bloody bastard!” Yin Que shrieked in fury. They realized that something  
was wrong with Ti Tuo, right when they saw the three Sorcerer  
Ancestors and the extra four Chaos Heavens. Of the twelve overlords, Ti  
Tuo was the best at observation. Even though Yin Que was the fastest, it  
could not hide from Ti Tuo’s perception; all actions would be observed.

Ti Tuo’s keen observation had helped them see through the Heavenly  
Dao’s ambushes and made great contributions in the previous wars!  
Those Chaos Heavens had most likely been hiding for a long time and Ti  
Tuo should have noticed them since the very beginning. However, no  
alert was raised.

**Betrayal!**

“Mother!” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang roared and turned around,  
charging to face Ti Tuo.

But the next moment, the latter chuckled and disappeared from Shi  
Mang’s attack range. His original body was swapped with a clone that

had been sent to attack the Heavenly Dao expert at the beginning. He then stepped forth and joined the opposite side.

“Sorry, but I don’t want to be an idiot again.” Ti Tuo chuckled. “I never forgot how we lost the previous two wars, and I don’t want to end like a dog working for the Heavenly Dao.”

“But you’re acting like their dog right now!” the Golden Crow ancestor roared furiously.

“No, no. The Heavenly Dao has given me the Chaos Origin Stone. Once chaos is restarted, I will be acknowledged by the Ancestral Land of Chaos to control the world along with the Heavenly Dao!” Ti Tuo chuckled.

“Hey, hey, Ti Tuo, are you saying that we’re dogs working for the Heavenly Dao?” The three Sorcerer Ancestors approached Ti Tuo, and their words didn’t sound very amiable.

Ti Tuo chuckled and said, “I didn’t mean it. Don’t misunderstand me; we are comrades right now. My previous attack has probably wounded



Mother badly. This is a great opportunity; we shouldn't be wasting time anymore.”

“No, we should not waste any more time,” said the biggest Sorcerer Ancestor with indifference. However, the next moment—it suddenly opened its bloody mouth and swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Kun Peng!”

Both the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que changed their expressions, witnessing the act in shock and fury.

“Sorry. The Heavenly Dao asked me to hand both him and the Origin Stone. I'll be taking my leave now,” said Kun Peng in a casual tone, then flapped its wings and soared away.

The other two Sorcerer Ancestors were Hun Yu and Xuan Qi.

Su Ping had once met Hun Yu in the Remains of High Heavens that the system had recreated. Although an illusion, the majestic figure that covered the retreat of billions of mythical creatures had left a deep impression on Su Ping.

Alas, that Sorcerer Ancestor was a cold enemy at the moment.

“Mother, drop the act; the Heavenly Dao is already aware of your plan. This matter should end now. You don’t have a lot of capital left right now, do you? Hei Xiang and Hao Tian were smart enough to stay away from this mess,” said the Sorcerer Ancestor coldly.

## ● Astral Pet Store

1561 Merging of the Heavenly Dao (1)

“Yes, I’m done acting.”

The wounds on the Mother of Chaos healed quickly. She said with indifference, “Ti Tuo’s mission was to lure all of you here, so that I could kill you all at once so you won’t cause more trouble!”

Su Ping had just approached the system to check her wounds. He was briefly dazed, not expecting the betrayal to be an act. No wonder the Golden Crow and the others’ reactions were so strange when Kun Peng swallowed Ti Tuo.

“Humph!”

Sorcerer Ancestor Xuan Qi snorted, “You are no longer at the peak. It won’t be so easy for you to finish us off. By the way, he’s about to reach the Chaos Core in the Ancestral Land; once it’s broken, chaos will be dissolved and everything will restart!”

“You can die now, then!” roared the Golden Crow ancestor, suddenly charging towards Xuan Qi like the wind.

Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu said indifferently, “Why bother struggling? There are indeed too many ants roaming in chaos; they would be erased if everything is restarted and a brand-new world of chaos will be created. That will be a good thing.”

“I’ve been sleeping in the Dao of Death all the time, but what do you even think life is?!” Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang suddenly charged forward and turned into a dark blade to attack Hun Yu furiously.

Bang!

Hun Yu released its universe, the biggest and hardest compared to those of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. Shi Mang's full-strength strike didn't break it.

"You were created by me. I truly don't want to be the one to act and erase you." The Mother of Chaos stared at Hun Yu and Xuan Qi. She raised her hand; even though she said those things, there wasn't a speck of indecision at that moment. Besides, the bond between a mother and a child was unique to some species; there were other kinds whose children would feed on their mother upon birth.

Some would even eat the children they had just given birth to, seeing it as a natural option.

The Mother of Chaos didn't harbor much of the expected special feelings. She only felt regretful, as one would feel by needing to destroy fine, personally crafted pieces of art.

Whoosh!

The Mother of Chaos waved a hand, and the chaos energy floating in the void was suddenly destroyed. Two terrifying forces akin to huge axes slashed out, making Hun Yu and Xuan Qi change expressions.

Hun Yu hurriedly moved his universe to block the attack aimed at Xuan Qi.

The former's universe trembled and almost fell apart.

Exactly at this moment, the five Chaos Heavens also took action—

"Judgment!"

They released the same light of chaos. Wheels of Judgment flew out of their bodies and spun in the sky, moving towards the Mother of Chaos like sharp blades.

The latter narrowed her eyes, she pointed her finger at the incoming attacks, shooting a black beam that destroyed the balance of one of the wheels.

She then rushed towards the five Chaos Heavens.

“I’ll leave the other Heavenly Dao forces to you,” said the Mother of Chaos.

Su Ping nodded. “Be careful. I’ll lend you a hand in case you need it.”

“There’s no need to worry.”

The system’s voice was extremely calm.

She was so fast that Su Ping’s senses couldn’t even follow. She was even faster than Yin Que!

“What is going on?!”

Xuan Qi was rather shocked by the sight. It dawned on him. “Damn it, Ti Tuo must’ve given the Origin Stone to Mother!”

“You can die knowing the truth now!” bellowed the Golden Crow ancestor. The ever-burning flames released by the latter covered millions of square kilometers and pulled Xuan Qi into its universe.

“You think you can kill me?!”

“I survived the previous three wars, while you didn’t,” said the great crow proudly.

The taunt worked, as Xuan Qi was furious. Among all Sorcerer Ancestors, its forte was attacking. However, its attack was deflected by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. On the other hand, it was the weakest when it came to defense and escape. That was why it was eventually suppressed.

Elsewhere—Ancestors Shi Mang and Yin Que moved towards Hun Yu and attacked the latter’s universe.

Hun Yu was definitely one of the top three Sorcerer Ancestors, and had never lost a duel. It was suppressed by the Heavenly Dao, not because it was weaker than Yin Que and the others, but because it chose to endure all of the Heavenly Dao's attacks for everyone. As a result, it was heavily wounded and captured.

"Hun Yu, you can still turn around!" shouted Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang.

"My clan is being controlled by the Heavenly Dao. I cannot turn around anymore!" said Hun Yu in a low voice and released its universe, covering Yin Que and Shi Mang, trying to imprison them.

However, Yin Que was quick to react and dodged the attack. However, Shi Mang was slower and was enshrouded in it.

"You helped me block the Heavenly Dao's attack back then. I owe you a favor. I hope you won't die before I am able to pay you back!" said Yin Que to Hun Yu.

"If you want to return the favor, just stay away from this war," said Hun Yu.

"That's impossible!" declared the former, "The Heavenly Dao is blatant and lawless. I will never let this go. I'm not here for Mother, but for myself!"

"Let's fight then! The loser will have nothing to say!" said Sorcerer Ancestor Hun Yu.

Yin Que answered with action, quickly moving to attack and trying to rescue Shi Mang.

At the same time—

The Mother of Chaos had already attacked the five Chaos Heavens.

She was even faster than Yin Que. Nobody was able to capture her trace.

Her attacks were so powerful that only one move had left a Chaos Heaven heavily wounded one, nearly killing them.

While clearing the other Heavenly Dao forces, Su Ping noticed that the system seemed to have combined the power of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors. She was the best in terms of offense, speed and defense!

The five Chaos Heavens were forced to retreat due to the system's attacks. They were completely incapable of defending!

The power shown by the system not only surprised Su Ping, but also infuriated the five Chaos Heavens. They realized that their enemy had made sufficient preparations and Ti Tuo's betrayal was a trap. They weren't there to surround those remnant nemeses; the remnants were surrounding them!

Once the remnant forces passed that defense line, the big plan would be ruined.

"Die!!" bellowed one of the Chaos Heavens, as a terrifying aura of chaos was burning all over its body, mixed with some sort of special fire. The fury on its face turned blurry because of the flames. The humanoid also seemed to be calming down, eventually turning into a dazzling ball.

Whoosh!

He dashed to another Chaos Heaven and merged with it.

"They're yours."

The other three Chaos Heavens acted with solemnity. "Even if it's not possible to stop them, you have to stall them."

The next moment, those three Chaos Heavens were ablaze. Their faces became numb, and they turned into dazzling light, which surged into the body of the Chaos Heaven at the center.

The latter's body was undergoing changes. An aura far more powerful was perceived, and its body was even more gigantic, with limbs that

were destructive to a terrifying degree. It threw a punch at the Mother of Chaos and actually blocked the sharp blade formed with her Great Dao power.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression and said ruthlessly, "I knew you would use this method; you were the inspiration for the contract system I developed."

Su Ping—who at the time had been dealing with the rest of the enemy forces with the Inferno Dragon—was also keeping an eye on the system. Her answer left him in a daze for a moment; he then looked at the fused Chaos Heavens and understood.

The contract and the fusion were created based on inspirations from the Heavenly Dao's tactics in the previous wars.

The Heavenly Dao members can fuse together; if all of them merge... The idea crossed Su Ping's mind.

He also noticed at the moment that the humanoids being hunted by the Inferno Dragon were gathering in one place, actually giving birth to a Chaos Heaven emitting silver light.

So this is how Chaos Heavens are created...

The other Heavenly Dao beings can fuse, too. Is it possible that all of them are actually the same thing?!

His expression involuntarily reflected the shock upon thinking about this. If all the Heavenly Dao humanoids were the same thing, and were just clones of the original body, how terrifying would the original body be?

It would even be a hundred times stronger than a Sorcerer Ancestor!

There must be some sort of restriction preventing all of them from fusing. Otherwise, why would they split up their power? It would be easy to kill all twelve Sorcerer Ancestors with such power, just like squeezing ants to death. This entire world of chaos should have been cleared already! Su Ping thought. He believed that was the reason.



The Inferno Dragon was already fighting against the newly condensed Chaos Heaven.

Su Ping chose to let his dragon pet battle it out with the humanoid, seeing that their battle was too shocking. He led the Dark Dragon Hound, the experts from the billions of species, and the just resurrected people to attack the other Heavenly Dao beings, trying to clear the area as quickly as possible; that way they would not condense into another Chaos Heaven.

To some relief, Su Ping noticed that there seemed to be some sort of requirement set for Heavenly Dao fusions to take place; they couldn't fuse at will. The other humanoids were only jumping and dodging, trying to buy more time. They didn't just merge to fight back.

1562 Born Because of a Wish (1)

“Die!”

The experts of all species inside the three thousand warships set up military formations and transmitted their power to Su Ping. The latter asked the Inferno Dragon to stall the fused Chaos Heaven while he charged at the other Heavenly Dao creatures with the others.

Elsewhere, the Mother of Chaos and five fused-Chaos Heavens were fighting intensely. It was hard to tell who would win.

However, she gradually gained the upper hand as the fight progressed, thanks to her fast and powerful attacks; her offense was better than Xuan Qi's and her defense was better than Ling Tai's. She was as quick as a shadow. Time and space was changing quickly around them. She had killed her enemy hundreds of times, from the past to the future.

However, the Chaos Heavenly Dao still jumped out of the void from her memories and the battle marks in the world.

The Mother of Chaos cut herself off from the environment, forcing her opponent into a corner soon after.

“You’re not here to kill us; you’re here just to hold me back, aren’t you?” she asked with a cold tone, “Has he already stepped into the Ancestral Land of Chaos’ forbidden area? To think he’s willing to abandon you so you can stall for time.”

“Yes. Even if you know, so what? You don’t stand a chance!”

The fused Chaos Heaven was extremely calm. Although hit by the system hundreds of times at every moment, he didn’t show any anger, acting indifferent as if detached from the world. He wouldn’t show anger even in the face of death.

“I didn’t realize he would be faster than I thought.” The Mother of Chaos narrowed her eyes.

“Just give up. Your era has passed. The chaos you once established and reigned over is already sick. It must be made anew. You lost, and you must accept your fate!” declared the Chaos Heavenly Dao.

“Fate? The River of Fate contains billions of creatures, and was created by me.” The Mother of Chaos sneered. Fate itself was her creation, and yet she was being asked to accept her fate?

“Disorder will be no more after we lay claim on the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Everybody will live together in peace and order!” said the Chaos Heavenly Dao coldly.

“Peace? How boring would the world be without any fights? War, sickness and disaster are part of life. It is also the most efficient way to naturally reduce the amount of lives.”

She added after a snort, “Without death and disorder, how could chaos accommodate all living creatures? That would be a recipe for complete destruction!”

“That’s right. War and disaster are required for the gathering of resources and for the new to replace the old. It’s the way you control chaos. It’s a splendid era with newborns always emerging. However, the

seniors who have fought for countless years have to willingly step back. Isn't it ridiculous?"

The humanoid sneered and said, "This world doesn't need replacements. Permanence is the best!"

"What's the meaning of this?"

The Mother of Chaos pierced his chest with her sword. However, she suddenly turned around and saw the Chaos Heaven walking out of a resurrection channel. She said coldly, "The world I've built reflects my will, everywhere. Mountains and rivers are also my will. I described them to countless living creatures, so that they know what I think.

"If water doesn't flow, it dies. Without circulation, the world will rot and smell sooner or later!"

"That's why there's so much sadness in the world you built, and the reason why we came to be. You must know that we were born because of the wishes of all living creatures!"

The Chaos Heavenly Dao added with indifference, "We are regarded as the Heavenly Dao, supreme beings that control billions of lives. How could we ignore their grief?"

"So, you want to erase them just because you can't bear to see them fall into tragic cycles of reincarnation?" she bellowed angrily.

The humanoid replied with a cold voice, "They live in your world and follow your orders. They are already sick, beyond cure, unless your rules are broken and we establish a new order. We won't feel regret even if we're no longer needed after the new world is built. This is what we do for all living creatures!"

"Hilarious!"

The Mother of Chaos was past the point of being angry. "Look at the people you're fighting. They're the living creatures you mentioned,

who've come here to fight and eliminate you. You think you're fulfilling their wishes?!"

"Living creatures are stupid. That's why they linger in your world while in pain. We're trying to save them; even if they loathe us, so what?" said the Chaos Heaven.

"Go to hell!"

The Mother of Chaos stopped the conversation, as she felt she was wasting her time. The other party had a different faith. Just like in the beginning of time, losers would have nothing to say; even the firmest truth had to be defended with strength!

Bang!

Violent attacks echoed above the Ancestral Land of Chaos.

In the distance—Su Ping sensed the immense quakes and couldn't help but glance with worry. However, he knew he was far from being qualified to worry about the system; he could only do his part to clear the battlefield as soon as possible and free his hands so he could find a chance to help.

"It's useless. Your failure is destined," said the Chaos Heaven calmly.

"Do you really think you can take away the Ancestral Land of Chaos?" There was no fury on the Mother of Chaos's face, only a cold killing intent. She wasn't slow as she acted. With a frosty tone, she said, "You should feel honored that you've managed to stall me for this long!"

Boom! The sword she held dazzled as she made a slashing motion.

Instantly, countless sword auras rushed over from all directions in the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Each sword aura was extremely terrifying; they moved swiftly, instantly piercing through the Chaos Heaven fusion.

The sword auras exploded, ripping apart the humanoid's body.

The Mother of Chaos flew out, not bothering to look at the extinguished Chaos Heaven, and rushed towards Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors.

“Mother, just give up. It’s too late!” said Hun Yu, noticing how she was approaching and that the five Heavenly Dao experts had been killed.

“Hun Yu, don’t be stupid. I know you want me to abandon the ancestral land and leave. However, I was born along with the ancestral land. This is my destiny and my shell!” said the Mother of Chaos coldly, “I will be destroyed if the Ancestral Land of Chaos is gone. If you truly want to fight for me, go after the Heavenly Dao with me and don’t stand in my way!”

Hun Yu changed his expression. While wearing a troubled expression, he heaved a deep sigh and said in frustration, “Mother, I’m sorry; please kill me. I can’t turn back, or else they will kill both me and my clan.”

“Good. A Sorcerer Ancestor deciding to sacrifice himself for your clan. You deserve to be my child!” said the Mother of Chaos, quickly taking decisive action.

On the other hand, Xuan Qi—discovering that Hun Yu was no longer resisting—shouted in shock and fury, “We will enjoy ourselves forever after the Heavenly Dao restarts chaos; why are you giving up?!”

“Shut up!” the Golden Crow Ancestor roared, drowning him in scorching flames.

Hun Yu sighed. “Eternity... is so exhausting.”

The Mother of Chaos stared at him, but didn’t stop. Her sword passed by and ripped the most powerful universe of the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors to pieces, along with Hun Yu himself.

A Chaos Qualification flew out after he died.

The Mother of Chaos made a waving motion, then saw Su Ping fighting somewhere else. She threw the Chaos Qualification in his direction.

“Absorb the Chaos Qualification and defeat them as soon as possible,” said the system.

Slightly stunned yet delighted, Su Ping saw the brilliant Chaos Qualification and immediately grabbed a hold of it.

A Sorcerer Ancestor died? Su Ping looked at the battlefield, only to find that Hun Yu’s aura was gone. His gesture changed; the Sorcerer Ancestor who had once covered the retreat on his own, back in the cultivation site, was now dead. Just like that.

It was a Sorcerer Ancestor who was supposed to live forever!

He took a deep breath, and decidedly fused with the Chaos Qualification.

All his power seemed to be concentrated on the Chaos Qualification and amplified. A stream of terrifying power erupted from his body.

His three thousand undying universes became even more terrifying due to the Chaos Qualification’s enhancement.

“Great. Our boss is a Sorcerer Ancestor too!” shouted the Dark Dragon Hound excitedly.

“Even if chaos is destroyed, Boss will still survive.” The Purple Python, the Little Skeleton and the other pets were thrilled. All of them were fighting so that Su Ping could live on.

Su Ping had just attained the qualification to live.

As for their world and the people, they couldn’t care less.

Elsewhere—the Mother of Chaos turned around and charged at Xuan Qi.

The latter was shocked and furious upon seeing her actions. “Mother, I wasn’t wrong. It’s useless, even if you kill me!”

“No, it isn’t,” she said.

Wasting no time, she quickly suppressed and killed Xuan Qi with the help of the Golden Crow ancestor and Yin Que, then taking out the black Chaos Qualification inside his body.

The Chaos Qualification was full of brutality and killing intent, like a sharp edge able to make your eyes bleed by merely laying eyes upon it.

The Mother of Chaos glanced at Su Ping and passed it over to him, too.

Considering his personality, she knew he would definitely give it to one of his pets.

This was in line with her wishes. There would be an explosive rise in power when a Sorcerer Ancestor bonded with another Sorcerer Ancestor. She needed Su Ping's power in the following battle!

“Considering that being's personality, it shouldn't have just sent those helpers to their deaths so easily; even though they were only tools in its eyes, they have died all too quickly.” The Mother of Chaos looked gloomy. She had already recovered two Chaos Qualifications, but it didn't give her any sense of accomplishment; she thought that her old opponent was much smarter than this.

That is, unless they thought that the main goal set for Hun Yu and the others was to hold her back.

Yin Que flew close and said quickly, “Mother, let's go to the core of the ancestral land as soon as possible.”

The Golden Crow ancestor also looked at her. Their guesses depicted some dreadful outcomes, and weren't happy about their recent victory.

1563 The Ultimate Heavenly Dao

“All right,” said the Mother of Chaos while nodding.

Su Ping had already handed over Xuan Qi's Chaos Qualification to the Little Skeleton while the pair spoke.

The little one's attacks were powerful, and was the most fitting to receive the item.

“Let's go!”

Su Ping was also hearing their conversation, and knew that such an easy victory could be a trap. It would be impossible for the Heavenly Dao's leader to be unaware that the system was strong enough to quickly finish off the forces sent.

That quick victory wasn't something to be happy about. Rather, it was worrisome!

The Mother of Chaos slightly narrowed her eyes and communicated telepathically, “He has his plans, and I have my countermeasures. Does he really think that I don't know anything?”

Out of nowhere, a channel appeared in the void.

“It's the channel to enter Kun Peng's inner universe!” said Shi Mang, feeling relieved, “It seems that he didn't betray us.”

Kun Peng—the one who swallowed Ti Tuo—was actually the Mother of Chaos's spy.

This scheme had been set up ever since the beginning of the first war!

“I may be fast, but I can't establish a speed channel inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. Only Kun Peng can send us straight into the depths of chaos using his innards as a bridge!” said Yin Que.

The channel to the inner universe they saw was exactly made with Kun Peng's organs.

“Let's go!” said the Mother of Chaos.

She was the first to step out and enter the channel.

Yin Que was the hasty sort; he followed closely behind.



Su Ping gathered the experts of all species and the revived generals from the cultivation sites before following the two.

Su Ping had grabbed a hold of one of the Chaos Qualifications and was now equal to the other ancestors. The world he saw had some sort of strange changes. The mountains, the fog, the aura of chaos and the Great Dao were akin to illusions about to disperse at any moment. However, they held on like wriggling worms.

That was the original look of the world.

Su Ping had once seen such a world when he took the Golden Crow ancestor's blood, but that was the first time seeing it with his own power. Furthermore, he would never be able to dwell on the illusion once he saw reality.

So, the world before his eyes would remain that way, unless he deliberately ignored it and fooled himself.

"This is what the chaos world is really like. Just get used to it," said the Golden Crow ancestor in a soft voice, who seemed to have noticed the astonishment in Su Ping's eyes. "It was exactly the ugliness of this chaos world that made Mother give birth to us. We created billions of mythical creatures that perished after fighting the Heavenly Dao, their bloodlines transforming into all the worlds. Your human race is the extension of one of the bloodlines, just like how gods came to be.

"Different species may have different definitions of beauty. However, every living creature has the instinct to change the environment until it is fit for them. Worms and beasts have nests that other creatures despise, but they live comfortably there. Even ants are the same..."

Su Ping looked at the system moving further ahead in the channel, eyes glittering. "Are all the prosperous eternal worlds what she wished for?"

"The eternity that you know is but a fleeting moment in the world of chaos. You never saw how prosperous it was when billions of mythical creatures emerged. It was much more brilliant than the world you know; that was what she truly wished for..." said the crow softly.

Su Ping fell silent. His long time following the system made him aware of her proud nature; even the best pets weren't worth mentioning. Her standards were also monstrously high.

Getting to the bottom of all, it was because the world she had established was too brilliant.

The moon wouldn't be deemed as dazzling after witnessing the brilliance of the sun.

"I see..."

They reached the end of the channel just then.

Everybody reached the core zone of the chaos land through the internal organs of Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng.

Hardly had they arrived when they saw countless Heavenly Dao humanoids standing densely in the distance. It was terrifying to see their numbers, like grains of dust.

Those humanoids stared with ruthless eyes at those who had just walked out of the channel.

The Mother of Chaos slightly changed her expression as she peered further ahead. She saw Kun Peng standing among the Heavenly Dao beings with four Chaos Heavens next to him. In addition, there was a purely white figure, with thousands of eyes and ears and countless organs hanging from his body. The hideous figure evoked chills, and yet he carried a gentle light.

He clearly had the resemblance of a terrifying monster, and yet his presence was surprisingly reassuring.

"You were in such a hurry to meet me. Now, we finally meet."

The terrifying monster sent out peaceful thoughts; they could almost soothe everyone's killing intent and stubbornness.

The Mother of Chaos showed a slightly different expression as she stared at him. “Don’t fool me with a fake product. Let your real self come out!”

“As expected of the previous custodian of chaos. Even though you’ve been wounded a few times in a row, you still have your eyesight,” said the peaceful will softly, “Unfortunately, you’ve long become rotten too, and should be reforged.”

“Kun Peng, how dare you betray us!” said Yin Que furiously, while glaring at Kun Peng, “Where’s Ti Tuo?”

“He’s not dead. You wouldn’t have come if he were,” said Kun Peng calmly, “Mother asked me to sneak in, so I did. Mother asked me to return to his side, and I did as told. Mother asked me to create an inner universe to bring you here, and I complied. What did I do wrong?”

“Shut up!” The Golden Crows’ ancestor’s eyes were surging with flames. “We thought you were spying for us, but you’re just a traitor. You, a Sorcerer Ancestor, have been subdued. How shameful!”

Kun Peng said indifferently, “He’s not wrong. Mother is already infected, and so are you. Don’t forget how the Heavenly Dao was born. Given the world that Mother created, it was only a matter of time for the Heavenly Dao to be born. The Heavenly Dao is determined to overthrow Mother; she’s like a glutton enjoying herself for a moment, but she’s sick inside and the gorging will kill her. So, Mother is sick and the world she built is sick, too!”

“Do you honestly believe that they will build an eternal world?”

Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang narrowed his eyes. “Don’t forget that life and death are codependent; the world is eternal if they are considered together! ‘Living’ is just the prelude of a creature. Why do you have to separate the two?”

“This kind of change is the source of all evil!”

Kun Peng said coldly, “Life to death, and death to life. The cycle seems to be spinning all the time, but it actually produces a lot of hatred, resentment and grief! Those things are like the barely noticeable dust; however, once it accumulates, it’ll give birth to the Heavenly Dao!”

“The Heavenly Dao was born because of everyone’s wishes. It is everyone’s wish to build an eternal world!”

“It’s hilarious to see you attack the Heavenly Dao with billions of creatures. Little do you know that this is what everybody wants the most. It is only because they’re too stupid and act based on their urges that there’s infinite hate in the world!”

Yin Que yelled, “Do you think that the world of ice you want to build would be beautiful? That kind of beauty is eternal, but dead!”

“The most splendid beauty in this world is liveliness. The liveliness of sadness, and the liveliness of delight, unlike the numbness of peace, indifference and despair. Even if they’re burned, they may jump in billions of shapes like flames!” said the Golden Crow ancestor, keeping fury in check.

Kun Peng slightly shook his head and said, “You’re all wrong. The eternity we want to build is not frozen. All resources will be concentrated and distributed evenly. Lives will no longer decline; they will receive the same treatment. Hate is not caused by loss, it is the unfairness of it all!”

“If you lose an arm, you will feel pain; but it would stop being painful if everyone loses an arm. Just like when everyone loses an extraordinary power, nobody will feel pain or anger because of the lack of this power.”

The Golden Crow ancestor stared at the demonic figure and asked, “What about them? Won’t they still be controlling chaos? Does your fairness include them?”

The monstrous Heavenly Dao smiled and replied peacefully, “We’ll be gone once that kind of world is built. You may not believe us, but we know what we’ll do.”

## 1564 Core of Chaos

“So, the loser has to admit defeat in the end. Strength is what matters, right?” Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que sneered.

“I guess you could say that,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao with a smile.

Su Ping suddenly intervened, “It’s not an eternal world you want to build. You’re only turning your own vision into a concrete existence; you’re the one who’s really infected. That is no longer the wish of the people. You have your own desires... This is just your own selfish thought!”

The smile on the peaceful Heavenly Dao’s face fell somewhat. He gazed at Su Ping and said, “He’s the third challenger leading all the people to attack me, right? He looks much younger than the previous two.”

The Mother of Chaos said coldly, “He’s here bearing the will of the people, and he’s going to end your illusion with me!”

“That is correct,” Su Ping stepped forward and said in a cold tone, “You want fairness for everyone. But how can everyone get everything equally? You say that everyone will receive the same things you get. However, the most precious things in the world—except for the rare cultivation resources, money, wealth and power—are the scenes you witness and the people you interact with every day!

“By your logic, when I see the sunset, others have to see the sunset, too. When I look down from a high building, others have to do the same. It would be unfair otherwise! There are 976 particles whenever I take a breath of chaos aura, and all the others have to absorb 976 particles too, or it would be unfair!

“When I turn to one side and look at things, the others have to do the same, or it would be unfair!”

Su Ping stared at the peaceful Heavenly Dao with blade-like eyes. “There won’t be any living creatures in the world you want to build, only one kind of life. To be more precise, there will only be a single living

creature! That's the only way to ensure absolute balance. If all creatures aim to achieve absolute balance, they must stay unified!

“Without thousands of faces, only having thousands of people living the same life, it would just be one person, no matter how many they are!

“This is just the manifestation of your own wish, not the wish of the people. You have violated the will of the people. You don't deserve to be called Heavenly Dao. You are an Evil Dao!”

“Well said!”

The Golden Crow ancestor couldn't help but shout, “Kun Peng, did you hear? The world he's heralding doesn't exist. There are no lives in that world, and you don't have a place in it, either!”

Kun Peng's expression changed a bit as he looked at the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

Before he could ask—his body trembled all of a sudden. Many sharp blades protruded from the peaceful Heavenly Dao and pierced through his body. Then, those sharp blades moved as arms and pulled him toward the peaceful-looking being.

Kun Peng was shocked and furious. He revealed his true appearance and shrieked at the peaceful creature, “What are you doing?!”

“It was just a matter of time. Since you have doubts, I'll just remove those doubts for you,” said the peaceful Heavenly Dao, “You can't understand the eternity that I pursue, and you don't need to; since you're already sick, that is. You only need to disappear and leave a clean world of chaos behind.”

“Do it!”

The Mother of Chaos quickly attacked the peaceful Heavenly Dao while the latter was absorbing Kun Peng.

Both Yin Que and the Golden Crow ancestor shrieked and followed her, killing the Chaos Heavens that tried to stop them.

“No need to bother with me. His original self is destroying the Chaos Core deep inside the Ancestral Land of Chaos. He’s purposely delaying you here...” roared Kun Peng.

The Mother of Chaos changed her expression. Everything would collapse once the Chaos Core was destroyed; all law and order would crumble, and they would lose all their power. They would all turn to dust once chaos perished.

“System, you go first. I’ll stop him!” said Su Ping.

He rushed over, his body transforming into a magnificent mythical creature, as massive as the peaceful Heavenly Dao. Behind him were the experts of all species and the people from the cultivation sites.

The Mother of Chaos had a contorted face. She could feel Su Ping’s honest feelings, she knew he wouldn’t be able to stop the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Even if it was just a clone.

“You think you can stop me? I’ll show you how your predecessors ended!” The peaceful Heavenly Dao was cold. Part of his body turned into sticky fluid, completely covering Sorcerer Ancestor Kun Peng. There seemed to be countless strange mouths wriggling and biting. Kun Peng’s furious roars could be heard.

Another part of his body moved and attacked Su Ping.

The latter instantly felt that his Chaos Qualification was somehow shivering in fear.

“Die!” Su Ping roared.

The experts of all species set up military formations in his warships. The people from the cultivation sites also charged at the other Heavenly Dao beings.

It was impossible for them to participate in the clash against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, or they would only turn to dust, dying as soon as they got any closer. They could only stop the lesser humanoids.

The war that spanned through eternity was resumed yet again.

Various species fought against the humanoids.

The people from the Heaven Path Institute—led by Wen Tian and the other Ancestral Gods—formed arrays and killed several enemies in a row.

The other high-ranked clans also fought the Heavenly Dao forces under the lead of their respective Ancestral Gods.

The war stretched to infinity, battling and bloodshed everywhere. However, the gory images gradually turned into the background. It was the Sorcerer Ancestors and the Mother of Chaos who would play a critical role in that fight.

They charged on the battlefield. Chaos collapsed wherever they passed and the void became even more desolate. Their true appearances and their universes were quickly displayed, exploding and turning into an unimaginable blast.

Bang!

A brilliant sword aura passed by. Su Ping merged with the Little Skeleton and the Inferno Dragon. Su Ping felt the power of three Chaos Qualifications inside his body. They were connected, bringing forth a terrifying power.

His sword was much more powerful than before, seemingly ready to cut the entire Ancestral Land of Chaos apart. Its sharpness could be felt from light years away.



The weapon contained so much Dao Power that it could invade memories and erase the target at a primary level.

Anyone hostile to Su Ping would have a sword aura grow inside their heart and would eventually die!

When the sword rose, it was unstoppable!

The peaceful Heavenly Dao's body transformed into a cavity of sorts, moving towards the sword like a sheath and instantly swallowing it. The power on the blade was quickly shattered and dispelled.

Su Ping changed his expression, not expecting such a powerful strike to be incapable of hurting the peaceful Heavenly Dao.

This attack was so powerful it could have instantly wounded another Sorcerer Ancestor!

A clone of the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was already terrifying!

"The power of three Chaos Qualifications is truly interesting," said the peaceful-looking being with a smile. "However, they are just products from an old age. They will be gone when the Chaos Core is broken. Everything will be over soon."

1565 Turning Into a Pet

"Come with me," said the Mother of Chaos all of a sudden.

Stunned, Su Ping looked at the system, and immediately understood her intentions from the look in her eyes.

Work together to kill the enemy quickly!

Su Ping and the system had been cooperating and keeping close company in the cultivation sites. However, the system had only provided guidance most of the time, at times letting Su Ping solve problems on his own.

However, they were now truly fighting hand in hand!

“Got it!”

Merge!

Su Ping’s body transformed into brilliant light. The Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and the others in his body merged into the cluster of light and fused into the Mother of Chaos’s body.

There had always been a bond between Su Ping and the system. He was the host, but the system could decide his fate. The contract depended on the strength difference between the two parties; she could act as the master if she wanted to.

Su Ping willingly turned into a pet as part of the system’s power.

He also realized why the system had been nurturing him, and why she had granted him three Chaos Qualifications.

Upon merging, those powers would be at her disposal.

Now in a fused status, Su Ping stepped into a vast and peaceful universe. The space was boundless, but the system’s aura was everywhere.

It was the first time for him to merge as a pet.

“So, this is the world you see when you merge with me...”

Su Ping saw the Little Skeleton, the Inferno Dragon and his other pets next to him. They stayed close to him while also merging with the system through him.

Su Ping looked ahead. There was an outer vision that seemed to project what the system was seeing.

The Ancestral Land of Chaos had a different scenery in her eyes.

The power of chaos was spreading to all directions like a spider web. Countless Great Daos had been constructed, but there were cracks and holes everywhere.

The Heavenly Dao before them wasn't the hideous ghost he had seen; it was a flickering ball of light. That was how the Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked through the system's eyes.

Maybe that was the Great Dao's original appearance.

However, Su Ping was still too weak to see its true form.

"So, this is the truly original world of chaos..." Su Ping didn't expect that the environment seen in the Source Worlds was still not the true thing; it had only been something created by the system. Only the system knew what the real chaos was like.

He also understood why the Little Skeleton and the others had been improving so quickly with him. They shared his vision and understanding when they merged with him, speeding their growth.

For instance, his heart had changed significantly when using the Golden Crow ancestor's blood, even though he only peeped into that world once.

Bang!

The Mother of Chaos made a sudden attack. Instantly, Su Ping felt he was connected to a magnificent power. The strength in his body, which was like a poked balloon at the moment, was unleashed with crazy abandon. That one strike almost exhausted all his power.

Based on what he saw, the strike performed by the system exceeded any sword light he had ever seen before.

There was no dazzling light. Rather, it was like a black line in the world.

To be more precise, there wasn't even a black line, which was just an illusion when the chaos fell to pieces.

The sword aura was invisible, and yet it covered the world, containing the explosive power of thousands of universes. An infinite amount of Great Daos were cut off like the soft leaves of a tree.

The strange wheel launched by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was instantly ripped apart.

The terrifying sword aura pressed forward and directly tore the heavenly being to shreds!

“Is this the method you’ve prepared since the last few wars? You want to regain control of the twelve Chaos Qualifications through me!” said a furious voice coming from the Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s torn body.

“This is the best solution to finish you off!” said the Mother of Chaos coldly.

“That explains a lot. No wonder you appeared so vulnerable in our first encounter. So, back then you were already planning to reestablish chaos and remove the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors through me!” the ultimate humanoid gnashed his teeth. He had taken everything into consideration, but he didn’t expect to be actually used as a pawn by the Mother of Chaos from the beginning.

Although it didn’t affect his plan, he still felt angry.

“You can understand it that way.” The Mother of Chaos didn’t bother explaining. She instantly slashed a second time.

Su Ping then felt that his strength had been sucked dry, and the sentiment was mutual for the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and the others.

Boom. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s clone was cut to pieces. The second strike was even more powerful than the first one. It seemed to be reducing everything in its path to nothing.

The Mother of Chaos didn’t linger. She glanced at the battlefield and turned around, slashing once again.

The battlefield was instantly separated, cut apart. Countless Heavenly Daos were obliterated.

Her absolute power was prevalent. Countless species were too shocked to speak.

“You stay here. The rest of you, come with me,” said the Mother of Chaos requesting for the other Sorcerer Ancestors to stay there to finish off the remaining Chaos Heavens. She then extended a hand, creating thousands of universes and retrieving all the deployed species.

Then, she dashed forward and directly left the battlefield.

Su Ping remembered the system’s original estimate about the odds of winning, which was 55%. She said that he represented 5% of it; as for the remaining 50%, at least 40% was based on the system’s own strength.

Although the previous two strikes had exhausted Su Ping and his pets’ strength, he knew that the system had also spent a lot of her strength. Otherwise, it would have been impossible to extinguish the Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s clone, no matter how skillfully their strength was used.

How much strength was proportional to the original Heavenly Dao remained a mystery.

Su Ping looked at the Ancestral Land of Chaos passing quickly before his eyes. It was absolutely desolate, without mountains or bodies of water; just a gray chaos was present, part of it as fog, while other parts were cubes or crystals.

The system rushed forward. Su Ping was soon able to see the Heavenly Dao.

There was also a green light, right behind that being. A certain object was emitting an intimidating aura and illuminating the place.

Su Ping felt his heart tremble. It was the Chaos Qualification inside him, which seemed to be shivering in fear.

“We’ve arrived,” said the system via telepathy.

He was instantly alarmed.

The wall of Heavenly Dao standing in their way was instantly destroyed by the sword aura, and couldn't be resurrected.

As the system landed, Su Ping noticed that the green light originated from an enormous stone plate.

Just as the light emitted, the stone plate was of green color, with a spot that seemed like a drop of water on top. There was a light ball hovering in front of the stone plate, constantly releasing power aimed at the stone plate.

1566 Failure

“Stop!”

The Mother of Chaos immediately rushed forward. The currents of chaos were instantly stirred and followed her. She seemed to be hauling the whole world with her.

“You're late.”

Right in front of the stone plate—the light dimmed a little. It turned out to be a magnificent figure, both a mountain and an abyss at the same time, quietly glancing at the Mother of Chaos with unparalleled condescension.

Su Ping knew it was the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's original self, which appeared as a perfect great god. However, it was just a vision based on his own understanding. Every species would see an image they most revered.

Perhaps only the system knew its true appearance.

Bang!

The intimidating sword aura passed by and split the chaos, tearing time apart like a cannon able to destroy stars. However, the astounding

sword aura was suddenly turned to particles when about to reach the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

A shining green light covered his body.

The radiance seemed gentle; however, it was a terrifying protective shield.

The Mother of Chaos's expression changed greatly upon witnessing such a result. She shouted in shock, "Impossible!"

The ultimate being gave her a light smile and said, "I have to thank you for attacking me with so many people twice. Wars are always painful, especially the lost ones. The grief and agony they can produce are beyond your imagination!"

The Mother of Chaos stared at the green light covering the latter. All her aggressiveness was gone at that moment, temporarily losing her cool.

Su Ping noticed that the system was acting oddly and quickly shouted, "System, what's wrong? That is the Chaos Core, right? Why did you stop?"

The system was stunned for a long time, frustration and bitterness showing in her beautiful eyes. "A miscalculation on my part. I didn't expect that he would already be fused with the Chaos Core. Destroying him will destroy chaos..."

"Fused..."

Su Ping's mind was blown.

He looked at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao in disbelief. So, chaos would restart no matter how the battle ended?

"Why?"

Su Ping found it hard to understand. The system had planned for such a long time, and even had someone like Kun Peng infiltrate the enemy. No

doubt she had other arrangements he didn't know about. But now... the enemy is occupying her vitals?

"The Core of Chaos acknowledged him as master?" asked Su Ping quickly, "Isn't the Chaos Core what gave birth to you? How can it be owned by someone else so easily?"

The system said, gloomy and frustrated, "I was detached from the Chaos Core since birth. This Ancestral Land of Chaos needs its own support and power. Technically speaking, the Chaos Core gave birth to me, and I created the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors... Right now, he's already fused with the Chaos Core. We don't stand a chance."

She looked frustrated, already giving up.

That's right. She had made countless plans and arrangements, but she knew she had lost.

The stronger someone was, the clearer the situation was to them. So, she knew it was pointless to struggle when there was no chance of turning the tables.

Weaklings would often be incapable of reading the situation clearly. Even if it was hopeless, they would still try their best. They would only end up drained in the end, facing defeat in utter despair.

A miracle?

Someone the likes of the Mother of Chaos knew there weren't any. Everything was inevitable, following the Great Dao trajectories.

Su Ping and the others found her words hard to believe.

They had traveled a long way, some resurrected from the river of fate and gathered from countless universes. However, the battle was already over as things stood.

"Mother!"



Among the lives from cultivation sites—several streams of energy gathered and formed a figure emitting a Sorcerer Ancestor’s powerful aura. He asked with a contorted expression, “Is it over?”

Su Ping looked at the newcomer. He didn’t know him; however, judging by the aura, he instantly realized it was Yuan Shi who had long died in battle.

The latter carried the chaos bloodline, making him easily recognizable to the former.

It came as a surprise, as Su Ping didn’t expect the allegedly dead guy to have been in hiding, his being split among different people from the cultivation sites.

“We lost.” The Mother of Chaos was gloomy. Her doom was approaching. Chaos would be dominated by the Heavenly Dao in the future; all her preparations had been for naught.

“Kun Peng betrayed me and gave me wrong information. The Chaos Core betrayed me too...” Kun Peng’s betrayal was within her expectations and she wasn’t too surprised by it. However, the Chaos Core betrayal pierced deep into her heart.

The core that nurtured her had actually sided with the enemy.

Could it be that the Chaos Core also felt that the world she created was too terrible?

“Mother...” Yuan Shi wore an awful expression. He had been hiding for a long time, and never expected such an outcome.

He also understood the current situation, knowing that turning things around was impossible.

The odds of winning were more than fifty percent in the beginning, but they had just turned to zero.

“Your era is over. Now comes the perfect paradise I will build.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao smiled. “There will be no slaughter, no fights, only eternal peace. I will no longer feel the misery of the people. When they’re miserable, I am miserable. I won’t feel their despair anymore, only happiness!”

The Mother of Chaos gave up fighting, and made no effort to refute.

Being forsaken by the Chaos Core made her doubt herself, despite persisting for such a long time.

“I know you saved a lot of methods for the next war. You didn’t use all your trump cards, fearing that you wouldn’t stand a chance if you failed this time.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao smiled again and added, “Unfortunately, there won’t be a next time. Sorcerer Ancestors Yuan Long, Ling Tai and Kun Peng have fallen into my hands. They have the power of creation. They have weathered through countless eras of pain and misery in this world. My power comes from the origin of pain. I’m not like you, who got everything from chaos.”

“Shut up!” Yuan Shi roared, “You call yourself Heavenly Dao, and yet you’re building an inferno of pain. You’re no longer the pure Heavenly Dao. Quoting you, you are already infected; you just haven’t realized it yet!”

“I was born from the prayers of the people. They only pray in their most miserable moments, beseeching joy and happiness.”

The foul being continued after a smile. “Everything I do, I do to fulfill their prayers! I’m going to build the eternal and perfect world that everybody longs for! You say that I’m infected, but my determination has never changed. It’s just that some sacrifices are needed to fulfill this wish.”

“Hilarious!”

Yuan Shi was going to continue, but the Mother of Chaos stopped him.

“Yuan Shi, no need to argue with him. Those who fail are always in the wrong. We lost; it’s useless to talk. You should run right now. He’s already fused with the Chaos Core and cannot be parted from it. You’ll live even if chaos restarts,” said the Mother of Chaos.

Stunned, Yuan Shi gritted his teeth. “Mother, I haven’t been laying low just to stay alive!”

“I know!” she interrupted and stared back at him. “But you should know that unnecessary sacrifices are meaningless.”

Yuan Shi saw the ruthlessness in her eyes and felt sad. He also knew that they had completely lost, now that their opponent was fused with the Chaos Core.

But... He was unwilling to surrender.

“Ask Yin Que and the others to leave. Quickly.”

The Mother of Chaos turned around and looked. She was ablaze with power; more so than ever before. There was no chance of winning, so she wasn’t saving her strength anymore. She released her pressure, and everybody experienced the territorial power of the person who had dominated chaos for countless years.

Bang.

The sword auras raged. Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors were fighting the Heavenly Dao humanoids; their opponents suddenly fell apart.

The sword auras ignored distance, simply mincing and killing them.

“Mother.”

The Sorcerer Ancestors were shocked upon sensing their mother’s aura. The Golden Crow ancestor quickly said, “Mother, no need to worry about us; we can take care of them. Please save your strength!”

“That won’t be necessary. We’ve already lost; you should leave now,” she replied.

All the Sorcerer Ancestors were stunned, finding it hard to believe. We lost?

They had already fought twice, but they had never lost as fast. It was even their first time seeing the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

The Golden Crow ancestor reacted and quickly asked, “We lost? Why? Is our enemy too strong for you? Or were we too late to help you?”

“The Ultimate Heavenly Dao has fused with the Chaos Core; there’s no chance of winning. You should leave!” said the Mother of Chaos.

Her children were stunned, as if struck by lightning.

They were filled with doubt and shock, understanding the gravity of the situation. Their enemy had actually ended their battle, once and for all!

Shi Mang couldn’t help but say, “He fused with the Chaos Core... How is it possible? You would have sensed his intrusion as it happened...”

She stayed silent; that was the main source of her grief.

Her reliance on the Chaos Core was the cause of such a failure.

The Heavenly Dao invaded the core and fused with it, but she didn’t feel a thing. That could only mean that the Chaos Core had voluntarily isolated her, choosing the Heavenly Dao.

Otherwise, the latter would have been incapable of severing their connection.

“You should also leave.”

The Mother of Chaos’s body changed. She expelled Su Ping, the Inferno Dragon and the other pets out of her body and canceled the merging state. She even injected her own power into Su Ping and the rest as they detached, all to restore their power to peak status.

## 1567 A Contract With Eternity

“Leave? That’s impossible.”

Su Ping drifted away from her body and gazed at her. “Have you given up so easily?”

The Mother of Chaos looked back at him and said, “You don’t understand. With everything coming to this point, there’s no chance of winning, at all. It’s useless even if we kill him; he’s already fused with chaos.”

“So what?” Su Ping said, “If he fused with it, we’ll just have him part with it. If he’s unwilling, we’ll beat him until he changes his mind! Why give up so easily? Did I ever give up when I was a nobody and I encountered lots of formidable monsters in the cultivation sites?”

He then pointed at the corpses that had tagged along with the experts of all species; some were stuck to the warships and partook in the battle. Once the fight ended, Su Ping took them with him.

“They have been waiting for this moment for so long. Have they ever given up?”

“There’s also them...”

Su Ping pointed at the people from the cultivation sites and the countless universes. “Compared to you and me, they’re more than weak. However, they’ve never had a real glimpse of hope, exactly because of their puny strength, have they? Do they know the specific arrangements of this war? No! They are simply sailing on a dark ocean and might fall into an abyss at any moment!

“But have they ever given up?”

“You said that I don’t understand. Indeed, I don’t. So what if it’s hopeless? So what if we’re at a dead end? Should we just give up and surrender? If you’ll die whether you fight or not, why not die fighting?”

Su Ping said, giving weight to each word, “You’ve prepared for such a long time and fought many times over. Was it all for this moment of relaxation right now? Are you tired from fighting?!”

The Mother of Chaos was stunned, at a loss for words as she looked at Su Ping’s red eyes.

Nobody knew how much suffering he had gone through better than her.

However, it was true; this seemingly casual and humorous man had never given up in front of a real test!

Even though he could resurrect, no matter how dangerous the monsters encountered were in the cultivation sites, some despair and fright couldn’t be dismissed just like that.

“If you’re tired from fighting, I’ll fight for you!”

Su Ping looked deeply at the system. He then turned around and faced the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, with a burning fight intent rising in his body.

“Humph. Stupid lives deserve to be destroyed,” said the ultimate nemesis with a chuckle.

The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping with flickering eyes. She said softly, “Don’t be reckless. You can still survive with the power you have now, even if chaos is restarted. There are no borders inside the great chaos. Even if he dominates this place, he won’t be able to find you, just like he can’t find Hao Tian and Hei Xiang.

“You don’t have to die for nothing.”

“This isn’t dying for nothing. Our deaths are significant!” declared Su Ping, word for word.

“I just want you to live...” she whispered. Her voice was somewhat dejected. That was why she had chosen to end things.

Continuing the fight was hopeless. It was better to let the ones capable of surviving to live on.

Su Ping's heart shook upon sensing the system's emotions. He knew it was her truest desire.

But...

"Don't you enjoy prying into my heart?" Su Ping's tone softened.

Slightly dazed, she shook her head and said, "I've no longer peeped into your heart, ever since you reached the Undying State. I promised."

Su Ping lowered his head and smiled. "Everything I've been doing is because I hope you can survive..."

The Mother of Chaos was stunned.

"You know my personality; I will never become a stupid savior. However, I only want to help those who have helped me, and save those who have saved me."

Su Ping raised his eyes and said, one word after the other, "As I said, I will never let my partners die before my eyes, unless I die first!"

"System... I prefer calling you that way. Speaking of partners, you have been the one who has kept me company the longest and helped me the most. Don't forget I'm still your host and master!"

The Mother of Chaos stared at Su Ping, unable to utter a word.

She was familiar with Su Ping's personality, so she knew he was telling the truth.

He had been fighting all this time to get there, risking his own life just because he wanted her to survive...

The Little Skeleton looked at the Mother of Chaos and said briefly, "Don't give up so easily!"

Inferno Dragon chimed in, with a heavy and deafening tone, imbued with dragon might, "Come on, let's fight together. Boss said that the meaning of life is that you get to enjoy it, not what others may say!"

“We will fight for you until the last moment!” said the Dark Dragon Hound with a slight grin.

“Mother, please don’t give up so easily!” said Yuan Shi in a hurry.

The Golden Crow ancestor moved closer and said in a loud voice, “That’s right. Mother, let’s fight together!”

Yin Que and Shi Mang had also arrived. They looked intently; troubled, yet in silence. They knew that the Heavenly Dao had fused with chaos, making their fight a lost cause. Continuing the struggle was just asking for death.

But...

The third leader of all species—the host that their mother had painstakingly trained—was willing to stay and die with her, even though he had obtained a Chaos Qualification and became an everlasting Sorcerer Ancestor.

Could they simply turn around and leave?

Su Ping didn’t turn around. He simply said in a low voice, “Everybody, please finish the last part of this journey with me!”

The experts of all species on the three thousand warships discarded all their despair and grief. They knew that Su Ping could escape while they couldn’t; they weren’t Sorcerer Ancestors. If chaos collapsed, all of them would cease to exist.

Su Ping was willing to stay and fight by their side. How could they retreat?

“Fight!”

“We’re willing to fight by your side, Dao Ancestor!”

“Dao Ancestor, feel free to take whatever strength I have. I’m willing to serve!”



“I’m willing to serve you!!”

The experts of all species roared in approval.

“Ancestor Su, we swore to follow you until death. Don’t worry.”

“Brother Su, feel free to go all out. Whether we live or die, we won’t complain!”

All those great figures from the cultivation sites expressed their readiness to fight.

“All right!”

Su Ping took a deep breath and said, “Thank you, everybody. Let’s fight until he willingly separates from chaos!”

“Fight!!”

Battle roars echoed throughout the world.

Billions of species cheered at the same time.

Su Ping immediately merged with the Inferno Dragon, the Little Skeleton and his other pets. Then, he activated his Contract Dao, which spread to connect with all species and the people from the cultivation sites. The number of contracts he could establish would completely depend on the capacity of his body. Having become a Sorcerer Ancestor, he could make thousands of universes with a single thought. It wasn’t a problem for him to accommodate all the people present.

“I will establish a contract with all of you!”

Su Ping’s power was spread further out. His Contract Dao was extended to billions of species. From the strongest Undying State expert to the weakest mortals, including the old, the weak, the women and children, all of them were able to feel Su Ping’s great and strong willpower.

1568 War of All People

Kill them!!

His willpower influenced billions of species and countless lives. Birds, beasts; all people could feel his bravery and killing intent!

Su Ping gathered their power in his body to fight the Heavenly Dao with ruthless abandon!

The Mother of Chaos was stunned by the shouting of so many living creatures, and seeing the power gathered.

Dazed, she stared at the seemingly eternal figure before her eyes. The scene was beyond her wildest expectations. She had prepared lots of plans and schemes. She had considered Su Ping as just a leader, or a chess piece she had picked from amongst all lives!

She had been training him so he could fight for her and block the Heavenly Dao.

Had they developed a mutual bond after all this time?

The ten thousand years she had spent with Su Ping was but a brief moment in her long life.

It wasn't until everything was settled and her failure was inevitable that she finally cut off all her thoughts.

Therefore, while giving up all resistance, the sympathy in her heart prompted her to free Su Ping and the other Sorcerer Ancestors, so that they wouldn't die for nothing.

If they kept on fighting, their deaths would have no meaning.

But...

Su Ping had chosen to stay.

He chose to fight!

That was exactly what she had been training Su Ping for. But why did she feel so sad and grieved at that moment?

“Kill them all!”

Su Ping clenched his fists. His roar echoed throughout the world, scaring everyone!

Streams of power coming from the people on the warships were drawn into Su Ping’s body. His body was already as huge as a universe by then; stars and moons were just dust on his palm!

Boom!

Su Ping punched furiously. His fist roared, causing turbulence throughout the entire Land of Chaos; it moved like a spear, followed by the Great Dao. The strike was so powerful that even the ultimate existences such as Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que displayed shock on their faces!

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao—at the moment holding the stone plate—also showed a slightly different expression. After a snort, an enormous body emerged from the light. The body seemed as powerful as Su Ping’s, and answered with a heavy punch of its own.

The two streams of terrifying power collided, producing an instant explosion. The blast reached billions of light years into the distance, all the way to the edge of the Ancestral Land of Chaos. If there were any grand universes floating around, they would’ve instantly collapsed due to the force of the blast!

It was already a battle beyond the level of any normal existence.

“Idiotic!” The Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked down at Su Ping, cold-eyed. “I am the one who has truly gathered the power of the people! You’ve only gathered a lousy crowd who are terminally ill. Besides, how many lives have been born in chaos? Most of them are already gone and forgotten like passing clouds!”

“But I will never forget them!”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao pointed at his body. “All of them are inside my body. I’ve come here in answer to their prayers and their last wish to restart chaos and build a perfect world!”

“Shut up!”

Su Ping roared, “You don’t get to judge whether we’re strong or not! What you’re building is just your own eternal world. That’s not the world we wish for!”

“Stupid!”

The ultimate existence turned colder. No other words were uttered as he charged at Su Ping.

The latter wasn’t acting weak, either. He roared and threw out a punch; countless fist auras were manifested, striking the Heavenly Dao.

However, the latter’s body was glowing. The light was like armor, taking the brunt of the attack. However, Su Ping’s fist still made contact with his body, causing a dent.

“Die!”

The top humanoid’s body quickly recovered as he raised a finger.

The light of tribulation was instantly shot.

The tribulation power carried a countless number of Great Daos and the immense power of chaos. It was thousands of times more powerful than the black world-destroying tribulations. Normal Undying State beings would be annihilated upon contact.

“Come on!!”

Su Ping slightly changed his expression. He roared and slashed forth.

The sword aura was instantly gathered, slashed the power of tribulation furiously, although the latter was as soft and tensile as a rope; both moves reached an impasse.

Su Ping and the Ultimate Heavenly Dao were crazily transmitting their power during the process.

Pff, pff!

Inside the three thousand warships—myriads of people vomited blood and fell unconscious.

Ascendants and even some Celestial cultivators were also looking pale. Due to the contract, they were essentially one with Su Ping; the attack was shared by all of them. Considering the strength ratio, Su Ping endured most of it while they only dealt with a tiny fraction.

Even so, that strength was far beyond their limits!

Su Ping's expression changed, as he noticed how people in the warships were constantly passing out.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao seemed to have found an opportunity. The power of light quickly stretched forward, in an attempt to run Su Ping through.

The latter turned around and raised his sword, narrowly dodging the attack. He was almost wounded by that move.

The power of tribulation, however, followed closely. Su Ping could only swing his sword and attack once more.

All of a sudden, there was a loud roar, "Ancestor Su, no need to worry about us!"

The voice belonged to Ancestral God Wen Tian from the Heaven Path Institute, while inside a universe built by Su Ping.

"Ancestor Su, we fought the Heavenly Dao and shed our blood in the wilderness. Today, we will fight a bloody battle again!" said the Chief

Elder of the Heaven Path Institute. His hair was white, but his voice was powerful, and his eyes showed a determination on par with the stars. His body was wildly ablaze as he spoke; he was actually burning his own life to send power to Su Ping.

The elders, teachers and students of the institute roared loudly, “We will fight with you, Chief Elder!”

The next moment—the light of life rose to the sky. They were dedicating their whole strength to Su Ping without reserve.

They had resurrected from the River of Fate. It would be impossible for them to resurrect if they lost this battle and died.

Winning that battle was their sole chance of survival.

However, they now seemed to have forgotten their own fate, igniting their hard-earned new lives again!

There would always be heroes who shouldered disasters for the people!

They were the perfect example.

“The Heaven Path Institute was established to seek justice on behalf of the Heavens!”

“If the Heavens are unjust, we will become the Heavens that defend justice!”

“Our disciples only seek justice and fairness!”

The first president of the Heaven Path Institute—who was also the very first Ancestral God—was so old that his skin looked like an old tree bark. However, even if his hair was white, his back was ramrod straight. His eyes stared at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao like sharp blades. In Su Ping’s eyes, that humanoid was like a higher god. Such stalwart attitude belonged to the Heaven Path Institute he knew.

“Ancestor Su, there’s no need to worry about us!” Ancestral God Wen Tian shouted loudly.

“We of the Feng Clan are willing to sacrifice ourselves for you!”

“The Yuan Clan members are willing to be sacrificed for you!”

“The Ye Clan people are willing to be sacrificed for you!”

“Us, the Changkong Clan members are willing to sacrifice ourselves for you!”

“The Rain Clan members are willing to be sacrificed for you!”

“The Human Clan members are willing to be sacrificed for you!”

“The Hai Clan members are willing to be sacrificed for you!”

The high-ranked clans of the gods followed closely behind. The old, the young, the women and children, all of them burned their lives in the arrays set by the elders. They exhausted all the energy in their bodies!

The children born in the high-ranked clans were natural, extraordinary lives. They would reach the Star State in their teens; however, their potential and their combat abilities varied.

All of them turned into soldiers at that moment, becoming a furious fire. Su Ping felt he had received the support of a strong arm when the energy was transmitted. His sword was made much more powerful right away.

“Huh?”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao felt a slight chill. A lot of his humanoid helpers separated from the high wall and flew over to fuse into his body.

The power of tribulation in his hand was blasted forth. It was even greater than the burning power produced by the people from the world of gods!

Bang, bang!

A lot of experts from the Heaven Path Institute and the world of gods were vomiting blood. Some even passed out.

“There’s also us!”

“Charge!!”

The experts of all species—along with the revived people from the cultivation sites—lent their strength to Su Ping in a frenzy, eyes bloodshot.

As to the Demigod Burial gods—Heather and the other Superior Gods were all unleashing a dazzling light. They were only Celestials, and could only burn their lives to make the greatest contribution possible. “You must win. Don’t forget you haven’t taken us home!”

The other beings from the cultivation sites also focused and delivered incessant flow of power.

Boom. The tribulation power slapped them like a whip. It was so powerful that it could have shattered dozens of grand universes in a blink.

Su Ping’s eyes were bloodshot. He roared and slashed furiously; his every slash gathered the power of the people. The people in his universes and inside the three thousand warships were injured in every collision.

Billions of people would pass out after each clash. Some were even killed on the spot.

An ominous bang resounded!

Many God Warriors from the Demigod Burial exploded, burning their lives during the immense blast. Their bones and blood were exhausted; all of them turned into ashes, scattered after a minor quake.

“He has to win!” Shivalello roared.



The leader of the Superior Gods burned all his power. His body collapsed and his hair was a mess; the blood and the universes he had cultivated were bereft of their former luster. He seemed dark.

“We can’t go home. We hope you can take our people there!” Heather shrieked.

Her body collapsed from the inside out. She was completely shattered!

“Based on my memories from the past, I accompanied you and I had a good time. This is the first time that I’ve truly fought by your side. You must keep it up!” Joanna was standing among the people from the Demigod Burial. As the Goddess of War she was, she stood with the subordinates who had accompanied her for years, until the last moment.

All her people were staring at her in silence; all of them were ablaze with the light of life.

Furious energy flames gradually began to burn in her body, too.

“You’ll always be my boss...” said Joanna softly.

There was a strange light in her eyes as she gazed at the enormous figure fighting against the Heavenly Dao. The massive silhouette was reflected in her eyes. There was a smile of pride on her lips.

### 1569 Lives as Flickering Lights

Su Ping—fighting desperately at the moment—had a sudden feeling. An eyeball, just like a scorching sun, grew on the back of his head. With the power to pierce through all matter, he instantly saw the burning figures from the Demigod Burial.

Among them, he noticed the eyes that had been deeply imprinted in his memories.

He had once seen those eyes in the Mysterious Realm, back in the Universe Geniuses’ Contest held by all Celestials, including his master. Those eyes were now overlapping with what he had seen earlier.

It was just like the way she raised her head while standing behind the counter, countless times.

The gaze he knew was overlapping with the one before his eyes, becoming eternal.

The familiar smile, affection, gentleness, admiration, encouragement, reluctance and so many other feelings were imbued in those eyes. Su Ping felt as if his body were torn to pieces upon seeing her body, burning swiftly.

He knew that nobody was exempt in that battle.

However, such an enormous grief couldn't be erased.

He roared furiously and swung his sword again, cutting through eternity and chaos. The strike was extremely skillful, containing the splendor of origin itself.

Time, memory, mentality and all the powers from other dimensions were gathered in one point.

That was the height that Su Ping had attained after merging with the system. His battle technique reached a higher level.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was astonished. It was obvious that he wasn't expecting that a being other than the Mother of Chaos could have such expertise. Even the twelve Sorcerer Ancestors were as innocent as children in his eyes; he could easily subdue them.

Except for the lives born in the Chaos Core, that one had probably reached the supreme level.

“Even if you use all the people and the Great Dao as fuel, you're only fireflies in my eyes!” The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was aggressive and indifferent. The tribulation power in his hand soared and was split into billions of streams, darting like an infinite number of sharp blades and vines, surrounding Su Ping's body with a terrifying binding force.

The power was influencing Su Ping's will directly.

The invasion of his willpower allowed the billions of species bonded with Su Ping to feel the pressure of the heavens!

Just a fraction of the pressure was enough to make a lot of people feel desperate and faint.

"F\*ck off!!" Su Ping roared and slashed furiously. The sword aura was swept in all directions, illuminating the surrounding chaos.

The people in the vessel behind him stepped up, one after the other. They were bathing in the fires of life as they constantly transmitted their power to Su Ping.

A monarch of the undead stepped out. "On behalf of the Moon Clan, I'll go first. You must not retreat; it is better to die in front of millions of people than to hide behind billions of people just to survive!"

His body held up the sky like a pillar; he was ready to fight.

Behind him were countless undead creatures that saw him off in tears.

"We are dead already, but the fire in our hearts will always exist!" said another undead monarch, as he walked out from the crowd and burned his life, all to support his clan.

The top clans from the Chaotic Realm of the Undead sent out all their forces as the undead monarchs stepped out.

All of them had perished once, turning into undead creatures permanently living in that somber realm. They were willing to die again, even in the face of doom.

"We will not retreat."

"The Moon Wolves are willing to fight along with the kings!"

"The Purple Dragons are willing to die with our heads held high!"

Some clans from the cultivation sites were formed by demon beasts, some by dragons, and others by wolves. All of them were ready to fight in earnest.

They usually regarded other species as prey, and were considered monsters. However, all prejudice was discarded as they faced the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, who intended to destroy all lives.

Billions of species gathered, and all of them were just comrades!

Even worms, who were usually afraid of death, joined the battle to face the Ultimate Heavenly Dao along with Su Ping. Gods and Asuras also chose to become fireflies; the undead threw themselves to the battlefield.

They willingly followed the magnificent, seemingly eternal figure, turning into a stream of light. The sword became even more brilliant as thousands of streams of light were gathered.

Countless figures were burning and perishing. Thousands of lives were reaped with each passing moment.

The Celestials and even the Undying State experts were heavily wounded and even killed with every clash!

The battle involved all species and all lives.

“Brother...”

“I believe in you. You’re always the winner in my eyes. You’ve never lost!”

Among the humans—Su Lingyue stood next to Shen Huang, who had been looking after her. However, just like the other human experts next to Shen Huang, she was burning with the fire of life.

“Son, we believe in you!”

Su Ping’s parents held each other. There was only glory and comfort left in their eyes as they looked at the figure battling furiously.

“I believe in you too...” said Shen Huang in a muted voice.

Just like Su Ping’s sister, he had always seen his disciple winning, never losing!

Beside him were the other human Celestials who had reached the Dao Heart State with Su Ping’s help. They used to be independent in the Federation, but they all chose to ignite their life force at that moment.

“Boss Su, it’s a pity that I won’t be able to visit your store again.”

“Xiao Meng, he was the one who trained you.”

Also in flames, the other humans were witnessing the battle from the warship.

Every collision caused the world to tremble.

They could feel the magnificent power surge, even though they were protected by the vessels.

Humans, fighting the Heavenly Dao!

Many pets that had been trained in Su Ping’s store were also looking up to him.

Billions of gazes were gathered, transmitting an infinite power. Su Ping’s strength was inexhaustible. He could feel their thoughts and affection through the power being transferred.

Su Ping felt torn because he could sense the willpower of his naughty sister, his parents, and his old customers.

They were all sacrificing themselves for the sake of victory!

Bang!

Su Ping’s sword pressed forward and severed one of his ultimate nemesis’ arms.

However, the latter quickly condensed a new arm the next moment, which carried even more tribulation power to continue the fight.

Our hero kept on swinging his sword with a raging momentum to contend with the humanoid leader.

“This won’t do. He’s harnessing the power of the people, but that’s not enough to be as strong as the Ultimate Heavenly Dao!”

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que and the others noticed Su Ping’s shortcomings.

Even if the latter had displayed a power superior to what Sorcerer Ancestors could muster, he was still no match for the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. After all, even the Mother of Chaos was unable to defeat the fellow in her peak state.

Besides, just like the enemy said, he had also gathered the power of the people, who were much more in number than those backing Su Ping.

“His strength is infinite for now, having the support of the people, but the quality of his strength can’t be raised to be on par with the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. A qualitative change needs to occur.”

The Golden Crow ancestor looked awful, also realizing Su Ping’s situation and his inevitable doom.

Even if the battle continued, they would only be turned into ashes, incapable of turning things around.

“He has surely realized the problem, too. That’s why he’s so sad,” said Shi Mang. His eyes were solemn; for the first time, he seemed to be observing the champion trained by the Mother of Chaos.

“He’s still not retreating, though. He can still escape if he leaves right now...”

Yin Que wore a troubled face; he didn’t know why Su Ping was so persistent. He seemed to have been able to win everyone’s trust, so he

had surely entrusted his life to them as well. The bond was mutual; however, people were dying and failure was inevitable. Why is Su Ping still fighting when he could escape?

“He’s never thought of escaping. Perhaps... This is the significance of life that he believes in,” whispered the Golden Crow ancestor.

“If your life is eternal, is there really any meaning to it?” Yin Que mumbled.

“If he believes there is, it might really be so,” said Shi Mang.

Exactly at that moment—a dazzling light surfaced on the Golden Crow ancestor’s back. Many Golden Crows were flying out.

“Grandfather, I want to fight!”

Their leader was a graceful golden figure who spoke in a crisp and powerful voice. It was none other than Diqiong.

Her ancestral bloodline had awakened just then. She was the new Golden Crow leader.

Next to her were the Golden Crow elders with top Undying State cultivation, which was only second to that of Sorcerer Ancestors.

“Go.”

The Golden Crow ancestor didn’t stop them, as he understood what his descendant was thinking. There was no need for any communication, as he knew they were determined.

Furthermore...

“I’m going too!”

The Golden Crow ancestor turned into a scorching sun and also rushed into the battlefield with burning power. He roared at Su Ping, “Please take my strength, too!”

Su Ping was still alert, even while going all out in the fight, and immediately noticed the Golden Crow ancestor's arrival.

1570 Approaching the Limits (1)

The Golden Crow ancestor...

Su Ping sensed the other party's scorching will and understood his thoughts. He took a deep breath. There was no hesitation as he used his Contract Dao and established a bond to absorb the crow ancestor's strength.

"The Golden Crow..."

Shi Mang and Yin Que showed slight changes in their expressions. Once of the Sorcerer Ancestors, the Golden Crow was willing to become Su Ping's contracted beast and sacrifice his life for a fight they would surely lose.

The Mother of Chaos looked at the scene in a daze; no one knew what she was thinking.

"He's crazy," Yin Que mumbled.

They did want to fight for her mother's sake, but that wasn't the way they wanted to act.

They were Sorcerer Ancestors, the proud ancestors of all living creatures; they created billions of mythical beings. The long history of countless species was but a short moment in their eyes.

They couldn't conceive that a grain of dust born in that 'moment' would become their master.

It was impossible for them to lower their heads and become some creature's pets.

Once their ancestor joined the battlefield, all the Golden Crows flew over, their fires powered by the sacred fires of vitality. Their eyes were determined as they followed Diqiong's lead.



I'm coming. Diqiong called out to him in her heart.

They were insignificant in front of the figure who was as magnificent as a universe, even though they carried the Golden Crows' mythical bloodline. They were like dust behind that being.

The tiny human they had met in the past had grown into the strongest being in existence!

You brought so many movies and stories for me to see. We will become part of them... Our story will definitely be sung if we can live through this.

I hope our story describes us as comrades, fighting side by side!

All kinds of thoughts popped up in Diqiong's heart. She was steadfast as she moved closer to the warships. The flames covering her body were swept towards the ships; not as an attack, but as a transmission of power.

If she were to attack on her own, her move would be directly annihilated by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's power. She couldn't even touch it!

Su Ping sensed that a lot of people had voluntarily broken into the domain of his contract and became his pets. Many of them had familiar auras.

He didn't turn to look; the battle was too intense and he couldn't afford to be distracted. However, he knew what was happening back there, and felt pained by it.

All the acquaintances and friends he knew were burning their lives away for his sake, leaving forever.

How could he retreat from this battle?

Bang!

Su Ping slashed with all his fury, with a significantly improved power, all thanks to the Golden Crows' immolation to assist him. His previous

support wasn't as influential, even while being supported by all species. There was now a tiny qualitative change enhancing him further.

The soaring sword light shoved the Heavenly Dao backwards, sending him flying. However the ultimate being returned instantly, like a blurry shadow.

“People are so stupid.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao's eyes were filled with indifference and disdain. His body was suddenly wreathed in 33 circles of light!

“This is the Heavenly Palace Technique. How many circles can you break?” shrieked the latter as he charged at Su Ping.

The light around his body transformed into blades and spears; they were condensations of the Great Dao, containing the purest power of chaos and the concentration of billions of creatures' prayers.

Su Ping's sword aura was instantly blocked by the outermost circle; he could barely cut through.

Su Ping was shocked, almost shedding blood tears. He had already paid such a gory price, but it was still not enough; he was utterly weak, not even close to being a match to the Ultimate Heavenly Dao!

Was that how strong the existence who once suppressed the Mother of Chaos was?

The feeling of despair was proliferating, but it was smothered just as quickly. Su Ping severed all his rationality and judgment, only knowing that there was no turning back. He wouldn't retreat even after shedding the last drop of his blood!

Bang!

Thousands of dazzling sword auras were instantly manifested; each of them was a universe. Even a grand universe would be pierced through and annihilated when they pressed forth.

The sword auras shook the Heavenly Palaces and broke the outermost circle.

The ultimate nemesis charged ruthlessly while protected by the Heavenly Palace Technique. He swung his hand as if waving a hammer, raising an ocean of lighting bolts that bit Su Ping's body in a frenzy, just like snakes would. They wanted to break in, but they were all destroyed by the sword auras released from Su Ping's pores!

"The power gap is too wide..."

Yin Que was pale-faced. The Mother of Chaos had fought the Ultimate Heavenly Dao in the previous wars; they had only been responsible for distracting the other Heavenly Dao minions.

Even when they occasionally stole glances, they were too weak to see the battle clearly.

Su Ping was stronger than them by far at the moment. Even so, he was still so helpless when facing the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

"In that case, I'll give you a hand, too!" Shi Mang heaved a sigh as a gray shadow was detached from his body, quickly disappearing in the sky. That was part of his body; he could still live on if he died in battle with that fragment.

Once the gray shadow disappeared, he quickly dashed forth and joined the battle, flames all over his body.

"Shi Mang." The Golden Crow ancestor turned around and grinned at his brother who had just flown over.

## ● Astral Pet Store

1571 Approaching the Limits (2)

Sorcerer Ancestor Shi Mang said casually, "Don't look at me. I'm not as stupid as someone with a deathwish like you."

The Golden Crow ancestor laughed. "I was born from the flames, and I will end in flames. For me, this is my homecoming."

"The Ultimate Heavenly Dao is right. We really are stupid," said Shi Mang casually.

"Indeed, truly stupid." The crow ancestor burst into laughter. "You made part of you leave, and yet you've left your original self stay, the part housing the Chaos Qualification. That's truly idiotic!"

"I split up too fast. My bad," said Shi Mang, as casually as before.

The great Golden Crow laughed aloud.

While fighting, Su Ping perceived the surge in power provided by Shi Mang. His heart was in turmoil, but he didn't hesitate; his sword was greatly reinforced thanks to this. He caught the Ultimate Heavenly Dao off guard and broke the Heavenly Palace's outer layer.

The sword pressed forward and broke two more.

The ultimate nemesis had the same expression, pushing the wheel he was wielding, causing black holes that carried a terrifying destructive power. It was like the Realm of Reincarnation from the Chaotic Realm of the Undead, only much more horrifying.

Su Ping felt he had been locked onto. Once caught, he would be instantly obliterated, even if he was a Sorcerer Ancestor. It was possible that only the Chaos Qualification would survive.

He suddenly threw a punch, which made the world quake, condensing all the fist auras in history.

The fist auras tore the edges of the wheel, allowing him to break free.

“Let’s get it over with.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao raised his hand again, freezing everything in the vicinity. Countless flower petals were manifested, which carried a powerful binding force. Su Ping felt a suppression comparable to hundreds of grand universes. He was isolated from the Great Dao and couldn’t feel any power.

The wheel recovered and attacked him again.

Su Ping’s face showed a slightly different expression as he swung his sword with a swift and furious motion.

The sword aura dashed forward, only to be swallowed by the wheel.

Su Ping’s power erupted. He slashed out, producing dozens of sword auras in rapid succession. Billions of people passed out after each slash was made, all due to the power being drawn.

Dozens of sword auras overlapped and tore the wheel again. Su Ping narrowly dodged it, but a third of the people behind him collapsed.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao indifferently pushed the wheel again. He had infinite strength, but while the power provided by Su Ping’s supporters was limited; the latter would lose everything if he blocked the attack three more times.

When all the people died, Su Ping would lose his immense combat ability—one that surpassed Sorcerer Ancestors—and would be wiped out easily.

Su Ping noticed how casual his nemesis was, and knew he didn’t have a lot of chances.

All of a sudden, a furious roar sounded.

“Roar!!”

It was a furious beast call made by the dragon head on Su Ping’s shoulder.

“I’ll block it. Master, you should attack!” said the Inferno Dragon with determination.

The powerful pet was resolute, knowing that they would lose in a war of attrition. They had to attack instead of defend, even at the cost of death. They could never win if they didn’t attack.

—Even if the odds of success were extremely slim.

Su Ping lost his cool and said quickly, “Don’t be reckless!”

“Master, don’t hesitate because of us.” The Inferno Dragon’s voice was extremely solemn and intimidating, devoid of the usual innocence. It had already grown up after ten thousand years of training.

“Anyone can die. We are no exceptions!” said the Inferno Dragon.

Its body was partially removed from the fused state, only the tail remaining. This way the fusion was still in effect, and the pet could use Su Ping’s strength. This was like him growing an extra arm.

The strength was at the moment controlled by the dragon, producing scorching flames.

“Master, we understand. We wouldn’t exist if not for her. You’re doing the right thing,” said the Little Skeleton, with a solemn and determined voice.

The pets knew what Su Ping was fighting for.

He wasn’t fighting for the people, but to save the system.

If chaos was restarted, the system would perish. Su Ping saw the system as his pet and partner.

He had never abandoned his pets. How could he abandon the Mother of Chaos who had always been by his side?

They didn't blame him, he wouldn't be the master they knew and trusted if he acted differently.

"You..."

Su Ping was having trouble breathing. He felt like crying.

He didn't know whether or not he was doing the right thing. He was only following his heart.

"You don't have to indulge me..." Su Ping gritted his teeth.

"We've traveled in so many worlds, boss. We've done all we wanted, so many times. Let's just do it again," said the Dark Dragon Hound, chuckling. There was sincerity in its voice.

Right then—the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's attack arrived.

The Inferno Dragon roared loudly. Its body moved forward, carrying the power of the people; it turned into a burning beast. There was no attempt to dodge as the massive pet accurately struck the wheel.

The wheel collapsed. Black flames seemed ready to burn everything, creating a path for Su Ping!

The Inferno Dragon's vitality was in quick decline, like a withering leaf in the wind.

Su Ping held back his tears and gritted his teeth. He didn't even have a chance to look at the disappearing Inferno Dragon. He couldn't waste an opportunity created at the cost of his pet's life.

The grief was beyond what words could describe.

"Kill them all!"

Su Ping's sword glowed. Bones stretched out, covering the sword edge. The Little Skeleton emerged like an illusion, transforming into a bone sword to tear the Heavenly Palace apart to help Su Ping.

"I'm coming too!" Yin Que shrieked, instantly arriving at the battlefield. Flames covered his body. The violent power of life was surging, gathering in Su Ping's body.

Su Ping was burning his own life too. The power of six Sorcerer Ancestors were being consumed at the same time. Adding the power from all the other species, his sword had never been more intimidating.

A resounding bang was heard!

The brilliant Heavenly Palaces were cut apart by the sword!

The latter kept pressing forward, ripping them further.

One palace after another was cut. However, the sword was slowing down at a visible speed, coming to a halt after breaking eighteen palaces.

Everybody felt desperate. The three Sorcerer Ancestors looked awful, too.

Su Ping roared. He continued burning his vitality with crazy abandon, hoping to keep on cutting through.

At this moment, roars sounded in the chaos world. "We're coming too!"

A magnificent power rushed over. Two figures arrived.

The Golden Crow ancestor turned around and smiled. "You're done pretending to be dead?"

"F\*ck off. When have we ever been scared of death?"

One of them was as big as the sun. He was Sorcerer Ancestor Hao Tian.



The other seemed to be an amalgamation of countless limbs. He was Sorcerer Ancestor Hei Xiang, the best among his brothers when it came to transforming and sneaking.

“Mother asked us to wait for the next war, but there won’t be another war after this. We can’t just stand by and watch,” roared Hao Tian. He linked as a pet with Su Ping’s Contract Dao, turning into one of his pillars.

“That’s right. Us Sorcerer Ancestors can’t just stand and watch a brat fight for our mother.” Hei Xiang chuckled. “Although we’ve never met before, we can still be friends.”

He also established a link with Su Ping as a pet.

Su Ping’s sword gained new power after they joined. The weapon pressed onward and pierced through the twenty-fourth palace.

“Is that it...?”

Everybody heaved sighs upon witnessing the action unfolding.

All the Sorcerer Ancestors knew it was impossible to win. They simply couldn’t stop themselves from stepping in when they saw how hard Su Ping was fighting, and how his pets were sacrificing themselves for his sake.

The scene was more than clear for them, and they knew that everything was over.

Even though they had used all their strength and burned billions of lives as candles, they couldn’t resist the magnificent strength of the Heavenly Dao.

...

1572 Prayer of the People (1)

“Have you reached the limit...?”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao had an indifferent expression as he looked at the twenty-four Heavenly Palaces that had been breached. “Indeed, you are much better than the previous two puppets. However, you’re still just a chess piece.”

“This isn’t over!”

Su Ping’s eyes were cold and crazy. An immense aura of chaos surfaced on his body, attracting the power around him at a crazier speed. All the power sent through the contract by all the experts from the cultivation sites and all the species was further condensed on Su Ping.

They were indeed bound by the contract, but he couldn’t mobilize all their power at once, due to the limits of his body.

However, the limits were broken yet again.

The three Chaos Qualifications melted inside Su Ping’s body, causing a fundamental change. He basically surpassed the Sorcerer Ancestor stratum, reaching a whole new level.

“Gods, demons, deities...”

The powers of all species from all cultivation sites were gathering on Su Ping’s body. The power infusion seemed to be conscious, amassing unprecedented strength.

They had previously held on against the Heavenly Dao together, but they failed to forge a true alliance due to clan and family disputes.

Godly arrogance, the coldness of deities, the cruelty of demons, the deceitful nature of humankind, the beasts’ savage ways... Every clan had their own unscrupulous nature and found each other incompatible. Therefore, they were only tools and fuel in the hands of Sorcerer Ancestors, and could only offer their strength passively.

For the first time, they formed a unified front with Su Ping’s willpower as the bridge.

Powers with all kinds of attributes were concentrated in his person, transforming into chaos power. He was able to absorb the variegated sources at the same time thanks to the three mutating Chaos Qualifications.

From the weaklings to the Undying State experts.

The price paid was the Inferno Dragon and the Little Skeleton abandoning their Chaos Qualifications and walking to their deaths!

Bang!

The dazzling sword reappeared and continued to slash down from the 24th Heavenly Palace. The Great Daos fused, turning into a Sword of Judgment, and actually sliced all the way to the 28th Heavenly Palace.

“So close!”

The Golden Crow ancestor wore a troubled expression; however, he quickly made a decision. Dazzling light flew out of his body, which turned out to be his Chaos Qualification.

He chose to hand over his own power to Su Ping, abandoning his Sorcerer Ancestor status!

They were already linked as one through the contract, but it was different when he truly handed over the Chaos Qualification.

The crow ancestor had been burning his vitality and unleashing the most extreme strength. However, life was boundless for him, as life itself was like an abstract concept for Sorcerer Ancestors. They would only have to rest for a while so they could recover peak status with the help of the Chaos Qualification.

With that move, he had completely shut his way out.

He could truly die now!

“Ancestor!”

The Golden Crows, including the Chief Elder, all of them cried in shock when they saw this happen.

They could burn their lives and die, but not their ancestor.

If their ancestor was alive, he could create Golden Crows whenever he wished.

His action was tantamount to making a crazy bet, staking the future of their entire clan on that young man!

Su Ping's heart shook upon receiving that Chaos Qualification. It was too shocking. He glanced at the Golden Crow ancestor, only to see a smile.

Nothing was said, but everything had been said in that exchange.

Su Ping understood the ancestor's intention. He gritted his teeth and absorbed the Chaos Qualification, melting it with the three Chaos Qualifications already fused in his body.

His body was emitting a scorching power. Golden flames were burning on his body like feathers, carrying the fury and a ferocity able to annihilate anything.

Su Ping was able to control more power as the Chaos Qualifications was integrated. There were almost ten advanced cultivation sites.

"What a lunatic!"

Yin Que, Shi Mang and the other Sorcerer Ancestors couldn't help but gasp when they saw the crow ancestor's action. He was truly depriving himself of a way out!

"So brutal," said Shi Mang with a bitter smile.

The Golden Crow ancestor spoke with eyes like torches, "I only want to see if the sword can cut his head!"

"I will go with you!" was said, all of a sudden.

Hao Tian actually gave away his own Chaos Qualification too. He was like a solemn and sacred god, with overflowing aggressiveness in his eyes. "I'm not interested in this boring eternity!"

Yin Que said with a troubled face, "You've both lost your minds!"

"Count me in too," said Hei Xiang with a chuckle, "It would be pointless to me if chaos is restarted and it doesn't look like how it is right now."

The Chaos Qualification emerged from his body and flew towards Su Ping.

Two additional Chaos Qualifications, Su Ping now had six of them. His body underwent a strange change and turned infinitely larger. He seemed to have turned from a mythical creature into a vast cluster of mist. No longer a Sorcerer Ancestor, he turned into another kind of being.

Being in such a state, there was no limitation to Su Ping's body size. He could swallow a grand universe with a thought, or turn into a grain of dust with another.

As long as he was willing, he could accommodate hundreds of grand universes into his body. His every pore contained boundless space. Each hair could slice the sun and pierce a universe!

"I was too merciful before!"

1573 Prayer of the People (2)

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao had a gloomy expression as he saw this happen; killing intent surged out as he suddenly took action. The Heavenly Palaces were instantly fixed. At the same time, a vast lightning bolt ocean was gathered around him, and a divine spear was slowly created!

Just the appearance of the spear was making people feel an infinite sharpness, as if pierced through, even though they were hundreds of universes away.

They were so frightened that they vomited just by looking at it.

“Come on!!” Su Ping roared. He was no longer in the mood to consider anything else at the moment; too much blood had been shed. The world had fallen apart and billions of species had gone extinct. He only wanted to end everything.

Even if he failed, he would burn the last drop of his blood!

The violent sword aura contained the power of six Chaos Qualifications, as well as the strength of the experts from a hundred advanced cultivation sites and thousands of others. It was like two thousand universes colliding. The blast could have rendered a Sorcerer Ancestor unconscious.

The fixed Heavenly Palaces collapsed. The sword was unstoppable, destroying the thirty-three Heavenly Palaces, once and for all!

Bang!

The sword struck the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's shoulder, severing his arm.

Cold killing intent appeared on the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's face. The ominous lightning spear made an instant, piercing move.

Su Ping instantly felt that his heart skipped a beat. It was as if everything around him were frozen. Even the power inside his body was isolated; he was like a weak mortal standing in a snowy world, facing arrows in all directions!

Is this... the real gap?

Even though he was far stronger than a Sorcerer Ancestor, Su Ping didn't expect that failure and death were still inevitable!

Frustration! Fury!

Sadness.

“In the end, I couldn’t save you...”

There was a boom—a powerful shock wave passed and a person appeared in front of Su Ping. It was none other than the Mother of Chaos.

There was a brilliant crystal in her palm, blocking the terrifying lightning spear like a shield.

Su Ping recognized the object, similar to a Dao Crystal, but carrying an extremely special aura.

A Chaos Core fragment...

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s expression turned gloomy when he saw the crystal. The Mother of Chaos was born from the Chaos Core. The object had fallen from the core when she was born. It was the most formidable weapon in chaos.

“With everything coming to this point, I’ll finish the last part of this journey with you. It will also be the last journey of our lives,” said the Mother of Chaos as she looked at Su Ping.

There was a helpless, yet tender look in her eyes.

Dazed for a moment, Su Ping smiled and said, “Let’s go together, then. The Little Skeleton and the others are waiting for us.”

The Mother of Chaos smiled back. Her smile wasn’t worn out by time, and her beauty seemed frozen in eternity. “Let’s not keep them waiting, my host.”

She gradually turned into a burst of light and surrounded Su Ping as she spoke.

Su Ping felt he was enveloped by her power. It was warm, familiar, conveying indescribable emotions. He then knew he had done the right thing. There were certain favors and feelings that couldn’t be abandoned.

Having spent more than ten thousand years together, they were already the most intimate partners.

“Since you acknowledged me as your master in this life, I will protect you with my own!” said Su Ping, his voice soft as he smiled. He didn’t need to say anything else; he knew that the system was back.

She was no longer the Mother of Chaos at the moment.

There was only the ‘bitchy’ system that had accompanied him for a long time.

Boom!

Inside Su Ping’s body—thousands of universes seemed to be exploding. An indescribable, terrifying power erupted from within.

“Mother...”

Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors were stunned by her actions.

They all realized that their mother had given up the most honorable identity in chaos, then turned into Su Ping’s pet. Furthermore, she wasn’t just a pet connected to Su Ping via the contract. He was the complete master while she worked as support. She abandoned her whole being, only keeping her consciousness.

It wasn’t her throwing everything away; she offered it to Su Ping.

Su Ping had become the inheritor of all her former being and power.

Having the Mother of Chaos’s body and the six Chaos Qualifications, Su Ping gained control of an unprecedented amount of power. For the first time, he realized exactly how strong the system used to be.

“Looks like all of you are terribly ill!” said the Ultimate Heavenly Dao’s, eyes dead cold, “I can just finish you off once and for all, so that there won’t be any residue when chaos is restarted!”



The lightning spear was revolving at a quick rate; more and more lightning was gathered. Concurrently, the other Heavenly Dao forces were quickly combined into a couple of Chaos Heavens.

Those newly formed helpers quickly flew towards the Ultimate Heavenly Dao and fused with him.

Su Ping was adapting to the system's body and looking at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's real form. He had long realized that the other humanoids were just clones to extend the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's excessive power.

The ultimate nemesis became even more terrifying as the Chaos Heavens fused with him.

"It's time to do it!"

Su Ping was soon accustomed to the system's body. He charged at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao without hesitation the next moment.

Bang!

The sword aura glittered. The entire Ancestral Land of Chaos seemed to be cut apart. The thirty-three Heavenly Palaces protecting the Ultimate Heavenly Dao exploded as soon as they reappeared.

1574 Prayer of the People (3)

It only took one moment to cut the thirty-three Heavenly Palaces apart!

That was thanks to the system's body.

The system's voice echoed in Su Ping's head. "Be careful; those Heavenly Palaces are just the innate power of his body. He has three ghastly methods at his disposal. The first is the Spear of Judgment... What you saw just now was just the basic form. The second one is the Dao Body of All Lives. The last and the most terrifying is the Wish of the People!"

The current situation resembled the old times when visiting cultivation sites; Su Ping practicing and the system guiding him.

The former was alarmed by the revelation. That horror of a lightning spear was just the basic form? The thirty-three Heavenly Palaces that the power of all the people could barely pierce through were actually just produced innately. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was unimaginably horrifying.

Su Ping took a deep breath. He didn't waver in the slightest.

“It's not like I can't defeat him!”

Su Ping's contract power was spread out. From the people of the cultivation sites to the species from the various universes—all their power surged into his body. He was now strong enough to mobilize the power of all the people.

Bang!

A terrifying sword aura was launched, only to be blocked by the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. His body had changed in a strange manner, now releasing a brilliant and holy aura. His porcelain-like appearance was indestructible.

Drawing from the system's memories, Su Ping knew it was the Dao Body of All Lives she had just mentioned.

He was only able to cause a tiny injury, even with his current strength.

Meanwhile—coursing with lightning, the Spear of Judgment emitted a world-destroying pressure.

The area surrounding the spear was making chaos collapse and holes to appear. It was like the Channel of Reincarnation, with thunder and lightning.

The Heavenly Dao's greatest strike took shape at that moment.

Su Ping felt that his body was starting to freeze, and his concern grew. Not daring to be careless about this, his contract power was quickly spread, reaching different dimensions.

“Come to my world, all of you!” Su Ping called out softly.

Instantly, a twisted channel appeared in the void, right behind him.

Gargantuan universes showed up, traveling through the channel.

Some of the universes were broken, desolate, or riddled with holes, while others looked like half-eaten apples.

They were the grand universes where all the species lived. They had also been condensed with the power of chaos.

All those grand universes had their own consciousness. Using his memories as the medium, Su Ping beckoned them.

“That is... my hometown!”

“It’s the Archean Divinity!”

“The Chaotic Realm of the Undead!”

“That’s... the Federation!”

Riding the warships behind Su Ping’s back, and residing in universes built with his thoughts—the people from the several cultivation sites and other universes noticed the arrival of those universes.

They were massive cosmic regions, yet they were like glass spheres when compared to Su Ping at the moment.

He could grow even more if he wished it so; those grand universes would be as insignificant as dust in front him. But that was unnecessary.

Back on a warship—Shen Huang and the other Celestials, who were close to burning the last bit of their lives, saw the Federation’s universe, which had a tiny crack. The familiar aura brought tears to their eyes.

They didn't expect to see their hometown right before dying.

"After seeing our hometown again... we can die without regrets," said an Undying State expert with a sigh.

"It's a pity that we failed to protect the Archean Divinity well." The people of the Heaven Path Institute and the high-ranked clans looked at the fractured Archean Divinity with sadness.

That was the real Archean Divinity. It wasn't in the prime condition Su Ping experienced as a cultivation site. When the Heavenly Dao invaded, all the continents were shattered and the universe was riddled with holes, just like an ant's nest. It was devastating.

More and more universes were summoned by Su Ping, and floated behind his back. Once the contract power was spread, the will of each universe was connected to his mind.

Some universes were gentle; some were still dwelling on their pain, while others had an immense killing intent. That brief moment was enough for Su Ping to understand what those universes had experienced.

From birth to their demise, the lifelong events of countless creatures in those universes were reflected in Su Ping's heart.

The Heavenly Dao had inflicted the deepest wound upon them.

"Die!!" Su Ping roared.

He surpassed all existences from the cultivation sites after gathering the power of many grand universes. Su Ping raised his sword and slashed furiously again. There was a loud boom; the sword aura passed through the lightning ocean, striking the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's body.

Cracking sounds echoed. The Dao Body of All Lives, as sacred as porcelain, actually fell to pieces after such a terrifying move. However, no blood was shed; there was only the intense aura of chaos.

The system was dazed and excited upon witnessing the effect of that attack. “You actually came up with this idea...”

She could tell that Su Ping was even stronger than her old self.

Once gathering the power of the people and the universes, Su Ping was finally capable of fighting against the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

“He has fused with the Chaos Core. Some of his power can’t be extracted immediately. This is the best opportunity!” The system was keen enough to notice that there was something wrong with the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. The latter could have instantly killed Su Ping, but he didn’t. As Su Ping grew in strength, the enemy could only struggle to defend. This proved a lot of things.

“There’s a chance! There’s a chance to die with him!” The system’s dead heart was reignited. She had an indescribable feeling... It was akin to when humans were touched emotionally. There was no such thing as a miracle in her eyes; there was only the certainty of things.

1575 Prayer of the People (4)

Just then, Su Ping shattered the system’s imagination and worked up a miracle!

“I used to create things you saw as miracles. Now, you’re creating a miracle for me...” There was a rush of different emotions in the system’s eyes, including delight and relief.

At this moment, the Ultimate Heavenly Dao roared, “Judgment!” It was the first time he lost his cool since the beginning of the battle.

The lightning-infested Spear of Judgment darted towards Su Ping with unstoppable momentum as if able to pierce through the very ends of chaos.

Su Ping already felt he had been run through, even before the attack arrived. It was like falling into an abyss, or pinned down on a coffin. He couldn’t move.

Su Ping woke up after a momentary trance. He roared and summoned all his strength, slashing out with brutal force.

The lives of countless people were extinguished, many humans amongst them.

There were also disciples of the Heaven Path Institute mixed in. Their lives were burnt like matches, soon turning to ash and disappearing.

One slash, and half of those lives perished!

The ragged, summoned universes lost some of their luster.

The two streams with the greatest power in the universe crossed paths.

There were two sounds of collision, almost echoing at the same time!

The system lost her clear-headed nature and shrieked, "What are you doing?!" That was the first time she had ever lost her composure.

The terrifying spear went through Su Ping's body. On the other hand, the latter's sword didn't clash with the Spear of Judgment, but went straight to slash the part where the Ultimate Heavenly Dao and the Chaos Core had fused.

"Ahhhhhhhh!!!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao let out a furious roar, just like a wounded beast. He was separated from the Chaos Core, and no longer had the distinctive holiness aura.

Su Ping's body was greatly affected by the spear. An enormous crack was spread from his wound, which kept eating away his body. He couldn't stop this from happening; he was like a piece of porcelain that would soon break into billions of pieces.

Even so, Su Ping was smiling.

He chuckled and said, "I'll never die along with an idiot such as yourself. I simply want you to go home!" He could barely speak, but the brilliance in his eyes couldn't be hidden.

"You must die!!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao let out a furious roar. "You think you can sever the connection between me and the Chaos Core? It has already chosen me. Die!"

Right after bellowing threats, his body moved to the Chaos Core like glue and covered the damage caused by Su Ping.

"He's right. It has already chosen him. It's useless." There was sadness in the system's eyes as she sighed. She knew what Su Ping was thinking; being the most esteemed life in all of chaos, she actually longed for strength, just like mortals did.

She had been born with strength. She never asked for it.

"Even if the core has picked you, I will make it change its mind!"

Su Ping stared at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

"You..." The latter was furious. He wanted to say something, but the next moment, his expression froze. He then understood what Su Ping had just done and regained his rationality. With a ruthless tone, he said, "You had an opportunity to heavily wound me, but now it's gone."

"What did you do?"

The system sensed that Su Ping's consciousness had left his own body. While dazed, she couldn't help but feel scared. The feeling was extremely foreign to her, as she had never been scared, even when she lost the previous battles and saw the Ultimate Heavenly Dao fuse with the Chaos Core.

She had always been invincible, given her status as the most ancient and strongest entity. Not once had she known what fear was.

However, she was experiencing fear right then.

She cried out loudly, but Su Ping's consciousness didn't respond. Suddenly realizing, she looked at the crack made to the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

"He is terribly ill. It's time to end this," said the Ultimate Heavenly Dao with a cold smile, "I will show him what I see and feel. I will let him know how horrible the world you've built is!"

The system was too stunned for words, having figured out what Su Ping was trying to do.

In the meantime—

Inside the Chaos Core space.

The place was in a mud-like state, neither dark nor light. It was the origin of chaos, the source of all laws and the Great Daos; the place where all power and forms took shape.

"Voluntarily coming to this place... You're trying to get yourself killed, huh?" said a contemptuous voice.

A glowing figure emerged from the muddy substance. It was none other than the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Next to him was a small child. It was the form projected into Su Ping's consciousness, conceived according to his understanding.

The latter understood that the child was the Chaos Core.

It was evident that the child resembled the system in a way.

Su Ping released his contract power and unconditionally transmitted his willpower and emotions into the Chaos Core manifestation.

His move to sever the link between the Heavenly Dao and the core was not done to separate them, but to project his own willpower.



Su Ping gazed at the Chaos Core and said, "I know that all living creatures that have existed throughout the ages are merely dust particles falling off of you. But she didn't do anything wrong; you shouldn't have betrayed her.

"I'm here to persuade you into changing your mind. All I want to say is in my thoughts. I believe you already understand."

"Stupid!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao sneered. "I know why you're here. But, do you know why it picked me?"

1576 Prayer of the People (5)

Su Ping frowned and looked at the Heavenly Dao.

"The Core chose me because it saw the miseries endured by the people, the ugliness of both gods and demons, and the worthlessness of this chaos. It wants to create a world without pain or ignorance. It wants peace!" said the latter with a cold voice.

"It's thinking exactly the same as I do. That's why it picked me."

Su Ping gazed at the Chaos Core. "Misery and suffering are parts of chaos. They allow us to understand how precious kindness and gratitude are!"

"Of course you would say that; you've never experienced the utter despair and helplessness of the people," said the Ultimate Heavenly Dao with a snort, "You had her help. She addressed all your hardships. Have you ever really suffered?"

Su Ping gazed at him and replied, "Am I not suffering right now?"

Briefly speechless, the Ultimate Heavenly Dao in a dispassionate voice, "You know fully well what I mean. So, you also crave great power. You wish that I could forgive you; so does everybody else."

Su Ping responded with a slight nod, “Indeed; I do wish for that. But if the miracle doesn’t happen, I won’t wallow in despair. Just like right now... Even if I lose, I have their company. I fought, I loved, I was furious, and I found peace. If there’s failure in the end, I will accept it.”

“Spare me the nice words.” The Ultimate Heavenly Dao snorted. “Do you know how many people in the world are never grateful to anyone? Their parents hate them, their friends betray them. There’s not even a shimmer of light in their lives. Whom should those people fight for? And to whom should they be grateful?”

Su Ping looked back at the fellow. “Indeed, there are people who suffer; that’s exactly the reason why I should do it. Because I’m happy; I have friends, parents, partners, and the system who helped me grow from an insignificant ant to who I am today. I have customers who frequently visit my shop...

“I’m so happy that I have to help them!

“There are too many people who have suffered for my sake. I hope I can do my best to return their favors in kind!”

Su Ping added, word for word, “You claim to be doing everything for the ones who suffer. However, that’s not virtuous, at all. When you restart chaos, they will be annihilated, along with everyone else!

“You claim to be saving them, but you’re only abandoning them!

“Nobody will suffer in the so-called eternal world that you’ve built. They’ve already suffered. Being the supreme dominator that you are, you can’t even tolerate weaklings such as them. Isn’t it even sadder for them?”

“Nonsense!”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao said coldly, “Like you said, you’ve been living a happy life, so you can’t understand their despair. It’s useless to talk; you’ve already reached your end!”

Just as he was about to attack—the childlike Chaos Core opened its eyes and said, “If you can say the same things after personally experiencing the hardships he endured, I will return to her side.”

Slightly dazed, the Ultimate Heavenly Dao flashed a smile and said, “That’s not a bad idea. I wonder what face she’ll make once he comes to my side.”

Su Ping gazed at the Chaos Core. “Are you serious?”

The small entity said with indifference, “Don’t be too happy too soon. Do you realize you will surely become like him if you endure what he’s endured? He was born after the Sorcerer Ancestors. You will live the painful lives of all the people that have been born, ever since the age of Sorcerer Ancestors!

“It’ll be remarkable if you can keep your own consciousness when everything is over.”

Su Ping immediately said, “As long as you keep your word, I surely won’t turn like him!”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao said with a chilling voice, “Then come and feel the wish of the people!”

The latter’s body blossomed like a flower right after. Countless life auras and thoughts were splitting from the inside out.

Those thoughts instantly swarmed and covered Su Ping.

He seemed to have fallen into a bottomless abyss. Just like those weaklings, he experienced their desperate and painful lives.

“When everything is over, you will want to destroy this failed world. Just like me...” mumbled the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

...

At the same time, in the world outside—

The people from the different cultivation sites and the many universes looked at Su Ping who had been pierced by their great enemy. They found that Su Ping's body was absolutely still. Furthermore, his aura was quickly fading away.

They also discovered that the contract power covering them was also vanishing.

“Dao-Dao Ancestor, he's dead?”

“Ancestor Su!”

The remaining Undying State experts from the Archean Divinity were losing it, eyes filled with anguish. Their fighting spirit was completely gone by then.

Even Su Ping died. Everything had truly ended.

“Boss...”

A few figures detached themselves from Su Ping's body. They were the Dark Dragon Hound, the Purple Python and the others.

They looked panicked and dejected at his fragmenting body. To their fright, they noticed that the contract Su Ping signed with them had been cut off.

Their memories would have disappeared along with the contract if it were in the past—

However, they were already Undying State creatures, and they stored those memories in their bodies.

1577 Prayer of the People (6)

The dissolution of the pet contract could only mean that Su Ping had died in battle.

“Boss, I’m sorry that I didn’t protect you well...” lamented the Dark Dragon Hound, suddenly charging at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao the next moment, roaring madly.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao suddenly opened his eyes. He shot a cold look at the fast approaching creature, then raised a hand and covered the Dark Dragon Hound and the other people with his power.

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que didn’t yield his Chaos Qualification to Su Ping. So, he instantly took the Golden Crow ancestor and Shi Mang to avoid the attack.

“It’s over. Damn it!” The dejected Yin Que gritted his teeth.

The Golden Crow ancestor, Shi Mang and the other survivors were silent. Their physical and mental weaknesses barred them from speaking.

Su Ping’s enormous body kept flaking away. However, his body was beyond massive; even if light years were collapsing by the second, it would take billions of years to be completely destroyed.

Right then—an illusory figure dashed out of Su Ping’s head. It was none other than the Mother of Chaos.

“Leave him alone!” she said while looking up at the great foe.

The latter replied with indifference, “You’re begging me? The strongest and most ancient life in chaos may also feel desperate and beg. When coping with real suffering, you’re no different from the rest. This too is proof that the world you created is a failure!”

“He’s not dead?”

Yin Que was shocked by the Mother of Chaos’ request.

All the others, who had already fallen into despair, also turned to look at the Heavenly Dao. Some in the Undying State experts felt ready to fight again.

The Heavenly Dao's indifference grew upon noticing the rising fire among the people in his grasp. "He tried to challenge my mind with his own. I was born because of the prayers of the people. Right now, he is going through their experiences. He won't be himself anymore when it's done. He will be my second clone, inheriting my determination to restart chaos with me!"

"That's impossible. Boss won't be like you!" roared the Dark Dragon Hound.

"Rot in hell!"

Power erupted from the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's hand. The Dark Dragon Hound exploded in an instant, and was completely obliterated.

"I've received as many prayers as the stars in billions of universes. You'll be nothing more than dust when he returns. Obliterate!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao clenched his fist; the people from the cultivation sites and the other universes felt the strong pressure.

No longer having Su Ping's protection, they finally realized how terrifying it was to face the Ultimate Heavenly Dao on their own; his power was terrifying.

"Just dust in my hand..." The great being looked at the people in his hand without the slightest emotional fluctuation. The great war would end with a complete victory.

As he saw things, only the Mother of Chaos, Yin Que and the other Sorcerer Ancestors remained.

"You should just stay here and watch the rise of the new prosperous chaos with me!" said the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

To his shock, Yin Que discovered that he was surrounded by the power of chaos. It was impossible for him to escape.

He couldn't get away, even though he was the fastest amongst all ancestors. He had fallen too deeply this time, as escaping had always been possible in the previous battles.

"Looks like we'll die here," said Yin Que with a bitter smile.

The Golden Crow ancestor's eyes were gloomy. "He was inadvertently created by all of us. I never thought that we would give birth to such a monster."

"It's all our fault. We caused too much slaughter and tragedies when we fought amongst ourselves," said ancestor Hao Tian with a sigh.

Being at the end of their lives, they now regretted all the mistakes made.

The arrogance felt by the Sorcerer Ancestors was passed on to the mythical creatures and then to the other clans, causing that tragic ending.

"Don't give up so soon. Maybe we can still fight when he returns," said Shi Mang.

Hei Xiang shook his head and said, "Even if he returns, he will just be another Heavenly Dao. I once swallowed a Chaos Heaven and perceived the prayers of the people in its body. It almost made me fall. We will also become part of the Heavenly Dao if we experience those prayers.

"Besides, the Heavenly Dao wouldn't be what he is if it hadn't listened to those prayers."

Yin Que hesitated for a moment, eventually heaving a deep sigh. He knew that Hei Xiang was right.

The Sorcerer Ancestors that had been suppressed only gave up after experiencing the prayers of the people. Even Kun Peng—who had been sent to the Ultimate Heavenly Dao as a spy—had been incapable of resisting that power.

“It’s over!”

The Sorcerer Ancestors exchanged lonely glances.

Up in the sky.

The Mother of Chaos didn’t look at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. She turned around to stare at Su Ping’s enormous, yet collapsing body.

There was grief in her eyes. She knew that Su Ping only risked his life by entering the Chaos Core because he wanted to recover it for her sake.

She once told Su Ping that everything could be trained.

It was clear that Su Ping wanted to train the Chaos Core.

However, the difficulty of such a task was on a completely different level.

She suddenly felt that maybe going there was a bad idea. Maybe she shouldn’t have fought that war. She should have just stayed with Su Ping, receiving customers in their shop on some planet.

Those days were simple and repetitive for her.

However, she missed those simple days more than anything at the moment.

Compared to that monotony, the here and now was more dreadful than hell itself.

There were only remains of the people and the top experts. Henceforth, there would be no trace of her in that realm.

Perhaps... That’s not a bad ending.

It suddenly occurred to her: in a way, Su Ping would survive if he turned into the Heavenly Dao’s second clone.

Even if he completely accepted the latter’s thoughts and stood against her.



Just like the Chaos Core.

However, he would still remember her. Even if he didn't like her anymore, and only felt loathing for her after being turned, that was... good.

It was better than being forgotten...

Upon reaching that conclusion, the Mother of Chaos put on a casual smile, but there were tears in her eyes.

The scene made Yin Que and the others widen their eyes in disbelief. Mother can cry? That was the reaction of living creatures when their feelings were most intense.

Feelings were just something that the Mother of Chaos had created.

And yet, she was actually affected?

"I have received your prayer."

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao's voice was laced with mockery and disdain. He said, "As expected of the thoughts of the strongest creature in chaos. Your prayer is much more powerful than any other!"

The tears on her face were gone. She didn't turn around, as if not acknowledging what the Ultimate Heavenly Dao had said. She simply stared at Su Ping's body, as it kept on falling apart.

She would rather not squander the last bits of her life elsewhere.

There was no concept of time in chaos; their lives were eternal. They stood like unmoving statues or rocks, dwelling on their own thoughts.

However, time was indeed flowing inside the Chaos Core, where the prayers of the people were concentrated.

Trillions of years had passed.

It was already longer than the time span of most ancient grand universes.

In that incredibly long time, a figure was still there, struggling and suffering.

He was a worm, a beast, a god, a human being, a tree, any of the puny lives in the world, living an ordinary and yet painful life.

There were all kinds of sufferings in the world. Just the plights endured by one race were already countless.

Besides, he had lived with different identities and classes from billions of races, each with their own pains.

After an immeasurable amount of time, the soul that had endured endless torture in all those reincarnations finally finished cultivating the people's prayer, and returned to the Chaos Core.

...

1578 Epilogue: Welcome Back (1)

“You're back?”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked at Su Ping with a smile. There was an earnestness of sorts in his eyes, and the cold, furious intent was no more. Instead, he had the warmth a person showed when seeing an old friend.

Su Ping had passed through countless reincarnations while experiencing the prayer of the people. It was a devastatingly long time, even for immortals.

However, that experience had been but a short moment for existences like the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

He couldn't be restrained by time. He wouldn't feel anxious due to the passage of time, either.

Time would deform many things, including objects and minds.

Therefore, eternal things wouldn't be worn out by time, and would always remain the same. The long span of time was just a scroll in his eyes; he could see what would happen billions of years into the future, or the things that happened in someone's past life.

Everything had been predestined since the beginning.

The process in between was the life of a creature, the moment it blossomed, the changes of the sun and the moon, and the surging of rivers.

Su Ping slowly opened his eyes. Billions of stars seemed to be glittering within, but they were gone in a flash; only the black pupils remained.

Unlike his past self, his eyes were no longer furious or suffused with pain. Only a gentle, calm indifference remained.

There were no fluctuations, even when he stared at the hateful Ultimate Heavenly Dao he wanted to destroy; the gentleness in his eyes were the same. There was neither fury nor killing intent.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao showed a brighter smile as he looked at Su Ping. "Looks like you've understood. Like I said, once you go through the things I've experienced, your head will become as clear as mine. So many people in the world are angry and hate each other due to conflicts and misunderstandings. It's all because they can't understand each other's circumstances.

"This is because they live in different environments and different clans. The family and friends they grow up with are not the same, either. Even family and the loved ones most cherished by the weak can't fully understand their difficulties and pains.

"You tend to feel utterly alone, even if you live under the same roof with other people, or when standing in the middle of a crowd.

“This kind of loneliness is not unique; any living creature can feel it. They hope that others can understand them, but they can’t understand each other. That’s the sadness of life.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao looked at Su Ping with a smile. “Come on. Let’s create an eternal world together, so that chaos is not a sad place again.”

While looking at his arm for a long time, Su Ping eventually shook his head. With a smile on his face, he said, “You’re right. However, this loneliness is what makes chaos so wonderful and enjoyable. Eternity is beautiful and everlasting, but it’s too boring.

“I prefer loneliness to boredom.”

He slowly raised his hand and offered it to the Ultimate Heavenly Dao. “Come on. Melt into this world with me, and see the light in this world, instead of the darkness!”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was stunned.

The smile on his face froze and soon disappeared. He stared at Su Ping with a gloomy face and said, “It seems that your understanding isn’t profound enough.”

Su Ping shook his head. “I’ve understood completely. Had I not met her, or them, I would have probably ended up just like you. Unfortunately for you, I did meet them. No matter how many experiences of the horrors in the world I’ve gone through, one thing doesn’t change...

“This is the world she created. How can I hate something she created?”

Instantly, the Ultimate Heavenly Dao had somehow realized who “them” were ones Su Ping was talking about. He became gloomier and cold. “Looks like you’ve been too deeply poisoned. Being completely erased is the only alternative!”

Just then, the Chaos Core intervened. “Is this really your choice?”

He gazed at Su Ping. His apparently unchanging eyes were able to see through everything.

Su Ping stared back at him confidently. "You're right. This is my choice!"

"This is impossible!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was seething. He understood what the Chaos Core was thinking. As agreed upon, the lad would go back to the Mother of Chaos if Su Ping didn't change his mind after experiencing the prayer of the people.

"You must have played some sort of trick. You wouldn't have said that if you truly experienced it!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao continued, said furiously. "You've only lived for ten thousand years. Even if you're a top chaos entity, you can't possibly do it. It's not bad if you don't get lost in the infinite reincarnations, which are billions of times longer than the life you've led. But how can you say that!"

"People will change after experiencing new things. Their thoughts and personalities won't be the same. Their former selves technically die because of those experiences, and they are replaced with new personalities."

Su Ping stared at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao and said, "However, did you know that my thoughts remain the same as they were during the first twenty years of my cultivation? Cultivation has only allowed me to see things from a higher, deeper perspective; but my heart has never changed.

"Friends, partners and family are still of paramount importance in my heart. Some things are universally known, just like how even the weakest people knew that the sun was too bright to be directly looked at. It has nothing to do with experiences. Even the most heinous criminals know they're doing bad things; it's just that they don't care!"

1579 Epilogue: Welcome Back (2)

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao's magnificent body was trembling due to anger. His voice also became scary. "Shut up! Shut up! I'm going to consume you and have you experience the deepest sadness inside my body!"

The Chaos Core suddenly interjected, "You can't do it."

He moved to stand next to Su Ping. Shooting a cold look at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao, it said, "As I said, if he can make a second choice, I will return to her side."

The Heavenly Dao said with a frightening tone, "Do you think that going back would change things? I can still restart chaos, even without you. All I have to do is break you!"

"You can't do it."

Those same words were now uttered by Su Ping.

He extended an arm and looked at his nemesis, whose body had already become a twisted, ghastly object. "Haven't you realized it yet? I've experienced all the prayers of the people, everything you have gone through. In other words, I am already the Ultimate Heavenly Dao bearing the prayers of the people. I have everything that you have!"

"What you don't have is now by my side."

Su Ping added in a soft voice, "I can sympathize with the people's sadness as well as you do. Come on; I will show you the light that the people have never begged for. Only by standing in the light will they stop praying. That part happens to be the most beautiful scenery in the world."

"This is impossible!"

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao couldn't accept such an outcome, and resorted to a sudden attack. His willpower surged like a tide, covering Su Ping with ominous shadows.

Su Ping remained at ease, but his body kept expanding. That was just a manifestation of willpower. He turned into an infinitely massive figure, then grasped the Ultimate Heavenly Dao in one hand.

He was demonstrating as much power as the Ultimate Heavenly Dao had thus far.

Meanwhile, the Chaos Qualifications and the Mother of Chaos' body were inside Su Ping. The Chaos Core was also on his side; everything in the world of chaos was concentrated on him.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was being held tightly by Su Ping, and his power was being constantly dispelled, until he was reduced to a young child, one that shared a striking resemblance with the Chaos Core.

He felt terrified as he looked at Su Ping, unable to imagine that the latter would be able to master such a terrifying power.

“Come with me. I will show you the prosperity in this world,” said Su Ping softly.

A magnificent willpower descended with overwhelming pressure. However, no matter how magnificent, it was a benign force. Su Ping was extending a sincere invitation.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was instantly capable of understanding everything about Su Ping through that incoming surge, including his thoughts when he experienced the people's prayers.

Hate, fury, grief, pain... Everything he had experienced was also experienced by Su Ping.

However, right in the midst of those massively negative thoughts, there were faces and figures that glittered every now and then, like brilliant gold.

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao was stunned.

He then realized that Su Ping had not pulled any tricks; he had truly seen and experienced all those lives. However, Su Ping had indeed made another choice.

So, those things are so fascinating?

Dazed, the child that the Ultimate Heavenly Dao had become sat in Su Ping's palm.

That very moment, he knew he had lost. Both his strength and his heart had collapsed, completely.

Even if he wanted to stop it, he couldn't.

After a long, long time—

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao raised his tiny hand. The giant hand formerly supporting him was gone. A pair of long and warm arms grabbed him.

Just then, a contract was established.

The next moment, a terrifying power exploded inside Su Ping's body, which was also spread out.

He wasn't surprised, though. He looked at the Ultimate Heavenly Dao with gentle eyes and said, "We'll set off together after we say our goodbyes to them."

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao nodded, showing a troubled face.

Su Ping smiled and left the Chaos Core.

Outside—

The gigantic, crumbling body suddenly froze.

The cracking stopped, and all the fissures were healing faster than light, recovering in the blink of an eye.



All of it happened at an extreme speed. The Mother of Chaos, who had been standing like a statue, widened her eyes as if just awakening up from a dream. She felt excited and somewhat uneasy as she perceived the reviving aura inside Su Ping's body.

"This aura..."

"Is he back?!"

Yin Que and the rest of the Sorcerer Ancestors woke up and hurriedly looked at Su Ping's body.

"He must have been transformed by the Heavenly Dao..." Hei Xiang wore a troubled expression.

"System..."

Su Ping looked at the system, who at the moment seemed like a tiny dot from his perspective. He said with a smile, "It's been a long time."

"It has truly been a... long time." The Mother of Chaos looked at Su Ping in a daze. The hefty worries in her mind were quickly gone when she saw his warm smile. She felt like crying.

She understood what he had been through. How could Su Ping still treat her that way?

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao had chosen to destroy chaos after all.

Even so, Su Ping just said that 'it had been a long time'.

"There's no need to worry. I have subdued the Heavenly Dao," said Su Ping with a smile.

For reassurance, he even placed the Heavenly Dao on his shoulder.

Indeed, the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was sitting on one of Su Ping's shoulders, just like a kid. Looking at the Mother of Chaos's stunned expression, he turned his head and snorted. But then, he thought of something and said to her, "Maybe I was wrong. We'll be going together

so I can confirm everything. Maybe someday in the future I will return and destroy this chaos!”

1580 Epilogue: Welcome Back (3)

The Mother of Chaos looked rather solemn.

“Don’t listen to him brag,” Su Ping chuckled and said, “He won’t have a chance. Even if he confirms his suspicions, he will still be completely under my control. Rest assured.”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao snapped, “What did you say?”

Su Ping smiled, choosing to ignore him. He then said to the Mother of Chaos, “I’m leaving. Watch over chaos for me. You did the right thing; don’t ever doubt yourself.”

Stunned, she hurriedly asked, “Where are you going? Wasn’t he subdued by you?”

The Ultimate Heavenly Dao after a snort, “Humph. He has transcended all the Great Daos after having experienced the prayer of the people. He’s already become an existence beyond the Dao level after merging with me. You can’t see or feel such a supreme existence.”

Su Ping gently poked the childlike Heavenly Dao’s body until the little one had to lie down. He finally said to the Mother of Chaos, “I’m not going anywhere. I will be observing you from within chaos. So, there’s no need to miss or worry about me. I’ll always be by your side.”

She felt dazed. The fusion of Su Ping and the Ultimate Heavenly Dao was an entity beyond chaos?

Su Ping didn’t elaborate, but she knew it was a level she couldn’t fathom.

“I will extract all the clans he destroyed from his memories. This chaos can’t accommodate them, so I will build a different dimension. You can think of it as a parallel world.”

Su Ping looked at the system with a smile and added, "Suffice it to say that I'll take care of everything. You entrusted the store to me in the past. Now, I regard chaos as our store; I'll take care of it."

Tears flowed down from the Mother of Chaos's eyes. "What if I want to see and feel you?"

"I'll always be here..."

Su Ping replied with a smile, "You will definitely feel me, in the wind, the rain, and in every bit of chaos aura..."

She saw as his body became fainter, because his power was expanding, becoming more profound as he merged with the Heavenly Dao. He couldn't stop the change that came with his strength improving. His body was ascending.

"Help me look after them..." said Su Ping softly.

The Mother of Chaos immediately understood who Su Ping was referring to. Feeling dejected, she said, "Then, will you come back? I mean, in your current form..."

"Maybe, as soon as I'm done with that business..." said Su Ping.

"Humph." The Ultimate Heavenly Dao chimed in with a sudden snort.

Su Ping looked back at the fellow, while spreading his power. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao's mind contained all the annihilated species from the destroyed worlds, ever since the times when mythical creatures abounded.

The latter's mind was like the River of Fate coursing through chaos, stretching out to infinite universes.

Su Ping could replay all the eras in the Heavenly Dao's mind.

"Goodbye, partners..." Su Ping mumbled softly.

His body gradually faded away and disappeared.

He was smiling casually in the last moment, before he slowly disappeared; like smoke in front of the Mother of Chaos.

The latter was stunned, on the verge of tears. Her heart was overwhelmed by unprecedented sorrow. Maybe she had become vulnerable due to losing her body. She had an abundance of feelings like the weak humans had.

Sorcerer Ancestor Yin Que and the others noticed that the blockage made with the Ultimate Heavenly Dao's power was gone. They were free.

They looked at each other in bewilderment, but none of them felt joy after such a great victory.

Soon after, they discovered that the Ancestral Land of Chaos was changing; the aura of chaos was becoming abundant.

Chaos aura was the most ancient power, and the source of all matter and energy; it could create fire, water, rocks, flesh, lives and everything else.

The aura of chaos was sweeping over like a storm at the moment.

All the corpses were swept by that power. Flesh started to grow back on skeletons, and the people who had died in battle returned.

Those who had been utterly destroyed—that even their ashes were gone—walked out of chaos. The Ultimate Heavenly Dao's mind was the bridge and the chaos aura was the energy source.

“Master...”

“Boss...”

Many figures stepped out. All the people who died in battle resurrected, one after the other.

The enormous Inferno Dragon looked at the repopulated area, but failed to see the one person it wanted to see, and couldn't help but cry, utterly dejected.

The Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon flew to where the Mother of Chaos stood. Seeing how stunned she was, it quickly called out to her, "Where's our master?!"

Still gazing at the place where Su Ping disappeared, the Mother of Chaos didn't snap out of her stupor until a long time passed. She felt bitter as she saw the anxiety and pain in the dragon's eyes. She then noticed that the contract between her and Su Ping was gone.

He had severed all contracts when entering the Chaos Core.

If he had any pet at the moment, it was the Ultimate Heavenly Dao.

Su Ping had already become the Heavenly Dao's master.

"You... can't feel him, either?" said the Mother of Chaos bitterly.

"Neither can you?" The Vast Sky Thunderous Dragon was so scared that its body turned cold.

"Could it be that Master has..."

"This is impossible!"

The Lightning Rat dashed over in a frenzy, like a purple lightning. "He promised me he wouldn't let me lose another master! He promised!"

## ● Astral Pet Store

1581 Epilogue: Welcome Back (4)

The rodent looked at the surrounding wilderness and bellowed, “Show yourself! Aren’t you going to keep your promise? You promised me!”

“He’s not dead,” said the Mother of Chaos.

There was grief in her eyes as she saw the Lightning Rat bellowing. She looked elsewhere and noticed the others who were eager to learn of Su Ping’s whereabouts. Her eyes then encompassed the vast chaos and the people present.

She murmured, “He’s right here. It’s just that... We can’t see him anymore...”

...

...

In a universe in the distant future.

On a certain blue planet.

In a prosperous city... There were many stores on a clean and lively street. It was a high-end business street.

Many figures from different races, wearing different clothing styles were moving to and fro.

Most were carrying small beasts in different forms. Some were cute, while others looked ugly and innocent.

In the middle of the street was a splendid store.

However, unlike the splendid store decorations, its name was rather cute. It was the Pixie Pet Store.

Many customers were going in and out of the store's entrance.

Someone was keeping order at the entrance. Although most customers knew the rules and wouldn't dare to make a scene, the beautiful woman was still receiving them at the door.

"Keep it quiet inside. You may ask me if you have any questions, free of charge," said a smiling Tang Ruyan, who had the name "Tang" embroidered on her clothes, next to her chest.

Standing next to her was another receptionist, who actually looked very much like her. It was none other than her sister, Tang Ruyu.

"I have long heard about this famous store. I never imagined that even the receptionists would be this pretty. They're twins, even."

A young man wearing glamorous clothes walked up the steps and teased one of the girls, "Little sister, tell me, what kind of services do you provide?"

"Huh?" Seeing the plain flirting objective, Tang Ruyan immediately dropped her smile. She rolled up her sleeves and released a horrifying pressure. "Looking for a beating?"

The pressure was so daunting that it could have easily shaken an entire planet or even half a universe.

In the young man's eyes, the formerly sweet and beautiful woman had suddenly become as horrifying as a monster thousands of meters tall. He was like an ant next to her feet. Terrified, he trembled and soaked his pants.

The frightening aura was only directed towards the young fellow; the others present didn't feel much. However, the old customers couldn't help but laugh when they saw this happen.

"There are truly people who aren't afraid of death. He dared to offend Miss Tang. He didn't realize she's already an Undying State expert, did he? She could be the master of a universe if she wanted to."

Those customers shook their heads, then walked into the store and dismissed the poor fellow.

“Welcome,” said the soft-spoken Green Lady behind the counter, clad in gray clothes.

Two gorgeous figures stood next to her. One of them had cascading golden hair, looking as enticing as an angel.

The other was impeccable. She had silver gray hair, with a somewhat mysterious and breathtaking look. Many customers would visit not just because of the great training effects; they also went to see the beautiful women.

There was a long line in front of the counter. Joanna, with her lush, golden hair, asked with a smile, “Hello. What kind of pet do you want to train?”

Unlike her previous coldness, she would often wear a casual smile.

“Well... Hello, can you train Lightning Rats here?”

It was the turn for a timid young girl, seemingly an academy student. She was clearly nervous while being in that famous, legendary and mysterious store.

“Lightning Rats?”

The silver haired woman raised her head while flashing a smile. She said, “What a cute thing. Of course it can be trained; everything can be trained in this store...”

The girl was obviously relieved. She said, “Fantastic. Little Ball, come out.”

She took off her backpack and unzipped it. Then, a furry, purple-haired little head popped out; it looked around with vigilant eyes, obviously nervous in that strange environment.



The silver-haired woman smiled and touched its head. Surprisingly, the anxiety in the Lightning Rat's eyes went away. It felt relaxed, seemingly quite attached to her.

The woman took the pet out of the backpack and gently stroked the little one in her arms. It was soon appeased.

The wondrous scene was mind boggling for the girl, as she knew that her Little Ball was very scared of strangers and could easily attack when touched.

She couldn't help but feel convinced of the rumors she had heard about the store. She then asked in a hurry, "How much is it going to be?"

The silver-haired woman's eyes seemed to be reminiscing. She said softly, "About the money, the store happens to have some promotions. Lightning Rats are trained for free."

"For free?"

The girl was thrilled, eyes wide open. It was obvious that she wasn't well-off.

The silver-haired woman smiled and passed the Lightning Rat to Joanna, who handled the registration. She then said, "You may claim it tomorrow, or the day after."

"That fast?" The girl was rather shocked. She hesitated for a moment, but eventually held back; after all, the service was free. She nodded and said, "Thank you then. Little Ball, you have to behave. Don't hurt anyone."

While lying in Joanna's arms, the Lightning Rat glanced at its owner lazily, like saying, 'do you even have to tell me'?

The girl felt jealous when she saw that look, even more so when she saw the golden-haired woman's ample bosom and flawless face. She never realized that her pet liked beautiful women!

The store was soon closed after the day of business was done.

The woman with silver-gray hair took a glass of water from the store and then went outside. She saw a few tiny figures lying underneath the intimidating statues by the door.

It was a gray puppy, a fat mouse with purple-black hair, a tiny snake no more than thirty centimeters long, and a young dragon only half a meter tall...

They seemed lethargic; however, upon closer look, their narrowed eyes were always gazing at the end of the street.

The silver-haired woman heaved a sigh as she looked at them. "It's been so many years already. You still can't let go of him? You're already free. You can go to any universe; you don't have to stay here with us."

"Humph!"

The young dragon snorted and said, "Master will come back. This is our home; we're not going anywhere."

"Exactly," added the gray puppy.

"I'll wait for him to come back. He promised me. He wouldn't go back on his word!" said the Lightning Rat in a solemn tone while keeping an eye on the street, "He said that he wouldn't keep me waiting. He can't go back on his word!"

The woman pursed her lips, but didn't say anything else. She turned around and went back to the store.

Soon after, the wind chimes outside the store started ringing all of a sudden; someone was knocking on the door.

Tang Ruyan, who was resting at the moment, quickly walked out.

"Welcome."

"Hello, the store is closed. Please..."

...

THE END